

TAIWANESE

BOOK 1

Maryknoll Language Service Center

P.O. Box 149

120 San Min Road, Section 1

Taichung, Taiwan 400

1984

Reprinted with slight corrections 1989



Dear Fellow-Student,

Welcome to the happy world of Beginning-Taiwanese. The aim of this book is to help you learn to speak Taiwanese fluently - the Primacy of the Spoken, hence the many sentences for practice.

Language study is one of the many areas of life where there must be a happy tension. The tension here is between our desire to learn quickly enough for an extended conversation on the one hand, and, on the other, our need in Taiwanese study to master the pronunciation, tones, tone changes and grammar. Let's face it: Taiwanese is a very difficult language; it requires persevering study over quite a long period, let's say a lifetime. Our first year means concentration on the fundamentals; vocabulary is built up over the years. At the end of two years, however, we should be reasonably fluent in a fair amount of everyday conversation. We should forever be willing to learn, and therefore we will always need patience and a willingness to make mistakes, to be corrected and to correct ourselves.

Since the aim is fluency, important in the first year are pronunciation and grammar. Lots of drill. The teachers know that drill is the only way to fluency. This means we will be slow covering the elementary books. We have tried to give grammar notes in simple language, using a few terms from traditional English grammar. After some years students are tempted to drop concern about the fundamentals, so as time goes on we should occasionally get a checkup in the language school.

We cannot be fluent unless we think in Taiwanese; therefore get away as quickly as possible from using English with the teacher.

Before we study a lesson we should listen to the tape of the lesson. Listen to it several times before studying the vocabulary just to get used to the "music" of the language; pick out the words you have already learned.

Put all the vocabulary words on flash cards, with an illustrative sentence on each card. After going through a number of cards, put away temporarily those you know well. Keep in your pocket/purse those you don't know well and continue going over them until they become part of you.

In class listen carefully to the teacher speak a sentence and then reproduce the sentence, imitating the teacher's pronunciation as accurately as possible with no unnatural pauses. In drilling, the teacher will repeat each sentence at least once. If he repeats more than once, he may be signalling a difficulty. Do not depend on the teacher's telling you explicitly that you have made a mistake. If we depend completely on the teacher's telling us, then later on we may lazily neglect to do our part by listening to what is said and we may fail to do our best to imitate. Rather, listen and imitate carefully.

A final note: the sentences in this book reflect what many people say and not necessarily the views of the Language Service Center about moral, ethical or social issues such as women's lib.

Best wishes.

Maryknoll Language Service Center  
Easter 1984

CONTENTS

	Page
Notes on Pronunciation of Taiwanese -----	1
Lesson 1 Che <sup>2</sup> ài <sup>3</sup> lōa-chē <sup>3</sup> chí*? -----	20
Lesson 2 Góan <sup>1</sup> sī <sup>3</sup> hák-seng. -----	34
Lesson 3 Lí <sup>1</sup> kúì <sup>2</sup> sè*? -----	48
Lesson 4 Í <sup>7</sup> é <sup>7</sup> pit hō· <sup>7</sup> góa. -----	67
Lesson 5 Bōeh <sup>2</sup> bé <sup>1</sup> chít <sup>3</sup> nía <sup>1</sup> thài-thài <sup>2</sup> chhēng <sup>7</sup> é sa*. -----	97
Lesson 6 Ū <sup>3</sup> hó-khò* / bō <sup>7</sup> hó-khò*, ē <sup>3</sup> phái*-khîa / bē <sup>3</sup> phái*-khîa. -----	125
Lesson 7 Tī <sup>3</sup> Tē* Siān-si* <sup>7</sup> in chhù. -----	159
Lesson 8 Tēh <sup>2</sup> siōng-khò. -----	195
Lesson 9 Pài-kúì <sup>2</sup> bōeh khi? -----	234
Lesson 10 Chng-khā-só·-chāi <sup>7</sup> kāh <sup>2</sup> Tó·-chhī-só·-chāi. -----	277
Lesson 11 Ōh <sup>3</sup> Tái-gí. -----	315
Lesson 12 Khî <sup>2</sup> Jit-góat-thâm <sup>3</sup> chhít-thô. -----	357
Lesson 13 Chē-chhia. -----	392
Surnames -----	438
Index of Vocabulary Words -----	439



Pronunciation of Taiwanese is not uniform in Taiwan. In this book we are mostly presenting what may be called the Taichung accent. If, after learning this accent, you will be living in an area with a different pronunciation, it will be quite easy to pick up the new pronunciation, and we recommend this. In fact, however, today in Taiwan different accents are accepted everywhere because of the great mobility of people caused by industrialization. In the following we give a simple but effective way of learning the pronunciation of the sounds in Taiwanese. For a full, technical treatment see Carroll: Some Practical Notes on the Pronunciation of Taiwanese.

#### A. VOWELS

Taiwanese has 6 vowels, represented by the symbols a, e, i, o, o', u.

1. A - - The vowel a is pronounced like a in the English father.
2. E - - The vowel e is pronounced as in grey.
3. I - - The vowel i has 2 pronunciations: 1) When used alone or when followed by a glottal stop (h), i is pronounced like the i in machine, i.e., with the English long e sound.  
 2) When followed by any consonant but h, i has the English short i sound as in his.
4. O - - The vowel o has 2 pronunciations: 1) When used alone or when followed by a glottal stop (h), o is pronounced approximately like the o in no.  
 2) When followed by any consonant but h, o is pronounced like the aw in law.
5. O' - - The vowel o' is pronounced like the aw in law.
6. U - - The vowel u has 2 pronunciations: 1) When used alone or when followed by the glottal stop (h), u is pronounced like the oo in the English too.  
 2) When followed by any consonant but h, u is pronounced like the oo in foot.

## Sounds

### B. DIPHTHONGS/TRIPHTHONGS

1. ai is pronounced as the ai in aisle.

au like the ow in cow.

2. i as the initial vowel in a diphthong/triphthong is pronounced very nearly like the English y.

io is like yo in yoke.

iu is like you in youth.

ia has 2 pronunciations:

1) Before n and t it is pronounced like the ye in yet.

2) Alone and before all letters except n and t the a is pronounced like the a in father.

3. o as the initial vowel in a diphthong/triphthong is pronounced similar to the English w.

4. u as the initial vowel in a diphthong appears only with i and is pronounced like the w in we.

### C. CONSONANTS

1. b is pronounced like the b in the English about.

(NB. Contrast this b sound with p below.)

Examples: ba, be, bi, bo, bo\*, bu

2. ch - - before a, o, o\*, u and ng - - is pronounced like the t's (ts) in that's all or hats off without any aspiration. Examples: cha, cho, cho\*, chu, chng.

ch - - before e and i - - is pronounced like the ch of which even, NOT like the slightly aspirated "ch" of "cheer".

Examples: che, chi.

3. chh - - before a, o, o\*, u and ng - - is pronounced like the t's + h in that's how. It is strongly aspirated.

Examples: chha, chho, chho\*, chhu, chng.



chh - - before e and i - - is pronounced approximately like the ch + h of which heap, NOT like the less aspirated "ch" of "cheap". It is strongly aspirated.

Examples: chhe, chhi.

4. g The initial g is similar to an English g as pronounced between 2 vowels, as in regard or ago. It is fully-voiced, that is, the sound is made by vibrating the vocal cords, as happens in the pronunciation of vowels.

Some teachers suggest: in order to pronounce the initial g, prepare to pronounce the ng sound (see ng below)- BUT DO NOT PRONOUNCE THE ng - then proceed to pronounce the g of regard or ago.

Examples: ga, ge, gi, go, go\*, gu.

5. h The initial h is as the initial h in English, but never silent as in many English words. The final h is a glottal stop; it is not a special sound in English, but is heard as a "period of silence" between vowels in some cases, such as between the "o's" in "Oh! Oh! ".

Example of initial h: ho.

Example of final h: oh.

6. j - - before e and i - - is pronounced like the z in azure.

Examples: je ji.

j - - before o and u - - is pronounced like the dz in adze.

Examples: joa, ju.

7. k has approximately the sound of the ck in black ace. Note that the Taiwanese k is entirely unaspirated. The k as a final is NOT like the "k" in the single word "black", but is much softer.

Initial k must be carefully distinguished from the g sound.

Examples: ka, ke, ki, ko, ko\*, ku.

NB. k, p and t as finals will be treated on p. 6.

8. kh is about equivalent to the ck + h of back home.

Examples: kha, khe, khi, kho, khu.

9. l is generally pronounced as in leaf, but with the tip of the tongue in contact with the gums back of the upper teeth and not, as in English, with the alveolar ridge.

Examples: la, le, li, lo, lu, lai, lui.

## Sounds

10. m is pronounced like the m in amount; it is fully-voiced, i.e., the vocal cords vibrate throughout the entire duration of the pronunciation of the m. (In English an initial m is only partly voiced, while the m in amount is fully-voiced.)

Syllabic m. The m may be a syllable in itself; to pronounce it hold your lips in the position for pronouncing consonantic m and hum. It is exactly like the m in chasm.

Note: In the Taichung pronunciation any vowel or diphthong following a nasal initial (m/n/ng) must be nasalized.

Examples of m: ma, me, mi, mo°, mia, moa.

11. n is pronounced like the n in anew; it is fully-voiced. Examples: na, ni, no°, nia, noa.

12. ng is pronounced as the ng in sing. It is found as a syllable in itself (syllabic ng); it may also precede a, e, i, and o°. Examples: nga, nge, ngi, ngo°. (Note: these will be easier to pronounce if you first practice pronouncing the ng + o of sing on.)

13. p is about equivalent to the p in keep out; it is entirely unaspirated. It will take considerable effort in the beginning to capture the difference between the initial p and b.

Examples: pa, pe, pi, po, po°, pu.

14. ph is about equivalent to the p + h of up here. It is more strongly aspirated than the p in pout.

Examples: pha, phe, phi, pho, pho°, phu.

15. s - - before a, o, o°, u and ng - - is pronounced about like the s in so, but is somewhat more forcibly enunciated. Examples: sa, so, so°, su, sng.

s - - before e and i - - is pronounced about like the s + y of this year, and NOT like the fully palatal "sh" of "sheer" or the entirely unpalatalized "s" of "seer".

Examples: se, si, sia, sio, siu.

16. t is about equivalent to the second t in that eye. It is entirely unaspirated.

Examples: ta, te, ti, to, to°, tu.

17. th is about equivalent to the t + h in that hoe. It is much more strongly aspirated than the t in toe.

Examples: tha, the, thi, tho, tho°, thu.

NASAL SOUND (phī<sup>3</sup>\*-im - lit., nose sound).

Often in Taiwanese final vowels/diphthongs are nasalized. This is indicated in this book by an asterisk. In some books the nasal sound is indicated by a small raised n after the vowel/diphthong. But see the Note in No. 10 above: a vowel/diphthong following a nasal initial (m/n/ng) is nasalized, but in this book we have not written a nasal symbol for such.

THE SEVEN TAIWANESE TONES

A correct pronunciation of Taiwanese can be attained only at the expense of much effort. Much listening to native speakers and imitation of their pronunciation is essential.

However, even if all the vowels and consonants are properly pronounced, if the tone is incorrect then the word we pronounce is either meaningless or means something different from what we intended. So let us turn our attention now to the 7 tones.

1. The FIRST TONE is intoned evenly on the pitch-level of la (the highest note normally employed in the speaking voice). It has a duration of 3 or 4 morae. (A mora is approximately an eighth note.)

2. The SECOND TONE, as all the tones, is best learned by listening to the teacher, but we may say that it begins at the level of the 1st tone and falls abruptly; duration: about 2 morae.

3. The THIRD TONE begins at re and descends to sol. If the teacher tells you your 3rd tone is not low enough, he usually does not mean the pitch is too high; he means you are not descending. Duration of the sound: 2 or 3 morae.

4. The FOURTH TONE is a very brief (1 mora) falling tone; it begins just above the pitch level of re and drops abruptly to just below re. It starts off with crescendo but is cut off in a staccato manner by the closure of the final consonant (h/k/p/t).

5. The FIFTH TONE begins at re, descends to sol and rises again to re. Duration: 3 or 4 morae. After rising again to re, take care not to go any higher.

(NOTE: The traditional sixth tone is not used.)

## Sounds

7. The SEVENTH TONE is intoned evenly on the level of re. Duration: 3 or 4 morae. It is like the 1st tone in everything but pitch.

8. The EIGHTH TONE in the Taichung pronunciation is intoned evenly on the level of re. It is almost as short as the 4th tone, which is 1 mora, and has the same staccato effect as the 4th tone because it is abruptly cut off by the closure of the final consonant (h/k/p/t). It is like a very short 7th tone.

(In some areas of Taiwan there is another pronunciation of the 8th tone. It is a short rising tone which begins just below the level of la and rises to just above la. In all other respects it is the same as the Taichung 8th tone.)

---

### A Note on FINAL CONSONANTS. The 4th and 8th TONES

Final consonants in Taiwanese are pronounced differently from English final consonants. Remember one simple rule: whereas in English there is usually a slight emission of vocal breath at the end of a final consonant, there is none at all in Taiwanese, the organs of speech remaining at the end of the word in the position for pronouncing the final consonant. The contrast with English is nowhere greater than in the pronunciation of the 4th and 8th tones, which always end in h, k, p or t. The final h (glottal stop) we have studied above.

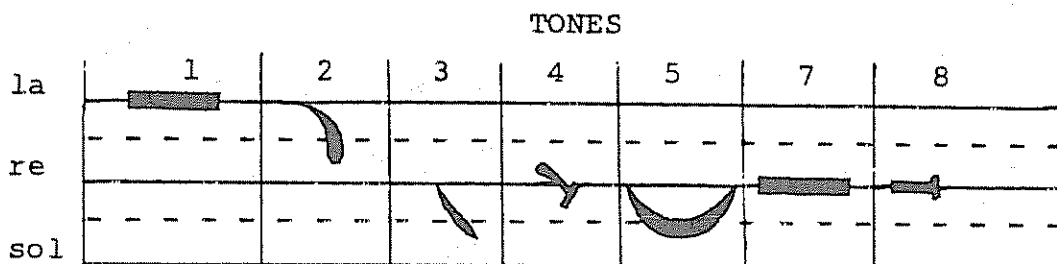
On the next page we will practice all the tones. But because of the difficulty of pronouncing the final k, p and t, let us first practice here the 4th tone.

#### THE 4th TONE:

FINAL	<u>h</u> :	ah	peh	bih	poh	puh
	<u>k</u> :	ak	sek		bok	
	<u>p</u> :	ap		hip		
	<u>t</u> :	at	iat	it		ut

A VISUAL AID

We cannot learn the tones from the musical scale; they can be learned only by working on them with the teacher. We present the following (with sol, re and la) only to give a visual idea of the approximate interval between the tones. Note, for example, how far the 7th tone is below the 1st, and how the 3rd tone descends. The interval between the 1st, 7th and 3rd tones is difficult for the beginner but is fundamental; therefore the teacher will zero in on these 3 tones especially. After these 3 tones are located, the others follow easily.



The TONE SYMBOLS

- |             |                |   |
|-------------|----------------|---|
| 1. 1st tone | a              | (unmarked)                              |
| 2. 2d tone  | á              |   |
| 3. 3d tone  | à              |   |
| 4. 4th tone | ah, ak, ap, at | (unmarked but always ends in "h/k/p/t") |
| 5. 5th tone | â              |   |
| 7. 7th tone | ā              |   |
| 8. 8th tone | áh, ák, áp, át | (always ends in "h/k/p/t")              |

THE VOWELS IN EACH TONE

1.	a	e	i	o	o'	u
2.	á	é	í	ó	ó'	ú
3.	à	è	ì	ò	ò'	ù
4.	ah	eh	ih	oh	ok	uh
5.	â	ê	î	ô	ô'	û
7.	ā	ē	ī	ō	ō'	ū
8.	áh	éh	ih	oh	ók	uh

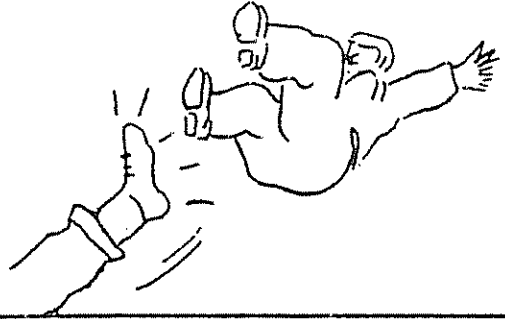
Note that with the vowel o' in the 4th and 8th tones we use k, not h, because the o in oh is not pronounced aw.

THOSE TERRIBLE TONES

(1) POE -- To fly



(2) CHÁU! -- Scram!



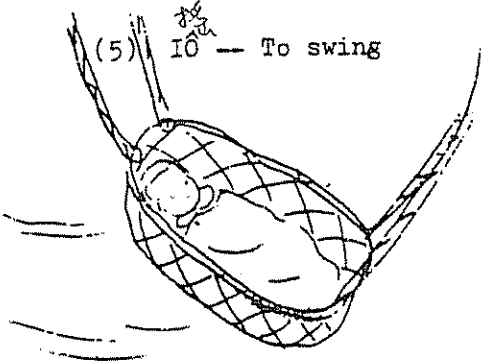
(3) KÒNG -- To strike



(4) PHAH --- To hit



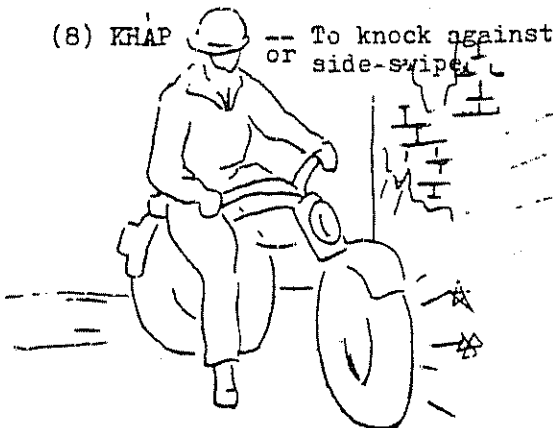
(5) IŌ -- To swing



(7) LŌ -- Road



(8) KHAP -- To knock against or side-swipe



The Normal Tone. \* \* \*

EXAMPLES OF TAIWANESE SOUNDS

1. k, p, t (all entirely unaspirated). kh, ph, th (all heavily aspirated). If you are pronouncing the rough breathing of kh, ph and th correctly, a piece of paper placed in front of your mouth will move with the explosion of breath.

<u>K</u>	<u>Kh</u>	<u>P</u>	<u>Ph</u>
ka 家 (family)	kha 跤 (foot)	pah 百 (hundred)	phah 拍 (hit)
kai 該 (must)	khai 開 (open)	pák 綁 (tie up)	phák 曝 (to sun)
ke 加 (to increase)	khe 溪 (river)	pī 避 (avoid)	phī 鼻 (nose)
kau 溝 (ditch)	khau 刮 (scrape)	poē 飛 (to fly)	phoe 批 (letter)
ko 媽 (aunt)	kho 幣 (dollar)	pau 包 (package)	phau 袍 (robe)
✓ kin 斤 (a catty)	khin 輕 (light)	pang 枱 (board)	phang 蜂 (bee)
kng 光 (bright)	khng 罎 (put)	pío 錶 (watch)	phío 票 (ticket)
ki 記 (remember)	khi 去 (go)	pêng 厝 (side)	phêng 秤 (scales)
kù 句 (sentence)	khu 區 (section)	pō 步 (a step)	phō 簿 (book)

<u>T</u>	<u>Th</u>
tô 圖 (map)	thô 塗 (earth)
ti 豬 (pig)	thì 剃 (cut hair)
tōa 大 (big)	thoa 拖 (to drag)
tī 箸 (chopsticks)	thī 啼 (to <u>crow</u> )
tè 塊 (a piece)	thè 替 (to substitute)
tó 倒 (to fall)	thó 討 (to ask for)
tióng 中 (middle)	thióng 寵 (to <u>favor</u> )
↑ tun 堆積 (heap)	thun 吞 (to swallow)
tiān 電 (electric)	thian 天 (heaven)

Sounds

2. Ch and Chh BEFORE a, o, o', u, ng.

ch is pronounced as ts (that's all) and chh is pronounced like tsh (that's how) EXCEPT when ch and chh are followed by e or i.

<u>Ch</u> (ts)	<u>Chh</u> (tsh)
chá 早 (early)	chhá 吵 (annoy)
chò 做 (do)	chhò 錯 (mistake)
cho·租 (to rent)	chho·粗 (rough)
chù 注 (to notice)	chhù 茨 (house)
chai 知 (know)	chhai 猜 (guess)
? cham (alight)	chham 掺 (mix)
chân 厝 (storey) 樓之一層	chhân 田 (field)
chat 節 (verse)	chhat 漆 (paint)
cháu 走 (run)	chháu 草 (grass)
chàu 灶 (stove)	chhàu 臭 (stinky)
chùi 醉 (drunk)	chhùi 咏 (mouth)
chng 莊 (village)	chhng 倉 (a shed) 茶棚 棚

3. Ch and Chh BEFORE e and i.

ch before e and i is not aspirated, is pronounced like the ch of which ear. chh before e and i is aspirated, is pronounced like the ch+h of which heap.

<u>Che/Chi</u>	<u>Chhe/Chhi</u>	<u>Che/Chi</u>	<u>Chhe/Chhi</u>
chēh 節 (season)	chhēh 冊 (book)	chīm 吸 (to kiss)	chhim 深 (deep)
cheng 鐘 (bell)	chheng 清 (clear)	chih 接 (to meet)	chhih 低 (to bow) 低頭
chiah 即 (then)	chhiah 赤 (brown)	chin 真 (true)	chhin 親 (dear)
chiam 針 (needle)	chhiam 纖 (tiny)	chīu 就 (then)	chhiu 樹 (tree)
chiap 汁 (juice)	chhiap 竊 (steal)	chit 這 (this)	chhit 拭 (to wipe)
chian 煎 (to fry)	chhian 遷 (move)	chioh 借 (to lend)	chhioh 尺 (a foot)
chiat 結 (a knot)	chhiat (to cut) 切	chiu* (chapter) 章	chhiu* (spear) 槍



4. FINAL ng

We must be careful not to pronounce this final ng as if it were spelled eng, ing, or ung.

pāng 飯 (rice)	chhng 倉 (shed)	tāng 堂 (hall)
kng 光 (bright)	khng 同 (put)	hāng 園 (garden)
chhng 床 (bed)	hng 黃 (yellow)	thng 湯 (soup)
hng 遠 (far)	nng 兩 (two)	nng 軟 (soft)
thng 糖 (sugar)	chng 莊 (village)	khng 糠 (bran)

5. INITIAL p and b

p as in keep out. b as in about.

<u>P</u>	<u>B</u>
pó 保 (protect)	bó 母 (mother)
pān 辦 (arrange)	bān 慢 (slow)
pēng 片 (side)	bēng 明 (bright)
pōng 磅 (a pound)	bōng 望 (hope)
pē 父 (father)	bē 賣 (sell)
pōe 倍 (a time)	bōe 未 (not yet)
pat 八 (eight)	bat 捌 (know)
pák 擱 (to tie)	bák 目 (the eye)
pék 白 (white, clear)	bék 退 (retired)
pit 筆 (pen)	bít 蜜 (honey)
piát 別 (distinguish)	biát 滅 (destroy)
pián 騙 (deceive)	bián 免 (forgive)
pí 比 (compare)	bí 米 (rice)
pô 婆 (an old woman)	bô 無 (no, not)
póe 撥 (ward off)	bóe 尾 (a tail)

Sounds

6. INITIAL h

Note the difference between words which have an initial h sound and those without it. The initial h must be heard clearly.

No <u>h</u>	<u>H</u>
ōe 話 (words)	hōe 會 (society)
hng 黃 (yellow)	hng 園 (garden)
hng 閒 (leisure)	hng 還 (pay back)
í 椅 (chair)	hí 喜 (rejoice)
ian 煙 (smoke)	hian 掀 (to open)
im 淫 (lewd)	him 熊 (a bear)
ía* 剝 (shadows)	hía* (flurried)
ióng 窮 (strong)	hióng 亨 (enjoy)
ioh 葯 (medicine)	hioh 葉 (a leaf)
iù 幼 (fine)	hiù 盪 (to swing)
iú* 舀 (ladle out)	hiu* 香 (incense)
ô 螺 (oyster)	hó 和 (peace)
ô 挖 (scoop out)	hó 虎 (tiger)
oat 越 (turn around)	hoat 罰 (punish)

7. K and G.

k - as the ck in black ace. g as in regard.

<u>K</u>	<u>G</u>
kâu 猴 (monkey)	gâu 勢 (clever)
kóa 寡 (some)	góa 我 (I)
kí 指 (to point)	gí 語 (language)
kóan 管 (to rule)	góan 阮 (we)
kóan 管 (authority)	góan 源 (source)
kia* 行 (to walk)	gia 抬 (carry on shoulder)
kông 狂 (mad)	gông 昏 (dizzy)
kíu 久 (long)	giú 拉 (pull)
√ kô □ (whirl) 攪轉	gô 鵞 (goose)
kíu 橋 (bridge)	giô 蚌 (clam)
kē 下 (low)	gē 藝 (art)
kiáh □ (shoe)	giáh □ (hold)

8. FINAL io and FINAL iu.

Care should be taken to distinguish between the final io and final iu. These are fairly easy to say but not always easily distinguished when we hear them.

<u>IO</u>	<u>IU</u>	<u>IO</u>	<u>IU</u>
iô (shake)	iû 油 (oil)	kiô (call)	kiu (save)
sio 燒 (hot)	siu 收 (receive)	chio (banana)	chiu (continent)
chhio (laugh)	chhiu (hand/arm)	chío (few)	chiú (wine)

9. Ch and j.

<u>Ch</u>	<u>J</u>
chít (one)	jít 日 (day)
chîn (gaze) 短視	jîn 人 (man)
chî* 舔 (lick)	jī 二 (two)
chím 孀 (aunt)	jím 忍 (to bear)
chíau 鳥 (bird)	jiáu 擾 (annoy)

10. DRILL with the following exercises for accuracy in pronunciation and tones. Remember the final k, p, and t are very soft, very different from English.

- A) 1) kha 2) ka 3) ka\* 4) ga 5) giáh 6) kiáh  
 7) khak 8) kak 9) gâu 10) kâu 11) kông 12) gông  
 13) khap 14) kap 15) kai 16) khai 17) kì 18) khi  
 19) ku 20) khu 21) kóa 22) góa 23) gí 24) kí
- B) 1) chít 2) jít 3) chím 4) jím 5) chá 6) chhá  
 7) chò 8) chhò 9) chhò 10) chù 11) chhù 12) chhàu  
 13) chàu 14) chân 15) chhân
- C) 1) chîn 2) jîn 3) chî\* 4) jî 5) chhi 6) chhi\*  
 7) chit 8) chhit 9) che 10) chhe 11) chiò 12) chhiò  
 13) chíu 14) chhiú
- D) 1) tâu 2) thâu 3) ti 4) thi 5) ti\* 6) thi\*  
 7) tó 8) thó 9) ta 10) ta\* 11) tha 12) tha\*  
 13) tu 14) thu 15) tuh 16) thuh

Sounds

- E) 1) p'í 2) ph'í 3) phī\* 4) pī\* 5) p'ó 6) bó  
 7) pē 8) bē 9) bí 10) p'í 11) bān 12) pān  
 13) pat 14) bat 15) p'ék 16) b'ék

TONE CHANGES

A great difficulty in Taiwanese is the changing of tones: in speech many of the words must change from their original tone to another tone. But, fortunately, the changes are generally regular; there are rules we can follow.

One rule is that in a word of 2 syllables, the 1st syllable changes from its original tone to another tone. To which tone it changes is also governed by rules.

IN SPEECH:

Tone 1 changes to Tone 7	Tone 5 changes to Tone 7
2	7
3	8
4	
	3
	3

	1-7	2-1	3-2	4-2	5-7	7-3	8-3
la							
re							
sol							
	niau	káu	chhù	chheh	lâng	lō̇	chia <sup>1</sup> h
	niau <sup>7</sup>	káu <sup>1</sup>	chhù <sup>2</sup>	chheh <sup>2</sup>	lâng <sup>7</sup>	lō̇ <sup>3</sup>	chia <sup>3</sup> h

PRACTICE CHANGE OF TONE ON VOWELS:

- á      1      2      2      7      3      3  
 a      a      a      ah      á      ā      ah

Do e, etc.

DIRECTIONS

- |                       |                           |
|-----------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. TŌE GŌA KŌNG. 求我講  | REPEAT AFTER ME.          |
| 2. SĪU* KĒ. 傷下        | TOO LOW.                  |
| 3. SĪU* KŌAN. 傷懸      | TOO HIGH.                 |
| 4. TĒ ĪT SIA*. 第一聲    | THE 1st TONE.             |
| 5. TĒ JĪ SIA*. 第二聲    | THE 2nd TONE.             |
| 6. TĒ SĀ* SIA*. 第三聲   | THE 3rd TONE.             |
| 7. TĒ SĪ SIA*. 第四聲    | THE 4th TONE.             |
| 8. TĒ GŌ* SIA*. 第五聲   | THE 5th TONE.             |
| 9. TĒ CHHĪT SIA*. 第七聲 | THE 7th TONE.             |
| 10. TĒ PĒH SIA*. 第八聲  | THE 8th TONE.             |
| 11. ĀI CHŌAN 愛朝       | YOU MUST CHANGE (TONE).   |
| 12. M-BĪAN CHŌAN 不免轉  | NO NEED TO CHANGE (TONE). |
| 13. TĒ ĪT KHŌ. 第一課    | LESSON ONE.               |
| 14. TĒ ĪT IĀH. 第一頁    | PAGE ONE.                 |

EXAMPLES OF TONE CHANGES

The word "hiong" in the 1st tone means "fragrant"; the word "káng" means "harbor". Together ("Hiong-káng") they mean "(the island of) Hongkong". In saying "Hiong-káng" we change the tone on "Hiong" from 1st to 7th; the tone on "káng" remains unchanged.

Examples of 1st Tone changed to 7th

- |                                |                               |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| hŏng-hŏ 風雨 (wind and rain)     | chhŭn-thi* 春天 (spring season) |
| chhŏng-bēng 聰明 (intelligent)   | thi*-tē 天地 (Heaven and earth) |
| Hiong-káng 香港 (Hongkong)       | hŭi-siŏng 非常 (unusual)        |
| sián-si* 先生 (Mr.)              | sia*-im 聲音 (sound)            |
| phāng-hoe 荷花 (fragrant flower) | káng-lāng 工儂 (worker)         |
| hŭa*-tī 兄弟 (brothers)          | tāng-thi* 冬天 (winter)         |

Sounds

2d changes to 1st

hóe-chhia 火車 (train)	sé-sa* 洗衫 (wash clothes)
chí-png 煮餅 (cook rice)	pún-chí* 本錢 (capital)
léng-chúi 冷水 (cold water)	ióng-kám 勇敢 (courageous)
lí-sū 女士 (lady)	chúi-tō 水道 (running water)
chhiu-kin 手巾 (hand towel)	chúi-lí 水利 (irrigation)

3d changes to 2d

khí-chúi 汽水 (soda)	tiám-thâu 店頭 (store)
kàu-iók 教育 (education)	sín-tek 信德 (faith)
kím-chí 禁止 (forbid)	sí*-mīa 性命 (life)
chéng-hú 政府 (government)	khí-hāu 氣候 (climate)
í-sù 意思 (meaning)	ké-chí* 價錢 (price)
khí-iú 汽油 (gasoline)	kó·-ì 故意 (deliberately)
chhui-chhiu 鬍鬚 (beard)	thài-thài 太太 (wife)
pó-chóa 報紙 (newspaper)	

4th changes to 2d

khít-chiah 乞食 (beggar)	chhút-jip 出入 (coming and going)
kiát-kó 結果 (result)	kók-ka 國家 (country)
híp-siong 翕相 (to photograph)	tōh-kin 桌巾 (table cloth)
chék-sí 即時 (immediately)	hóat-tō 法度 (method)
hók-khí 福氣 (happiness)	chhéh-phōe 冊皮 (book cover)
chhút-lát 出力 (exert oneself)	thín-bé 鐵馬 (bicycle)
sít-lōh 失落 (lose)	pák-tó 腹肚 (stomach)

5th changes to 7th

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1) gū <sup>7</sup> -leng 牛乳 (milk)        | 8) iān <sup>7</sup> -pit 鉛筆 (pencil)          |
| 2) té <sup>7</sup> -kòan 茶館 (teapot)      | 9) péng <sup>7</sup> -an 平安 (peace)           |
| 3) Tâi <sup>7</sup> -oân 台灣 (Taiwan)      | 10) thêng <sup>7</sup> -chí 停止 (stop)         |
| 4) ańg <sup>7</sup> -sa* 紅衫 (red clothes) | 11) sí <sup>7</sup> -cheng 時鐘 (clock)         |
| 5) kía <sup>7</sup> *-lō 行路 (to walk)     | 12) sí <sup>7</sup> -hāu 時候 (time)            |
| 6) thāu <sup>7</sup> -ke 顧家 (owner)       | 13) mīa <sup>7</sup> -sia* 名聲 (reputation)    |
| 7) péng <sup>7</sup> -iú 朋友 (friend)      | 14) mīng <sup>7</sup> -pāi 門牌 (address plate) |

7th changes to 3rd

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1) gōa <sup>3</sup> -kok 外國 (foreign country) | 9) gōa <sup>3</sup> -bīn 外面 (outside)       |
| 2) Siōng <sup>3</sup> -hái 上海 (Shanghai)      | 10) siū <sup>3</sup> -khì 受氣 (become angry) |
| 3) tã <sup>3</sup> -khài 大概 (probably)        | 11) nā <sup>3</sup> -sī 若是 (if)             |
| 4) chē <sup>3</sup> -chhia 坐車 (take a bus)    | 12) m̄ <sup>3</sup> -thang 不通 (don't)       |
| 5) lāi <sup>3</sup> -bīn 內面 (inside)          | 13) m̄ <sup>3</sup> -ká* 不敢 (not dare)      |
| 6) chē <sup>3</sup> -chío 濟少 (many or few)    | 14) tām <sup>3</sup> -poh 淡薄 (a little)     |
| 7) chū <sup>3</sup> -iú 自由 (liberty)          | 15) tã <sup>3</sup> -chì 代誌 (matter)        |
| 8) m̄ <sup>3</sup> -tiōh 不著 (wrong)           |   |

8th changes to 3rd

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1) lāk <sup>3</sup> -kho 六元 (six dollars) | 8) hāk <sup>3</sup> -seng 學生 (student)   |
| 2) chiah <sup>3</sup> pńg 吃飯 (eat rice)   | 9) sít <sup>3</sup> -tńg 食堂 (restaurant) |
| 3) lah <sup>3</sup> -chek 蠟燭 (candle)     | 10) cháp <sup>3</sup> -chí 雜誌 (magazine) |
| 4) thāk <sup>3</sup> -chheh 讀書 (study)    | 11) bāk <sup>3</sup> -chiu 目矧 (eye)      |
| 5) tak <sup>3</sup> -lāng 逐儂 (everyone)   | 12) bāk <sup>3</sup> -chúi 墨水 (ink)      |
| 6) jít <sup>3</sup> -thāu 日頭 (sun)        | 13) bōk <sup>3</sup> -koe 木瓜 (papaya)    |
| 7) hāk <sup>3</sup> -hāu 學校 (school)      |  |

Sounds

TEMPTATIONS TO AVOID

A. When a 1st tone is followed by a 2nd tone, foreigners have a tendency to lower the 1st tone. Practice the following:

1 - - - 2

chái-khí 早起 (morning)	hó-phái* 好歹 (good and bad)
kún-chúi 滾水 (boiled water)	lěng-chúi 冷水 (cold water)
tú-hó 恰好 (just right)	lěng-sián 領洗 (receive Baptism)
chóng-thóng 總統 (president)	sé-chhiú 洗手 (wash the hands)
chiáu-á 鳥仔 (bird)	niáu-chhiú 貓鼠 (rat)
kóe-chí 果子 (fruit)	khí-siáu 起稍 (crazy)
hái-chúi 海水 (sea water)	siáu-káu 稍狗 (mad dog)

B. When a 2nd tone is followed by a 1st tone, foreigners tend to lower the 1st tone.

2 - - - 1

khí-chhia 汽車 (car)	thâu-hong 透風 (the wind blows)
hoat-im 喉音 (pronunciation)	sí-kho 四顆 (four dollars)
séng-keng 聖經 (Bible)	sí-chheng 四千 (four thousand)
chō-sa* 作衫 (make clothes)	péh-soa* 爬山 (climb a mountain)
chéng-hoe 神花 (plant flowers)	chhū-pi* 柴泥 (neighbors)
pai-sa* 拜三 (Wednesday)	chián-cheng 戰爭 (war)
châu-kha 灶殼 (kitchen)	kia-phoe 寫批 (mail a letter)

MORE COMBINATIONS FOR PRACTICE

A. To practice descent from a 1st tone to a 7th tone. Try the following (1st tone followed by a 7th tone):

1 - - - 7

chúi-bīn 水面 (water surface)	só·-chāi 所在 (a place)
téng-bīn 頂面 (above)	kóng-ōe 講話 (talk)
sé-bīn 洗面 (wash the face)	chún-pī 準備 (prepare)
tán-hāu 等候 (wait for)	chháu-tē 草地 (grassy place)
pún-chhi 本市 (our city)	phái*-lō 歹路 (a poor road)
sío-piān 小便 (urinate)	iáu-bōe 猶未 (not yet)
sía-jī 寫字 (write characters)	bé-bē 買賣 (business)
chhá-mī 炒麵 (fried noodles)	



B. In order to make certain that you have clinched the difference between the eighth tone when it changes to a third and an unchanged eighth tone, practice with the following:

siok-mih 俗物 (cheap article)	phak-jit 曝日 (to sun)
chiáh-mih 食物 (foods)	hok-sip 複習 (review lessons)
ték-piát 特別 (special)	sit-lék 實力 (actual strength)
pit-giap 畢業 (graduation)	tók-lip 獨立 (independent)
tak-jit 逐日 (every day)	hak-lék 學歷 (education level)
chit jit 一日 (one day)	hok-cháp 複雜 (complicated)
peh-chhat 白賊 (a lie)	bok-liók 目錄 (table of contents)
tok-ióh 毒藥 (poison)	

C. A difficult tone combination is an 8th which changes to a third (3rd) followed by a 4th. The following should be gone over many times with a teacher. It would be fruitful to turn back to these lists for practice every month or so.

peh-sek 白色 (white)	cháp-chhit 十七 (seventeen)
peh-chhat 白漆 (white paint)	thak-chheh 讀冊 (study)
bok-tek 目的 (purpose)	hoat-phoat 活潑 (active)
lah-chek 蠟燭 (candle)	Jiok-sek 錫口 (Joseph)
bat-sat 虱 (bed-bug) 臭虫	tak-kok 逐國 (every country)
chit kak 一角 (ten cents)	goeh-kip 月薪 (monthly salary)
lak pah 六百 (six hundred)	phak-chhek 曝粟 (dry rice in the sun)
cháp-it 十一 (eleven)	

Tĕ ĩt Khò 第一課Lesson 1TUI-ŌE 對話DIALOGUE

Che ài lōa-chē chí\*? 茲愛係濟錢?

L = Lāu-su 老師

H = Hák-seng 學生

H1: Lāu-su, gáu-chá. 老師, 勢早

L1: Gáu-chá. 勢早

H2: Lāu-su, he ài lōa-chē chí\*? 老師, 奚愛係濟錢

L2: Che ài gō·-cháp-lák kho·. 茲愛五十六元  
(See Note after L5.)

H3: Góa ũ sá\*-cháp-ĭt kho·. 我有三十一元

L3: Lí ũ sá\*-cháp-ĭt kho·, í ũ lōa-chē? 他有三十一元, 伊有係濟

H4: Í ũ jī-cháp-gō· kho·. Che sī gō·-cháp-lák kho·.  
伊有二十五元 茲是五十六元

L4: Hó, tó-sīa. 好, 多謝

H5: Lāu-su, tó-sīa. 老師, 多謝

L5: Chài-kiàn. 再見

(Note: Translation will be found at end of Vocabulary.

This 1st Ls contains all the numbers from 1 to 99.)

SĪN-GÍ 新語VOCABULARY

1. ài 愛 / 喜歡 / 要 / 得 to like/love; to want/desire;  
to need/require/cost; must.

Góa ài chí\*. 我愛錢 I want/need money.

Lí ài lōa-chē? OR: Lí ài lōa-chē chí\*? 他愛係濟錢  
他愛係濟 How much do you want/need?

Góa ài gō·-kho·. I want \$5.  
我愛五元

2. chài-kiàn 再見 see you again/so long/goodbye.  
(Mandarin: dzai-jyan)

Lāu-su, chài-kiàn. Goodbye, teacher.  
老師 再見

3. che 這 this/these. (Demonstrative pronoun, not a modifier; used to refer to things, not persons.)  
 Che <sup>2</sup> ai <sup>3</sup> lōa-chē? 幾愛佢滑 How much does this cost?  
 Che <sup>3</sup> sī <sup>3</sup> jī-chap kho. 幾是二十元 This is \$20.
4. chí\* 錢 money.  
 Gōa <sup>1</sup> ū <sup>3</sup> chí\*. 我有錢 I have money.  
 Che <sup>3</sup> sī chí\*. 幾是錢 This is money.
5. Gāu-chá 早 You're around early!/Good morning. (See Vocab. Note, page 22.)  
 唔早
6. góa 我 I/me.  
 Gōa <sup>1</sup> ai <sup>2</sup> sá\* <sup>7</sup>-chap kho. 我愛三十元 I want \$30.
7. hak-seng 學生 student(s).  
 Gōa <sup>1</sup> sī <sup>3</sup> hak-seng. 我是學生 I am a student.
8. he 那 that/those. (Demonstrative pronoun, not a modifier; used to refer to things not persons.)  
 He <sup>2</sup> ai <sup>3</sup> lōa-chē? 幾愛佢滑 How much does that cost?  
 He <sup>3</sup> sī chí\*. 幾是錢 That is money.
9. hó 好 to be good; o.k/all right/fine. ("Hó" has other meanings, to be studied later, such as "well/easy/finished".)
10. i 他 / 她 he/she; him/her. (Subjective, objective cases.)  
 I <sup>7</sup> sī <sup>3</sup> Lāu-su. 伊是老師 He/She is a teacher.
11. kho. 元 dollar(s). 幾是四十元  
 Che <sup>3</sup> sī <sup>2</sup> si-chap kho. This is \$40.
12. Lāu-su 老師 teacher(s).  
 Lāu-su, <sup>3</sup> gāu-chá. 老師 唔早 Good morning, teacher.
13. lí 你 you (singular). (Subjective, objective cases)  
 Lí <sup>1</sup> ū <sup>3</sup> lōa-chē chí\*? 你有幾錢 How much money do you have?  
 幾有幾錢

14. lōa-chē 多少 how much/how many.

Che ài lōa-chē? 茲愛倍消 How much does this cost?

15. sī 是 to be.

ī sī Lāu-su, góa sī hák-seng. He is a teacher; I am a student.  
伊是老師 我是學生

16. To-sīa 多謝 Many thanks.

Lāu-su, to-sīa. Thank you, teacher.  
老師 多謝

17. ū 有 to have; there is/are.

ī ū gō-chāp kho. He has \$50.  
伊有五十 幣

TŪI-ŌE É HOAN-ÉK  
對 認 個 翻 譯

TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

How much does this cost?

L = Teacher

H = Student

- H1: Good morning, teacher.
- L1: Good morning.
- H2: How much does that cost, teacher?
- L2: This is \$56.
- H3: I have \$31.
- L3: You have \$31; how much does he have?
- H4: He has \$25. This is \$56.
- L4: OK, thank you.
- H5: Thank you, teacher.
- L5: See you again.

SĪN-GÍ É CHŪ-KAI

新 語 介 註 解

VOCABULARY NOTE

Gāu-chá (Voc. No. 5). This literally means "clever early", meaning "You're clever/good/skilful at being around early". The people in their sublime courtesy are looking for a way of praising the person they meet. "Gāu-chá" is not exactly the equivalent of "Good morning", and unlike "Good morning" is not used throughout the morning. It is used only when the speaker feels that it is "early". In farming areas its use might be limited to a short period after dawn. To a farmer 9 a.m. is not "early".

壯麗的  
崇高的

彼曉

Note that "Gâu-chá" can be spoken at night or any other time to one who is early for a meeting, etc.

SIA\*: BUN-HOAT 声; 文法      TONES; GRAMMAR

A. Each word (sound) in Taiwanese has an original tone. But in a sentence we change the tone of each word except in several cases. Some of these exceptions are as follows:

1. The last word in a sentence generally does not change tone.

Lāu-su, tó-sīa.      Thank you, teacher. (We may  
 老師 多謝 also say: Tó-sīa Lāu-su".)  
 多謝 老師

2. Single-syllable nouns generally do not change tone.

chí\* 錢

3. In nouns of 2 or more syllables the last syllable does not change tone.

Lāu-su. 老師      Hák-seng. 學生

4. "Che" and "he" do not change tone.

B. Most other words in a sentence, such as verbs and pronouns, generally change tone.

Che ái lōa-chē chí\*? 茲愛儘濟錢  
Gōa sī hák-seng. 我是學生

C. "Che" and "he" are pronouns, not modifiers, DO NOT use "che chí\*" to mean "this money".

### DRILL IN TONE CHANGES

### NUMERALS FROM 1 To 99

This first lesson is almost entirely concerned with tone changes. The following drill introduces numerals and serves as excellent practice in changing tones.

In drilling with the teacher, it is very important to keep the word "kho" up in the 1st tone. In English the final word usually drops. In speaking Taiwanese note each tone carefully.

Numerals from 1 to 10

chít	1	chít <sup>3</sup> kho·	\$1.
n̄ng	2	n̄ng <sup>3</sup> kho·	\$2.
sa*	3	sá <sup>7</sup> * kho·	\$3.
sì	4	sì <sup>2</sup> kho·	\$4.
gō·	5	gō <sup>3</sup> · kho·	\$5.
lāk	6	lāk <sup>3</sup> kho·	\$6.
chhit	7	chhit <sup>2</sup> kho·	\$7.
peh	8	peh <sup>2</sup> kho·	\$8.
káu	9	káu <sup>1</sup> kho·	\$9.
cháp	10	cháp <sup>3</sup> kho·	\$10.

The numeral 1 is sometimes pronounced and spelled "it", and the numeral 2 is sometimes pronounced and spelled "jī", as in the combinations 11 and 12.

8th changes to 3rd

chít <sup>3</sup> kho·	\$1.	cháp-gō <sup>3</sup> · kho·	\$15.
cháp <sup>3</sup> kho·	\$10.	cháp-lāk <sup>3</sup> kho·	\$16.
cháp-ít <sup>2</sup> kho·	\$11.	cháp-chhit <sup>2</sup> kho·	\$17.
cháp-jī <sup>3</sup> kho·	\$12.	cháp-peh <sup>2</sup> kho·	\$18.
cháp-sá <sup>7</sup> * kho·	\$13.	cháp-káu <sup>1</sup> kho·	\$19.
cháp-sì <sup>2</sup> kho·	\$14.		

7th changes to 3rd

n̄ng <sup>3</sup> kho·	\$2.
jī <sup>3</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> kho·	\$20.
jī <sup>3</sup> -cháp-ít <sup>2</sup> kho· (jī <sup>3</sup> -ít <sup>2</sup> kho·)	\$21.

$j\bar{i}^3$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $j\bar{i}^3$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $j\bar{i}^3$ - $j\bar{i}^3$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$22.
$j\bar{i}^3$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $s\bar{a}^7$ * kho <sup>•</sup> ( $j\bar{i}^3$ - $s\bar{a}^7$ * kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$23.
$j\bar{i}^3$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $s\bar{i}^2$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $j\bar{i}^3$ - $s\bar{i}^2$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$24.
$j\bar{i}^3$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $g\bar{o}^3$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $j\bar{i}^3$ - $g\bar{o}^3$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$25.
$j\bar{i}^3$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $l\bar{a}k^3$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $j\bar{i}^3$ - $l\bar{a}k^3$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$26.
$j\bar{i}^3$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $chh\bar{i}t^2$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $j\bar{i}^3$ - $chh\bar{i}t^2$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$27.
$j\bar{i}^3$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $p\bar{e}h^2$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $j\bar{i}^3$ - $p\bar{e}h^2$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$28.
$j\bar{i}^3$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $k\bar{a}u^1$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $j\bar{i}^3$ - $k\bar{a}u^1$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$29.

---

1st changes to 7th

$s\bar{a}^7$ * kho <sup>•</sup>	\$3.	$s\bar{a}^7$ *- $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $g\bar{o}^3$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$35.
$s\bar{a}^7$ *- $ch\bar{a}p^3$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$30.	$s\bar{a}^7$ *- $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $l\bar{a}k^3$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$36.
$s\bar{a}^7$ *- $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $i\bar{t}^2$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$31.	$s\bar{a}^7$ *- $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $chh\bar{i}t^2$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$37.
$s\bar{a}^7$ *- $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $j\bar{i}^3$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$32.	$s\bar{a}^7$ *- $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $p\bar{e}h^2$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$38.
$s\bar{a}^7$ *- $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $s\bar{a}^7$ * kho <sup>•</sup>	\$33.	$s\bar{a}^7$ *- $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $k\bar{a}u^1$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$39.
$s\bar{a}^7$ *- $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $s\bar{i}^2$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$34.		

---

3rd changes to 2nd

$s\bar{i}^2$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$4.
$s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ kho <sup>•</sup>	\$40.
$s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $i\bar{t}^2$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $i\bar{t}^2$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$41.
$s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $j\bar{i}^3$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $j\bar{i}^3$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$42.
$s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $s\bar{a}^7$ * kho <sup>•</sup> ( $s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $s\bar{a}^7$ * kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$43.
$s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $s\bar{i}^2$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $s\bar{i}^2$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$44.
$s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $g\bar{o}^3$ kho <sup>•</sup> ( $s\bar{i}^2$ - $ch\bar{a}p^3$ - $g\bar{o}^3$ kho <sup>•</sup> )	\$45.

s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> -ch <sup>3</sup> ap-l <sup>3</sup> ak kho° (s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> ap-l <sup>3</sup> ak kho°)	\$46.
s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> -ch <sup>3</sup> ap- <sup>2</sup> hhit kho° (s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> ap- <sup>2</sup> hhit kho°)	\$47.
s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> -ch <sup>3</sup> ap-p <sup>2</sup> eh kho° (s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> ap-p <sup>2</sup> eh kho°)	\$48.
s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> -ch <sup>3</sup> ap-k <sup>1</sup> au kho° (s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> ap-k <sup>1</sup> au kho°)	\$49.

<u>7th changes to 3rd</u>		<u>8th changes to 3rd</u>	
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> ° kho°	\$5.	l <sup>3</sup> ak kho°	\$6.
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> °-ch <sup>3</sup> ap kho°	\$50.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-ch <sup>3</sup> ap kho°	\$60.
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> °-ch <sup>3</sup> ap- <sup>2</sup> it kho°	\$51.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-ch <sup>3</sup> ap- <sup>2</sup> it kho°	\$61.
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> °-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-j <sup>3</sup> i kho°	\$52.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-j <sup>3</sup> i kho°	\$62.
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> °-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>7</sup> * kho°	\$53.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>7</sup> * kho°	\$63.
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> °-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> kho°	\$54.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> kho°	\$64.
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> °-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> ° kho°	\$55.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> ° kho°	\$65.
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> °-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-l <sup>3</sup> ak kho°	\$56.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-l <sup>3</sup> ak kho°	\$66.
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> °-ch <sup>3</sup> ap- <sup>2</sup> hhit kho°	\$57.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-ch <sup>3</sup> ap- <sup>2</sup> hhit kho°	\$67.
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> °-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-p <sup>2</sup> eh kho°	\$58.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-p <sup>2</sup> eh kho°	\$68.
g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> °-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-k <sup>1</sup> au kho°	\$59.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-k <sup>1</sup> au kho°	\$69.

<u>4th changes to 2nd</u>			
ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it kho°	\$7.	ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-g <sup>3</sup> <sub>o</sub> ° kho°	\$75.
ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it-ch <sup>3</sup> ap kho°	\$70.	ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-l <sup>3</sup> ak kho°	\$76.
ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it-ch <sup>3</sup> ap- <sup>2</sup> it kho°	\$71.	ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it-ch <sup>3</sup> ap- <sup>2</sup> hhit kho°	\$77.
ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-j <sup>3</sup> i kho°	\$72.	ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-p <sup>2</sup> eh kho°	\$78.
ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>7</sup> * kho°	\$73.	ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-k <sup>1</sup> au kho°	\$79.
ch <sup>2</sup> <sub>h</sub> it-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> kho°	\$74.		



p <sup>2</sup> eh kho <sup>•</sup>	\$8.	p <sup>2</sup> eh-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-g <sup>3</sup> o <sup>•</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	Ls 1 \$85
p <sup>2</sup> eh-ch <sup>3</sup> ap kho <sup>•</sup>	\$80.	p <sup>2</sup> eh-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-l <sup>3</sup> ak kho <sup>•</sup>	\$86.
p <sup>2</sup> eh-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-i <sup>2</sup> t kho <sup>•</sup>	\$81.	p <sup>2</sup> eh-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-chh <sup>2</sup> it kho <sup>•</sup>	\$87.
p <sup>2</sup> eh-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-j <sup>3</sup> i kho <sup>•</sup>	\$82.	p <sup>2</sup> eh-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-p <sup>2</sup> eh kho <sup>•</sup>	\$88.
p <sup>2</sup> eh-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>7</sup> a* kho <sup>•</sup>	\$83.	p <sup>2</sup> eh-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-k <sup>1</sup> au kho <sup>•</sup>	\$89.
p <sup>2</sup> eh-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>2</sup> i kho <sup>•</sup>	\$84.		

2nd changes to 1st

k <sup>1</sup> au kho <sup>•</sup>	\$9.	k <sup>1</sup> au-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-g <sup>3</sup> o <sup>•</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$95.
k <sup>1</sup> au-ch <sup>3</sup> ap kho <sup>•</sup>	\$90.	k <sup>1</sup> au-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-l <sup>3</sup> ak kho <sup>•</sup>	\$96.
k <sup>1</sup> au-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-i <sup>2</sup> t kho <sup>•</sup>	\$91.	k <sup>1</sup> au-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-chh <sup>2</sup> it kho <sup>•</sup>	\$97.
k <sup>1</sup> au-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-j <sup>3</sup> i kho <sup>•</sup>	\$92.	k <sup>1</sup> au-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-p <sup>2</sup> eh kho <sup>•</sup>	\$98.
k <sup>1</sup> au-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>7</sup> a* kho <sup>•</sup>	\$93.	k <sup>1</sup> au-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-k <sup>1</sup> au kho <sup>•</sup>	\$99.
k <sup>1</sup> au-ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>2</sup> i kho <sup>•</sup>	\$94.		

To say "1 or 2 dollars", "2 or 3 dollars", etc., we say:

"ch<sup>3</sup>it-n<sup>3</sup>ng kho<sup>•</sup>", "n<sup>3</sup>ng-s<sup>7</sup>a\* kho<sup>•</sup>", etc.

ch <sup>3</sup> it-n <sup>3</sup> ng kho <sup>•</sup>	\$1 or \$2.	g <sup>3</sup> o <sup>•</sup> -l <sup>3</sup> ak kho <sup>•</sup>	\$5 or \$6.
n <sup>3</sup> ng-s <sup>7</sup> a* kho <sup>•</sup>	\$2 or \$3.	l <sup>3</sup> ak-chh <sup>2</sup> it kho <sup>•</sup>	\$6 or \$7.
s <sup>7</sup> a*-s <sup>2</sup> i kho <sup>•</sup>	\$3 or \$4.	chh <sup>2</sup> it-p <sup>2</sup> eh kho <sup>•</sup>	\$7 or \$8.
s <sup>2</sup> i-g <sup>3</sup> o <sup>•</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$4 or \$5.	p <sup>2</sup> eh-k <sup>1</sup> au kho <sup>•</sup>	\$8 or \$9.

ch <sup>3</sup> ap-i <sup>2</sup> t-j <sup>3</sup> i kho <sup>•</sup>	\$11 or \$12.	ch <sup>3</sup> ap-g <sup>3</sup> o <sup>•</sup> -l <sup>3</sup> ak kho <sup>•</sup>	\$15 or \$16.
ch <sup>3</sup> ap-j <sup>3</sup> i-s <sup>7</sup> a* kho <sup>•</sup>	\$12 or \$13.	ch <sup>3</sup> ap-l <sup>3</sup> ak-chh <sup>2</sup> it kho <sup>•</sup>	\$16 or \$17.
ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>7</sup> a*-s <sup>2</sup> i kho <sup>•</sup>	\$13 or \$14.	ch <sup>3</sup> ap-chh <sup>2</sup> it-p <sup>2</sup> eh kho <sup>•</sup>	\$17 or \$18.
ch <sup>3</sup> ap-s <sup>2</sup> i-g <sup>3</sup> o <sup>•</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$14 or \$15.	ch <sup>3</sup> ap-p <sup>2</sup> eh-k <sup>1</sup> au kho <sup>•</sup>	\$18 or \$19.

ít-jī <sup>3</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	Lit., \$10 or \$20, but means \$1 <sup>0</sup> to \$20.
jī <sup>3</sup> -sá <sup>7</sup> *-cháp <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	NB. Here say "it...", NOT "chít...". \$20 or \$30. Here say "jī <sup>3</sup> ...", NOT "nng..."
sá <sup>7</sup> *-sī <sup>2</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$30 or \$40.
sī <sup>2</sup> -gō <sup>3</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$40 or \$50.
gō <sup>3</sup> -lák <sup>3</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$50 or \$60.
lák <sup>3</sup> -chhít <sup>2</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$60 or \$70.
chhít <sup>2</sup> -pēh <sup>2</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$70 or \$80.
pēh <sup>2</sup> -káu <sup>1</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$80 or \$90.

jī <sup>3</sup> -ít <sup>2</sup> -jī <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$21 or \$22.
jī <sup>3</sup> -jī <sup>3</sup> -sá <sup>7</sup> * kho <sup>•</sup>	\$22 or \$23.
sá <sup>7</sup> *-cháp <sup>3</sup> -sá <sup>7</sup> *-sī <sup>2</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$33 or \$34.
sī <sup>2</sup> ap-sī <sup>2</sup> -gō <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$44 or \$45.
gō <sup>3</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> -gō <sup>3</sup> -lák <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$55 or \$56.
lák <sup>3</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> -lák <sup>3</sup> -chhít <sup>2</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$66 or \$67.
chhít <sup>2</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> -chhít <sup>2</sup> -pēh <sup>2</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$77 or \$78.
pēh <sup>2</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> -pēh <sup>2</sup> -káu <sup>1</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$88 or \$89.
káu <sup>1</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup> -ít <sup>2</sup> -jī <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>•</sup>	\$91 or \$92.

KÙ 句

SENTENCES

I. Che <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>3</sup>lōa-chē <sup>3</sup>chī\*?  
 (OR: Che <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>3</sup>lōa-chē?)

How much does this cost?

He <sup>2</sup>ài

That costs

- { jī-jī kho°. 22
- { gō<sup>3</sup>-cháp-ít kho°. 51
- { sǎ\*-cháp-lák kho°. 36
- { pēh-cháp-pēh kho°. 88
- { sǎ\*-cháp-ít kho°. 31
- { sǐ<sup>2</sup>-cháp-chhít kho°. 47
- { siap-gō<sup>3</sup> kho°. 45
- { kǎu-cháp-kǎu kho°. 99
- { pēh-cháp-ít kho°. 81
- { nǎng-sǎ\* kho°. 2-3

II. He <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>3</sup>lōa-chē <sup>3</sup>chī\*? 夏受倍價錢 What does that cost?  
 (OR: He <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>3</sup>lōa-chē?)

Che <sup>2</sup>ài

This costs

- { cháp-kǎu kho°. 19
- { sǎ\*-cháp-ít kho°. 31
- { jī-cháp-ít kho°. 21
- { pēh-cháp-sǎ\* kho°. 83
- { gō<sup>3</sup>-cháp-chhít kho°. 57
- { chhít-cháp-ít kho°. 21
- { pēh kho°. 8
- { cháp-sǎ\* kho°. 13
- { kǎu-cháp-jī kho°. 92
- { lák-cháp-chhít kho°. 67
- { siap-sǎ\* kho°. 43

Che <sup>2</sup>ài

This costs

- { lák-cháp-gō<sup>3</sup> kho°. 65
- { cháp-jī kho°. 12
- { pēh-cháp-pēh kho°. 88
- { lák-cháp-ít kho°. 61
- { sǐ<sup>2</sup>-cháp-lák kho°. 46
- { pēh-kǎu kho°. 8-9
- { chhít-cháp-sǐ<sup>2</sup> kho°. 74
- { cháp-chhít kho°. 17
- { kǎu-cháp-chhít kho°. 97
- { lák kho°. 6
- { sǎ\*-sǐ<sup>2</sup>-cháp kho°. 30-40

III. Lí <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>3</sup> lōa-chē chí\*?

How much money do you have?

- |                                 |   |   |
|---------------------------------|---|---|
| Góa <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> ũ | { | sá* <sup>7</sup> kho°. 3  |
|                                 |   | jī-chap-jī <sup>3</sup> kho°. 22 (OR: jī-jī <sup>3</sup> kho°). |
|                                 |   | pēh-chap-gō <sup>3</sup> kho°. 85                               |
|                                 |   | sī-chap-sī <sup>2</sup> kho°. 44                                |
|                                 |   | lāk-chap-lāk <sup>3</sup> kho°. 66                              |
|                                 |   | chap-ít <sup>3</sup> kho°. 11                                   |
|                                 |   | sá*-chap-gō <sup>3</sup> kho°. 35                               |
|                                 |   | chap-chhít <sup>3</sup> kho°. 17                                |
|                                 |   | chít <sup>3</sup> kho°. 1                                       |
|                                 |   | chhít-chap-ít <sup>3</sup> kho°. 71                             |

Lí <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>3</sup> ãi lōa-chē chí\*?

How much money do you want?

- |                                  |   |   |
|----------------------------------|---|---|
| Góa <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> ãi | { | sá*-chap-chhít <sup>3</sup> kho°. 37                        |
|                                  |   | gō-chap-ít <sup>3</sup> kho°. 51                            |
|                                  |   | chhít-chap-káu <sup>3</sup> kho°. 79                        |
|                                  |   | jī-chap-ít <sup>3</sup> kho° (OR: jī-ít <sup>3</sup> kho°). |
|                                  |   | nāng <sup>3</sup> kho°. 2 21                                |
|                                  |   | chhít <sup>2</sup> kho°. 7                                  |
|                                  |   | pēh-chap-pēh <sup>3</sup> kho°. 88                          |
|                                  |   | sī-chap-sá* <sup>2</sup> kho°. 43                           |
|                                  |   | káu-chap-káu <sup>3</sup> kho°. 99                          |
|                                  |   | sī <sup>2</sup> kho°. 4                                     |

IV.  $\overset{7}{\underset{1}{i}} \overset{3}{\underset{3}{u}}$  l $\overset{3}{o}$ a-ch $\overset{3}{e}$  ch $\overset{3}{i}$ \*?

How much money does he have?

$\overset{7}{\underset{1}{i}} \overset{3}{\underset{3}{u}}$  {
   
 $\overset{3}{l}$ ak-ch $\overset{2}{h}$ it kho $\cdot$ . 6~7
   
 $\overset{2}{p}$ eh-k $\overset{1}{a}$ u-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p kho $\cdot$ . 80~90
   
 $\overset{2}{c}$ h $\overset{2}{h}$ it-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p-s $\overset{7}{a}$ \* kho $\cdot$ . 73
   
 $\overset{3}{l}$ ak-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p-j $\overset{3}{i}$ -s $\overset{7}{a}$ \* kho $\cdot$ . 62~63
   
 $\overset{3}{c}$ h $\overset{3}{a}$ p- $\overset{2}{i}$ t-j $\overset{3}{i}$  kho $\cdot$ . 11~12
   
 $\overset{3}{j}$ i-k $\overset{1}{a}$ u kho $\cdot$ . 29
   
 $\overset{7}{s}$ a\*-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p-g $\overset{3}{o}$  kho $\cdot$ . 35
   
 $\overset{3}{g}$ o\*-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p-j $\overset{3}{i}$  kho $\cdot$ . 52
   
 $\overset{2}{p}$ eh-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p-s $\overset{7}{a}$ \*-s $\overset{2}{i}$  kho $\cdot$ . 83~84
   
 $\overset{2}{c}$ h $\overset{2}{h}$ it-p $\overset{2}{e}$ h kho $\cdot$ . 7~8

$\overset{7}{\underset{1}{i}}$  a $\overset{2}{i}$  l $\overset{3}{o}$ a-ch $\overset{3}{e}$  ch $\overset{3}{i}$ \*?

How much money does he want/need?

$\overset{7}{\underset{1}{i}}$  a $\overset{2}{i}$  {
   
 $\overset{1}{k}$ au-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p-ch $\overset{2}{h}$ it kho $\cdot$ . 97
   
 $\overset{3}{j}$ i-ch $\overset{2}{h}$ it kho $\cdot$ .
   
 $\overset{3}{c}$ h $\overset{3}{a}$ p-s $\overset{2}{i}$  kho $\cdot$ .
   
 $\overset{3}{l}$ ak-ch $\overset{2}{h}$ it-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p kho $\cdot$ .
   
 $\overset{3}{c}$ h $\overset{3}{a}$ p-p $\overset{2}{e}$ h-k $\overset{1}{a}$ u kho $\cdot$ .
   
 $\overset{2}{s}$ iap-p $\overset{2}{e}$ h kho $\cdot$ .
   
 $\overset{3}{g}$ o\*-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p-s $\overset{7}{a}$ \* kho $\cdot$ .
   
 $\overset{3}{l}$ ak-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p-j $\overset{3}{i}$ -s $\overset{7}{a}$ \* kho $\cdot$ .
   
 $\overset{3}{j}$ i-j $\overset{3}{i}$ -s $\overset{7}{a}$ \* kho $\cdot$ .
   
 $\overset{2}{p}$ eh-k $\overset{1}{a}$ u-ch $\overset{3}{a}$ p kho $\cdot$ . 80~90

V. Che sī<sup>3</sup> lōa-chē<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>4</sup>\*?

How much money is this?

1. He sī<sup>3</sup> nāng kho<sup>•</sup>.

7. He sī<sup>3</sup> chap-pēh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>.

2. He sī<sup>3</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>.

8. He sī<sup>3</sup> pēh-chap<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>.

3. He sī<sup>3</sup> sá<sup>7</sup>\* kho<sup>•</sup>.

9. He sī<sup>3</sup> sí<sup>2</sup>-chap-ít<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>.

4. He sī<sup>3</sup> chap-jí<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>.

10. He sī<sup>3</sup> káu-chap-gō<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>.

5. He sī<sup>3</sup> jí<sup>3</sup>-chap-jí<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>.

11. He sī<sup>3</sup> jí<sup>3</sup>-pēh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>.

6. He sī<sup>3</sup> gō<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>.

12. He sī<sup>3</sup> síap-sí<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>.

VI. 1. Lāu-su, gáu-chá<sup>7</sup>.

7. Góa sī<sup>3</sup> Lāu-su.

2. Góa sī<sup>3</sup> hák-seng.

8. Í sī<sup>3</sup> hák-seng. 伊是學生

3. Lí sī<sup>3</sup> Lāu-su.

9. Lāu-su, chài-kian. 老師, 再見

4. Í ū chí<sup>4</sup>\*. 伊有錢

10. Lāu-su, tō-sīa.

5. Góa ài chí<sup>4</sup>\*.

11. Í sī<sup>3</sup> Lāu-su.

6. He sī<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>4</sup>\*.

12. Tō-sīa, chài-kian.

VII. Translate from English into Taiwanese

1. How much money do you have? 汝有幾多錢

2. He is a teacher. 伊是老師

3. I am a student. 我是學生

4. This is money. 這是錢

5. I have \$44. 我有四十四元  
slap-sí\*

6. This costs \$96. 此愛九十六元

7. This costs \$8 or \$9. 此愛八、九元

8. Thank you, teacher. 多謝, 老師

The following sentences are the Taiwanese equivalent of the above. It is best to translate the above in class before looking at these.

1. Lí ū lōa-chē chí\*?
2. Í sī Lāu-su.
3. Góa sī hāk-seng.
4. Che sī chí\*.
5. Góa ū sī-chāp-sī (siāp-sī) kho'.
6. Che ai káu-chāp-lāk kho'.
7. Che ai pēh-káu kho'.
8. Tó-sīa Lāu-su/Lāu-su, tó-sīa.

Tē Jī Khò

L...on 2

TUI-ŌE

DIALOGUE

Góan sī hák-seng 阮是學生

B = Bok-su 牧師

H = Hák-seng

B1: Gáu-chá. 齋早

H1: Gáu-chá.

B2: Lín sī hák-seng, sī bó·? 他是學生, 是嗎?

H2: Sī, góan sī hák-seng. Lí sī Sín-hū, sī bó·? 神父

B3: M-sī, góan m-sī Sín-hū. Góan sī Bok-su. Chhia\* lín chē. 牧師 請 坐

H3: Tó-sīa.

B4: Lín ài chiah sim-mih? Góan chhia\* lín chiah koe-chí. 果子

H4: Tó-sīa. Bok-su, góan ài khòa\*-chheh; lí ũ chheh bó·? 看 冊

B5: Ū, che sī chheh, chhia\* lín khòa\*.

H5: Bok-su, lí ài khòa\*-chheh bó·?

B6: Aì. Lín ài chiah png bó·? Góan ũ png. 哈 針

H6: Tó-sīa. Bok-su, chài-kiàn.

B7: Chài-kiàn. Chhia\* kón lái chē. 請 閣 來 坐

## SIN-GÍ

## VOCABULARY

1. bó 沒有; 無 not/no/none/not have/without. (Negative of "ū", Ls. 1.)

Góan bó chí\*. I have no money.

2. bó·? 嗎? or not? (Used at the end of a sentence to make it interrogative. Note the 5th tone changed to 3rd.-- see Grammar Note on Enclitics. "Bó·" is often pronounced as "bó" - without the dot.)

Lí ũ chí\* bó·? Have you any money?



無愛

3. bō<sup>7</sup> ài 不喜歡 / 不要 not like/not want/to dislike.  
 Góa bō<sup>7</sup> ài khòa<sup>2</sup>\*-chheh. I don't want (OR: like) to read.
4. Bōk<sup>3</sup>-su 牧師 (of Protestant clergy) minister/Reverend.  
 (Used also in direct address.)
5. Bōk<sup>3</sup>-su<sup>7</sup>-niū 牧師娘 wife of a Protestant minister.  
 (Used also in direct address.)
6. chē 坐 to sit; (with vehicle) to ride/take.  
 Chhia<sup>1</sup>\* chē. Please have a seat.
7. chheh 書 book(s).  
 Lí ũ<sup>3</sup> chheh bō<sup>3</sup>\*? Have you any books?
8. chhia\* 請 Please (request)/to invite/treat to.  
 Chhia<sup>1</sup>\* in<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-png. Invite them to eat.  
 Chhia<sup>1</sup>\* lín<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-png. Please eat.
9. chia<sup>1</sup> 吃 to eat. (See Vocab. Note. P. 37.)  
 chia<sup>3</sup>-png. to eat rice/to eat/have a meal.  
 In bō<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-png. They don't want to eat. OR:  
 They don't like to eat rice.
10. góan 我們 we/us ("Góan" excludes the person(s) spoken to. Compare with "lán", Voc. No. 15.)
11. in 他(她)們 they/them.
12. khòa\* 看 to look at (with the determined purpose of seeing, distinguished from "happen to see")/to watch/see; (with "chheh") to read.  
 khòa<sup>2</sup>\*-chheh to read a book/to read.  
 Góa ài<sup>2</sup> khòa<sup>2</sup>\*-chheh. I like to read.
13. kōe-chí 水果 fruit.  
 Lí ài<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> kōe-chí bō<sup>3</sup>\*? Do you like to eat fruit?

Ls 2

再來坐

14. k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>1</sup> l<sup>1</sup>ai ch<sup>7</sup>ē./Ch<sup>2</sup>i<sup>2</sup>ah k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup> l<sup>1</sup>ai ch<sup>7</sup>ē. 再來坐 / 再光臨  
Come again. (Lit., Again come to sit./Then again come to sit.) (Spoken by host to visitor who is leaving the house or by businessman to customer who is leaving the shop. Answer: "Hó!" OR: "Hó! Hó!".)

Chh<sup>1</sup>ia\* l<sup>1</sup> k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup> l<sup>1</sup>ai ch<sup>7</sup>ē. Please come again.

15. lán 我們 we/us (includes the person(s) spoken to).

16. lín 你們 you (plural in subjective and objective cases; in possessive case can be singular).

17. m̄-sī 不是 not be (negates the statement; Negative of "sī", Ls 1.)

He m̄-sī chí\*. That is not money.

18. p<sup>3</sup>ng 飯 (cooked) rice/food.

Che sī p<sup>3</sup>ng, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? Is this rice?

19. sī bō<sup>3</sup>? 是嗎? Is that right?/Is it so?/Is it or not?  
(Used at the end of a sentence to make it interrogative.)

Lí sī Bōk-su, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? Are you a minister?

20. sīm-mih<sup>2</sup>? 什麼? what/any/anything. (The "mih" in "sīm-mih" is always in the 2d tone.)

í ai sīm-mih<sup>2</sup>? What does he want?

í bō<sup>7</sup> ai sīm-mih<sup>2</sup>. He doesn't want anything.

í bō<sup>7</sup> sīm-mih<sup>2</sup> ai chi<sup>1</sup>ah. He doesn't care to eat./  
He doesn't feel very much like eating.

21. sīn-hū 神父 priest(s)/(in direct address:) Father.  
(Lit., Spiritual Father.)

TŪI-ŌE É HOAN-ÉK

TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

We Are Students

B = Minister

H = Student

B1: Good morning.

H1: Good morning.

B2: You're students, aren't you?

- H2: Yes, we are students. You're a priest, aren't you?/Are you a priest?  
 B3: No, I'm not a priest. I'm a minister. Please have a seat.  
 H3: Thank you.  
 B4: What would you like to eat? Have some fruit (lit., I invite you to eat fruit).  
 H4: Thanks. We like reading, Reverend; do you have any books?  
 B5: Yes, these are books; help yourself (lit., I invite you to read).  
 H5: Do you like to read, Reverend?  
 B6: Yes. Do you want to eat? We have food.  
 H6: Thank you. Goodbye, Reverend.  
 B7: So long. Please come again (lit., Please again come to sit).

---

TŪI-ŌE É CHŪ-KÁI

NOTES ON DIALOGUE

1. Note the different answers that are translated "Yes":

H2: "SĪ."      B5: "Ū."      B6: "AĪ."

To answer a question we very often use the same verb used in the question. If no negative is used, it means an affirmative answer.

2. H6: "TŌ-sĭa." From this response alone we would not know whether the students ate the food or not. We know from "Goodbye" that they did not eat. People will frequently invite visitors to eat if it is anywhere near meal time, and visitors will ordinarily refuse. Later we will learn other ways of answering such invitations.

---

SĪN-GĪ É CHŪ-KÁI

VOCABULARY NOTES

"Chiah" (Voc. No. 9) means "to eat", but in future lessons we will translate it in many other ways, such as: "to live (to such an age); take (medicine/snuff); smoke (tobacco); drink (wine and many other liquids); suckle (mother's milk)".

"Chiah-png" means literally "to eat rice". But as ordinarily used it means "to eat a meal", even if rice is not eaten at the meal.

"Png" (Voc. No. 18). Only cooked rice is "png". There is a different name for rice at each of its stages of production.

1. "Góan" and "Lán"

Are you including me or excluding me?

A peculiarity of Taiwanese is that it has 2 forms of the 1st Person Plural:

"Góan" (No. 10) excludes the person spoken to.

"Lán" (No. 15) includes the person spoken to.

a) Góan bō<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? We don't want to eat, do you?

b) Lán bō<sup>7</sup> chí<sup>1</sup>\*. We (you and I) don't have any money.

2. Singular and Plural of Nouns

The PLURAL form of nouns is the same as the SINGULAR.

chheh = book(s)    Bōk-su<sup>3</sup> = minister(s)    Sín-hū<sup>7</sup> = priest(s)

Note: We shall learn later how to say "one book, 2 books, this book". Do not attempt at this time to learn these expressions because they involve a further point of grammar.

3. Enclitics

"Bō<sup>3</sup>" (No. 2 in Vocab.) means "(or) not?" It ordinarily need not be translated, however; its function is to make a sentence interrogative.

"Bō<sup>3</sup>" is an enclitic. An ENCLITIC is a word or particle without an independent accent, treated in pronunciation as forming a part of the preceding word; like the English "thee" in "prithe" and the "not" in "cannot" (Webster). In Taiwanese speech the last word of a sentence usually does not change tone. An enclitic, however, is in the 3rd tone, regardless of the original tone of the word.

Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> kōe-chí<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Do you want to eat fruit?

1) Aì<sup>1</sup>, gōa<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> kōe-chí<sup>1</sup>. Yes, I want to eat fruit.

2) Bō<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup>, gōa<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>1</sup>. No, I don't want to eat.

4. To Form a Question

There are many ways of forming questions. In these 2 lessons we have several. We may use such terms as:

Voc. No. 2: bō<sup>3</sup>? No. 19: sī bō<sup>3</sup>? No. 20: sīm-mīh?  
lōa-chē<sup>3</sup>? (Ls 1)

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Do you want to eat?/Do you want to eat it?
- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> Sīn-hū<sup>7</sup>, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? Are you a priest?
- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> sīm-mīh<sup>2</sup>? What do you want to eat?
- d) He<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>3</sup> lōa-chē<sup>3</sup> chí\*<sup>3</sup>? How much does that cost?  
落 價

5. To Answer a Question

There are many ways of answering. One of the most common is to use the same verb that was used in the question.

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Do you want to eat?
- 1) Ai<sup>1</sup>. Yes (lit., Want).
- 2) Bō<sup>7</sup> ai<sup>1</sup>. No.
- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> sīm-mīh<sup>2</sup>? What do you want?
- 1) Goán<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup>. We want to eat.
- 2) Goán<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> sīm-mīh<sup>2</sup>. We don't want anything.
- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> chheh<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Do you have a book?/Do you have any books?
- 1) Ū, gōa<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> chheh. Yes, I have a book./Yes, I have some books.
- 2) Bō<sup>1</sup>, gōa<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chheh. No, I don't have any book(s).
- NB. "Sī" is used to affirm a statement; "m-sī" to negate a statement.
- d) Lí<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> Bōk-su<sup>3</sup>, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? Are you a minister?/You are a minister, are you?
- 1) Sī, gōa<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> Bōk-su<sup>3</sup>. Yes, I am a minister.

2)  $\overset{3}{\bar{M}}\text{-s}\bar{i}$ ,  $\overset{1}{g}\overset{3}{o}\overset{3}{a}$   $\overset{3}{\bar{m}}\text{-s}\bar{i}$   $\overset{3}{B}\overset{3}{o}\overset{3}{k}\text{-su}$ . No, I am not a minister.

e) Che  $\overset{3}{s}\bar{i}$   $\overset{1}{k}\overset{2}{o}\overset{2}{e}\text{-ch}\overset{1}{i}$ ,  $\overset{3}{s}\bar{i}$   $\overset{3}{b}\overset{3}{o}$ ? This is fruit, isn't it?

1)  $\overset{3}{S}\bar{i}$ , che  $\overset{3}{s}\bar{i}$   $\overset{1}{k}\overset{2}{o}\overset{2}{e}\text{-ch}\overset{1}{i}$ . Yes, this is fruit.

2)  $\overset{3}{\bar{M}}\text{-s}\bar{i}$ , che  $\overset{3}{\bar{m}}\text{-s}\bar{i}$   $\overset{1}{k}\overset{2}{o}\overset{2}{e}\text{-ch}\overset{1}{i}$ . No, this is not fruit.

$\overset{3}{L}\bar{E}\text{-K}\bar{U}$

PATTERN SENTENCES

1. Che  $\overset{3}{s}\bar{i}$   $\overset{1}{s}\bar{i}\overset{2}{m}\text{-m}\overset{2}{i}\overset{2}{h}$ ?

He  $\overset{3}{s}\bar{i}$   $\overset{1}{s}\bar{i}\overset{2}{m}\text{-m}\overset{2}{i}\overset{2}{h}$ ?

Che  $\overset{3}{s}\bar{i}$

He  $\overset{3}{s}\bar{i}$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ch}\overset{1}{i}\overset{2}{*}. \\ \text{chheh.} \end{array} \right.$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{k}\overset{1}{o}\overset{2}{e}\text{-ch}\overset{1}{i}. \\ \text{p}\bar{n}\bar{g}. \end{array} \right.$

2. a)  $\overset{1}{L}\bar{i}$   $\overset{3}{\bar{u}}$   $\overset{1}{s}\bar{i}\overset{2}{m}\text{-m}\overset{2}{i}\overset{2}{h}$ ?

$\overset{1}{G}\overset{1}{o}\overset{1}{a}$   $\overset{7}{b}\overset{7}{o}$   $\overset{1}{s}\bar{i}\overset{2}{m}\text{-m}\overset{2}{i}\overset{2}{h}$ .

$\overset{1}{G}\overset{1}{o}\overset{3}{\bar{u}}$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{k}\overset{1}{o}\overset{2}{e}\text{-ch}\overset{1}{i}. \\ \text{chheh.} \end{array} \right.$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{p}\bar{n}\bar{g}. \\ \text{ch}\overset{1}{i}\overset{2}{*}. \end{array} \right.$

b)  $\overset{1}{L}\bar{i}\overset{2}{n}$   $\overset{2}{\bar{a}}\bar{i}$   $\overset{1}{s}\bar{i}\overset{2}{m}\text{-m}\overset{2}{i}\overset{2}{h}$ ?

$\overset{1}{G}\overset{1}{o}\overset{1}{a}$   $\overset{7}{b}\overset{7}{o}$   $\overset{2}{\bar{a}}\bar{i}$   $\overset{1}{s}\bar{i}\overset{2}{m}\text{-m}\overset{2}{i}\overset{2}{h}$ .

$\overset{1}{G}\overset{1}{o}\overset{2}{\bar{a}}\bar{i}$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{p}\bar{n}\bar{g}. \\ \text{ch}\overset{1}{i}\overset{2}{*}. \end{array} \right.$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{chheh.} \\ \text{k}\overset{1}{o}\overset{2}{e}\text{-ch}\overset{1}{i}. \end{array} \right.$

3.  $\overset{1}{L}\bar{i}\overset{2}{n}$

$\overset{7}{\bar{i}}\bar{n}$

$\overset{1}{G}\overset{1}{o}\overset{1}{a}\bar{n}$

$\overset{1}{L}\bar{a}\bar{n}$

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \overset{3}{\bar{u}}$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{chheh.} \\ \text{k}\overset{1}{o}\overset{2}{e}\text{-ch}\overset{1}{i}. \end{array} \right.$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ch}\overset{1}{i}\overset{2}{*}. \\ \text{p}\bar{n}\bar{g}. \end{array} \right.$

GOÁN = We - not you.

LÁN = We - you and I.

4.  $\overset{1}{G}\overset{1}{o}\overset{1}{a}$

$\overset{1}{L}\bar{i}$

$\overset{7}{\bar{i}}$

$\overset{3}{B}\overset{3}{o}\overset{3}{k}\text{-su}$

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \overset{7}{b}\overset{7}{o}$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ch}\overset{1}{i}\overset{2}{*}. \\ \text{chheh.} \end{array} \right.$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{p}\bar{n}\bar{g}. \\ \text{k}\overset{1}{o}\overset{2}{e}\text{-ch}\overset{1}{i}. \end{array} \right.$

$\overset{1}{G}\overset{1}{o}\overset{1}{a}\bar{n}$

$\overset{1}{L}\bar{a}\bar{n}$

$\overset{1}{L}\bar{i}\overset{2}{n}$

$\overset{7}{\bar{i}}\bar{n}$

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \overset{7}{b}\overset{7}{o}$   $\overset{2}{\bar{a}}\bar{i}$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ch}\overset{1}{i}\overset{2}{*}. \\ \text{chheh.} \end{array} \right.$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{p}\bar{n}\bar{g}. \\ \text{k}\overset{1}{o}\overset{2}{e}\text{-ch}\overset{1}{i}. \end{array} \right.$

5. Gó<sup>1</sup>a  
 Lí<sup>1</sup>  
 ĩ<sup>7</sup>  
 Goán<sup>1</sup>  
 Lín<sup>1</sup>  
 Sín-hū<sup>7</sup>

ǎi<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> { p̄ng.  
 kǝe-chí.<sup>1</sup>

6. Goán<sup>1</sup>  
 Lán<sup>1</sup>  
 Lín<sup>1</sup>  
 ĩn<sup>7</sup>  
 Bók-su<sup>3</sup>

ǎi<sup>2</sup> khǝa\*-chheh.<sup>2</sup>

<p>7. Gó<sup>1</sup>a          Lí<sup>1</sup>          ĩ<sup>7</sup>          Goán<sup>1</sup>          Lán<sup>1</sup>          Lín<sup>1</sup>          ĩn<sup>7</sup>          Bok-sú-níu<sup>3 7</sup></p>	<p>ǎi<sup>3</sup> sím-mih?<sup>1 2</sup></p>	<p>Gó<sup>1</sup>a          Lí<sup>1</sup>          ĩ<sup>7</sup>          Goán<sup>1</sup>          Lán<sup>1</sup>          Lín<sup>1</sup>          ĩn<sup>7</sup>          Bok-sú-níu<sup>3 7</sup></p>	<p>ǎi<sup>2</sup> sím-mih?<sup>1 2</sup></p>
--	--	---	--

8. a) Lín<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chí\*<sup>3</sup> bó\*<sup>3</sup>?

1) Ū, goán<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chí\*<sup>3</sup>.

2) Bó, goán<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> chí\*<sup>3</sup>.

b) Lín<sup>1</sup> ǎi<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-p̄ng<sup>3</sup> bó\*<sup>3</sup>? Do you want to eat?/Do you like to eat rice?

1) Aì, goán<sup>1</sup> ǎi<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-p̄ng<sup>3</sup>. Yes, we want to eat/we like rice.

2) Bó<sup>7</sup> ài, goán<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> sím-mih<sup>1 2</sup> ǎi<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-p̄ng<sup>3</sup>. No, we don't care to eat (rice).

- c) Lín ài khòa\*-chheh bô<sup>3</sup>? Do you like/want to read?  
 1) Aì, goán ài khòa\*-chheh.  
 2) Bô<sup>7</sup> ài, goán bô<sup>7</sup> ài khòa\*-chheh.  
 3) Bô<sup>7</sup> ài, goán bô<sup>7</sup> sìm-mih<sup>2</sup> ài khòa\*. No, we don't like reading very much.

- d) Lín ài chiah sìm-mih<sup>2</sup>? What do you want to eat?  
 Goán bô<sup>7</sup> ài chiah sìm-mih<sup>2</sup>. We don't want anything to eat.

- Lín ài khòa\* sìm-mih<sup>2</sup>? What do you want to read?  
 Goán bô<sup>7</sup> ài khòa\* sìm-mih<sup>2</sup>. We don't want to read anything.

- e) Lín ū chheh bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 1) Ū, goán ū chheh.  
 2) Bô<sup>7</sup>, goán bô<sup>7</sup> chheh.

- f) Lín ū cháp kho<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? 你有+雜誌

- 1) Ū, goán ū cháp kho<sup>3</sup>.  
 2) Bô<sup>7</sup>, goán bô<sup>7</sup> cháp kho<sup>3</sup>.

- g) Lín ài lāk-cháp-gō<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Do you want \$65?

- 1) Aì, goán ài lāk-cháp-gō<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>. Yes, we want \$65.

- 2) Bô<sup>7</sup> ài, goán bô<sup>7</sup> ài lāk-cháp-gō<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>; goán ài chhit-cháp-sī<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>. No, we don't want \$65; we want \$74.

- 3) Goán bô<sup>7</sup> ài. We don't want it.

**NOTE:** In sentences such as g 3 the pronoun "it" is not expressed in Taiwanese, nor is "any" in cases such as the following sentence h:

- h) Lín ài chheh bô<sup>3</sup>? Do you want books?  
 Goán bô<sup>7</sup> ài. We don't want any.



9. a) He <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>3</sup>jī-<sup>3</sup>cháp <sup>3</sup>kho°, sī <sup>3</sup>bô°?

1) Sī, he <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>3</sup>jī-<sup>3</sup>cháp <sup>3</sup>kho°.

2) <sup>3</sup>M-sī, he <sup>3</sup>m-sī <sup>3</sup>jī-<sup>3</sup>cháp <sup>3</sup>kho°.

b) Che <sup>3</sup>sī p̄ng, sī <sup>3</sup>bô°?

1) Sī, he <sup>3</sup>sī p̄ng.

2) <sup>3</sup>M-sī, he <sup>3</sup>m-sī p̄ng.

c) <sup>7</sup>ī <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>7</sup>Sín-hū, sī <sup>3</sup>bô°?

1) Sī, <sup>7</sup>ī <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>7</sup>Sín-hū.

2) <sup>3</sup>M-sī, <sup>7</sup>ī <sup>3</sup>m-sī <sup>7</sup>Sín-hū.

10.

<p>Che } He }</p>	<p><sup>3</sup>sī</p>	<p>{ chî* kôe-chí p̄ng chheh gô° kho° cháp kho°</p>	<p>, sī <sup>3</sup>bô°?</p>
-----------------------	-----------------------	---	------------------------------

<p><sup>3</sup>M-sī,</p>	<p>{ che he</p>	<p><sup>3</sup>m-sī</p>	<p>{ chî*. p̄ng. kôe-chí. chheh. gô° kho°. cháp kho°.</p>
--------------------------	-------------------------	-------------------------	---

Ls 2

11. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Lí} \\ \text{í} \\ \text{Lín} \\ \text{ín} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{ái} \\ \\ \\ \end{array}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{chia}^3 \text{ koe}^1\text{-chí} \\ \text{khóa}^2\text{-chheh} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{bô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \end{array} ?$	
	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{Bô}^7 \text{ ái}, \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \end{array}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{góa}^1 \\ \text{í}^7 \\ \text{goán}^1 \\ \text{ín}^7 \\ \text{Sín-hū}^7 \\ \text{Bok-su}^3 \end{array} \right\}$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{bô}^7 \text{ ái} \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \end{array}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{chia}^3 \text{ koe}^1\text{-chí.} \\ \text{khóa}^2\text{-chheh.} \end{array} \right\}$

12. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Lí} \\ \text{í} \\ \text{ín} \\ \text{Lín} \\ \text{Sín-hū}^7 \\ \text{Bok-su}^3 \\ \text{Bok-sú-níu}^3 \end{array} \right\}$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{ū}^3 \text{ koe}^1\text{-chí} \\ \text{bô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \end{array} ?$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{ū}^3 \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \end{array}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{góa}^1 \\ \text{í}^7 \\ \text{ín}^7 \\ \text{goán}^1 \\ \text{Sín-hū}^7 \\ \text{Bok-su}^3 \\ \text{Bok-sú-níu}^3 \end{array} \right\}$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{bô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \\ \text{ô}^3 \end{array}$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{koe}^1\text{-chí.} \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \end{array}$
--	--	--	---	--	--

---

13. a)  $\text{Lí}^1 \text{ sí}^3 \text{ Sín-hū}^7, \text{ sí}^3 \text{ bô}^3 ?$       b)  $\text{Lí}^1 \text{ sí}^3 \text{ Bok-su}^3, \text{ sí}^3 \text{ bô}^3 ?$

1)  $\text{SÍ}^1, \text{ góa}^1 \text{ sí}^3 \text{ Sín-hū}^7.$       1)  $\text{SÍ}^1, \text{ góa}^1 \text{ sí}^3 \text{ Bok-su}^3.$

2)  $\text{M-sí}^3, \text{ góa}^1 \text{ m-sí}^3 \text{ Sín-hū}^7.$       2)  $\text{M-sí}^3, \text{ góa}^1 \text{ m-sí}^3 \text{ Bok-su}^3.$

14.  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Lí} \\ \text{Lín} \\ \text{In} \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{ú} \\ \text{chhí}^* \\ \text{in} \end{array} \left. \begin{array}{l} \text{khòa}^* \\ \text{chiah-png} \\ \text{chiah koe-chí} \end{array} \right\} \text{bó}^*?$

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Góa} \\ \text{Goán} \\ \text{In} \end{array} \right\} \text{bó} \text{ chhí}^* \text{ in} \left. \begin{array}{l} \text{khòa}^* \\ \text{chiah-png} \\ \text{chiah koe-chí} \end{array} \right\}$

15.  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Góa} \\ \text{Goán} \\ \text{In} \end{array} \right\} \text{bó} \text{ chhí}^* \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Bok-su} \\ \text{Láu-su} \\ \text{Sín-hū} \end{array} \right. \left. \begin{array}{l} \text{khòa}^* \\ \text{chiah-png} \\ \text{koh lái chē} \end{array} \right\}$

16.  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{I} \\ \text{bó} \\ \text{ài} \end{array} \right\} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{goán} \\ \text{góa} \\ \text{lán} \end{array} \right. \left. \begin{array}{l} \text{khòa}^* \\ \text{chiah-png} \\ \text{chiah koe-chí} \end{array} \right\} \text{, sī} \text{ bó}^*?$

17. Lí ú chhí<sup>1</sup>\* Sín-hū<sup>7</sup> koh lái<sup>7</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

18. Lí ú chhí<sup>1</sup>\* Bok-su<sup>3</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

19. Lí ú chhí<sup>1</sup>\* Láu-su<sup>3</sup> chiah koe-chí<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

20. Láu-su, chiah koh lái chē.

Hó!  
好

KÙ

SENTENCES

1. Góa bó chí<sup>7</sup>\*, lí ú bó<sup>3</sup>?

2. Lí ú lōa-chē chí<sup>3</sup>?

3. I ài cháp-it kho<sup>3</sup>, lí ài bó<sup>3</sup>? 伊愛 + 一 靴, 池愛嗎?

4. I ú chhēh, lí ài khòa\* bó<sup>3</sup>?

5. In ài chiah koe-chí, lí ú bó<sup>3</sup>?

6. Lí bó ài chiah-png, ài chiah sim-mih?



The following sentences are the Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences. Do NOT look at these until you have translated the above sentences in class.

1. Lín<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>3</sup>\* bó<sup>3</sup>?

1) Ū, goán<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>3</sup>\*.

2) Bô, goán<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> chí<sup>3</sup>\*.

2. Che sī<sup>3</sup> chheh, sī<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

1) Sī, che sī<sup>3</sup> chheh.

2) M-sī, che m-sī<sup>3</sup> chheh.

3. Chhia\* lí<sup>1</sup> kōh<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>2</sup> chē/Chiah kōh<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chē/Kōh<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chē.

Hó!

4. Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

1) Aì, góa<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup>. (OR: Aì, góa<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah.)

2) Bó<sup>7</sup> ài, góa<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup>. (OR: Bó<sup>7</sup> ài, góa<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ài chiah.)

5. Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah png<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

1) Aì, góa<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup>.

2) Bó<sup>7</sup> ài, góa<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup>.

6. Góa<sup>1</sup> chhia\* lí<sup>1</sup> chiah kōe-chí.

Tō-sīa, góa<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah.

7. Í<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> chí<sup>3</sup>\*; góa<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-chap-pēh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>; lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lōa<sup>3</sup>-chē?

Góa<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> káu<sup>1</sup>-chap<sup>3</sup>-chhit<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>.

8. In<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> hāk-seng, sī<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

1) Sī, in<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> hāk-seng.

2) M-sī, in<sup>7</sup> m-sī<sup>3</sup> hāk-seng.

TĒ SĀ<sup>7</sup>\* KHÒLesson 3TŪI-ŌEDIALOGUE

陳先生  
T = TĀn Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\*

Li kùì sè\*? 她姓

L = Lí Siu-lí 李修女

T1: Siu-lí, gāu-chá.

L1: Gāu-chá.

T2: Lí chiāh-pá bōe? 她吃飽未?

L2: Chiāh-pá ā.

T3: Siu-lí, lí kùì sè\*?

L3: Góá sè\* Lí. Sít-lé, lí m-sī sè\* Lím, sī bō\*?

T4: Sī, góá m-sī sè\* Lím; góá sè\* Tān.

L4: Sít-lé, sít-lé, sī Tān Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\*

T5: Siu-lí, chhia\* chē.

L5: Tān Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\*, Siu-sū kóng lí ū chin-chē chheh, sī bō\*?

T6: Sī. Lí chin ái khòa\*-chheh, sī bō\*?

L6: M-sī, ū chin-chē lāng ái khòa\*.

T7: Siu-lí, lí ái lím sím-mih? Góan ū ká-pi, tê, kún-chúi.

L7: Góá ái lím ká-pi. Lín ū chin ái lím ká-pi, sī bō\*?

T8: M-sī, góan ū lāng ái lím-tê; ū lāng ái lím kún-chúi;  
bó lāng ái lím ká-pi.

SĪN-GÍVOCABULARY

1. bōe? 了嗎? (or) not yet? (An enclitic used to form a question. For enclitic see Ls 2, Gram. Note 3.)

2. chē 多 much/many. (Frequently combined with "chin" to mean "very much/very many". This "chē" is the same character and meaning as the "chē" in "lōā-chē". Distinguish from "chē" of "chhia\* chē".)
- Gōa ũ chin-chē chí\*. I have a lot of money.
3. Chiāh-pá bōē? 吃飽了嗎? Did (subject) eat (or) not yet? (If the subject is 2d person, this term is usually a greeting. "Bōē" here is enclitic.)
- Chiāh-pá ā. (Subject) has/have eaten. (This is an answer to "Chiāh-pá bōē?")
4. chin 真 / 很 true/real/genuine/very; (modifying a verb) truly/really/very much.
- Ī chin hó. He is very good.
- Ī chin ài khōa\*-chheh. He really like to read./  
He loves reading.
5. kā-pi 咖啡 coffee.
- Gōa bōē ài līm kā-pi. I don't like coffee./I don't want coffee (now). (Lit., I don't like/want to drink coffee.)
6. kóng 說 / 講 to speak/say/tell.
- kóng-ōe to talk.
- Ī chin ài kóng-ōe. He loves to talk.
7. kún-chúi 開水 drinking water/(lit.) boiled water.
- Līm kún-chúi. to drink boiled water.
- Lí ài līm kún-chúi bōē? Do you want a drink of water?
8. kùi 貴 honorable. ("Kùi" will be used in a later lesson to mean "expensive".)
- Lí kùi sè\*/sì\*? What is your surname? (Using the honorific term "kùi" is a polite way of asking this of an adult. It is not ordinarily spoken to younger people, never to children.)

9. lāng 人 human being/people/person.

bō<sup>7</sup> lāng no one/not one (person)/there is no one who.

ū<sup>3</sup> lāng there is someone who.../there are people who... (In this expression, as also in "bō<sup>7</sup> lāng", the "lāng" frequently changes tone, an exception to the rule that one-syllable nouns do not change tone.)

Ū<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> līm<sup>7</sup> kún<sup>1</sup>-chúi<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Does anyone want a drink of water?

In<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> thāk<sup>3</sup>-chheh<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Do they want to study?

In<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> thāk<sup>1</sup>. None of them wants to study.

10. līm 飲/喝 to drink.

Lī<sup>1</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> līm<sup>7</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mīh<sup>2</sup>? What do you want to drink?

11. ōe 話 word.

Ũg<sup>3</sup> Siān<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup>\* bō<sup>7</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mīh<sup>2</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> kōng<sup>1</sup>-ōe. Mr. Ng is rather quiet (does not like to talk much/doesn't say much).

Lâu<sup>3</sup> Siān<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup>\* chin<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> kōng<sup>1</sup>-ōe. Mr. Lâu loves to talk.

12. sè\*/sì\* 姓 clan name/family name/surname; to be surnamed

Gōa<sup>1</sup> sè\*<sup>2</sup> Līm. Lī<sup>1</sup> kúi<sup>2</sup> sè\*? My surname is Līm. What's yours?

13. siān<sup>7</sup>-sī\*/sīn<sup>7</sup>-se\* 先生 Mr./Sir; gentleman; husband.

(The word for "wife" will be in Ls 4.)

14. sīt<sup>2</sup>-lé 失禮/對不起/抱歉 Sorry (= I beg your pardon for my want of politeness)/Please excuse me/a breaching of etiquette; to be impolite.

Sīt<sup>2</sup>-lé! Sīt<sup>2</sup>-lé! I'm very sorry (e.g., for making a mess of things).

15. sīu<sup>7</sup>-lí 修女 Sister. (A religious sister; this term is not used to denote blood relationship.)

16. sīu<sup>7</sup>-sū 修士 Brother. (A religious brother; this term is not used to denote blood relationship.)



17. tē 茶 drinking water/tea.

Chhĩa\* lí lĩm-tē. Please have some tea (OR: drinking water).

18. tē-bĩ-tē 茶 tea. ("Tē-bĩ" means "tea leaves".)

Góo ǎi lĩm kũn-chúí, bô ǎi lĩm tē-bĩ-tē. I want to drink water, not tea.

19. thak 讀 to read aloud. (E.g., to read Scripture lesson in church; in this case we do not say: "khòa\*".)

thak-chheh to study. (Used only of a student in reference to school books; by extension it means "to be a student". "Thak-chheh" originally meant to read the school books aloud, even outside of class, but today reading aloud outside of class is not so common. Distinguish from "khòa\*-chheh" which means "to read a book" but not in the sense of studying.)

ĩ chín ǎi kóng-ōe, bô ǎi thak-chheh. He likes to talk; he doesn't like studying.

TUI-ŌE Ē HOAN-ĒK

TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

What's your surname?

T = Mr. Tân

L = Sister Lí

T1: Good morning, Sister.

L1: Good morning.

T2: Did you eat yet?

L2: I have eaten.

T3: What is your (honorable) surname, Sister?

L3: My surname is Lí. Sorry (for forgetting), you're not surnamed Lĩm, are you?

T4: No, I'm not surnamed Lĩm; I'm surnamed Tân.

L4: Sorry; it's Mr. Tân.

T5: Please have a seat, Sister.

L5: Brother says you have a lot of books, Mr. Tân, is that right?

T6: Yes. You really like reading, do you?

- L6: It's not that; there are quite a few people who want to read them.
- T7: What would you like to drink, Sister? We have coffee, tea, water.
- L7: I like coffee. You (plural) like coffee a lot, do you? (Lit., You like to drink coffee...)
- T8: No. Some of us like tea; some like water; no one likes coffee.

TUI-ŌE Ê CHU-KÁI

NOTES ON DIALOGUE

T1 and T2: Words of greeting can be a difficulty for foreigners; we will study a number of them. "Gâu-chá" means "You're around early". Another expression of greeting is in T2: "Lí chiah-pá bōe?" It means "Did you eat yet?" and is used only near the time of meals, except in the case of a guest coming to visit after a long trip; no matter what the hour the host will show great concern as to whether he has eaten.

If a person who has not yet eaten visits a home, when asked "Chiah-pá bōe?" he will ordinarily answer "Chiah-pá a" in order to spare the host the trouble of treating him to a meal.

T4: "Sī" is translated "No" in answer to a question stated negatively. Mr. Tân is affirming that he is not surnamed "Lím". We will study this under "Grammar", P. 59.

T7: "Tê" is here contrasted with "kún-chúi" and therefore means "tea" ("tê-bī-tê"), but "tê" often means "kún-chúi" = water boiled for drinking. If you want drinking water do not ask for "chúi" which means water that is not purified; ask for "kún-chúi". "Tê" may also be used, but being an equivocal term may cause difficulty for the beginner in Taiwanese.

L7: "I like coffee." It is usually best to express the verb:

"Gó<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> lím ká<sup>7</sup>-pi."

"Lín<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> lím ká<sup>7</sup>-pi, sī<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?" For the use of "ū" in a question see below: "Another Way of Asking Questions". We may also ask the same question without "ū":

"Lín<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> lím ká<sup>7</sup>-pi, sī<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?"

SĒ\*SURNAMES

Lí kùì sè\*? / Lí sĭm-mĭh kùì sè\*? / Lí kùì sĭ\*? / Lí sĭm-mĭh kùì sĭ\*? What is your surname?

- 1) Góá sĕ\* Tân. 陳 My surname is Tân.
- 2) Góá sĕ\* Lĭm. 林 I am surnamed Lĭm.
- 3) Góá sĭ\* Ng. 黃 My surname is Ng (means "yellow").
- 4) Góá sĭ\* Tiu\*. 張 I am surnamed Tiu\*.
- 5) Góá sĕ\* Lí. 李 My surname is Lí.

(As of 1980 these 5 surnames, in that order, are the most common in Taiwan.)

"Kùì" means "honorable". It is best to use this polite form, though some will ask merely "Lí sĕ\*/sĭ\* sĭm-mĭh?" In asking youths below age 18 or 20 we do not usually say "kùì".

(In answering "Lí kùì sè\*? some say: Góá sĭo sè\*, sĕ\*..." "Sĭo = small": "My insignificant surname is...") 劉小姓 姓

Note: To say "Mr. Tân", whether addressing him or not, we say: Tân Sĭan-sĭ\* (OR: Tân Sĭn-sĕ\*)

Note that in this expression the surname does not change tone. "Sĭan-sĭ\*/Sĭn-sĕ\*" are enclitics: following a surname they are always in the third tone. But "Sĭan-sĭ\*/Sĭn-sĕ\*" may be used without a surname to mean "Mr./Sir/gentleman/husband", in which case they are not enclitics.

Note that of all titles of address used with a surname, only when "Mr." is used does the surname remain in the original tone. Compare:

6. Ông Sĭan-sĭ\* 吳先生
7. Gó· Sĭn-hū 吳神父
8. Láu Bók-su 劉牧師
9. Chhóá Láu-su 蔡老師
10. Iú\* Sĭu-lí 楊修女

(These rank 6th to 10th among Taiwan's most common surnames.)

Lí Láu-su, lí chiah-pá bōe? Did you eat yet, Ms Lí?

Góá chiah-pá á. I have eaten.

Note that "Teacher" is used in direct address in Taiwanese. So are most titles. Married women teachers are addressed by their maiden name + "Lāu-su":

But the husband's surname is used in addressing ministers' wives:

Tân Bók-sū-niu, gāu-chá.      Good morning, Mrs. Tân.  
 教師娘

ANOTHER WAY OF ASKING QUESTIONS

A. Use "ū...bō<sup>3</sup>?" or "ū...sī bō<sup>3</sup>?" Here "ū" does not mean "have" or "there is" but is only the sign of a question.

a) Lī ū chin ai thak-chheh bō<sup>3</sup>? Do you like studying?

1) Ai, gōa chin ai thak-chheh. Yes, I love studying. (Note that in the answer "ū" is not used before "chin".)

2) Bō ai, gōa bō ai thak-chheh. No, I don't like studying.

b) Lī chin ai sia-jī, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? OR: Lī ū chin ai sia-jī, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 Do you really like writing characters?  
 OR: You really like writing characters, do you?

✓ B. In the question in Sentence a above, with "bō<sup>3</sup>", we must use "ū". We may not ask: Lī chin ai thak-chheh bō<sup>3</sup>?

C. Note that in the question in Sentence b, with "sī bō<sup>3</sup>", we may say or omit "ū".

有...無 物使 omit 有

<sup>3</sup>LĒ-KŪ 例句

PATTERN SENTENCES

A.

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Lí} \\ \text{í} \\ \text{Lín} \\ \text{ín} \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \text{ài} \\ \end{array}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{khôa}^2\text{-chheh} \\ \text{kóng-ōe} \\ \text{thák-chheh} \\ \text{chiah-png} \\ \text{lím-tê} \\ \text{lím ká-pi} \\ \text{lím kún-chúi} \\ \text{chiah koe-chí} \end{array} \right.$	肴册
		謂話
		滷册
		喉餅
		料菜 <sup>3</sup> bó.?
		味咖啡
		味滾水
		喉果子

B.

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Ai} \\ \text{ái} \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \text{ài} \\ \end{array}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{góa} \\ \text{í} \\ \text{góan} \\ \text{ín} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{khôa}^2\text{-chheh.} \\ \text{kóng-ōe.} \\ \text{thák-chheh.} \\ \text{chiah-png.} \\ \text{lím té-bí-tê.} \\ \text{lím ká-pi.} \\ \text{lím kún-chúi.} \\ \text{chiah koe-chí.} \end{array} \right.$	

C.

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Bó} \\ \text{ài} \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \\ \\ \text{ài} \\ \end{array}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{góa} \\ \text{í} \\ \text{góan} \\ \text{ín} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{bó} \\ \text{ài} \\ \text{bó} \\ \text{sím-} \\ \text{mín} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{kóng-ōe.} \\ \text{thák-chheh.} \\ \text{chiah-png.} \\ \text{lím-tê.} \\ \text{lím ká-pi.} \\ \text{khôa}^2\text{-chheh.} \\ \text{lím kún-chúi.} \\ \text{lím té-bí-tê.} \end{array} \right.$	

<sup>7</sup>bó <sup>1</sup>sím-<sup>2</sup>mín <sup>2</sup>ài... = not like to...very much.

D.	Lí	}	3	chín	2	ài	}	1	kóng-ōe.	}	3	bô·?		
	Siū-lí										3	thak-chheh		
	Lí Siān-si <sup>3</sup> *										3	chiah-png		
	Lín										7	lím ká-pi		
	Iú* Bók-su										7	lím té-bí-tê		
	In										7	lím kún-chúi		
	Ông Siū-sū										2	khôa*-chheh		

E.	góa	}	7	chín	2	ài	}	1	kóng-ōe.	}	3	thak-chheh.		
	Siū-lí										3	chiah-png.		
	Lí Siān-si <sup>3</sup> *										7	lím ká-pi.		
Aì,	góan										7	lím té-bí-tê.		
	Iú* Bók-su										7	lím kún-chúi.		
	In										2	khôa*-chheh.		
	Ông Siū-sū													

F.	góa	}	7	chín	bô	2	ài	}	1	kóng-ōe.	}	3	thak-chheh.	
	Siū-lí									3		chiah-png. (rice)		
	Lí Siān-si <sup>3</sup> *									7		lím té-bí-tê.		
Bô ài,	góan									7		lím ká-pi.		
	Iú* Bók-su									7		lím kún-chúi.		
	In									2		khôa*-chheh.		
	Ông Siū-sū													

G.  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Siú-lí} \\ \text{Sín-hū} \\ \text{Sián-si}^* \\ \text{Lāu-su} \\ \text{Bók-su} \\ \text{Siú-sū} \end{array} \right\} , \text{ chhí}^1 \text{ lí}^1 \text{ kòh}^2 \text{ lái}^7 \text{ chē.}$   
 (HÓ!)

H.  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Gó}^1 \text{ chhí}^1 \text{ lí}^1 \\ \text{Sián-si}^3 \\ \text{Sín-sé}^3 \end{array} \right\} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{lím}^7 \text{ ká}^7 \text{-pi} \\ \text{lím}^7 \text{-tê} \\ \text{chiáh}^3 \text{-pāng} \\ \text{khôa}^2 \text{-chheh} \\ \text{chiáh}^3 \text{ kôe}^1 \text{-chí} \end{array} \right\} , \text{ lí}^1 \text{ ài}^3 \text{ bô}^3 \text{?}$

I.  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Tân} \\ \text{Lím} \\ \text{Ng} \\ \text{Tiu}^* \\ \text{Lí} \end{array} \right\} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Sián-si}^3 \\ \text{Sín-sé}^3 \end{array} \right\} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{池} \\ \text{哈} \\ \text{飽} \\ \text{未} \end{array} \right\} , \text{ lí}^1 \text{ chiáh}^3 \text{-pá}^3 \text{ bôe}^3 \text{?}$   
 (Gó<sup>1</sup> chiáh<sup>3</sup>-pá<sup>3</sup> a.)

J.  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Ong} \\ \text{Gó} \\ \text{Láu} \\ \text{Chhó}^2 \\ \text{Iú}^* \end{array} \right\} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Siú-sū} \\ \text{Siú-lí} \\ \text{Bók-su} \\ \text{Sín-hū} \\ \text{Lāu-su} \end{array} \right\} , \text{ lí}^1 \text{ ài}^2 \text{ lím}^7 \text{ kún}^1 \text{-chúi}^3 \text{ bô}^3 \text{?}$

Note that the surname does not change tone in Group I and does change tone in Group J

<p><u>K.</u> 1̇ 7̇ In Ng̃ Siān-sĩ<sup>3</sup>*</p>	}	<p>chiãh-pá bōe<sup>3</sup>? Did he (they/Mr. Ng̃) eat yet?</p>
---	---	--

<p>1̇ 7̇ In Ng̃ Siān-sĩ<sup>3</sup>*</p>	}	<p>chiãh-pá ã<sup>3</sup>.</p>
---	---	----------------------------------

<p><u>L.</u> 1̇ Gōa 1̇ Lī 7̇ I 1̇ Gōan 1̇ Lán 1̇ Lín 7̇ In 3̇ Bók-su 7̇ Sín-hū</p>	}	<p>ū chin<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup></p>	}	<p>chī*. chheh. kōe-chí. pāng. sim-mih? ka<sup>7</sup>-pi. kūn-chúí. tê. tê<sup>7</sup>-bi<sup>1̇</sup>-tê.</p>
--	---	---	---	---

<p><u>M.</u> Che sĩ<sup>3</sup></p>	}	<p>gō<sup>3</sup>-cháp-lák kho<sup>3</sup>. gō<sup>3</sup>-lák kho<sup>3</sup>. jĩ<sup>3</sup>-cháp-ít kho<sup>3</sup>. chheh kōe-chí<sup>1̇</sup> pāng ka<sup>7</sup>-pi kūn-chúí<sup>1̇</sup> tê</p>	}	<p>sĩ bō<sup>3</sup>? ANSWER WITH: <u>Sĩ</u>, che sĩ<sup>3</sup>... (= <u>Yes</u>...) OR <u>M-sĩ</u>, che m-sĩ<sup>3</sup>... (= <u>No</u>...)</p>
--	---	---	---	---



7  
BUN-HOAT 文法GRAMMAR

In answering the questions in M above, we say "sī" to affirm the statement made and "m̄-sī" to deny the statement. In such cases, "sī" is translated "yes" and "m̄-sī" is translated "no".

"Sī" always affirms and "m̄-sī" always negates. But we must thoroughly understand what is being affirmed and what is being negated. It is the entire statement that is being affirmed or negated.

1. When "sī" affirms an affirmative statement it is translated by "yes".

Lí sī Siu-lí, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? Are you a Sister?

Sī, góa sī Siu-lí. Yes, I am a Sister.

2. When "sī" affirms a negative statement it is translated by "no".

Lí m̄-sī Siu-sū, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? You're not a Brother?/Aren't you a Brother?

Sī, góa m̄-sī Siu-sū. No, I'm not.

3. When "m̄-sī" negates an affirmative statement it is translated by "no".

Í sē<sup>2</sup>\* Tiu\*, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? His name is Tiu\*, is it?

M̄-sī, Í sē<sup>2</sup>\* Nĝ. No, his name is Yellow.

4. When "m̄-sī" negates a negative statement it is translated by "yes".

a) In m̄-sī Bók-su, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? They're not ministers, are they?

M̄-sī, In sī Bók-su. Yes, they are ministers.

b) Che m̄-sī chí\*, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? This isn't money, is it?

1) Sī, che m̄-sī chí\*. No, it isn't money.

2) M̄-sī, che sī chí\*. Yes, this is money.

In the answers to the question in Sentence e, "sī" means "that's right/that's true/it's a fact": it isn't money.

"<sup>3</sup>M-sī" = what you said "is not true/is not a fact": this is money.

He <sup>3</sup> m- <sup>3</sup> sī	}	chheh	}, sī b <sup>3</sup> ?	ANSWER WITH:
		p̄ng		Sī, che/he
		tē <sup>7</sup> -bī <sup>1</sup> -tē		<sup>3</sup> m- <sup>3</sup> sī...
		chhit <sup>2</sup> -pēh <sup>2</sup> -chāp <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>3</sup>		(= No, this/ that isn't..)
		sī <sup>2</sup> -chāp <sup>3</sup> -jī <sup>3</sup> kho <sup>3</sup>		OR:
		kā <sup>7</sup> -pi		<sup>3</sup> M-sī, che/he
kūn <sup>1</sup> -chúi	sī...	(= Yes, this/ that is...)		

<sup>3</sup>Ū <sup>7</sup>lāng... 有儂

- A. <sup>3</sup>Ū <sup>7</sup>lāng <sup>2</sup>ài khòa\*-chheh b<sup>3</sup>? Does anyone want to read (now)?/Does anyone (around here) like reading?
- 1) Ū, <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>7</sup>lāng <sup>2</sup>ài khòa\*. Yes, there are some who want to read./Yes, there are some who like reading.
  - 2) B<sup>3</sup>, b<sup>3</sup> <sup>7</sup>lāng <sup>2</sup>ài khòa\*. No, no one wants to read./No, there is no one who likes reading.
  - 3) Ū, g<sup>1</sup>óa <sup>2</sup>ài khòa\*-chheh. Yes, I do.

<sup>3</sup> Ū <sup>7</sup> lāng <sup>2</sup> ài	}	līm <sup>7</sup> -tē	} b <sup>3</sup> ?
		khòa*-chheh	
		līm <sup>7</sup> kā <sup>7</sup> -pi	
		chiāh <sup>3</sup> kōe <sup>1</sup> -chí	
		thāk <sup>3</sup> -chheh	
		kōng <sup>1</sup> -ōe	
		līm <sup>7</sup> kūn <sup>1</sup> -chúi	
		chiāh <sup>3</sup> -p̄ng	

Ū, ũ lāng ǎi

lím-tê.  
khòa\*-chheh.  
lím ká-pi.  
chiah kóe-chí.  
thak-chheh.  
kóng-ōe.  
lím kún-chúi.  
chiah-png.

Bô, bô lāng ǎi

lím ká-pi.  
thak-chheh.  
lím kún-chúi.  
lím tê-bí-tê.  
kóng-ōe.  
khòa\*-chheh.  
chiah-png.  
chiah kóe-chí.

B. Ū lāng bô ǎi khòa\*-chheh. There are some people who don't want to read (now)./There are some who don't like reading.

Ū lāng bô ǎi

lím ká-pi.  
thak-chheh.  
lím kún-chúi.  
lím tê-bí-tê.  
kóng-ōe.  
khòa\*-chheh.  
chiah-png.  
chiah kóe-chí.

(Sentences marked (S) have a translation/explanation at the end of this section.)

1. ĩ kóng bō lǎng ǎi chiáh-p̄ng.
2. Sǐu-lí kóng che ǎi chín-chē chí\*.
3. Tân Sǐu-lí kóng ĩ bō ǎi khōa\*-chheh.
4. Lím Siǎn-sǐ\* kóng ĩ chiáh-pá ǎ.
5. Sít-lé, sít-lé.
6. Chín sít-lé.
7. Lím Bók-su, lí chiáh-pá bōe?
8. ĩ ũ chín-chē chí\* bō\*?
9. Ng Sín-hū, lí chiáh-pá bōe?
10. Tíu\* Lǎu-su, lí chín gáu-chá. (S)
11. Bók-su, lín bō ǎi lím ká-pi, sī bō\*? (S)  
M-sī, góa chín ǎi lím ká-pi.
12. Chhia\* lín kōh lái chē.
13. Sín-hū, gáu-chá, chhia\* chē.
14. Lí bō ǎi lím té-bí-tê, ǎi lím sím-míh?
15. Bók-su, lí kúi sè\*?  
Góa sè\* Ông.
16. Sǐu-lí, lí ũ chín ǎi lím ká-pi bō\*?
17. Ū, góa chín ǎi lím ká-pi.
18. Bō, góa bō sím-míh ǎi lím ká-pi.
19. Ông Siǎn-sǐ\* ũ chín-chē chí\* bō\*?
20. Lí ũ chí\* bō\*?

21. Lâu Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\*, lí ũ<sup>3</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-cháp-lák kho<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 22. Í<sup>3</sup> m-sī<sup>3</sup> sīn-hū, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?  
     sī, í<sup>3</sup> m-sī<sup>3</sup> sīn-hū.  
 23. Lí Lâu-su, lí ũ<sup>3</sup> chhít-cháp-péh kho<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 24. Ông Sīn-hū, lí ũ<sup>3</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-lák kho<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 25. Lí<sup>2</sup> ài thák-chheh bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 26. Lí ũ<sup>3</sup> chín ài thák-chheh bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 27. Góa chhia\* lí lím ká-pi, lí ài lím bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 28. Tiu\* Bók-sū-niu, lí kóng ài lím kún-chúi, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 29. Góa chín ài lím kún-chúi; lí ài lím bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 30. Góa chín ài chiah koe-chí; lí ài chiah bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 31. Í<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ài lím ká-pi, ài lím tē.  
 32. Í ũ<sup>3</sup> chín-chē chheh, lí ài khòa\* bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 33. Hák-seng chín ài khòa\*-chheh, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 34. Gō<sup>3</sup> Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\* chín ài khòa\*-chheh.  
 35. Liāu<sup>pa</sup> Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\*, chhia\* lí kón lái chē.  
 36. ũ<sup>3</sup> lánŋ ũ<sup>3</sup> chín-chē chí\* bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 37. Bō<sup>7</sup> lánŋ ũ<sup>3</sup> chín-chē chí\*, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 38. Lí bō<sup>7</sup> ài khòa\*-chheh, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 39. Ín chín ài kóng-ōe, bō<sup>7</sup> ài thák-chheh.  
 40. Lí ài khòa\*-chheh bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 41. Góa ài chiah pŋg; lín ũ<sup>3</sup> pŋg bō<sup>3</sup>?  
     Ū, góan ũ<sup>3</sup> pŋg.  
 42. Góan ũ<sup>3</sup> chín-chē pŋg; chhia\* lí chiah.  
 43. Góa chhia\* lí lím ká-pi, lí ài bō<sup>3</sup>?

44. Gó<sup>1</sup>a chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lí<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>7</sup> té<sup>7</sup>-bí<sup>1</sup>-tê, lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 45. Lí<sup>1</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> Lāu<sup>3</sup>-su, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 1) Sī<sup>1</sup>, gó<sup>1</sup>a m̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> Lāu<sup>3</sup>-su.  
 2) M̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup>, gó<sup>1</sup>a sī<sup>3</sup> Lāu<sup>3</sup>-su.

46. Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* ín<sup>7</sup> lí<sup>7</sup> kún<sup>1</sup>-chúí<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 47. Lí<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>7</sup> té; sī<sup>3</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>7</sup> kún<sup>1</sup>-chúí<sup>3</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (S)  
 M̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup>, gó<sup>1</sup>a ài<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>7</sup> té<sup>7</sup>-bí<sup>1</sup>-tê.

48. Gó<sup>1</sup>a ài<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>2</sup>a\*-chheh; lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>2</sup>a\* bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 49. He<sup>3</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>1</sup>\*; sī<sup>3</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-míh?  
 50. Che<sup>3</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> p̄ng, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 51. Í<sup>7</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> Sín<sup>7</sup>-hū, sī<sup>3</sup> Bók<sup>3</sup>-su.  
 52. Í<sup>7</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> Siu<sup>7</sup>-lí, sī<sup>3</sup> Lāu<sup>3</sup>-su, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 1) Sī<sup>1</sup>, í<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> Lāu<sup>3</sup>-su, m̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> Siu<sup>7</sup>-lí.  
 2) M̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup>, í<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> Siu<sup>7</sup>-lí, m̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> Lāu<sup>3</sup>-su.

53. Bó<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>2</sup>a\*-chheh; lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 54. Hák<sup>3</sup>-seng chiáh<sup>3</sup>-pá<sup>3</sup> bōe? (S)  
 55. Hák<sup>3</sup>-seng ài<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>7</sup> kún<sup>1</sup>-chúí<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (S)  
 56. Ū<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> thák<sup>3</sup>-chheh bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 57. Bó<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>2</sup>a\*-chheh, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (S)  
 sī<sup>1</sup>, bó<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>2</sup>a\*.

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED "S"

10. Mr. Tiu\*, you are very early (you're around very early this morning).

11. Don't you like coffee, Reverend? (Plural, e.g., "your family".)

Yes, we really like coffee.

47. You say you want to drink "tê"; do you mean water?  
(Lit., ...is it that you want to drink boiled water?)
54. Did the students eat yet?
55. Do the students want a drink of water?
57. No one wants to read?  
That's right, no one wants to read.

TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. Your surname is Lîm, isn't it? 汝姓林, 是也?  
Yes, my surname is Lîm. 是, 我姓林  
蔡牧師, 我請汝啗果子
2. Let me treat you to some fruit, (Rev). Chhòa.
3. Does anyone want a drink of water? 有儂愛啲滾水也?  
No one wants a drink. 無儂愛啲
4. Do you like to drink tea very much? 汝有實負愛啲茶也  
I don't care much for it. 我無什麼愛啲
5. You're not Teacher Iû\*, are you? 汝不是楊老師, 是也?  
No, I'm not Teacher Iû\*; I'm Brother Tiu\*. 是, 我不是楊老師,  
我是張修士
6. You say you want to drink "tê"; do you mean tea?  
No, I want to drink water. 汝講汝愛啲茶, 是(愛啲)茶米茶是也?  
不是, 我愛啲滾水
7. Do you have \$39, Mr. Gô? 吳先生, 汝有39元也?  
I have no money, sorry. 失禮, 我無錢
8. They're not Sisters, are they? 個不是修也, 是也  
Yes, they are Sisters. 不是, 個是修也。

The following sentences are the Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences. Do not look at these until you have translated the above with your teacher.

1. Lí sè\* Lím, sī bô\*?

Sī, góa sè\* Lím.

2. Chhōa Bók-su, góa chhia\* lí chiah koe-chí.

3. Ū lāng ài lím kún-chúí bô\*?

Bô lāng ài lím.

4. Lí ū chin ài lím-tê bô\*?

Góa bô sim-mih ài lím.

5. Lí m̄-sī Iú\* Lāu-su, sī bô\*?

Sī, góa m̄-sī Iú\* Lāu-su; góa sī Tiu\* Siu-sū.

6. Lí kóng lí ài lím-tê; sī ài lím té-bí-tê, sī bô\*?

M-sī, góa ài lím kún-chúí.

7. Gô\* Siān-si\*, lí ū sá\*-cháp-káu kho\* bô\*?

Sít-lé, góa bô chí\*.

8. In m̄-sī Siu-lí, sī bô\*?

M-sī, in sī Siu-lí.



Tĕ sĭ khòLesson 4TŪI-ŌEDIALOGUE

阿明 伊个笔笔予我  
 B = Ā-Bĕng (hák-seng) I = Ā-IĀ\* (hák-seng)

B1: Ā-IĀ\*, lí chiáh-pá bōe?

I1: Chiáh-pá á. Láí chē.

B2: Lí é jī ū sía bōe? Góá iáu-bōe sía. 这个字有字未

I2: Góá ía iáu-bōe sía. Lí bōeh sía bō? 我亦犹昧字

B3: Hó, lán láí sía. Lí bōeh iōng sĭm-mĭh pit sía?

I3: Góá bōeh iōng bĕn-lĕn-pit sía. Lí lè? 万年笔

B4: Góá bó ái iōng bĕn-lĕn-pit; góá bōeh iōng góan-chú-pit  
 sía. 原子笔

I4: Che sĭ lí é góan-chú-pit, sĭ bó? 笔

B5: M-sĭ, góan Lāu-su kóng í bó ái iōng; í hō. góá.

I5: Lín Lāu-su sĭ Tái-pak é lāng, sĭ bó? 笔

B6: M-sĭ, í sĭ Tái-tiōng-lāng. Īn thài-thài sĭ Tái-pák-lāng.

I6: Lín Lāu-su Īn thài-thài tĕh chhōng-sia\*h? 你老师个太太行制啥?

B7: Í mā tĕh chō Lāu-su.

I7: Ā-Bĕng, góá ái khi Tái-tiōng, lí bōeh khi bó? 笔

B8: M-á, lí khi, góá m khi. Chái-kiàn. 不文.

I8: Hó, chái-kiàn.

SĪN-GĪVOCABULARY

1. a 了 (sign of the Perfect Tense; also used as an exclamation and for other uses. See "The Particle 'a'", page 79.)
- ĭ lâi 7. He has come. (Note tone on "a"; see the 1-3-7 Rule, page 80.)
- ĭ sī 3 khī 2 Tái-pak, sī 7 bô 3? He went to Taipei, did he?
- sī-7. 萬年筆 Yes.
2. bān-lián-pit 鋼筆 fountain pen. (Lit., 10,000 years' pen.)
- Gó 1 ài 2 iōng 3 bān-lián-pit 1 sī-jī. I like to use a fountain pen (to write).
3. boeh 要/將 to wish/want/(sign of future) will.
- Lí 1 bōeh 2 līm-tê 7 bô 3? Do you want some tea?
- Lí 1 bōeh 2 khī 2 Tái-pak 7 bô 3? Will you go to Taipei/  
Are you going to Taipei?
4. chhòng 幹/做 to do. (Mostly used in the expressions "What is/are (subject) doing?" and "...not doing anything.")
- ĭ 1 tēh 2 chhōng-sia 2 \*h? What is he doing?
- 1) ĭ 1 tēh 2 sī-jī. He is writing characters.
- 2) ĭ 1 bô 7 tēh 2 chhōng-sia 2 \*h. He's not doing anything.
5. chò 做 to do; be (serve as). ("Chò" has many other meanings and uses which will be studied later.)
- ĭ 1 tēh 2 chò 2 sīm-mīh? What is he doing?
- Gó 1 tēh 2 chò 2 Sīn-hū. I am a priest.

6. 的 (sign of possessive case; "ê" is placed between the possessor and the thing/person possessed. What is possessed may be expressed or understood; if it is not expressed, "ê" does not change tone. See p. 83.)

Che sī góá ê chheh, m̄-sī í ê. This is my book, not his. (Note that "ê" changes tone if followed by the thing possessed.)

7. góan-chú-pit 原子筆 ballpoint pen. (Lit., atomic pen)

Góá chin bó ài iōng góan-chú-pit sía-jī. I hate ballpoint pens.

8. hō· 給 to give.

Góá ê chheh hō· lí khòá\*. I'm giving you my book to read.

9. iā/mā/ā 也 also/too; either; even.

Í bōeh khi; góá iā bōeh khi. He's going and so am I.

Í bó bōeh khi; góá mā bó bōeh khi. He's not going; I'm not either.

Í bōeh khi, góá iā bó bōeh khi.. Even if he goes, I'm not going. (Note that "iā" meaning "even" is in the 2nd clause.)

10. ián-pit 鉛筆 pencil.

Hák-seng ài iōng ián-pit sía-jī. Students must use a pencil to write with. (This is true of elementary school.)

11. iáu-bōe 尚未 / 還沒 not yet. (Lit., still not yet.)

Í iáu-bōe lái. He still hasn't come yet.

Góá iáu-bōe chiáh-png. I haven't eaten yet.

12. iōng/eng 用 to use; (of time, money) to spend; with.

Lí bōeh iōng sīm-mih sía? What will you write with?

13. jī 字 character (written)/word/letter (of alphabet).

Lí tēh sía-jī, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? You're writing, are you?/  
Are you writing?

14. khì 去 to go.

Ī khì<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak. He went to Taipei.

15. lâi 來 to come.

Ī lâi<sup>7</sup> Tái-tiong thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh. He came to Taichung to  
study./He came to study in Taichung.

16. lâi<sup>7</sup> chē 來坐 / 請坐 Come in and sit down. (Lit., "Come  
sit" - a courteous greeting.)

17. lè 呢? (a sound, at the end of a sentence, that can have  
interrogative or other meanings.)

Lín siān-si\* lè? Where is your husband?

Ī khì<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak<sup>3</sup>. He has gone to Taipei.

Lí ê chí\* lè? Where is your money? (Asking a child  
where the money is that you gave him.)

18. m̄ 不 to be unwilling/not want/(as response) No (= I am  
unwilling).

Lí bōeh khì bō<sup>3</sup>? Are you going?

M̄-ā<sup>3</sup>, góa m̄ khì. No, I don't want to go. For "a"  
see p. 76 "M̄".)

19. pit 筆 writing instrument.

Che sī<sup>3</sup> sīm-mih-lâng<sup>7</sup> ê pit? Whose pen/pencil is  
this?

20. sía 寫 to write.

sía-jī to write characters/to write.

Lí tēh sía sīm-mih? What are you writing?

啥 啥 貨

21. sia\*h/sia\*-hòe 什麼? what/(with negative) anything.  
(Synonymous with "sim-mih".) (Note that "sia\*h" and the "sia\*" of "sia\*-hòe" are not the same word or tone.)

Lí tēh kóng sia\*h? What are you saying?/What are you talking about?

代 誰 個 誰 個

22. sim-mih-lâng/sia\*-lâng 誰 who/whom;(with negative) anyone.

Che sī sim-mih-lâng é chheh? Whose book is this?

Lín hák-seng sia\*-lâng bōeh khi Tái-pak? Which one of you students is going to Taipei? OR: Who among you students are going to Taipei?

23. Tái-pak 台北 Taipei. (Principal city in Taiwan; also the name of adjacent county.)

24. Tái-tiong 台中 Taichung. (Name of city and surrounding county in central part of Taiwan.)

25. teh 正在 (sign of the progressive form of the following verb; can refer to past, present or future. Can also indicate habitual action.)

Í tēh chhóng-sia\*h? What is he doing?

Í tēh sia-jī. He is writing.

26. thài-thài 太太 wife/Mrs.

Í sī sim-mih-lâng é thài-thài? Whose wife is she?

TUI-ŌE É HOAN-ÉK

TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

He gave me his pen.

B1: Did you eat yet, Á-Iâ\*?

I1: Yes. Come in and sit down.

B2: Did you write your characters yet? I haven't.

I2: I haven't written them yet either. Are you going to write them?

- B3: All right, let's write them. What writing instrument are you going to use? (NB. Taiwanese frequently prefers to say: "...going to use to write/going to use for writing".)
- I3: I'm going to write with a fountain pen. How about yourself?
- B4: I don't want to use a fountain pen; I'm going to write with a ballpoint pen.
- I4: Is this your ballpoint pen?
- B5: No, my teacher said he didn't want it; he gave it to me. ("No":  $\bar{A}$ - $\bar{B}\bar{E}\bar{N}\bar{G}$  means "In a sense it isn't mine". In English we would say "It's mine now". For tone on "góa" see P. 85.)
- I5: Your teacher is from Taipei, isn't he? (Lit., your teacher is a Taipei man, isn't he?)
- B6: No, he's from Taichung. His wife is from Taipei.
- I6: What does your teacher's wife do?
- B7: She's a teacher too.
- I7: I have to go to Taichung,  $\bar{A}$ - $\bar{B}\bar{E}\bar{N}\bar{G}$ ; do you want to go?
- B8: No, you go ahead; I don't want to go. So long. ( $\bar{M}$ - $\bar{a}$ ." The "a" softens the "M". See the Particle "a" below.)
- I8: OK, so long.

-----

$\bar{T}\bar{U}\bar{I}$ - $\bar{O}\bar{E}$   $\bar{E}$   $\bar{C}\bar{H}\bar{U}$ - $\bar{K}\bar{A}\bar{I}$

NOTES ON DIALOGUE

B1:  $\bar{A}$ - $\bar{I}\bar{A}$ \*: "A" is a prefix to one of the given names of a person (either to the 2nd or 3rd character of his name or to his nickname). "A" usually indicates some degree of familiarity, but may always be used with young children, even upon meeting for the first time.

I1:  $\bar{L}\bar{A}\bar{I}$ - $\bar{c}\bar{h}\bar{E}$  = Come sit. This expression, very common as a greeting, may be spoken not only to a visitor to a house/shop/office but to anyone passing by; and can be spoken not only by the owner but by a guest already in the house/shop/office.

To answer this invitation we say "Hó", even if we continue on our way. "Hó" here means "OK/Good (idea)". Though it is usually not necessary, a simple excuse can be given for not "entering to sit". Words of excuse we will study later.

Contrast these 3 expressions:

1)  $\bar{L}\bar{A}\bar{I}$   $\bar{c}\bar{h}\bar{E}$ . Spoken to one outside a room/building by a person in the position of a host.

2)  $\bar{C}\bar{h}\bar{H}\bar{A}$ \*  $\bar{c}\bar{h}\bar{E}$ . Spoken to one already in the room by one in the position of the host.

3) Kòh lái chē. Spoken by the host to one who is taking leave of the host.

I5, B6: Note the 2 ways of saying "Taipei man":

Tái-pák-lâng.                      Tái-pak é lâng.

The Title of the Dialogue ("Í é pit hō· góa") gives us several points of grammar (about which more will be said in this lesson):

1) "Í é" is the Possessive case and means "his".

2) "Pit" is what would be called in English the Direct Object which in Taiwanese often precedes the verb and the Indirect Object.

3) "Hō·" is the Past Tense in its simplest form; it means "gave". We know from the context that this is Past Tense. We will learn other ways of forming the Past Tense.

4) "Góa" is 2nd tone changed to 7th! A Personal Pronoun immediately following "hō·" at the end of a phrase/ clause/sentence is an exception to the ordinary rule for tone changes.

SIN-GÍ É CHŪ-KÁI

VOCABULARY NOTES

BŪN-HOAT    LĒ-KŪ  
 文法            例的

GRAMMAR    SENTENCE PATTERNS

1. Lí é pit chhia\* lí hō· góa sía.    Please give me your writing instrument.

A. Note that in these constructions Taiwanese prefers to express the verb or infinitive ("sía = to write/for writing") more often than it need be expressed in English.

B. Note the placing of the Direct Object ("pit") before the Indirect Object ("góa"). Using the terms of English grammar we have the formula:

DIRECT OBJECT	hō·	INDIRECT OBJECT	(VERB or INFINITIVE)
---------------	-----	-----------------	----------------------

a) Chheh hō· í khòa\*.    Give him the book(s) to read.

b) Tê hō· lí lim.    Here's some tea for you. Lit., tea give to you to drink.

c) Chî\* hō̄. lí iōng. Here's some money for you. (Lit.,  
I give you money to spend.)

(Note that the subject ("Góa") can be omitted.)

-----

2. Past Tense.

a) Ĩ lái Tái-tiong thak-chheh. He came to Taichung to  
study.

b) Lâu Bok-sū-niū khi Tái-pak. Mrs. Lâu, the minister's  
wife, went to Taipei.

sím-mih-lâng/siá\*-lâng (No. 22 in Vocab.)

a) Ĩ sī sím-mih-lâng? Who's he?/Who's this? (Do not  
say: "Che sī sím-mih-lâng?")

Ĩ sī Tiu\* Sín-sē\*. This is Mr. Tiu\*.

b) Lí ê chheh bōeh hō̄. siá\*-lâng? To whom will you  
give your books?

1) Bōeh hō̄. Lí Lâu-su. I'll give them to  
Teacher Lí.

2) Góa ê chheh bō bōeh hō̄. sím-mih-lâng. I won't  
give books to anyone.

-----

chhòng (No. 4 in Vocab.); chò (No. 5).

A. To ask "What is he doing?" in the sense of  
"What action is he performing at the moment?/What is he up  
to?/What is he hanging around for?", people commonly ask:

Ĩ tēh chhòng-siá\*h?

1) Ĩ tēh siá-jī.

2) Ĩ tēh chiáh-png.

3) Ĩ tēh līm tē. 咁林來

4) Ĩ tēh khoa\*-chheh.

5) Ĩ bō tēh chhòng-siá\*h.



<sup>1</sup>  
 Lí  
<sup>1</sup>  
 Lín  
<sup>7</sup>  
 ĩ  
<sup>7</sup>  
 ĩn  
 Tân Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\*  
<sup>7</sup> Lím Thài-thài  
<sup>7</sup> Ông Bók-su

têh chhông sia\*-hòe/sia\*h/sim-mih?

<sup>1</sup>  
 Góa (Góan)  
<sup>7</sup> ĩ (In)  
 Tân Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\*  
<sup>7</sup> Lím Thài-thài  
<sup>7</sup> Ông Bók-su

têh

<sup>3</sup>  
 chiah-png.  
<sup>3</sup>  
 thak-chheh.  
<sup>2</sup>  
 khoa\*-chheh.  
<sup>7</sup> lim ka<sup>7</sup>-pi.  
<sup>1</sup>  
 sia-jī.

<sup>7</sup>  
 ĩ  
<sup>7</sup>  
 ĩn  
 Tân Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\*  
<sup>7</sup> Lím Thài-thài  
<sup>7</sup> Ông Bók-su

bô têh chhông-sia\*h.

<sup>7</sup> Ā-seng bô<sup>7</sup> têh<sup>2</sup> chhông-sia\*h, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?    Ā-seng is not doing anything, is he?

1) sī.    No (he's not doing anything).

2) M-sī, ĩ<sup>7</sup> têh<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh.    Yes, he's studying.

B. "ĭ tēh chō sīm-mīh?" at times is used in the same sense as "chhōng". It may also mean: "What does he do for a living?"

ĭ tēh chō sīm-mīh?

- 1) ĭ tēh chō Lāu-su. He is a teacher.
- 2) ĭ tēh chō Bōk-su. He is a minister.
- 3) ĭ khi chō Sīu-lí. She went away to be a nun.
- 4) ĭ khi chō Sīu-sū. He went to become a Brother.

- - - - -

iōng/ēng (No. 12 in Voc.). This word means "to use". To use a pencil to write with means "to write with a pencil", hence the meaning "with". To use money or time is "to spend". "Iōng/ēng" has other meanings, such as:

Chhīa\* lí iōng. Please help yourself. (Spoken to a guest when food/tea/candy is placed before him.)

- - - - -

M, Boeh, Ai

"M" (No. 18 in Voc.) signifies unwillingness.

Sometimes an "a" sound is added to the "m". See B8 in the Dialogue. This "a" is used to make the "m" sound less harsh.

"Boeh" (No. 3 in Voc.) and "ai" are frequently used interchangeably to express the idea of "wish, want". As a general rule, however, "ai" almost always expresses a manifestation of one's heart, feelings, affections, desires. "Boeh" is used to express simple future or a simple intention without the strong desire that "ai" implies. Practice in listening plus a knowledge of the context will gradually enable us to know the meaning of "boeh" and "ai".

- A { a) Gōa ai khi. I like to go/I want to go. (Can also mean: "I need to/must go".)
- { b) Gōa boeh khi. I will go/I am going. (I may be very willing to go but not necessarily so.)

c) ǐ kóng böeh lĩm ká-pi, bö ǎi lĩm tê. He says he will drink coffee, he does not want to drink tea.

In c, "böeh" is simple intention or stating a simple fact. Here "bö ǎi" can mean he simply does not want to drink tea right now, but it can and often will mean he never touches the stuff.

d) Góa chín ǎi chiáh-png. I love rice.

"Chín ǎi" manifests strong desire = I like very much.

e) Góa chín bö ǎi chiáh-png. I can't take rice at all. (Strong dislike.)

f) Lǎu-su ǎi ǐ é hák-seng. The teacher loves his/her students. ("ǎi" can mean "love". "Boeh" is never translated as "love".)

-----

B. a) Lí ǎi khi Tái-pak bö? Do you feel like going to Taipei (now)? (OR: Do you like to go to Taipei?)

1) Góa chín bö ǎi khi Tái-pak. I very much dislike going to Taipei.

2) Góa bö ǎi khi. I don't want to go.

3) ǎi, góa chín ǎi khi. I want to go very much.

b) Lán  
Lí  
Lín  
ǐ  
In

böeh khi Tái-pak bö?

Lán

Góa

Góan

ǐ

In

bö böeh  
m

khi Tái-pak.

c) Lí<sup>1</sup> b<sup>2</sup>oeh lái<sup>7</sup> Tái-tiong b<sup>3</sup>ô? Are you coming to Taichung? (The speaker is in Taichung, talking on the phone to one in Taipei.)

1) Boeh, g<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>2</sup>oeh khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-tiong. Yes. I am going to Taichung.

2) B<sup>1</sup>ô, g<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>7</sup>ô b<sup>2</sup>oeh khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-tiong. No, I am not going to Taichung.

3) M-<sup>3</sup>á, g<sup>1</sup>oá m<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-tiong. No, I am unwilling to go to Taichung.

C. Lí<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> b<sup>2</sup>oeh lái<sup>7</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ô? Are you coming?

1) Boeh, g<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>2</sup>oeh khi<sup>1</sup>. Yes, I am going.

2) B<sup>1</sup>ô, g<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>7</sup>ô b<sup>2</sup>oeh khi<sup>1</sup>. No, I'm not going.

3) B<sup>7</sup>ô ài, g<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>7</sup>ô ài khi<sup>1</sup>. No, I don't want to go.

Note "ū...b<sup>3</sup>ô" to form a question. "Ū" need not be translated; it is only the sign of a question.

Note that to answer a question with "boeh", the answer "Yes" is usually translated by "Boeh", and "No" by "B<sup>1</sup>ô" or "B<sup>7</sup>ô ài" (not "B<sup>1</sup>ô boeh").

D. Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> sía-jī<sup>1</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ô? Do you want to write characters (now)?

1) Ài<sup>1</sup>, g<sup>1</sup>oá ài<sup>2</sup> sía-jī<sup>1</sup>. Yes, I want to write.

2) B<sup>7</sup>ô ài, g<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>7</sup>ô ài sía-jī<sup>1</sup>. No, I don't want to write.

Note that we usually do not use "ū" together with "ài" to ask a question. But to ask a question using "chín ài" we should use "ū".

Note also that to answer a question containing "ài" we say "Ài" or "B<sup>7</sup>ô ài". We do not answer "B<sup>1</sup>ô" in such a case.



E. Tone of the "a": THE 1-3-7 RULE

Note that the "a" of "chia<sup>3</sup>h-pá<sup>3</sup> a" is in the 3rd tone. It is following a rule according to which the tone of the "a" is governed by the tone of the preceding word. This rule is called the 1-3-7 Rule, which means that the tone of certain words, such as this "a", is in the 1st, 3rd or 7th tone, depending on the tone of the word immediately preceding.

In the following 7 sentences note the tone of the "a" and of the word immediately preceding "a"; then study the chart following.

In Sentence 1 the "a" is in the 1st tone, following a 1st tone.

In Sentences 2, 3 and 4, the "a" is in the 3rd tone, following the 2nd, 3rd and 4th tones.

In the sentences numbered 5, 7 and 8, the "a" is in the 7th tone, following the 5th, 7th and 8th tones.

- |  |                             |
|--|-----------------------------|
| 1) Lí <sup>1</sup> lí <sup>7</sup> tê <sup>3</sup> bōe?                    | Have you drunk the tea yet? |
| Gōa <sup>1</sup> ū <sup>3</sup> lí <sup>1</sup> a.                         | I have drunk it.            |
| 2) Lí <sup>1</sup> chia <sup>3</sup> h-pá <sup>3</sup> bōe?                | Have you eaten yet?         |
| Chia <sup>3</sup> h-pá <sup>3</sup> a.                                     | I have eaten.               |
| 3) Ī <sup>7</sup> khi <sup>3</sup> bōe?                                    | Has he gone yet?            |
| Khi <sup>3</sup> a.  | He has gone.                |
| 4) Ī <sup>7</sup> khi <sup>2</sup> Tái <sup>7</sup> -pak <sup>3</sup> bōe? | Has she gone to Taipei yet? |
| Khi <sup>2</sup> Tái <sup>7</sup> -pak <sup>3</sup> a.                     | She has gone to Taipei.     |
| 5) Ī <sup>7</sup> lâi <sup>3</sup> bōe?                                    | Has he come yet?            |
| Lâi <sup>7</sup> a.  | He has come.                |
| 7) Lí <sup>1</sup> chia <sup>3</sup> h-pŋg <sup>3</sup> bōe?               | Have you eaten yet?         |
| Gōa <sup>1</sup> chia <sup>3</sup> h-pŋg <sup>7</sup> a.                   | I have eaten.               |

- 8) Lí<sup>1</sup> chiáh<sup>3</sup> bōe?                      Have you eaten yet?  
       Góa<sup>1</sup> chiáh<sup>7</sup> á.                         I have eaten.

The 1-3-7 Rule: Schema

The tone on the "a" of the Perfect Tense may be determined as follows:

If previous word is in the	then "a" is in the:	Example
1st tone	1st tone	Góa <sup>1</sup> ũ <sup>3</sup> lim a.
2nd tone	3rd tone	Chiáh <sup>3</sup> -pá <sup>3</sup> á.
3rd tone	3rd tone	Khì <sup>3</sup> á.
4th tone	3rd tone	Khì <sup>2</sup> Tái <sup>7</sup> -pak <sup>3</sup> á.
5th tone	7th tone	Lái <sup>7</sup> á.
7th tone	7th tone	Góa <sup>1</sup> chiáh <sup>3</sup> -pāg <sup>7</sup> á.
8th tone	7th tone	Góa <sup>1</sup> chiáh <sup>7</sup> á.

iáu-bōe (No. 11 in Voc.).    not yet.

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> chiáh<sup>3</sup>-pá<sup>3</sup> bōe?                      Have you eaten yet?  
     1) Iáu-bōe.                                 Not yet.  
     2) Chiáh<sup>3</sup>-pá<sup>3</sup> á.                            I have eaten.  
     3) Góa<sup>1</sup> chiáh<sup>3</sup>-pá<sup>3</sup> á.                    I have eaten.
- b) Chhòa Siān-si<sup>3</sup>\* chiáh<sup>3</sup>-pá<sup>3</sup> bōe?        Has Mr. Chhòa eaten yet?  
     1) Chhòa Siān-si<sup>3</sup>\* iáu<sup>1</sup>-bōe<sup>3</sup> chiáh<sup>3</sup>-pāg<sup>3</sup>.  
     2) I<sup>7</sup> chiáh<sup>3</sup>-pá<sup>3</sup> á.

王何士去未

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| c) Ông <sup>7</sup> Siū-sū khi <sup>3</sup> bōe?          | Has Brother Ông gone yet?  |
| 1) <sup>7</sup> Ī <sup>1</sup> iâu-bōe khi.               | He hasn't gone yet.  |
| 2) Khi <sup>3</sup> ā.                                    | He has gone.   |
| d) <sup>3</sup> Ū <sup>7</sup> lâng lâi <sup>3</sup> bōe? | Has anyone come yet?   |
| 1) <sup>1</sup> iâu-bōe.                                  | Not yet.   |
| 2) <sup>3</sup> Ū <sup>7</sup> lâng lâi <sup>7</sup> ā.   | Some one has come./Some people have come.  |
| 3) <sup>7</sup> Bô <sup>7</sup> lâng lâi.                 | No one has come. (Note that "a" is not used with the negative of the Perfect Tense.) |

Notice that to say "yet" in asking a question, we say: "bōe" meaning "(or) not yet". It is an enclitic here. To answer in the negative we say: "iâu-bōe" = not yet".

<sup>3</sup> Ū <sup>7</sup> lâng	} <sup>7</sup> lâi } <sup>3</sup> bōe?	<sup>3</sup> Ū <sup>7</sup> lâng	} <sup>7</sup> lâi <sup>7</sup> ā.
<sup>7</sup> Ī		<sup>7</sup> Ī	
GÔ · Siān-si <sup>3</sup> *		GÔ · Siān-si <sup>3</sup> *	
<sup>1</sup> Lí <sup>2</sup> Thài-thài		<sup>1</sup> Lí <sup>2</sup> Thài-thài	
<sup>7</sup> Īn		<sup>7</sup> Īn	

<sup>7</sup> Ī	} <sup>1</sup> iâu-bōe { <sup>7</sup> lâi.	
GÔ · Siān-si <sup>3</sup> *		} <sup>3</sup> khi.
<sup>1</sup> Lí <sup>2</sup> Thài-thài		
<sup>7</sup> Īn		



Possessive Case

The Possessive case of a noun/pronoun is generally formed by adding "ê" (No. 6 in the Voc.) to the noun/pronoun.

NOTE the following 5 rules concerning the Possessive case:

1. A one-syllable noun followed by the sign of the Possessive obeys the ordinary rule of not changing tone.

chheh <sup>7</sup>ê chí\*            the book money.

2. The last syllable of a noun of 2 or more syllables preceding the sign of the Possessive, "ê", does not change tone. This is also according to the general rule.

1) Lāu-su <sup>3</sup>ê <sup>7</sup>chheh.        books belonging to the teacher.

2) Sín-hū <sup>7</sup>ê <sup>7</sup>pāng.

3) Bók-su <sup>3</sup>ê <sup>7</sup>kā-pi.

3. A pronoun preceding the sign of the possessive, "ê", DOES CHANGE tone.

Góá	} <sup>7</sup> ê	chí*.	My money.
Lí		<sup>3</sup> bān- <sup>7</sup> lían-pit.	Your fountain pen.
Í		pāng.	His/her food (cooked food).
Lán		<sup>7</sup> té- <sup>1</sup> bí- <sup>7</sup> tê.	Our tea (yours and mine).
Góan		chheh.	Our books (not yours).
Lín		<sup>7</sup> kā-pi.	Your coffee.
In		<sup>7</sup> góan- <sup>1</sup> chú-pit.	Their pens.

4. When the noun modified by the Possessive is not stated but understood, the "ê" does not change tone.

a) 1) Che sī<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> pit. This is my writing instrument.

2) Che sī<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> ê. This is mine.

b) He m̄-sī<sup>3</sup> lán<sup>1</sup> ê, sī<sup>3</sup> l<sup>7</sup> ê. That's not ours, it's his/hers.

c) Góa<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> iông<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ê, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? I'm going to use yours, OK?

- - - - -

5. My husband/My wife    Your teacher/Your minister, etc.

To modify the words "husband/wife" a possessive pronoun does not require "ê", but the plural form of the pronoun is used even when the possessing person is singular.

a) Góan<sup>1</sup> sian-si\*<sup>7</sup> sê\*<sup>2</sup> Ông. My husband is surnamed Ông.

b) Góan<sup>1</sup> thài-thài<sup>2</sup> sê\*<sup>2</sup> Ông.

c) Lín<sup>1</sup> sîn-se\*/thài-thài<sup>2</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Is your husband/  
wife going?

Note 1: The same rule (plural form used as singular) holds for a Possessive Pronoun used with the title of an occupation:

Góan<sup>1</sup> Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su    My teacher.    Lín<sup>1</sup> Bók<sup>3</sup>-su    Your minister.

In<sup>7</sup> Sîn-hū    His (her) priest.

Note 2: When the possessing persons are plural, the possessive "ê" is frequently used (but not necessarily):

Lín<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> Bók<sup>3</sup>-su    Your (plu.) minister.

In<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> Sîn-hū    Their priest.

Note 3: In Notes 1 and 2 the terms "Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su/Bók<sup>3</sup>-su/Sîn-hū" can also be plural. "Lín<sup>1</sup> Bók<sup>3</sup>-su" can also mean "You ministers".

- - - - -

Tone on Pronoun or "Lâng" Immediately Following a Verb.

✓ The 1-3-7 Rule is frequently used in cases where a pronoun or the word "lâng" immediately follows a verb and is at the end of a phrase/clause/sentence. In such cases the pronoun and "lâng" change tone in the same way as the "a" of the Perfect Tense (P. 80).

a) Chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lí hō<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>7</sup>. Please give it to me.

Note that the tone of the verb ("hō") does not change. "Góa" changes from 2nd to the 7th tone because "hō" is in the 7th tone.

b) Í<sup>7</sup> chí<sup>7</sup>\* bō<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> hō<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup>. He doesn't like to give people money.

Note: "lâng" is a one-syllable noun; the change of tone here is an exception to the rule that one-syllable nouns do not change tone.

c) Í<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chí<sup>7</sup>\* hō<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup>.

Note: the 1st verb ("ài") may precede the Direct Object ("chí\*").

d) Í<sup>7</sup> cháp<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> hō<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>7</sup>. He is going to give me ten dollars.

Contrast (d) with:

e) Í<sup>7</sup> cháp<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> ēng. He will give me ten dollars to spend.

In (e), since the pronoun "góa" is not at the end of a phrase/clause/sentence, it follows the regular rule of tone changes (2nd to 1st), and does not follow the 1-3-7 Rule.

f) Í<sup>7</sup> siā<sup>3</sup>-si<sup>3</sup>\* bō<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>3</sup> í. Mr. Í<sup>7</sup>\* doesn't like him.

g) Í<sup>7</sup> n bōeh<sup>3</sup> chhí<sup>3</sup>a\* lán. They will treat us (to a meal).

In the following schemas note the position of the Direct Object in relation to the 2 verbs ("boeh" and "hō").

✓ A.

Lán	chí*	} bōeh hō <sup>3</sup> · sīm-mih-lâng?
Lí	chheh	
í	kōe-chí	
Lín	pāng	
ín	iān-pit	
	tê	

OR: Lán bōeh chí\* hō<sup>3</sup>· sīm-mih-lâng?

kā-pi

B.

Góa	jī-chap-gō <sup>3</sup> · kho <sup>3</sup> ·	} bōeh hō <sup>2</sup> ·	} lí. í. ín. lâng. (someone OR others)
í	chí*		
Góan	chheh		
ín	lak-chap kho <sup>3</sup> ·		
	kā-pi		
	bān-lían-pit		

OR: Góa { bōeh } chí\* hō<sup>7</sup>· lí.  
          { bō bōeh }

Note: Do NOT say "Lán...(bo) boeh hō<sup>2</sup> lí/lín", since "lán" includes the person(s) spoken to.

✓ C. Lí bōeh lōa-chē chí\* hō<sup>7</sup>· ín? OR:

Lí lōa-chē chí\* bōeh hō<sup>7</sup>· ín? OR:

Chí\* lí bōeh lōa-chē hō<sup>7</sup>· ín? How much money are you going to give them?

Góa bōeh sā<sup>7</sup>\*-chap kho<sup>3</sup>· hō<sup>7</sup>· ín. I'm going to give them \$30.

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Li} \\ \text{i} \\ \text{Lin} \\ \text{In} \end{array} \right\}$	$\begin{array}{l} \text{b}^2\text{oh} \text{ l}^3\text{oa}-\text{ch}^3\text{e} \text{ ch}^{\wedge}\text{i}^* \text{ h}^{\circ}\text{o} \end{array}$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{i}^? \\ \text{g}^{\circ}\text{an}^? \\ \text{l}^{\circ}\text{ang}^? \\ \text{g}^{\circ}\text{oa}^? \end{array} \right.$
---	---	---

$\text{Li}^1 \text{ u}^3 \text{ ch}^{\wedge}\text{i}^*, \text{ s}^{\circ}\text{i} \text{ b}^{\circ}\text{o}^3?$

A statement followed by " $\text{s}^{\circ}\text{i} \text{ b}^{\circ}\text{o}^3$ ." such as " $\text{Li}^1 \text{ u}^3 \text{ ch}^{\wedge}\text{i}^*, \text{ s}^{\circ}\text{i} \text{ b}^{\circ}\text{o}^3?$ " has many shades of meaning according to the context, circumstances or the way it is said. This form is used to make sure of a fact or to show one's doubt or surprise. Observe the difference between the following sets.

1. a)  $\text{Li}^1 \text{ u}^3 \text{ ch}^{\wedge}\text{i}^* \text{ b}^{\circ}\text{o}^3?$  (simple question) Have you any money?  
(I don't know whether or not you have any.)
  - b)  $\text{Li}^1 \text{ u}^3 \text{ ch}^{\wedge}\text{i}^*, \text{ s}^{\circ}\text{i} \text{ b}^{\circ}\text{o}^3?$  You have some money, haven't you?  
(to make sure)
- OR: You haven't any money, have you? (I don't believe you have any).
- OR: It is surprising that you should have money.
2. a)  $\text{Li}^1 \text{ b}^2\text{oh} \text{ kh}^{\circ}\text{i} \text{ T}^7\text{ai}-\text{pak} \text{ b}^{\circ}\text{o}^3?$  Will you go to Taipei?
  - b)  $\text{Li}^1 \text{ b}^2\text{oh} \text{ kh}^{\circ}\text{i} \text{ T}^7\text{ai}-\text{pak}, \text{ s}^{\circ}\text{i} \text{ b}^{\circ}\text{o}^3?$  Are you going to Taipei?  
(They say that you are going to Taipei.) (Simple question or to make sure.)
- OR: Are you going to Taipei? (It is a surprise that such a hick as you is going to Taipei alone.)
- OR: Do you mean to say that you are going to Taipei?  
(I won't allow you to go.)

Re: Invitations to Eat

- a) Gó<sup>1</sup>a chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lí<sup>1</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? I'll treat you to a meal, OK?
- b) Lái<sup>7</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Come and eat (OK?). (Note: this is said by a person to one who comes upon him eating.)
- 1) Hó. Fine. (One usually says "Hó", even if not going to eat, and then goes about his business.)
- 2) Hó; tó<sup>7</sup>-sīa. Gó<sup>1</sup>a chiah-pá<sup>3</sup> á<sup>3</sup>. Fine, thanks; (but) I've eaten. (This is said even if one has not eaten.)
- 

KŪ ㄍSENTENCES

1. Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>3</sup>\* bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 1) Ū, gó<sup>1</sup>a ũ<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>3</sup>\*.  
 2) Bô<sup>3</sup>, gó<sup>1</sup>a bô<sup>7</sup> chí<sup>3</sup>\*. (Here "Bô" = Not have".)
2. Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>3</sup>\*, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 1) Sī, gó<sup>1</sup>a ũ<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>3</sup>\*.  
 2) M-sī, gó<sup>1</sup>a bô<sup>7</sup> chí<sup>3</sup>\*.
3. Lí<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 1) Boeh, gó<sup>1</sup>a bô<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup>.  
 2) Bô<sup>3</sup>, gó<sup>1</sup>a bô<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup>. (Here "Bô" does not mean "Not have"; it is a negative response to a question with "boeh".)
4. Lí<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak<sup>7</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 1) Sī, gó<sup>1</sup>a bô<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak<sup>7</sup>.  
 2) M-sī, gó<sup>1</sup>a bô<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak<sup>7</sup>.

5. Ỉ b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i khi<sup>1</sup>; li<sup>1</sup> ả<sup>2</sup>i khi<sup>2</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ố.?  
 Ỉ b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i khi<sup>1</sup>; g<sup>1</sup>óa i<sup>3</sup>ả b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i khi<sup>1</sup>.
6. B<sup>7</sup>ố l<sup>7</sup>ằng ả<sup>2</sup>i th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>heh; li<sup>1</sup> ả<sup>2</sup>i th<sup>3</sup>ak b<sup>3</sup>ố.?  
 1) G<sup>1</sup>óa m<sup>3</sup>ả b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i th<sup>3</sup>ak. 我嘛無愛讀  
 2) Ầ<sup>1</sup>i, g<sup>1</sup>óa ả<sup>2</sup>i th<sup>3</sup>ak.
7. Li<sup>1</sup> ữ<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>7</sup>ín ả<sup>2</sup>i l<sup>7</sup>ái T<sup>7</sup>ái-ti<sup>7</sup>ong b<sup>3</sup>ố.?  
 1) Ầ<sup>1</sup>i, g<sup>1</sup>óa ch<sup>7</sup>ín ả<sup>2</sup>i l<sup>7</sup>ái T<sup>7</sup>ái-ti<sup>7</sup>ong.  
 2) B<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i, g<sup>1</sup>óa ch<sup>7</sup>ín b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i l<sup>7</sup>ái T<sup>7</sup>ái-ti<sup>7</sup>ong.
8. L<sup>1</sup>ín ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>á b<sup>3</sup>ốe?  
 1) G<sup>1</sup>oan ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>á ả<sup>3</sup>.  
 2) Ỉn ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>á ả<sup>3</sup>; g<sup>1</sup>óa i<sup>1</sup>ầu-b<sup>3</sup>ốe ch<sup>3</sup>iah.
9. He s<sup>3</sup>ỉ Ầ<sup>3</sup>ng Si<sup>3</sup>án-s<sup>3</sup>ỉ\* ế<sup>7</sup> ch<sup>3</sup>heh, s<sup>3</sup>ỉ b<sup>3</sup>ố.?  
 M-s<sup>3</sup>ỉ, he m-s<sup>3</sup>ỉ Ầ<sup>3</sup>ng Si<sup>3</sup>án-s<sup>3</sup>ỉ\* ế<sup>7</sup>, s<sup>3</sup>ỉ G<sup>3</sup>ồ. Si<sup>3</sup>án-s<sup>3</sup>ỉ\* ế<sup>7</sup>.
10. H<sup>3</sup>ak-seng ữ<sup>3</sup> t<sup>2</sup>êh k<sup>1</sup>óng-ôe b<sup>3</sup>ố.?  
 1) Ừ<sup>3</sup>, h<sup>3</sup>ak-seng ữ<sup>3</sup> t<sup>2</sup>êh k<sup>1</sup>óng-ôe.  
 2) B<sup>3</sup>ố, h<sup>3</sup>ak-seng b<sup>7</sup>ố t<sup>2</sup>êh k<sup>1</sup>óng-ôe.
11. S<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih-l<sup>2</sup>ằng b<sup>2</sup>ốeh ch<sup>3</sup>iah k<sup>1</sup>ốe-ch<sup>3</sup>ỉ?  
 B<sup>7</sup>ố l<sup>7</sup>ằng ả<sup>2</sup>i ch<sup>3</sup>iah.
12. Li<sup>1</sup> k<sup>1</sup>óng b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>ng; li<sup>1</sup> ả<sup>2</sup>i ch<sup>3</sup>iah s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih?  
 G<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>ng; g<sup>1</sup>óa ả<sup>2</sup>i l<sup>7</sup>im k<sup>7</sup>ả-pi.
13. Ỉ k<sup>1</sup>óng b<sup>7</sup>ố ch<sup>1</sup>ỉ\*; li<sup>1</sup> b<sup>2</sup>ốeh l<sup>3</sup>ỏa-ch<sup>3</sup>ế ch<sup>1</sup>ỉ\* h<sup>7</sup>ồ. Ỉ?  
 1) Ỉ k<sup>1</sup>óng b<sup>7</sup>ố ch<sup>1</sup>ỉ\*; g<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>2</sup>ốeh j<sup>3</sup>ỉ-s<sup>7</sup>ả\*-ch<sup>3</sup>áp kho. h<sup>7</sup>ồ. Ỉ.  
 2) Ỉ ữ<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>1</sup>ỉ\*; g<sup>1</sup>óa ch<sup>1</sup>ỉ\* b<sup>7</sup>ố b<sup>2</sup>ốeh h<sup>7</sup>ồ. Ỉ.
14. S<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih-l<sup>2</sup>ằng i<sup>1</sup>ầu-b<sup>3</sup>ốe l<sup>1</sup>ái?  
 L<sup>1</sup>ầu Si<sup>3</sup>án-s<sup>3</sup>ỉ\* i<sup>1</sup>ầu-b<sup>3</sup>ốe l<sup>1</sup>ái.

15. Lí kóng bōeh līm-tê, sī bô<sup>3</sup>?

1) Sī, góa kóng bōeh līm-tê.

2) M-sī, góa kóng bōeh līm ká-pi.

16. Tân Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* iáu-bōe lâi, sī bô<sup>3</sup>? (S)

Sī, í iáu-bōe lâi.

17. Chí\* lí bōeh hō<sup>7</sup> í, sī bô<sup>3</sup>?

1) Sī, góa chí\* bōeh hō<sup>7</sup> í.

2) M-sī, góa bô bōeh hō<sup>7</sup> í, bōeh hō<sup>7</sup> lí.

18. Í kóng bōeh sía-jī; lí ũ ián-pit bô<sup>3</sup>?

1) Ū, góa ũ ián-pit.

2) Bô, góa bô ián-pit; góa ũ gōan-chú-pit.

19. Í khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak bōe?

1) Í khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak á.

2) Í iáu-bōe khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak.

20. Í lái Tái-tiong bōe?

1) Í lái Tái-tiong á.

2) Iáu-bōe; í iáu-bōe lái Tái-tiong.

21. Lí ái līm Ông Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* ê ká-pi bô<sup>3</sup>?

Ái, í ê góa chin<sup>2</sup> ái līm.

22. Lâu-su lái kóng bô bōeh thák-chhēh.

23. Í bōeh chhông-sia\*h?

1) Í bô bōeh chhông-sia\*h.

2) Í bōeh thák-chhēh.

24. Lí bōeh chō<sup>2</sup> Bók-su bô<sup>3</sup>?

1) Bōeh, góa bōeh chō<sup>2</sup> Bók-su.

2) Bô, góa bô bōeh chō<sup>2</sup> Bók-su. (Here "Bô" = "No" - is merely stating a fact; it does not mean unwillingness.)



26. Lí b<sup>2</sup>oeh khi b<sup>3</sup>ô·?

M-<sup>3</sup>á. ("M-<sup>3</sup>á" signifies unwillingness.)

27. Ông Si<sup>3</sup>an-si<sup>3</sup>\* chin<sup>7</sup> ài i<sup>3</sup>ong g<sup>7</sup>oan-ch<sup>1</sup>ú-pit si<sup>1</sup>a-jī.

28. Tân Th<sup>2</sup>ai-th<sup>2</sup>ai lái b<sup>3</sup>oe?

29. Ông Si<sup>3</sup>an-si<sup>3</sup>\* ũ t<sup>2</sup>eh si<sup>1</sup>a-jī b<sup>3</sup>ô·?

1) Ū, í t<sup>2</sup>eh si<sup>1</sup>a-jī.

2) Bô, í b<sup>7</sup>ô t<sup>2</sup>eh si<sup>1</sup>a.

30. Lín L<sup>3</sup>au-su lè?

1) Í i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe lái.

2) Í lái á.

31. G<sup>7</sup>o Th<sup>2</sup>ai-th<sup>2</sup>ai b<sup>2</sup>oeh si<sup>1</sup>a-jī.

32. Tân Th<sup>2</sup>ai-th<sup>2</sup>ai t<sup>2</sup>eh k<sup>1</sup>ong s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih?

33. G<sup>1</sup>oá chin<sup>7</sup> ài i<sup>3</sup>ong b<sup>3</sup>an-li<sup>7</sup>an-pit si<sup>1</sup>a-jī.

34. Ū láng ài i<sup>3</sup>ong g<sup>7</sup>oan-ch<sup>1</sup>ú-pit si<sup>1</sup>a-jī.

35. Tân Th<sup>2</sup>ai-th<sup>2</sup>ai i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe b<sup>2</sup>oeh khi T<sup>7</sup>ai-pak.

36. Ū láng b<sup>7</sup>ô ài i<sup>3</sup>ong i<sup>1</sup>an-pit si<sup>1</sup>a-jī, sī b<sup>3</sup>ô·?

37. Lín i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe b<sup>2</sup>oeh th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>eh, sī b<sup>3</sup>ô·?

Sī, g<sup>1</sup>oá i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe b<sup>2</sup>oeh th<sup>1</sup>ak.

38. Chh<sup>2</sup>oá S<sup>7</sup>in-hū i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe lái ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>ng.

39. I<sup>7</sup>an-pit g<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>7</sup>ô ài i<sup>3</sup>ong.

40. H<sup>3</sup>ak-seng chin<sup>7</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ô ài si<sup>1</sup>a-jī.

41. Lí b<sup>2</sup>oeh ch<sup>1</sup>hia\* g<sup>1</sup>oá ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>ng, sī b<sup>3</sup>ô·?

42. S<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih-l<sup>2</sup>ang ài th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>eh?

43. Lí S<sup>7</sup>in-hū t<sup>2</sup>eh si<sup>1</sup>a-jī. Tân L<sup>3</sup>au-su t<sup>2</sup>eh kh<sup>2</sup>oá\*-ch<sup>3</sup>eh.

44. Í b<sup>7</sup>ô t<sup>2</sup>eh i<sup>3</sup>ong lí é pit, sī b<sup>3</sup>ô·?

Sī, í b<sup>7</sup>ô t<sup>2</sup>eh i<sup>3</sup>ong g<sup>1</sup>oá ê; í t<sup>2</sup>eh i<sup>3</sup>ong Chh<sup>2</sup>oá Si<sup>3</sup>an-si<sup>3</sup>\* ê.

45. Lím Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* m<sup>3</sup> lím ká<sup>7</sup>-pi; í<sup>7</sup> bôeh lím-tê<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
46. Ū<sup>3</sup> Tái-pak é<sup>7</sup> Sín-hū<sup>7</sup> lái thak<sup>7</sup>-chheh bô<sup>3</sup>?
47. Lí Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* bôeh<sup>2</sup> chheh<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>. góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*.
48. Lí bô<sup>7</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-tiong, góa<sup>1</sup> mā<sup>3</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>. ("even")
49. Iú\* Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* é<sup>7</sup> chheh<sup>2</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>. lí<sup>1</sup> khòa\* bô<sup>3</sup>?
50. He<sup>3</sup> m<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> bân-lián<sup>7</sup>-pit, sī<sup>3</sup> góan<sup>7</sup>-chú<sup>1</sup>-pit.
51. Góa<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> sia-jī<sup>1</sup>, m<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> khòa\*-chheh.
52. Lí sī<sup>3</sup> lái Tái-tiong thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh, sī<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
53. Tiu\* Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* m<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
54. Gô<sup>1</sup> Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* bôeh<sup>2</sup> tê<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>. góa<sup>1</sup> lim.
55. Lí Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* kóng<sup>1</sup> í<sup>7</sup> m<sup>3</sup> lím ká<sup>7</sup>-pi.
56. Góa<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-pá<sup>3</sup> á.
57. Lâu Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* tēh<sup>2</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> Lâu-su, sī<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
58. Siu-lí<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh<sup>3</sup> á.
59. Bók-su<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-png.
60. Tân Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* bôeh<sup>2</sup> chí\* hō<sup>7</sup>. lí<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
61. Ín<sup>7</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> chhōng<sup>2</sup>-sia\*h?
62. Lâu Sián-si<sup>3</sup>\* tēh<sup>2</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> Lâu-su.
63. Ū<sup>3</sup> láng<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> iōng<sup>3</sup> bân-lián<sup>7</sup>-pit sia-jī<sup>1</sup>.
64. Lí Sín-hū<sup>7</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> ián<sup>7</sup>-pit bô<sup>3</sup>?
65. Ián-pit<sup>7</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> iōng<sup>3</sup>, sī<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
- Sī, góa<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> iōng<sup>3</sup> ián-pit<sup>7</sup>.
66. Lí<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> ēng<sup>3</sup> sim<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup>?
67. Bók-su<sup>3</sup> iáu<sup>1</sup>-bōe<sup>3</sup> lái thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh, sī<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
- Sī, í<sup>7</sup> iáu<sup>1</sup>-bōe<sup>3</sup> lái.

68. Góan iáu-bōe bōeh thak-chheh.
69. Che sī í é góan-chú-pit, sī bō·?
70. He m̄-sī í ê, sī bō·?
- Sī, che m̄-sī í ê.
71. Góá m̄ chí\* hō· í.
72. Bok-su ũ tēh chia̍h-png bō·?
73. Góá iáu-bōe chia̍h-png; lí chia̍h bōe?
74. Láu Bok-su iáu-bōe lái thak-chheh.
75. Hák-seng bōeh khi̍ thak-chheh.
76. Tân Sián-sī\* khi̍ Tái-pak á.
77. Sín-hū, lí bōeh khi̍ Tái-pak chhông-sia\*h?
78. Í chín ài khi̍ Tái-pak, góá mã chín ài khi̍. ("also")
79. Nḡ Bok-su bō tēh thak-chheh, tēh kóng-ōe.
80. Ông Sián-sī\* khi̍ Tái-pak bōe?
81. Sím-mih-lâng ài khi̍ Tái-pak?
82. Che sī sím-mih-lâng é chheh?
83. Gô· Sián-sī\* bōeh tê hō· lí lim bō·? 吳先生卜茶予汝咁無?
84. Iú\* Sián-sī\* tēh chō̍ Láu-su.
85. Í ũ chín-chē ián-pit.
86. Siu-sū tēh sia-jī, sī bō·?
87. Ông Bok-su lái Tái-tiong thak-chheh.
88. Siu-lí kóng í m̄ thak-chheh.
89. Tái-pak ũ chín-chē lâng bō·?
90. Lí bōeh lái Tái-tiong thak-chheh, sī bō·?
91. Í iōng ián-pit tēh chhông-sia\*h?
92. Nḡ Láu-su chín ài lím ká-pi, sī bō·?

93. Tiu\* Thài-thài iâu-bōe khi Tái-pak.

94. Lí ải iông sim-minh pit sia-jī?

95. Chhia\* lí khi chiah-png.

96. Ū lāng chin bó ải sia-jī.

97. Hák-seng lái bōe?

98. Hák-seng ū tén thak-chheh bō<sup>3</sup>?

99. Iú\* Sián-si\* bōeh chí\* hō<sup>7</sup> góa.

100. Lí chí\* iâu-bōe hō<sup>7</sup> í, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?

Sī, góa chí\* iâu-bōe hō<sup>7</sup> í.

101. Ông Thài-thài lái bōe?

102. Lí iông Ng Sín-hū é chí\*, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?

103. Chhóa Lâu-su bōeh khi Tái-tiong, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?

104. Ū lāng m̄ thak-chheh bō<sup>3</sup>? (S)

a) Ū, ū lāng m̄ thak-chheh.

b) Bō, bó lāng m̄ thak-chheh.

105. Che sī sim-minh pit?

✓ 106. Lí m̄ chí\* hō<sup>7</sup> góa, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?

107. Ū Sín-hū lái Tái-tiong thak-chheh bō<sup>3</sup>?

108. Hák-seng bó ải sia-jī, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?

109. Lâu Siu-lí tén chhông-sia\*h?

110. Lí tén sia sia\*-hòe?

111. Siu-lí tén chiah sia\*h?

112. Lí é chheh bōeh hō<sup>7</sup> í bō<sup>3</sup>?

M, góa é chheh m̄ hō<sup>7</sup> í.

113. Í é pit bōeh hō<sup>3</sup> sim-minh-lāng?

Í kóng í é bó bōeh hō<sup>7</sup> lāng.

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED (S)

16. Mr. Tân hasn't come yet, has he?  
No, he hasn't come yet.
104. Are there people who won't study?  
a) Yes, there are those who won't study.  
b) No, there is no one who won't study.

TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. I have eaten. 我吃饱矣。 她卜用什厝笔字
2. What writing instrument are you going to write with?
3. I'm going to drink coffee. How about yourself? 我卜啲咖啡。 她咧
4. Please come again, Teacher Chhòa. 蔡老师。 请她阁来坐
5. This is yours, not mine. 这个是她的, 不是我的
6. Please give me your book to read. 她个册请她予我看
7. I am not going; my wife isn't either. 我拒卜去, 阮太太嘛拒卜去
8. Has he come yet? 伊来未?  
He has come. 伊来矣
- ✓9. He doesn't like to give people money. 伊拒爱钱予人
10. Mr. Tiu\* is not studying, is he? 张先生拒作读册, 是型?  
No, he's not studying. 是, 伊拒作读

The Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences:

1. Góá chiáⁿ-pá á.
2. Lí bōeh iōng sīm-mīh pit síá (-jī)?
3. Góá bōeh līm ká-pi. Lí lè?
4. Chhóa Lāu-su, chhia\* lí kōh lái chē.
5. Che sī lí ê, m̄-sī góá ê.
6. Lí é chheh chhia\* lí hō. góá khòa\*.
7. Góá bō bōeh khi; góan thài-thài mā bō bōeh khi.

Ls 4

8. ỉ<sup>7</sup> l<sup>7</sup>ai b<sup>3</sup>ōe?

L<sup>7</sup>ai ả.

9. ỉ<sup>7</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i ch<sup>7</sup>ỉ\* h<sup>7</sup>ō• l<sup>7</sup>àng./Ỉ<sup>7</sup> ch<sup>7</sup>ỉ\* b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i h<sup>7</sup>ō• l<sup>7</sup>àng./Ch<sup>7</sup>ỉ\* ỉ<sup>7</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ố  
ả<sup>2</sup>i h<sup>7</sup>ō• l<sup>7</sup>àng.

10. Tiu\* si<sup>3</sup>an-si<sup>3</sup>\* b<sup>7</sup>ố t<sup>2</sup>ên th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>eh, s<sup>7</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>ố•?

s<sup>7</sup>i, ỉ<sup>7</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ố t<sup>2</sup>ên th<sup>3</sup>ak.

Tĕ gō· khòLesson 5TŪI-ŌEDIALOGUEBōeh bé chít nia thài-thài chhēng é sa\*

卜買這銀太太 穿個衫

L = Lâu Siān-sī\* - at home

C = Chhòa Siān-sī\*

劉

蔡

L1: Chhòa Siān-sī\*, lái chē. Chiāh pá bōe?

C1: Chiāh pá ā. 哈飽鴨

哈飽未

L2: Lí bōeh khi tōh-ūi? 他位

C2: Bōeh khi bé mih-kīa\*. 買物件

L3: Lí sī bōeh bé sim-mih mih-kīa\*?

C3: Bé chít-kōa ai iōng é mih-kīa\* kán chít nia thài-thài é sa\*. 一畚

L4: Nā-sī bōeh bé thài-thài chhēng é sa\*, lí ai kán thài-thài khi bé.

C4: Í bó ai khi; í kóng í bōeh sé sa\*. Lí kán góa khi, hó bó\*?

L5: Hó, góa lái-khi kōai\* thāng-ā-mng káp mng. Lán bōeh lái-khi tōh-ūi bé? 窗仔門 佢門

C5: Bōeh khi Chiong-hoa bé. Tī hia lí ū pēng-iú tēh bē bó\*? 彰化

L6: Tī hia góa ū chít é pēng-iú sē\* Iú\*; í é mīa hō·-chò 2世界 2姓和; í é mīa hō·-chò Sē-Hōng; ín chhù tēh chò sá\*-khò·; ín bó tēh bē.

C6: Lán nā bé-bō, lán lái-khi ín chhù-nih chhīa\* í chò.

SĪN-GÍVOCABULARY

1. bé 買 to buy.

Góa bōeh khi bé mih-kīa\*. I am going shopping (lit., going to buy things).

2. <sup>1</sup>bé-bô 買不到 to fail to buy (an item because it cannot be found/is not the right size, etc.).

Sa\* <sup>1</sup>góa <sup>1</sup>khí <sup>7</sup>Chióng-hòa <sup>1</sup>bé-bô. I went to Changhua to buy some clothes but wasn't able to buy any (OR: buy what I wanted).

3. <sup>1</sup>bé-ū 買得到 to buy what one wants/to buy what one was looking for.

<sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>1</sup>bé-bô, <sup>7</sup>í <sup>1</sup>bé-ū. I didn't buy what I wanted; he did (he found what he wanted).

4. <sup>1</sup>bē 賣 to sell/to sell to.

<sup>1</sup>Lín <sup>2</sup>thài-thài <sup>2</sup>tēh <sup>3</sup>bē <sup>1</sup>kóe-chí, <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>3</sup>bō? Your wife is selling fruit, isn't she?

5. <sup>1</sup>chhēng 穿 to wear; (with "teh") put on. (Used of clothes/shoes, not of hat/ring; see Voc. Note 1.)

<sup>3</sup>chhēng-sa\* wear clothes.

<sup>3</sup>chhēng-khò 穿褲 wear trousers.

<sup>7</sup>í <sup>2</sup>tēh <sup>3</sup>chhēng-sa\*. He is getting dressed.

6. <sup>1</sup>chhù 菜房子 / 家 house/home/family. (See Vocab. Note 2.)

<sup>3</sup>Che <sup>1</sup>sī <sup>1</sup>góan <sup>1</sup>chhù. This is my house. (Here it does not mean "family".)

<sup>7</sup>ín <sup>1</sup>chhù <sup>2</sup>tēh <sup>3</sup>bē <sup>1</sup>kóe-chí. His family sells fruit.

7. <sup>1</sup>chia 這裏 here.

<sup>1</sup>Chhia\* <sup>1</sup>lí <sup>7</sup>lái chia. Please come here.

<sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>3</sup>tī chia. I am here.

8. <sup>7</sup>Chióng-hòa 彰化 Changhua. (Name of city/county in central Taiwan.)

9. ê 個 (Measure used with many nouns for the purpose of enumeration. See Grammar Note 3.)

<sup>3</sup>Ū <sup>3</sup>nng <sup>7</sup>é <sup>2</sup>lâng <sup>3</sup>tēh <sup>3</sup>chiah-png. There are 2 people eating. (Measures, usually untranslatable, generally must be used between a numeral and a noun modified by the numeral.)



10. hia 那裏 there (of place).

Chhia\* lí khi<sup>2</sup> hia. Please go over there.

Tân Siân-si\* ũ tī hia bô\*? Is Mr. Tân there?

1) Ū, í tī hia. Yes, he's there.

2) Bô, í bô tī hia. No, he's not there.

11. hó bô\*? 好嗎? Is that all right? Is it O.K.? (Lit., Good or not?)

Lí é chhēh hō\* góa khòa\*, hó bô\*? How about letting me read your book?

Lí bô\* ài līm kā-pi; chiah kōe-chí, hó bô\*? You don't want coffee; have some fruit, OK?

12. hō\* chō/khō-chō 叫做 to be called/named. (This verb is used when expressing one's given name or nickname.)

Che khō-chō sīm-mīh? What is this called?

Che khō-chō thāng-á-mng. This is called a window.

Lí sīm-mīh mīa? What is your name? (See Voc. Note 3.)

Góa hō\* chō Ā-Sēng. My name is Ā-Sēng.

13. kah/kap 和 / 及 / 跟 / 與 and/with. (Connects nouns / pronouns / noun clauses / some verbs and verbal clauses; does not connect adjectives/adverbs.)

Góan chhū ũ chit é mng kāh sá\* é thāng-á-mng. Our house has one door and 3 windows.

Ī kāh góa lái. He came with me.

Īn chhia\* góa chiah-png káp līm kā-pi. They treated me to a meal and coffee.

14. khò\* 褲 trousers. (Measure: nía)

Chit nía khò\* ài lōa-chē chí\*? How much is one pair of pants? ("Nía" is the measure for any garment.)

15. khui 開 to open.

Chhia\* lí khui thāng-á-mng. Please open the windows.

16. kóa 些, some/several/a small amount. (Always preceded by "chit = one". Signifies an indefinite, small quantity. The noun modified by "kóa" does not need its proper measure; "kóa" itself is a measure.)

chit-kóa chí\* a bit of money.

Góa bōeh khi bé chit-kóa mih-kīa\*. I'm going to buy a few things.

Tī chia ũ chit-kóa sa\*; sī sim-mih-lâng ê? There are some clothes here; whose are they?

17. koai\* 關 to close.

Mng ũ koai\* bō\*? Is the door closed?

18. kúi + Measure 幾 + 單位 how many/how much.

bō kúi + Measure not many/only a few.

Kúi ê lâng? How many people?

Bō kúi ê. Not many.

Kúi kho? How much money?

Bō kúi kho. Not much.

19. lái-khì 去 to go. (Usually used with the first person; not used with negatives or in past tense.)

Lán lái-khì. Let's go.

Lán lái-khì chiāh-png. Let's go eat.

Góan bō ài khi chiāh-png. We don't want to go and eat.

20. Lí hó bō\*? 你好嗎? How are you? (Lit., Are you well?)  
(This greeting is not so common in Taiwanese as in English. See at Lē-Kù No. 20.)

Answer: Hó!/Chín hó!

21. mīa 名 name/the given name of a person. (Measure: ê)  
(See Vocab. Note 3.)

tōa-mīa given name. (Lit., "great name" - an honorific term used in asking a person his/her given name.)

Lí sim-mih tōa-mīa? What is your (great) given name?

22. mih-kīa\* / mih 東西 / 物 thing/article/object.  
 Che m̄-sī góa é mih-kīa\*. This thing is not mine.
23. m̄ng 門 door. (Measure: ê)  
 M̄ng bô koai\*; lí khi koai\*. The door is not closed;  
 go and close it.
24. nā / nā-sī 若是 / 如果 if. (Usually comes after the subject,  
 expressed or understood; see Gram. Note 2.)  
 Góa nā bôeh khi, lí bôeh khi bô? If I go, will you  
 go?  
 Che nā-sī góa ê, góa bôeh hō lí. If this were mine,  
 I'd give it to you.
25. nía 件 (Measure for clothing)  
 Góa bôeh bé sá\* nía sa\*, n̄ng nía khò\*. I'm going to  
 buy 3 shirts and 2 pairs of pants.
26. -nih 裏 / 上 / 內 to be in/at/on. (Attached to a noun of  
 place; usually with "tī". Tone follows the 1-3-7  
 Rule - Ls 4. See Voc. Note 4. Since the 8th tone on  
 "nih" always changes, we have omitted it from the  
 examples.)  
 Í khi tóh-ūi? Where did he go?  
 Í tī chhù-nih, bô khi toh. He's at home; he  
 didn't go anywhere.
27. pēng-iú 朋友 friend. (Measure: ê)  
 hó pēng-iú good friend.  
 Sim-mih-lâng sī lí é hó pēng-iú? Who is your good  
 friend? (Asked of children.)
28. pún 本 (Measure for books)  
 Chhia\* lí chit pún chheh hō\* góa khòa\*. Please give  
 me a book to read.
29. sa\* 衣服 clothes/shirt/garment/dress. (Measure: nía)  
 Góa é sa\* tī tóh-ūi? Where is my shirt/dress?

30. <sup>7</sup>sá\*-khò· / <sup>7</sup>sá\*-<sup>1</sup>á-khò· 衣褲 clothes. (Measure: nía)  
<sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>7</sup>é <sup>7</sup>sá\*-khò· <sup>2</sup>bóeh <sup>3</sup>sé <sup>3</sup>bô·? Do you want your clothes washed (OR: Are you going to wash your clothes?)
31. <sup>7</sup>sé 洗 to wash. ("Sé" is also used in photography to mean "make a print from a negative".)  
<sup>1</sup>sé sa\* wash clothes.  
<sup>1</sup>Góá <sup>7</sup>é sa\* <sup>1</sup>iâu-<sup>3</sup>bôe sé. I haven't done my laundry yet.
32. <sup>2</sup>sê\*-<sup>1</sup>mía 姓名 full name. (See Voc. Note 3 B.)  
<sup>1</sup>Góá <sup>7</sup>é chheh <sup>1</sup>góá <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>1</sup>sía <sup>1</sup>góá <sup>7</sup>é <sup>2</sup>sê\*-<sup>1</sup>mía. I wrote my name in my books.
33. <sup>7</sup>Sín-tek 新竹 Hsinchu (name of city/county in northern Taiwan.)
34. <sup>7</sup>tháng-<sup>1</sup>á-mńg 窗戶 window. (Measure: ê)  
<sup>7</sup>Tháng-<sup>1</sup>á-mńg <sup>1</sup>lí <sup>2</sup>ài khui <sup>3</sup>bô·? Do you want the window opened?
35. <sup>7</sup>tī 在 to be in/at/on (a place).  
<sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>7</sup>é chheh <sup>3</sup>tī <sup>1</sup>góá chia. I have your book. (Your book is at my place/with me here.)  
<sup>3</sup>Tī chheh-<sup>3</sup>nih <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>1</sup>sía <sup>1</sup>góá <sup>7</sup>é <sup>1</sup>mía. My name is in the book.
36. <sup>2</sup>tóh-<sup>2</sup>ũi / <sup>2</sup>táh-<sup>2</sup>ũi / <sup>2</sup>toh / <sup>2</sup>tah 那裏 / 那兒 where/somewhere; (with negative) anywhere.  
<sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>2</sup>bóeh <sup>2</sup>khí <sup>2</sup>tóh-<sup>2</sup>ũi? Where are you going?  
 1) <sup>1</sup>Góá <sup>2</sup>bóeh <sup>2</sup>khí <sup>7</sup>Tái-pak. I'm going to Taipei.  
 2) <sup>1</sup>Góá <sup>2</sup>bó <sup>2</sup>bóeh <sup>2</sup>khí <sup>2</sup>tah. I'm not going anywhere.

TŪI-ŌE É HŌAN-ĒK

TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

Going to buy a dress for my wife

(Lit., Going to buy a my-wife-wears dress)

L1: Come in and have a seat, Mr. Chhòa. Did you eat yet? (Both these sentences are greetings.)

- C1: Yes.  
 L2: Where are you going? (Another greeting.)  
 C2: I'm going to buy something. OR: I'm going shopping.  
 L3: What is it that you are going to buy? (This would be asked only by one's more intimate friends.) (Note "sī" used before "bóeh bé". We may also ask this without "sī".)  
 C3: I'm going to buy a few things I need (to use) and, a dress for my wife.  
 L4: If you're going to buy your wife a dress, your wife has to go with you to buy it. (Lit., ...you have to go with your wife to buy it.)  
 C4: She doesn't want to go; she says she'll wash the clothes. You come with me, OK?  
 L5: OK, I'll go and close the windows and door. Where are we going to shop?  
 C5: We're going to Changhua. Do you have any friends there selling them?  
 L6: I have a friend there surnamed Iŭ\*; his name is Sĕ-Hông; they make clothes; they don't sell them (ready-made).  
 C6: If we can't find what we want, let's go to his house and ask him to make the dress.

TŪI-ŌE É CHŪ-KÁI

NOTES ON DIALOGUE

C3: (Góá bóeh) bé chít-kóá ài iōng é mih-kīa\* káh chít nía  
 thài-thài é sa\*. I'm going to buy some things (that) I  
 need and a dress for my wife.

1. The first part of the above sentence we translate into English as a Relative Clause. For the moment let us think of "ê" as a relative pronoun ("that/who/which") preceded by a clause ("Bé chít kóá ài iōng") which modifies the word following "ê" ("mih-kīa\*").

Thus we have: "I'm going to buy a few things that I need to use." See Grammar Note 4.

In the title of the Dialogue, "thài-thài chhēng é sa\*" is the same construction: "a dress that my wife wears", i.e., her type of dress.

2. "Chít nía sa\*" means "one article of clothing/one dress". "Nía" is called a MEASURE. Each noun has its proper measure. "Nía" is used only with "sa\* = clothes". See Grammar Note 3.

✓L6: "In chhù" here means "his family" (or simply "they"), not "his house", as we know from the context. Someone (or several) in the family is making clothes.

SĪN-GÍ É CHHŪ-KÁI

VOCABULARY NOTES

1. chhēng (No. 5 in Vocab.).

- a) Ī tēh chhēng-sa\*. He is putting on his clothes. (Note that "tēh chhēng-sa\*" always means "to be getting dressed", while "Ī tēh chhēng é sa\*" means "the clothes that he (habitually) wears".)
- b) Ī chhēng gōa é sa\*. He is wearing my clothes. (Note: Do not use "tēh chhēng" to mean "is wearing (now)".)
- c) Ī bō chhēng sa\*. He is naked (now). OR: He never wears clothes.
- d) Ī chhēng chin-chē sa\*. He is wearing many clothes.
- e) Ī bō ai chhēng chin-chē sa\*. He doesn't want to wear a lot of clothes.
- f) In siān-si\* tēh chhēng-sa\*. Her husband is getting dressed.

2. chhù (No. 6 in Vocab.).

A Possessive Pronoun modifying the word "chhù" follows the same rule as when modifying "husband/wife" (Ls. 4, p. 84):

- 1) "ê", the sign of the Possessive, is not required.
- 2) The plural form of the pronoun is used even when it is singular in meaning.
- a) Gōan chhù my/our house/home/family.
- b) Lān chhù our...
- c) Līn chhù your (sing. and plu.)...
- d) Īn chhù his/her/their...

- e) Che s<sup>3</sup>ĩ G<sup>3</sup>Ô. S<sup>3</sup>ĩn-s<sup>3</sup>ê\* 7 ỉn chhù. This is the house of Mr. G<sup>3</sup>Ô. (Note the expression "Mr. G<sup>3</sup>Ô his house".)
- f) 7 ỉn chhù 3 ữ ch<sup>7</sup>ĩn-ch<sup>3</sup>ê l<sup>3</sup>ang. Their family has a lot of people. = They have a big family.
- g) 1 G<sup>1</sup>oan chhù 7 ê th<sup>7</sup>ang-<sup>1</sup>ả-m<sup>7</sup>ng b<sup>7</sup>o koai\*.  
The window of our house is not closed.

3. A. m<sup>1</sup>ĩa (Voc. No. 21) given name.

1. In Ls 3 we learned how to ask one's surname: "L<sup>1</sup> k<sup>2</sup>u<sup>2</sup>i s<sup>2</sup>ê\*/s<sup>2</sup>ĩ\*?" "K<sup>2</sup>u<sup>2</sup>i" is an honorific term.

In asking an adult his given name we may use the honorific term "t<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>a = big/great".

L<sup>1</sup> s<sup>1</sup>ĩm-m<sup>2</sup>ĩh t<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>a-m<sup>1</sup>ĩa? What is your given name?

- 1) G<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a h<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>-ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup> Chh<sup>7</sup>ong-B<sup>7</sup>ĩn. I am called Chh<sup>7</sup>ong-B<sup>7</sup>ĩn.  
我号作 聪 敏

2. We ask younger people:

L<sup>1</sup> s<sup>1</sup>ĩm-m<sup>2</sup>ĩh m<sup>1</sup>ĩa?

- 1) G<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a k<sup>2</sup>ĩo-ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup> ả-G<sup>1</sup>ĩ. 阿 义

3. We do not use the honorific term when asking the name of a third person, unless he/she is present.

7 ỉ s<sup>1</sup>ĩm-m<sup>2</sup>ĩh m<sup>1</sup>ĩa? / 7 h<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>-ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup> s<sup>1</sup>ĩm-m<sup>2</sup>ĩh m<sup>1</sup>ĩa?

Note: If neither surname nor personal name is known, this question usually means: What is his/her full name?

- B. s<sup>2</sup>ê\*-m<sup>1</sup>ĩa (No. 32). This is the formal word for "full name".

Ải s<sup>1</sup>ĩa s<sup>2</sup>ê\* k<sup>2</sup>ảh m<sup>1</sup>ĩa b<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>? Do we have to write our surname and given name?

- Ải, ải s<sup>1</sup>ĩa s<sup>2</sup>ê\*-m<sup>1</sup>ĩa. Yes, you must write your full name.

4. "-nih" (No. 26) is a place word, indicating that something is in a place in an indefinite way, but is added mostly to make a double sound; single sounds ("chhù") lack euphony. "Nih" follows the 1-3-7 Rule regarding tone changes.

Iŭ\* Siān-si\* ũ tī chhù-nih bô? Is Mr. Iŭ\* home?

Ū, ỉ ũ tī chhù-nih. Yes, he's home. (He may be outside the house but at least he's around somewhere.)

---

BUN-HOAT

GRAMMAR

1. Position of Negatives. The meaning of a sentence can depend on the position of the negative in the sentence.

a) ỉ ũ chin ải kóng-ōe bô? Does he like to talk a lot (more than the average person)?

1) Ū, ỉ chin ải kóng-ōe. Yes, he likes to talk a lot.

2) Bô, ỉ bô chin ải kóng-ōe. No, he doesn't like to talk a lot. (Neither extreme of being too talkative or too silent.)

3) Bô, ỉ chin bô ải kóng-ōe. No, he's very quiet. (Extreme)

b) Lí ũ chí\* bô? Do you have money?

1) Góa bô chin ũ chí\*. I don't have an awful lot of money.

2) Góa chin bô chí\*. I'm very poor.

2. nā/nā-sī. (No. 24).

1. "Nā" usually follows the subject. Often the subject is understood.

a) ỉ nā khi, góa bô ải khi. If he goes, I don't want to go.

b) Góa nā ũ chí\*, bôeh khi Tái-pak bé mih.

c) Góa nā-sī lí, góa bô ải bé.



- d) Nā<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> ká-pi, gó<sup>1</sup>a bó<sup>2</sup>eh lím ká-pi, nā<sup>3</sup> bó, gó<sup>1</sup>a bó<sup>2</sup>eh lím-tê. If we/you/they have coffee I'll drink coffee. If not (OR: Otherwise) I'll drink tea.
- e) Nā<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> mih, ái<sup>2</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chí\*<sup>3</sup>; gó<sup>1</sup>a bó<sup>2</sup> chí\*<sup>7</sup>. If we're going shopping, we need money; I don't have any money.
- f) Í<sup>7</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> lá<sup>7</sup>i lán<sup>7</sup> chhù, ái<sup>2</sup> chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* í<sup>7</sup> chē.
- g) Gó<sup>1</sup>an nā<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chin-chē<sup>3</sup> chí\*<sup>3</sup>, gó<sup>1</sup>an bó<sup>2</sup>eh bé<sup>1</sup> chhù.
- h) Nā<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chí\*<sup>3</sup>, bó<sup>2</sup>eh bé; nā<sup>3</sup> bó, bó<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> bé.

2. Sometimes the subject of the sentence follows "Nā<sup>3</sup>-sī":

- a) Nā<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> Tiu\* Thài-thài bó<sup>2</sup>eh khi, Tiu\* Siān-sī\*<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ái khi.
- b) Nā<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> goá, gó<sup>1</sup>a bó<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>2</sup>eh chò. If it were I, I wouldn't do it.

### 3. Measures: ê (No. 9 in Voc.)

This "ê" (not the Possessive "ê" -Ls 4) is called a MEASURE and is one of many measures used in Taiwanese. The measure must be used whenever a noun is modified by a number or certain other words which we shall study later. Thus:

- a) Chit<sup>3</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lāng. One person.

"One" in Taiwanese is "chit"; "person" is "lāng". But to say "one person" we must use "ê", which is the measure for "lāng".

The English language has measures but a limited number: a lump of sugar, a string of beads, a quart of milk, a slice of bread, a piece of meat, etc. In Taiwanese every noun has its proper measure; "ê" is the measure for many nouns including "lāng/mng/thang-á-mng/hak-seng". In this lesson we also have "nía" as the measure for "clothes" and "pún" as the measure for "books".

Constant drilling is required to acquire the habit of using the measure with the noun. It is not always easy to define exactly what type of object requires which measure; learning the proper measures must often be done by listening to how the people use them.

- b) N<sup>3</sup>ng é l<sup>7</sup>ang. Sá\* é l<sup>7</sup>ang.
- c) S<sup>2</sup>i-g<sup>3</sup>o. é l<sup>7</sup>ang b<sup>2</sup>oeh l<sup>7</sup>ai.
- d) Ū chh<sup>2</sup>it-ch<sup>3</sup>ap-g<sup>3</sup>o.-l<sup>3</sup>ak é l<sup>7</sup>ang l<sup>7</sup>ai. 7<sup>5-6</sup>
- e) Ū p<sup>2</sup>eh-ch<sup>3</sup>ap-k<sup>1</sup>au é h<sup>3</sup>ak-seng b<sup>2</sup>oeh kh<sup>1</sup>i. 8<sup>9</sup>
- f) Ū j<sup>3</sup>i-ch<sup>3</sup>ap-chh<sup>2</sup>it é L<sup>3</sup>au-su.
- g) Ū n<sup>3</sup>ng é m<sup>7</sup>ng, sá\* é th<sup>7</sup>ang-á-m<sup>1</sup>ng.
- h) Ū s<sup>2</sup>i é l<sup>7</sup>ang l<sup>7</sup>ai; n<sup>3</sup>ng é b<sup>2</sup>o l<sup>7</sup>ai. 4 people came; 2 did not come. Note: When the noun ("l<sup>7</sup>ang") is not stated, as in the 2nd part of the sentence, the measure ("ê") does not change tone. (This is also true of the Possessive "ê" - Ls 4.)
- i) L<sup>1</sup>i b<sup>2</sup>oeh bé ch<sup>1</sup>it n<sup>3</sup>ia b<sup>3</sup>o. Are you going to buy one (dress/shirt/pants)?
- j) Ch<sup>3</sup>ap-ít ê b<sup>2</sup>oeh kh<sup>1</sup>i.
- k) G<sup>1</sup>óa ū ch<sup>3</sup>ap-s<sup>2</sup>i n<sup>3</sup>ia sá\* k<sup>2</sup>ap ch<sup>3</sup>ap-chh<sup>2</sup>it p<sup>1</sup>un ch<sup>1</sup>eh. I have 14 articles of clothing and 17 books.

4. "ê" of the Relative Clause.

- a) "G<sup>1</sup>óa é ch<sup>7</sup>eh = my book." This "ê" is the Possessive "ê" - Ls 4.
- b) "Che s<sup>3</sup>i i s<sup>7</sup>ía é j<sup>7</sup>i. These are the characters that he wrote."

This "ê" is somewhat similar to the Possessive "ê" but is preceded by a clause ("Che s<sup>3</sup>i i s<sup>7</sup>ía"), not by a simple noun or pronoun. We may call the "ê" in b the "ê" of the Relative Clause because we frequently translate the whole expression into English by the use of a Relative Clause. Thus in b above: "These are the characters that he wrote."

We might translate it somewhat literally as "These are the he-wrote characters".

**NB. THE VERB BEFORE "ê" IN A RELATIVE CLAUSE DOES NOT CHANGE TONE.**

- c)  $\overset{7}{\text{I}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{têh}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{khò}}^*$   $\overset{7}{\text{é}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{chheh}}$   $\overset{3}{\text{góa}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{mã}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{ài}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{khò}}^*$ . That book (which) he's reading I want to read too. (Lit., the he-is-reading book I also want to read.)
- d) He  $\overset{3}{\text{sì}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{Lí}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{Siù-lí}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{hō}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{góa}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{é}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{chheh}}$ . That is a book that was given to me by Sister Lí. (That is the Sister Lí-gave-me book.)

Note the tones on " $\overset{7}{\text{hō}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{góa}}$ ": see Ls 4, page 85.

✓ 5. " $\overset{7}{\text{lâi-tī}}$ / $\overset{2}{\text{khì-tī}}$ "

Adding "tī" to "lâi" or "khì" means that one is in a place over some period of time. If speaking of present circumstances, then " $\overset{7}{\text{lâi-tī}}$ " or " $\overset{2}{\text{khì-tī}}$ " means that the subject is still in the place mentioned.

- a)  $\overset{7}{\text{I}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{lâi-tī}}$   $\overset{3}{\text{chia}}$ . He came here and is still here.
- b) Ông  $\overset{3}{\text{Siân-si}}$ \*  $\overset{3}{\text{ũ}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{khì-tī}}$   $\overset{3}{\text{lí}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{hia}}$   $\overset{3}{\text{bô}}$ ? Did Mr. Ông go to your house (and is he still there)?

Contrast b with c:

- c) Ông  $\overset{3}{\text{Siân-si}}$ \*  $\overset{3}{\text{ũ}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{khì}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{lí}}$   $\overset{3}{\text{hia}}$   $\overset{3}{\text{bô}}$ ? Did Mr. Ông go to your house? (This makes no reference to whether he is still there.)

$\overset{3}{\text{LE-KU}}$  131107

PATTERN SENTENCES

The code words on the following pages (" $\overset{1}{\text{bé}}$ ,  $\overset{1}{\text{bé-bô}}$ ", etc.) are numbered according to the number of the word in the Vocabulary.

If a Pattern Sentence is marked "P", this means that an English translation or an explanation may be found after the last Pattern Sentence.

1.  $\overset{1}{\text{bé}}$

- a)  $\overset{1}{\text{Góan}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{thài-thài}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{khì}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{bé}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{mih}}$ .
- b)  $\overset{1}{\text{Lí}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{bòeh}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{khì}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{tón-ũi}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{bé}}$ ? (P)
- c)  $\overset{1}{\text{Góan}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{siân-si}}$ \*  $\overset{2}{\text{khì}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{bé}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{khò}}$ .
- d)  $\overset{1}{\text{Góa}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{bó}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{bé}}$   $\overset{7}{\text{chín-chē}}$   $\overset{3}{\text{mih-kĩa}}$ .\*
- e)  $\overset{1}{\text{Lí}}$   $\overset{3}{\text{nã}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{bòeh}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{bé}}$ ,  $\overset{1}{\text{góa}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{kâh}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{lí}}$   $\overset{2}{\text{khì}}$   $\overset{1}{\text{bé}}$ .

2. bé-bô

a) Lím Siân-si\* khi bé í é sa\*; bé-ū bô? (P)

Bô, bé-bô.

b) Góa khi bé-bô; lí khi bé, hó bô? (P)

c) Tái-tiong nã bé-bô, góa bôeh khi Tái-pak bé. (P)

3. bé-ū

a) Lí é khò· góa bé-ū á. (P)

b) Góa bé-bô; lí khi tóh-ūi bé, bé-ū? (P)

c) Góa sa\* bé-ū, khò· bé-bô.

d) Tí Tái-tiong góa bé-ū; tí Chióng-hòa lí nã bé-bô, chhia\* lí lái Tái-tiong bé.

4. bē

a) Í é chhù bôeh bē, lí bôeh bé bô? (P)

b) Che tí Tái-tiong bô lánng tēh bē. (P)

c) Góa iáu-bôe chiah-png; ū lánng tēh bē png bô? 68

d) Sa\* chit nía í bē lāk-cháp-pēh kho·; lí ài bé bô? (P)

e) Lāk-cháp kho· í m bē; í bôeh bē chhít-cháp-jī kho·. (P)

5. chhēng

a) Nã m-sī góa é sa\*, góa bó ài chhēng.

b) Góa é sa\* hō· lí chhēng, lí ài bô? 9x10

c) Í chhēng é sá\*-khò· ài chin-chē chí\*. (P)

d) Che sī í tēh chhēng é sá\*-khò·, m-sī góa é. (P)

6. chhù

a) Lín chhù ū lōa-chē lánng? (family)

b) Chhia\* lín lái góan chhù chē. (house)

c) Che m-sī góan chhù, sī Ông Siân-si\* ín chhù. (house)

茶 house  
家 home

## 7. chia

- a) Lín thài-thài bô lăi chia.
- b) Chhòa Bok-sù-niâu, chhĩa\* lí chē chia. Please sit here, Mrs. Chhòa. (Note: "chē chia": we may also say: "chē tī chia". "Tī" is frequently omitted before "chia".)
- c) Lí é chheh tī góa chia. I have your book. (Your book is with me here.) (To express "with me here/at my place" say: "tī góa chia".)
- d) Lí bôeh kóng sim-mih? Chhĩa\* lí lăi chia kóng.

## 8. Chióng-hòa

## 9. ê (Measure)

- a) Ín nng é lăng bôeh khi; góa m khi.
- b) Lău-su ũ gô ê; ũ chit ê bô lăi. (P)
- c) Ū chit é thâng-á-mng iău-bôe koai\*; lí khi koai\*.
- d) Ū nng é hăk-seng kóng bôeh khi Sín-tek.

## 10. hia

- a) Lí nă bôeh bé, chhĩa\* lí khi hia bé.
- b) Góa bôeh khi ín hia, lí bôeh khi bô? (P)
- c) Lím Siân-si\*, Tân Siân-si\* ũ tī hia bô? (P)
- d) Lí é chheh tī góa hia. (P)
- e) Lín thài-thài tī góan hia, kăh góan thài-thài tén kóng-ōe. (P)

## 11. hó bô?

- a) Lí é pit hō góa sía, hó bô?
- b) Góa bôeh khi Chióng-hòa bé mih-kia\*, lí kăh góa khi, hó bô?
- c) Lí nă lăi góan chhù, góa chhĩa\* lí chiah-png, hó bô?

d) Góan chhù bô<sup>7</sup> ká<sup>7</sup>-pi, ũ<sup>3</sup> té<sup>7</sup>-bí<sup>1</sup>-tê; lim<sup>7</sup> té<sup>7</sup>-bí<sup>1</sup>-tê, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup>?

1) Hó, góa<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> lim<sup>7</sup> té<sup>7</sup>-bí<sup>1</sup>-tê.

2) Té<sup>7</sup>-bí<sup>1</sup>-tê góa<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> sim<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> lim; ũ<sup>3</sup> kún<sup>1</sup>-chúi<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup>?

12. hō<sup>3</sup>-chò<sup>2</sup>/kio<sup>2</sup>-chò

a) Lí<sup>1</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>-chò<sup>2</sup> sim<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup> mīa? (Asked of children.)

Góa<sup>1</sup> kio<sup>2</sup>-chò<sup>2</sup> Bí<sup>1</sup>-Lêng.<sup>美玲</sup>

b) Che<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>-chò<sup>2</sup> sim<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup>?

Che<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>-chò<sup>2</sup> góan<sup>7</sup>-chú<sup>1</sup>-pit.

c) Í<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>-chò<sup>2</sup> Ā<sup>7</sup>-Liông; í<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup>-ōe.

13. kah/kap <sup>阿</sup>

a) Sim<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup>-lâng<sup>2</sup> kán<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>1</sup>?

b) Che<sup>2</sup> kán<sup>2</sup> he<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> lōa<sup>3</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>1</sup>\*?

c) Góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> kán<sup>2</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> thài<sup>2</sup>-thài<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Sín<sup>7</sup>-tek<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> mih<sup>3</sup>-kīa\*.

d) Í<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> kán<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> thak<sup>1</sup>, bô<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> thak<sup>1</sup>. (P)

e) Góa<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> í<sup>7</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup>-ōe. (P)

14. khò<sup>7</sup>.

a) Che<sup>3</sup> sí<sup>1</sup> sim<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup>-lâng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> khò<sup>7</sup>?

b) Í<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> sa\*, m̄<sup>3</sup>-sí<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> khò<sup>7</sup>.

c) Bé<sup>1</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> nīa<sup>1</sup> khò<sup>7</sup>, chí<sup>3</sup> nīa<sup>1</sup> sa\* ái<sup>2</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> kho<sup>7</sup>? (P)

d) Ín<sup>7</sup> thài<sup>2</sup>-thài<sup>2</sup> chò<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> khò<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> chhēng. I really like the pants his wife makes. (We may also say: "Ín<sup>7</sup> thài<sup>2</sup>-thài<sup>2</sup> teh chò<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> khò<sup>7</sup>". The meaning in each case is the same: what she habitually does.

15. khui

a) Thang<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-mng<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khui<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup>?

b) Sim<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup>-lâng<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>7</sup> khui<sup>7</sup> mng<sup>2</sup>?

sí<sup>3</sup> Gô<sup>3</sup> Sián<sup>3</sup>-sí<sup>3</sup>\* tēh<sup>7</sup> khui<sup>7</sup> mng<sup>2</sup>.

- c) Ủ<sup>3</sup> lãng lãi; lĩ<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>7</sup> mng. (P)  
 d) Lĩ<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>7</sup> thãng-ả-mng, sĩ<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

## 16. kóa

- a) Góa<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> chĩt-kóa<sup>3</sup> chí\* hō<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>7</sup>.  
 b) Góa<sup>1</sup> ử<sup>3</sup> chĩt-kóa<sup>1</sup> chheh; lĩ<sup>1</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> khòa\* bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 c) Góa<sup>1</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> sĩa<sup>1</sup> chĩt-kóa<sup>3</sup> jĩ; góa<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> khi. (P)  
 d) Kã<sup>7</sup>-pi ử<sup>3</sup> chĩt-kóa<sup>1</sup> lãng chín<sup>2</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> lim; ử<sup>3</sup> chĩt-kóa<sup>1</sup> lãng  
 bô<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> lim. Some people like coffee and some don't.  
 (NB. We first state the subject matter ("Kã<sup>7</sup>-pi"),  
 then talk about it.)

## 17. koai\*

- a) Chhĩa\* lĩ<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> kóai\* mng, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 b) ải<sup>2</sup> kóai\* mng. OR: Mng ải<sup>2</sup> koai\*.  
 c) Thãng-ả-mng góa<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> koai\*; chhĩa\* lĩ<sup>1</sup> khi. (P)  
 d) Lĩ<sup>1</sup> mng ử<sup>3</sup> koai\* bô<sup>3</sup>? OR: Mng lĩ<sup>1</sup> ử<sup>3</sup> koai\* bô<sup>3</sup>?

## 18. kúi

- a) Chĩt nĩa<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-chãp kho<sup>3</sup>, lĩ<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> bẽ<sup>1</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> nĩa?  
 b) Ủ<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> ẻ<sup>7</sup> lãng bôeh<sup>2</sup> lãi<sup>7</sup> chia thãk-chheh? (P)  
 Bô<sup>7</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> ê.  
 c) Che lĩ<sup>1</sup> ử<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> pún?  
 d) Lĩ<sup>1</sup> ử<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> nĩa sa\*, kúi<sup>1</sup> nĩa khò\*?

19. lãi-khi<sup>7</sup> Lãn lãi-khi<sup>7</sup>.....

- a) Lãn lãi-khi<sup>2</sup> hĩa lĩm<sup>7</sup> kã<sup>7</sup>-pi, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 b) Góa<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> lãi-khi<sup>2</sup> Iũ\* Siãn-sĩ\* ỉn<sup>7</sup> chhù, lĩ<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>7</sup>  
 bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 c) Góa<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> thãk-chheh, lãn lãi-khi<sup>2</sup> bẽ<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>7</sup> ẻ<sup>7</sup>  
 mĩh-kĩa\*. (P)

d) Ỉn chhù b<sup>7</sup> l<sup>7</sup>ng; l<sup>1</sup>an l<sup>7</sup>ai-kh<sup>2</sup> Ỉn chhù s<sup>1</sup>ia-j<sup>1</sup>i. (P)

e) L<sup>1</sup>i b<sup>2</sup>oh kh<sup>3</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>?

G<sup>1</sup>oa b<sup>7</sup> b<sup>2</sup>oh kh<sup>3</sup>i. (Do NOT use "l<sup>7</sup>ai-kh<sup>2</sup>" with a negative.)

20. L<sup>1</sup>i hó b<sup>3</sup>? OR: L<sup>1</sup>i hó?

This expression is used by many students as a greeting, usually to people they have not seen in a while. Some adults do not consider it good form for it seems to make reference to illness.

"L<sup>1</sup>i hó b<sup>3</sup>?" is, however, coming into increasing use.

The proper answer is: "Hó! " OR: "Ch<sup>7</sup>in hó!"

21. m<sup>3</sup>ia t<sup>3</sup>oa-m<sup>3</sup>ia

a) L<sup>1</sup>i h<sup>3</sup>o-ch<sup>2</sup> s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih m<sup>3</sup>ia?

b) L<sup>1</sup>au Si<sup>3</sup>an-s<sup>3</sup>i\*, l<sup>1</sup>i s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih t<sup>3</sup>oa-m<sup>3</sup>ia?

c) N<sup>3</sup>a g<sup>1</sup>oa é ch<sup>7</sup>eh, ũ s<sup>1</sup>ia g<sup>1</sup>oa é m<sup>3</sup>ia. (P)

d) L<sup>1</sup>i k<sup>3</sup>ong t<sup>3</sup>i l<sup>1</sup>i é s<sup>7</sup>a\*-kh<sup>2</sup>o. ũ s<sup>1</sup>ia l<sup>1</sup>i é m<sup>3</sup>ia, s<sup>1</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>o?

22. m<sup>3</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>ia\*/m<sup>3</sup>ih

a) Che s<sup>3</sup>i s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih-l<sup>7</sup>ng é m<sup>3</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>ia\*?

b) Ỉ kh<sup>2</sup>i s<sup>7</sup>in-tek bé ch<sup>7</sup>in-ch<sup>3</sup>eh ch<sup>1</sup>iah é m<sup>3</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>ia\*.

c) G<sup>1</sup>oa b<sup>2</sup>oh bé m<sup>3</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>ia\*; g<sup>1</sup>oa b<sup>7</sup> ch<sup>1</sup>i\*, l<sup>1</sup>i ũ b<sup>3</sup>o?

d) L<sup>1</sup>i Si<sup>3</sup>an-s<sup>3</sup>i\* m<sup>3</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>ia\* b<sup>2</sup>oh h<sup>3</sup>o. Ng<sup>3</sup> Si<sup>3</sup>an-s<sup>3</sup>i\*, Ỉ b<sup>7</sup>o ài. (P)

e) L<sup>1</sup>i ài ch<sup>1</sup>iah s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih m<sup>3</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>ia\*? G<sup>1</sup>oa l<sup>7</sup>ai-kh<sup>2</sup> bé h<sup>3</sup>o. l<sup>1</sup>i ch<sup>1</sup>iah. (P)

23. m<sup>7</sup>ng

a) G<sup>1</sup>oan chh<sup>3</sup>u ũ n<sup>3</sup>ng é m<sup>7</sup>ng.

b) Ch<sup>1</sup>hia\* l<sup>1</sup>i kh<sup>2</sup>i k<sup>7</sup>oi\* m<sup>7</sup>ng.

c) S<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih-l<sup>7</sup>ng b<sup>2</sup>oh kh<sup>2</sup>i kh<sup>7</sup>ui m<sup>7</sup>ng?



d) Mng iáu-bōe koai\*; lí khī koai\*.

e) Góa ê sa\* tī mng-nih hia. (P)

24. nā/nā-sī

a) Lí nā bōeh khī, góa mā bōeh khī.

b) Pēng-iú nā lâi, góa bōeh chhia\* in chiah-png.

c) Che nā ài chin-chē chi\*, góa bó ài bé.

d) Nā ũ ká-pi, góa bōeh līm ká-pi; nā bó, góa bōeh līm tē.

25. nía (Measure)

a) Góa ũ nng nía; lí ũ kúi nía?

b) Sa\* chit nía káu-chap-jī kho\*, lí bōeh bé bó? (P)

c) Chit nía nā gō-chap-sá\* kho\*, lí bōeh bé lōa-chē?

d) Tī chia ũ chit nía sa\* káh chit nía hò\*.

26. -nih

a) Lín thài-thài ũ tī chhù-nih bó? (P)

b) Lí ê góan-chú-pit tī góa ê sa\*-nih hia. (P)

c) Í tī mng-nih hia tēh khōa\* sim-mih? (P)

d) Tī góa ê chheh-nih góa ũ sía chit-kóa jī. (P)

e) Chhia\* lín lâi góan chhù-nih chē, hó bó? (P)

27. pēng-iú

a) Góan nng ê sī hó pēng-iú. (P)

b) Góa ũ chin-chē pēng-iú.

c) Pēng-iú nā lâi, góa ài chhia\* in.

- d) Lín pêng-iú kóng bôeh lâi; ũ lâi bô<sup>3</sup>? Your friend said he would come; did he come? (NB. 1: The same rule holds for "pêng-iú" as for "husband/wife/teacher", etc. See Ls 4, Possessive Case, Rule 5, page 84. This rule is also true in respect to all relatives (father, etc.). NB. 2: "Lín pêng-iú": both "lín" and "pêng-iú" may be either singular or plural.

## 28. pún (Measure)

- a) Lí ũ kúi pún chheh? (P)
- b) Góa bôeh bé chheh; che chít pún ái lōa-chē? (P)
- c) Nā bé chít pún ái gō<sup>3</sup>-cháp-ít kho<sup>3</sup>; bé nng pún káu-cháp-sí kho<sup>3</sup>.
- d) Lí ái kōa\*-chheh bô<sup>3</sup>? Góa chia ũ chít pún.

## 29. sa\*

- a) Í bô<sup>7</sup> sa\*; lí bôeh kúi nía hō<sup>7</sup> í?
- b) Góa chí\* hō<sup>3</sup> lí bé sa\*, hó bô<sup>3</sup>?
- c) Góan thài-thài bô<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi, tēh sé sa\*.
- d) Che m-sī góa é sa\*, sī í ê. (P)

30. sá\*-khò<sup>7</sup>/sá\*-á-khò<sup>7</sup>

- a) Í khi<sup>2</sup> Chióng-hòa bé chin-chē sá\*-khò<sup>7</sup>.
- b) Góan sián-si\* chhēng é sá\*-khò<sup>7</sup> góa khi<sup>2</sup> bé-bô. (P)
- c) Í tēh sé sá\*-khò<sup>7</sup>; í iáu-bōe chia<sup>3</sup>-png.
- d) Í tēh bē sá\*-khò<sup>7</sup>; lí bôeh bé bô<sup>3</sup>?

## 31. sé

- a) Góan chhù é sá\*-khò<sup>7</sup> sī góan thài-thài tēh sé. (P)
- b) Lí bôeh khi<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi sé sa\*?
- c) Góa bôeh khi<sup>2</sup> Chióng-hòa; sa\* hō<sup>3</sup> lí sé, hó bô<sup>3</sup>?

d) Góá sé lí é sa\*; lí sé góá é khò\*, hó bô\*?

e) Sa\* chín-chē iáu-bôe sé; góá bô bôeh káp lín khi.

32. sê\*-mía

a) Chhia\* lí sía lí é sê\*-mía.

b) Tī góá é bān-lián-pit-nih ũ sía góá é sê\*-mía. (P)

c) Góá é ũ sía sê\*-mía; nā bô sía, m-sī góá é.

33. Sín-tek

34. thāng-á-mng

a) Góan chhù ũ chín-chē thāng-á-mng.

b) Chhia\* lí khi khi thāng-á-mng.

c) Góá sé sa\*; lí khi sé thāng-á-mng.

d) Thāng-á-mng bô koai\*; lí khi koai\*.

35. tī

a) In tī hia tēh khòa\* sim-mih?

b) Tī chia chhia\* lí sía lí é tōa-mía.

c) Tī chia ũ chit-kóa koe-chí, lín ài chiah bô\*?

d) In bô láng tī chhù-nih. (P)

e) Iū\* Siān-sī\* ũ khi-tī lí hia bô\*? (P)

36. tōh-ūi/tāh-ūi/toh/tah

a) Lí bôeh khi tōh-ūi?

1) Góá bôeh khi Chióng-hòa.

2) Góá bô bôeh khi tōh-ūi.

b) Tī tōh-ūi ài sía sê\*-mía?

c) Che tī tōh-ūi bé?

d) Tī tōh-ūi ũ láng tēh bē chheh?

e) Lí bôeh khi tōh-ūi thak-chheh? Góá kán lí khi, hó bô\*?

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF PATTERN SENTENCES MARKED "P"

1. b) Where are you going to go to buy them?
2. a) Mr. Lîm went to buy his clothes; did he buy what he wanted?  
No, he didn't. (Couldn't find his size, etc.)  
b) I went to buy it but couldn't buy any; you go and buy it, OK?  
c) If I can't find it in Taichung, I'll go buy it in Taipei.
3. a) I've bought your pants (found what you wanted).  
b) I wasn't able to buy them; where did you look that you were able to buy them?
4. a) Lit., His house he's going to sell; do you want to buy it? (Note: in speaking of the selling of a house, "i ê chhù" is more common than "in chhù".)  
b) No one is selling this in Taichung.  
d) He sells one dress for \$68; do you want one?  
e) He is unwilling to sell for \$60; he wants \$72.
5. c) His clothes cost plenty.  
d) These are his clothes, not mine. (These are the clothes that he wears; they're not mine.) (Note that "i teh chhêng" does not mean he's wearing them right now but that he frequently wears them, i.e., they're his.)
9. b) There are 5 teachers; one (of the 5) didn't come.
10. b) I'm going over to his house; are you going?  
c) Mr. Lîm, is Mr. Tân there?  
d) Your book is at my house/in my office. (Spoken away from my home/office.)  
e) Your wife is at my house talking with my wife.
13. d) He wants to study with you, not me. (That is, he wants you to teach him.)  
e) I don't want to talk with him (because we're not speaking to each other).
14. c) How much for 2 pants and 1 shirt? (Lit., Buy 2 pants and 1 shirt costs how many dollars?)
15. c) Lit., Someone comes; you go open the door.
16. c) I have to write something; I don't want to go. (Note: if the speaker is a student, he means: "I have to write some characters" -- as part of homework.)
17. c) I don't want the windows closed; please open them.
18. b) How many people are there that are going to come here to study?  
Only a few.

("U" may be omitted: "How many people are going to come here to study?" In Sentences c and d "ū = have" and may not be omitted.)

19. c) I don't want to study at all; let's go buy something to eat.  
 d) There's nobody home at his house; let's go there to write our characters. (This means our classmate is home but his parents are out.)
21. c) If it's my book, my name is in it. (If my name isn't in that book, it's not mine.)
22. d) Mr. Lí wanted to give something to Mr. Ngô (but) he didn't want it.  
 e) What do you want to eat? I'll go buy it for you.
23. e) My clothes are on the door.
25. b) Lit., Clothes one article \$92; are you going to buy?
26. a) Is your wife at home?  
 b) Your ballpoint pen is there in my shirt.  
 c) He's in the doorway there; what is he looking (out) at?  
 d) I have written some things in my book.  
 e) Please come to my house (to sit).
27. a) We're good friends. Lit., The two of us (not you) are good friends.
28. a) How many books do you have?  
 b) I want to buy a book; how much is one of these?
29. d) This isn't my garment; it's his. OR: Those aren't my garments; they're his.
30. b) I went to buy my husband's clothes but couldn't find the right thing. ("Góan sian-si\* chhēng ê sa\*-khò\*" means "the type that my husband usually wears".)
31. a) Lit., My family's clothes it is my wife (who) washes them. (Here "teh-sé" does not mean that she is washing right now.)
32. b) My name is on my fountain pen.
35. d) There's nobody home. (No one in their family is home.)  
 e) Did Mr. Iû\* go to your place (and is he still there)?

---

KÙ
SENTENCES

(See at end of Sentences for translation or explanation of those marked "S".)

1. Bòeh bé<sup>1</sup> bān<sup>3</sup>-lián<sup>7</sup>-pit, ài<sup>2</sup> khǐ<sup>2</sup> tǒh-ūi<sup>2</sup> bé?  
 2. Gó<sup>1</sup>a nā<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>1</sup>\*, bòeh bé<sup>1</sup> sá<sup>7</sup>\*-khò<sup>1</sup>.

Ls 5

阮太太 去買物件

3. Góan thài-thài khi bé mih-kīa\*.
4. Lí khi bé mih-kīa\*, bé-ū bô'?
5. Chióng-hòa nā bé-bô, chhia\* lí lái Tái-tiong bé.
6. Góa khi bé, bé-bô.
7. Í tên bé chheh kán pit; lí ai bé bô'?
8. Lán é chheh sī Tân Sián-sī\* tên bē, m-sī góa.
9. Lí chhēng sim-mih-lâng é sa\*?
10. Lí bé hō' í é sa\* í bô' ai chhēng. (S)
11. Lái góan chhù chiah-png, hó bô'?
12. Í bōeh chhia\* lán khi ín chhù; lí bōeh khi bô'?
13. Mng bô' koai\*, chhia\* lí khi koai\*.
14. Lí kóng lí m-sī bōeh khi Chióng-hòa, lí bōeh khi toh?
15. Ū Siu-lí bōeh khi Sín-tek bô'?
16. Ū sá\* é lái chiah-png, nng é iáu-bōe lái.
17. Góa é chheh bōeh hō' ín nng é láng khòa\*.
18. Ū chít é thàng-á-mng iáu-bōe koai\*; ai koai\* bô'?
19. Góa sé sa\*, lí khi bé mih-kīa\*, hó bô'?
20. Góan chhù bô' té-bí-tê, iā bô' ká-pi; kún-chúi, hó bô'?
21. Lí bōeh chhōng-sia\*h? Kán góa lái-khi Chióng-hòa, hó bô'?
22. Gó' Sián-sī\*, lí hō'-chō sim-mih tōa mīa?
23. Che kio-chō sim-mih?
24. Í kio-chō Á-Bí; í sī hák-seng.
25. Tiu\* Sián-sī\* bô' ai kán góa kóng-ōe.
26. Góa bōeh khi Sín-tek; lí ía bōeh khi, sī bô'?
27. Lí khi chhia\* Ông Sián-sī\* káp Iú\* Bók-su lái chiah-png.

28. Tán<sup>7</sup> Sín-hū<sup>7</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> Lâu<sup>7</sup> Siu-lí<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> kóng-ōe.<sup>1</sup> / Tán<sup>7</sup> Sín-hū<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup>  
Lâu<sup>7</sup> Siu-lí<sup>7</sup> kóng-ōe.<sup>1</sup>
29. Góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chhō<sup>2</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> nia<sup>1</sup> khò<sup>•</sup>, m̄-sī<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chhō<sup>2</sup> sa\*.
30. Í<sup>7</sup> ía<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> khò<sup>•</sup>; lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>•</sup>?
31. Ín<sup>7</sup> chhù<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> m̄ng<sup>1</sup> iáu-bōe<sup>3</sup> khui. (S)
32. Ū<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> lái; lí<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>7</sup> m̄ng.
33. Góa<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> līm<sup>7</sup> ká-pi; góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> chit-kóa<sup>3</sup> p̄ng.
34. Lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> toh? 汝去他? 我卜來去買一零物件  
Góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> lái-khi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>3</sup> chit-kóa<sup>3</sup> m̄h-kīa\*.
35. Chhòa<sup>3</sup> Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\* káp<sup>2</sup> chit-kóa<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> kóng-ōe.<sup>1</sup>
36. Lí<sup>1</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> koai\* thāng-á-m̄ng<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>•</sup>?
37. Lín<sup>1</sup> chhù<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> m̄ng<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> koai\* bô<sup>•</sup>?
38. Í<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chhía\*; lán<sup>1</sup> lái-khi<sup>2</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> chhía\*, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>•</sup>?  
Góa<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>.
39. Lán<sup>1</sup> lái-khi<sup>2</sup> līm<sup>7</sup> ká-pi, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>•</sup>?  
Hó, lán<sup>1</sup> lái-khi<sup>1</sup>.
40. Lí<sup>1</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>-chhō<sup>2</sup> sīm-m̄h<sup>2</sup> tōa-m̄a?
41. Lí<sup>1</sup> sē<sup>2</sup>\* Láu; hō<sup>3</sup>-chhō<sup>2</sup> sīm-m̄h<sup>2</sup> m̄a?
42. Che<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>1</sup> sīa\*-lāng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> m̄h-kīa\*?
43. Lín<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> sīm-m̄h<sup>2</sup> m̄h-kīa\*?  
Góan<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chit-kóa<sup>3</sup> kōe-chí, ái<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>•</sup>?
44. Í<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>3</sup> iōng<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>7</sup> é<sup>3</sup> m̄h-kīa\*. 伊真愛用那个物件
45. Lí<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sa\* tī<sup>3</sup> m̄ng-nih. (S)
46. Góa<sup>1</sup> chhía\* lí<sup>1</sup> koai\* thāng-á-m̄ng<sup>3</sup>, m̄-sī<sup>3</sup> koai\* m̄ng.
47. Góa<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> chí\*, góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> chhù.
48. Góa<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> bé, góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> iōng.

49. Hák-seng nã böeh khi thak-chheh, ai chhêng hák-seng-sa\*,  
sī bö<sup>3</sup>? (S)
50. Che chit nía ai lōa-chē chí\*?
51. Che sī Ng̃ Lāu-su é sa\*, m̄-sī góa ê.
52. Lí tēh chhông-sia\*h? Kāh góa lái-khí bé sá\*-khò\*, hó bö<sup>3</sup>?
53. Í chò é sá\*-khò\* ũ chin-chē láng ai bé.
54. Í chhia\* lí khi Sín-tek; lí böeh khi bö<sup>3</sup>?
55. Lí nã böeh khi Sín-tek, góa ía böeh kāh lí khi, hó bö<sup>3</sup>?
56. Í sī tōh-ūi é láng? (S)
57. Thak-chheh ai khōa\*-chheh; lí khōa\* tōh-ūi? (S)
58. Che böeh khi tōh-ūi bé? (S)
59. Lâm Siān-si\* kóng böeh khi Sín-tek, í khi böe?
60. He sī góan péng-iú hō\* góa é chheh. (S)  
 他是 院 朋友 送 我 个 册

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED "S"

10. He doesn't want to wear those clothes you bought for him.  
(The clothes that you bought and gave him he doesn't want to wear.)
31. They haven't opened the door of their house yet (i.e. in the morning).
45. Your clothes are on the door.
49. If students go to study (= go to school) they have to wear the student uniform, is that right?
56. Where is he from?
57. When you're studying you must look at the book; where are you looking? OR: ...what are you looking at?
58. Where do we go to buy these?
60. That's the book my friend gave me.



TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. Her husband is getting dressed.
2. There are 13 people in their family. 伊家有13个人。
3. What is your given name?  
My name is Pún-líp.
4. Give me your pen, will you? (I.e. Lend me your pen.)
5. Where is your wife going?  
She is going shopping.
6. I'm going to buy several things I need.
7. This is the pen he gave me.
8. That isn't your shirt, is it?  
No.
9. If we go, will you go?
10. Does he like to talk a lot?  
No, he's not very talkative. (Neither extreme)
11. Is your husband home?
12. Did you find (and buy) the shirt you wanted?
13. Did Mr. Ng go to your house (and is he still there)?

- - - - -

The Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences:

1. In sián-si\* tén chhēng-sa\*.
2. In chhù ũ chap-sá\* é lāng.
3. Lí sim-mih tōa mīa?/Lí sim-mih mīa?  
Góa hō-chō Pún-líp./Góa kio-chō Pún-líp.
4. Lí é pit hō\* góa sía, hó bō\*?

5. Lín thài-thài bōeh khi tōh-ūi?

Í bōeh khi bé mih.

6. Góa bōeh khi bé chít-kóa ái iōng é mih-kīa\*.

7. Che sī í hō° góa é pit.

8. He m̄-sī lí tēh chhēng é sa\*, sī bō°?/He m̄-sī lí é sa\*,  
sī bō°?

Sī.

9. Góan nā khi, lí bōeh khi bō°?/Góan nā khi, lí ū bōeh khi  
bō°?

10. Í ū chin ái kóng-ōe bō°?

Bō, í bō chin ái kóng-ōe.

11. Lín siān-si\* ū tī chhù-nih bō°?

12. Lí é sa\* bé-ū bō°?

13. Nĝ Siān-si\* ū khi-tī lí hia bō°?

Note: All the English sentences marked (P) and (S) can  
of course be used for translation back into  
Taiwanese.

Tē Lāk Khò

Lesson 6

TUI-ŌE

DIALOGUE

會了騎 / 會了騎

Ū hó-khòa\* / bô hó-khòa\* ; ē phái\*-khĩa / bē phái\*-khĩa

A = Aŋg Siān-si\* 洪

O = Oŋg Siān-si\* 王

O1: Aŋg Siān-si\*, gáu-chá, chhia\* jip-lái chē.

A1: Hó, tó-sīa.

O2: Chá-hng lí ū khi tón-ūi chhit-thô bô\*?

A2: Bô, chá-hng tī chhù-nih khòa\* tiān-sī, bô khi tón-ūi.

O3: Tiān-sī chō sia\*h? Ū hó-khòa\* bô\*?

A3: Bē sim-mih phái\*-khòa\*. Chá-hng lí ū khi tón-ūi bô\*?

O4: Chá-hng góa khĩa thih-bé khi pēng-iú hia; góa tī hia hō\*.

in chhia\*; chiah pá, góa káp pēng-iú chhit-khi khòa\*  
tiān-ia\*. 電影 飽

A4: Chím-á khòa\* chit chhit tiān-ia\* ai lōa-chē chí\*?

O5: Ai pēh-chap kho\*. Lí ai khòa\* bô\*? Kín-á-jit ū chit  
chhit chin hó-khòa\*, góa chhia\* lí.

A5: Tó-sīa, tiān-ia\* góa bô sim-mih ai khòa\*.

O6: Aŋg Siān-si\*, tī chia ū hun, lí bōeh chiah-hun bô\*?

A6: Tó-sīa, hun góa bô chiah.

O7: Lí nā bô chiah-hun, tī chia mā ū keng-chio; kín-á-jit ê,  
góa khòa\*, bē sim-mih phái\*-chiah. Lí chiah keng-chio,  
hó bô\*?

A7: Hó, góa bōeh chiah keng-chio. Tī góan chhù góa iā siōng-  
siōng chiah. Tái-oân é keng-chio ū-ia\* bē phái\*-chiah. 有影了哈

O8: Kín-á-jit lí ū bōeh khi tón-ūi bô\*? Nā bô bōeh chhōng-  
sia\*h, lán khĩa thih-bé lái-khi soa\*-nih chhit-thô, hó bô\*?

山裡 迫迫

Ls 6

不狗

無好騎

AB: M-kú<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> thih-bé<sup>2</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> hó-khía<sup>1</sup>. Lí<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup> hó-khía<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

O9: Góa<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>1</sup> hó-khóa\*, m-kú<sup>3</sup> bê<sup>3</sup> phái\*-khía<sup>1</sup>.

A9: Góa<sup>1</sup> khóa\*, lán<sup>1</sup> chím-á<sup>1</sup> lái-khí<sup>7</sup>; lí<sup>1</sup> khóa\*, hó<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

O10: Hó<sup>1</sup>, lán<sup>1</sup> lái-khí<sup>7</sup>.

SIN-GÍ 新字 VOCABULARY

1. bó<sup>7</sup> pòa\* + Measure<sup>半+單位</sup>...也沒有 not a single one/none. Lit., not half of one.

bó<sup>7</sup> pòa\* é<sup>7</sup> lāng not a single person.

kín-á-jit<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> pòa\* é<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>. Nobody will go today.

2. chà-hng<sup>7</sup> 昨天 yesterday. (Time words are placed before the verb.)

Chà-hng<sup>7</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> thài-thài<sup>2</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lái chia bó<sup>3</sup>? Did my wife come here yesterday?

3. chhit-thô<sup>2</sup> 玩耍; 遊玩 recreate/play/have fun; recreation.

In<sup>7</sup> tia\*-tia\*<sup>3</sup> lái chia chhit-thô<sup>2</sup>. They always come here to recreate.

4. chhut<sup>2</sup> 齣 (Measure for movie)

Khóa\*<sup>2</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> chhit<sup>2</sup> tiān-ia\*<sup>3</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> lōa-chē<sup>3</sup>? How much does it cost to see a movie?

5. chhut<sup>2</sup> 出 out. (Used with verbs of motion to indicate the direction "out". "Chhut" itself is a verb; we translate it "out" as in the English "Out with you!" We will use it later with many different meanings such as "leave (a hospital)/produce/put forth/publish".)

chhut-lâi<sup>3</sup> come out. chhut-khì<sup>1</sup> go out.

(When "chhut-lâi<sup>3</sup>" or "chhut-khì<sup>1</sup>" are used at the end of a clause/sentence, "chhut" does not change tone; "lâi<sup>3</sup>" and "khì<sup>1</sup>" are enclitics.)

Chhia<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> chhia\*<sup>1</sup> Khó<sup>1</sup> Siān-si\*<sup>3</sup> chhut-lâi<sup>3</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?  
Please ask Mr. Khó<sup>1</sup> to come out, will you?

Khó<sup>1</sup> Siān-si\*<sup>3</sup>, Tē\*<sup>1</sup> Siān-si\*<sup>3</sup> chhia\*<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> chhut-khì<sup>1</sup>.  
Mr. Khó<sup>1</sup>, Mr. Tē\* asks you to go outside.

1 2 1 3  
 7 1 chhüt-khì bé mih-kīa\*. He went out to buy something.  
 (NB. When "chhüt-lâi/chhüt-khì" are not at the end  
 of a clause/sentence, they follow the regular rule  
 for tone changes.)

6. 1 1 2 3  
 chím-á/ta\* 現在 ; 如今 now.

7 1 2 3  
 1 chím-á tēh thak-chheh. He's studying now.

1 3 3 2  
 Góa m-sī ta\* bōeh khì. It's not now that I'm going.

✓7. ē 會 to be. (Frequently used with modifiers denoting  
 undesirable qualities. Negative: "bē" 不會 See  
 Grammar Note 3.)

3 3  
 ē phái\* 會 3 to be bad.

3 3  
 bē phái\* 勿 3 be not bad.

3 1 2 3  
 bē sīm-mih phái\* 勿 1 2 3 be not very bad.

8. 1 1 7 1  
 góa khòa\* 我看 / 我想 I think/the way I see it/it seems  
 to me.

1 1  
 góa khòa\* + Negative I don't think that....

1 1  
 lí khòa\* What do you think?

1 1  
 lín khòa\* What do you think?

1 1  
 góan khòa\* We think/it seems to us.

1 7 3 7 1  
 Góa khòa\*, 1 sī chit é hó-lâng. I think he's a good  
 man.

1 7 3 1 3  
 Lí khòa\*, 1 chhēng é sa\* ũ hó-khòa\* bō? Is her  
 dress nice-looking? What do you think?

7 7 3 1 7 1  
 Chā-hng é tiān-íá\*, góan khòa\*, chin hó-khòa\*; lín  
 khòa\*, ũ hó-khòa\* bō? We thought the movie yesterday  
 good? ("Chā-hng é tiān-íá\* = yesterday's movie".)

1 7 2 1  
 Góa khòa\*, 1 bō ai lái. I don't think he wants to  
 come.

NB. Frequently "góa khòa\*", "lí khòa\*", etc., mean not  
 "think" but "look or see" with bodily eyes.

9. hó + Verb 好 + 動詞 be good to + Verb; be easy to + Verb.  
(This is the same "hó" as in Ls 1.) (Negative: "bô hó" + Verb.)

hó<sup>1</sup>-chò be easy to do or make.

bô<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-chò not easy to do or make. ("BÔ" is the negative with "hó" or any other desirable quality. See Grammar Note 3.)

Lí<sup>1</sup> é sa\* bô<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-chò. Your clothes are not easy to make.

hó<sup>1</sup>-khòa\* (of clothes) be good-looking/nice/beautiful; (of books) good to read/readable, i.e., interesting or easy to read/not difficult to make out the characters; (of sports, TV, movie) good to see or watch.

Chá<sup>7</sup>-hng é tiān-ia\* ũ<sup>3</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khòa\* bô<sup>3</sup>? Was the movie good yesterday? (Note "ê" in a possessive phrase: "the movie of yesterday".)

Bô, bô<sup>7</sup> sîm-mîh<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khòa\*. No, it wasn't so good.

hó<sup>1</sup>-kóng (of a language) easy to speak; (of pronunciation) easy to say.

Tâi-gí chin hó<sup>1</sup>-kóng. Taiwanese is easy to speak.

Góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, bô<sup>7</sup> sîm-mîh<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-kóng. I don't think it's very easy.

10. hóc 火 fire. (May be used for "match", "a light" (tobacco) and as a short word for "electric light". See Vocab. Note 1.)

lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hóc<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Do you have a light/match?

✓ Ū, tí chia ũ<sup>3</sup> lái-tah? Yes, here's a lighter.

11. hun 煙 cigarette(s)/tobacco.

chiah-hun to smoke (cigarettes). (There are special words for cigar and pipe, which are little used on Taiwan.)

Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-hun bô<sup>3</sup>? Do you like to smoke?

Góa<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> chiah. I don't smoke.

Góa<sup>1</sup> tîa\*<sup>3</sup>-tîa\*<sup>3</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> é hun. I'm always smoking his cigarettes.

✓ 12. jí 根 (Measure for bananas)

Chiah pá, chiah chít jí keng-chio chin hó. It's very good to eat a banana after a meal.

13. jíp 入 enter. (Used with verbs of motion to indicate the direction "into". "Jíp" itself is a verb.)

jíp-lâi<sup>3</sup> come in. jíp-khì go in.

(When "jíp-lâi<sup>3</sup>" and "jíp-khì" are used at the end of a clause/sentence, "jíp" does not change tone; "lâi" and "khì" are enclitics.)

Lí khî<sup>2</sup> chhia\* í jíp-lâi<sup>3</sup>. Go and invite him in.

Í chhia\* lí jíp-khì. He invites you to go in.

Chhia\* lí jíp-lâi<sup>3</sup> chē. Please come in and sit down.

NB. When not at the end of a clause/sentence, "jíp-lâi/jíp-khì" follow the regular rule for tone changes.)

14. kak 角 dime.

n̄ng<sup>3</sup> kak twenty cents.

gō<sup>3</sup> kak fifty cents.

Che<sup>2</sup> ai n̄ng<sup>3</sup> kho\* gō<sup>3</sup> kak OR: n̄ng<sup>3</sup> khō<sup>7</sup> pò\*<sup>7</sup>. This costs \$2.50. (Note that "kho\*" does not change tone when followed by "kak".)

✓ 15. keng-chio/kin-chio 香蕉 banana. (Measure: jí)

Lí ai chiah keng-chio bó<sup>3</sup>? Do you like bananas?

16. khia 騎 to ride. (Means to straddle as a horse/bicycle).

Lí khia thih-bé<sup>2</sup> lâi, sī bó<sup>3</sup>? Did you come by bicycle?

Lí é thih-bé<sup>2</sup> ũ hó-khia bó<sup>3</sup>? Is your bicycle a good one? Lit., Is your bicycle good riding/easy to ride?

17. kin-á-jit 今天 today. (Comes before the verb.)

Kin-á-jit lí bōeh chhōng-sia\*h? What are you going to do today?

Lán kin-á-jit bó thak-cheh; lán lâi-khî<sup>2</sup> chhít-thô. No school today; let's go have some fun.

18. Kó<sup>7</sup>-hiông 高雄 Kaoshiung. (Name of city/county in the south.)
19. m̄<sup>3</sup>-hó 不可 / 不要 Don't (do that)/must not. (For contrast with "bó hó" see Vocab. Note 2.)  
 Chheh m̄<sup>3</sup>-hó s̄iá-jī. Don't write in the book.  
 In chím-á tēh thāk-chheh; lí m̄<sup>3</sup>-hó jip-khì. They're studying now; don't go in.
20. m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú/tān-sī 不過 ; 但是 - but/however.  
 Góa chin<sup>7</sup> ài bé, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú bó chí\*. I really want to buy it but don't have the money.
21. pau 包 package; Measure for cigarettes.  
 chit<sup>3</sup> p̄au chheh. a package of books.  
 ĩ chá-hng chia<sup>3</sup>h chit<sup>3</sup> p̄au hun. Yesterday he smoked a pack of cigarettes.
22. phái\* 不好 / 難 be bad/naughty; difficult.  
 Tái-oán-ōe chin<sup>7</sup> phái\*-kóng. Taiwanese is very difficult.  
 ĩ é thih<sup>7</sup>-bé chin<sup>7</sup> phái\*-khĩa. He has a lousy bicycle.  
 Lit., His bicycle is hard to ride.
23. pòà\* 半 half.  
 Chit<sup>3</sup> p̄au hun ài jī-jī<sup>3</sup> khò<sup>7</sup>. pòà\*. A pack of cigarettes costs \$22.50.
24. siông-siông/tīa\*-tīa\*/pūt-sī 時常 / 常常 always/usually/often/frequently. (Place before the verb.)  
 ĩ siông-siông lái góan chhù. He comes to our house very often.  
 Keng-chio góa pūt-sī<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>7</sup>h. I'm always eating bananas.
25. soa\* 山 mountain(s).  
 ĩ chá-hng khi<sup>2</sup> soa\*-nih. He went to the mountains yesterday.  
 Tī soa\*-nih bó chin<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> láng. There are not many people in the mountains.



26. tái 台 (Measure for vehicles/radios/TV sets/typewriters/recorders.)

Chít tái tiān-sī. a TV set.

Chít tái thính-bé. a bicycle.

Góan chhū ù chít tái tiān-sī, n̄ng tái thính-bé. We (our house/family) have a TV and 2 bicycles.

27. Tái-oân 台灣 Taiwan.

Tái-oân-ōe/Tái-qi the Taiwanese language.

Tái-oân-lâng the Taiwanese people.

Tái-oân ù chhīn-chē kōe-chí. Taiwan has (grows) a lot of fruit.  
台灣有真精果子

28. thính-bé 自行車/腳踏車 bicycle. (Taipei: khóng-béng-chhia)

Lí ài khia thính-bé bô? Do you like bike-riding?

Lí ù thính-bé bô? Do you have a bike?

Góa bô pōa\* tái. 我無半台 I don't have a single one.

29. tiān-ia\* 電影 movie. (Lit., electric shadows) (Measure: chhut)

chō tiān-ia\* 作電影 to show a movie.

Tī hia tēh, chō tiān-ia\*, lán lái-khī khòa\*. They're showing a movie over there; let's go watch it.

30. tiān-sī 電視 T.V. (Lit., electric sight) (Measure: tái)

khòa\* tái-sī. to watch TV.

Chā-hng é tái-sī chhīn hó-khòa\*; lí ù khòa\* bô? TV was very good yesterday; did you watch it?

31. ù-ia\* 真的 It's true. (Lit., "has shadows", as a concrete object has shadows, hence it exists.) (Negative: "bô-ia\*".)

Ī kóng lí bōeh khī Kō-hiông, ù-ia\* bô? He says you're going to Kaohsiung; is that true?

Bô-ia\*, góa bô bōeh khī. It's not true; I'm not going.

To be good-looking/not be good-looking:

be difficult to ride/not be difficult to ride.

- O1: Good morning, Mr Aŋg, come on in.  
 A1: OK, thanks.  
 O2: Did you go anywhere for recreation yesterday?  
 A2: No, I was home watching TV yesterday; I didn't go anywhere.  
 O3: What was on TV? Was it good to watch?  
 A3: It wasn't bad. Did you go anywhere yesterday?  
 O4: Yesterday I rode a bike to a friend's house; I had a meal there (lit., ... was treated by them). We ate and then my friend and I went out to see a movie.  
 A4: How much is it to see a movie now?  
 O5: \$80. Do you want to see one? Today there's a good one; I'll treat you.  
 A5: Thanks; I don't like movies much.  
 O6: I have cigarettes here, Mr. Aŋg; do you want to smoke?  
 A6: Thanks; I don't smoke.  
 O7: If you don't smoke, there are also bananas here; I don't think today's are bad at all. Have a banana (lit., eat a banana, OK?).  
 A7: OK, I'll have a banana. I'm always eating them at home. It's true: Taiwan bananas (lit., bananas of Taiwan) are not bad.  
 O8: Are you going anywhere today? If you're not doing (lit., not going to do) anything, how about a bike ride to the mountains for some recreation?  
 A8: But my bike is no good (not good riding OR: not easy riding). Is yours easy to ride?  
 O9: Mine is not good-looking but it's not bad riding.  
 A9: I think we ought to go now, what do you say? (Lit., I think: let's go now; you think: OK?)  
 O10: OK, let's go.

#### SURNAMES

The following are the 20 most common surnames in Taiwan:

- |            |            |            |            |            |
|------------|------------|------------|------------|------------|
| 1. Tân 陳   | 2. Lâm 林   | 3. Ngô 黃   | 4. Tiu* 張  | 5. Lí 李    |
| 6. Ông 王   | 7. Gô* 吳   | 8. Lâu 劉   | 9. Chhòa 蔡 | 10. Iú* 楊  |
| 11. Khó* 許 | 12. Tē* 鄭  | 13. Sīa 謝  | 14. Koeh 郭 | 15. Aŋg 洪  |
| 16. Khu 邱  | 17. Chan 詹 | 18. Liāu 廖 | 19. Lōa 賴  | 20. Chhī 徐 |

註解  
<sup>2</sup>TŪI-<sup>7</sup>ŌE <sup>7</sup>Ē <sup>2</sup>CHŪ-KÁI

NOTES ON DIALOGUE

The Title of the Dialogue gives us an important point of grammar: with "hó" use "ū/bō", not "ē/bē"; with "phái\*" use "ē/bē", not "ū/bō". See Grammar Note 3.

O2: "Ū...bō<sup>3</sup>." makes this sentence mean; "Did you go anywhere?" Distinguish from: "Chá-hng lí khi tōh-ūi dhhít-thō? = Where did you go for recreation yesterday?"

O3: "Tiān-sī chō<sup>2</sup> sia\*h?" means: "What (show) did TV put on? = What was on TV?"

"Tiān-íá\* chō<sup>2</sup> sia\*h? = What was the movie about?"

"Chō<sup>2</sup> tiān-íá\* = to show a movie".

A3: "Bē<sup>3</sup> sīm-mīn<sup>2</sup> phái\*-khòa\*." Note the use of "bē" (not "bō") with "phái\*".

O7: "Kín-á-jit ê<sup>7</sup>": "keng-chio" is understood; "today's bananas" means bananas bought today. "Góa khòa\*" + Negative we translate as "I don't think that". "Be sīm-mīn phái\*-chiah = don't taste so bad".

A8: "Thīn-bé<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>1</sup> hō-khĩa." Note the use of "bō" (not "bē") with "hó".

<sup>7</sup>SĪN-GÍ <sup>7</sup>Ē <sup>2</sup>CHŪ-KÁI

VOCABULARY NOTES

1. hóe (Voc. No. 10) fire. To ask for a light we may ask "Ū hóe bō<sup>3</sup>?" "Hóe" means "fire" but in proper context would be understood as meaning a match or lighter. "Lái-tah" is a foreign word: the tone on "lái" does not change.

The characters for "match" read "hōe-chhā" in Taiwanese, but in Taiwanese the original meaning of "hōe-chhā" is, "firewood", yet an increasing number of people are using "hōe-chhā" for "match".

The main problem is that the most common word for "match" is "hoan-á-hóe". The word "hoan-á" means "barbarian" and is used by some people to refer to the aborigines. We think it best therefore to recommend against the use of "hoan-á-hóe". Later (Ls 11) we will study a common word for "aborigines".

2.  $\overset{3}{\bar{m}}\text{-hó}$  (Voc. No. 19) not good/Don't! " $\overset{3}{\bar{m}}\text{-hó}$ " and " $\overset{7}{bó}$  hó" are sometimes interchangeable. One difference is that if a verb follows, " $\overset{3}{\bar{m}}\text{-hó}$ " has a moral connotation.

$\overset{3}{Tī}$  hia  $\overset{7}{é}$  chheh  $\overset{3}{\bar{m}}\text{-hó}$   $\overset{1}{khò}$ \*. Don't read the books there./The books there are not good to read.

$\overset{3}{Tī}$  chia  $\overset{7}{é}$  chheh  $\overset{7}{bó}$   $\overset{1}{hó}\text{-khò}$ \*. The books here are not good (not well-written).

$\overset{1}{Lí}$   $\overset{3}{\bar{m}}\text{-hó}$   $\overset{1}{khí}$  hia. Don't go over there.

$\overset{7}{BUN}\text{-HOAT}$

GRAMMAR

1. The Past Tense.

A. The Past Tense is very easily formed in Taiwanese. We have already met it in sentences such as:

a)  $\overset{7}{I}$   $\overset{7}{lái}$   $\overset{7}{Tái}\text{-tióng}$ . He came to Taichung.

Note: here the context will tell us the tense.

b)  $\overset{1}{Lí}$   $\overset{2}{khí}$   $\overset{2}{tòh}\text{-ūi}$ ? Where did you go?

1)  $\overset{1}{Bô}$ ,  $\overset{1}{góa}$   $\overset{7}{bô}$   $\overset{2}{khí}$  tah. I didn't go anywhere.  
(Note it is better form to use " $\overset{7}{Bô}$ " here though it is not translated.)

2)  $\overset{1}{Góa}$   $\overset{2}{khí}$  Chan  $\overset{3}{Sín}\text{-sê}$ \* hia. I went over to Mr. Chan's.

B. Another common form of the Past Tense is the use of the auxiliary verb " $\overset{3}{ū}$ " before the main verb:

$\overset{7}{I}$   $\overset{3}{ū}$   $\overset{3}{khí}$ . He did go.

C. A time element can indicate Past Tense:

a)  $\overset{7}{Chá}\text{-hng}$   $\overset{1}{lí}$   $\overset{3}{chián}$   $\overset{1}{sím}\text{-mín}$ ? What did you eat yesterday?

b)  $\overset{7}{Chá}\text{-hng}$   $\overset{7}{í}$   $\overset{2}{tén}$   $\overset{3}{thák}\text{-chheh}$ . He was studying yesterday.

2. The Past Tense and Difference in Emphasis.

a)  $\overset{7}{Chá}\text{-hng}$   $\overset{1}{lí}$   $\overset{3}{ū}$   $\overset{2}{khí}$   $\overset{7}{Kó}\text{-hióng}$   $\overset{3}{bó}$ ? Did you go to Kaoshiung yesterday? (Here the emphasis is on " $\overset{3}{ū}$   $\overset{2}{khí}$ ". In English the emphasis is on "did go". I know you intended to go but I don't know whether you ever left the house.)

b) Chā<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>1</sup> lǐ<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Kŏ<sup>7</sup>-hiông<sup>3</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? OR:

Chā<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>1</sup> lǐ<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Kŏ<sup>7</sup>-hiông<sup>3</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Is it to  
Kaoshiung that you went yesterday? (Here the stress  
is on Kaoshiung; I saw you taking the train but I'm  
not sure where you went.)

In (b) note the use of "sī" to add extra emphasis to  
"Kŏ-hiông".

3. Use of "ū" with "hó" and "ē" with "phái\*".

A. "ū" is used with "hó" (a desirable quality) to mean  
"to be (good)". The negative is "bô".

a) Che<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>1</sup> hŏ<sup>1</sup>-lim<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Does this drink taste good?  
 我有好味嗎 (Lit., is this good to drink?)  
 1) Ū, chin<sup>7</sup> hŏ<sup>1</sup>-lim. Yes, it tastes good. (Note  
that "chin" is very commonly used to modify a  
modifier; we need not translate it as "very".)

2) Bô, bô<sup>7</sup> hŏ<sup>1</sup>-lim. No, it doesn't taste good.

b) Lí<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> pit<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>1</sup> hŏ<sup>1</sup>-sía<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Is your pen a good one  
 这个笔有好字嗎 (lit., good to write with)?

1) Ū, gŏa<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> pit<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hŏ<sup>1</sup>-sía. Yes, my pen is a  
good one.

2) Bô, gŏa<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> pit<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> hŏ<sup>1</sup>-sía. No, my pen is not  
good.

c) Í<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> thín<sup>2</sup>-bé<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>1</sup> hŏ<sup>1</sup>-khía<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Is his bike a good  
one?

1) Ū, í<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> thín<sup>2</sup>-bé<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hŏ<sup>1</sup>-khía.

2) Bô, í<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> thín<sup>2</sup>-bé<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> hŏ<sup>1</sup>-khía.

B. "ē" is used with "phái\*" (an undesirable quality)  
to mean "to be (bad)". The negative is "bē".

In asking a question with "ē", the interrogative  
particle is the enclitic "bē", which has the same  
meaning, function and position in a sentence as the  
enclitic "bô": "(or) not?"

a) Sĩa Siã<sup>3</sup>-si<sup>3</sup>\* ê thĩn<sup>2</sup>-bé<sup>3</sup> ê phãi<sup>1</sup>\*-khĩa<sup>3</sup> bẽ<sup>3</sup>? Is Mr.  
 Sĩa's bicycle a poor one? (Is it hard to ride?)

1) Ē, chin<sup>7</sup> phãi<sup>1</sup>\*-khĩa. It is; it's hard to ride.  
 (Note that "chin phãi\*-khĩa" is used in  
 preference to "ē phãi\*-khĩa" - see note on  
3.A.a.1.)

2) Bē, bē<sup>3</sup> phãi<sup>1</sup>\*-khĩa. No, it's not bad riding.

b) Che<sup>3</sup> ē phãi<sup>1</sup>\*-chiãh<sup>3</sup> bẽ<sup>3</sup>? Does this taste bad?

1) Ē, he<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> phãi<sup>1</sup>\*-chiãh. Yes, it (that) tastes  
 bad.

2) Bē, he<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> phãi<sup>1</sup>\*-chiãh. No, it doesn't taste bad.

c) Lĩ<sup>7</sup> ê pit<sup>3</sup> ē phãi<sup>1</sup>\*-sĩa<sup>3</sup> bẽ<sup>3</sup>? Is your pen lousy to  
 write with?

1) Ē, gĩa<sup>7</sup> ê pit<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> phãi<sup>1</sup>\*-sĩa. Yes, my pen is a  
 poor one.

2) Bē, gĩa<sup>7</sup> ê pit<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> phãi<sup>1</sup>\*-sĩa. No, my pen is not  
 bad.

#### 4. Referring to Place.

A. Place To Which follows the verb.

a) Ī<sup>7</sup> bõeh<sup>2</sup> lãi<sup>7</sup> Tãi<sup>7</sup>-tiõng.

b) Ī<sup>7</sup>n bõeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Tãi<sup>7</sup>-pak.

c) Chhĩa\*<sup>1</sup> lĩ<sup>1</sup> lãi<sup>7</sup> gĩa<sup>1</sup> chia. Please come here to me.

d) Chhĩa\*<sup>1</sup> lĩ<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Lâu<sup>3</sup> Sĩa<sup>3</sup>-sĩa\*<sup>3</sup> hĩa. Please go over to  
 Mr. Lâu there (OR: to his house).

B. We can only come or go to a place, not a person.

a) Chhĩa\*<sup>1</sup> ĩ<sup>7</sup> lãi<sup>7</sup> gĩa<sup>1</sup> chia. Ask him to come over here  
 to me. ("Chia" cannot be omitted.)

b) Lãn<sup>1</sup> lãi<sup>7</sup>-khi<sup>2</sup> Tiu\*<sup>7</sup> Thãi<sup>2</sup>-thãi<sup>7</sup> ĩn<sup>7</sup> hĩa. Let's go to  
 Mrs. Tiu\*'s. ("Hĩa" cannot be omitted.)

Note how easily a noun of place is formed by merely adding "chia/hia" = "here/there" to a noun/pronoun.

Note the expression: "Tiu\* Thài-thài in hia" = "Mrs. Tiu\*'s place." (This means her house.)

-----

C. Place words followed by "ū" may indicate EXISTENCE.

EXISTENCE: place + ū + Subject.

a) Tī<sup>3</sup> chia ū<sup>3</sup> Bók-su<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Is there a minister here?

1) Ū, tī<sup>3</sup> chia ū<sup>3</sup> Bók-su<sup>3</sup>.

2) Bô<sup>7</sup>, tī<sup>3</sup> chia bô<sup>7</sup> pōa\*<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> Bók-su<sup>3</sup>. No, there isn't a single minister here.

b) Tī<sup>3</sup> hia ū<sup>3</sup> thih-bé<sup>2</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

1) Ū, tī<sup>3</sup> hia ū<sup>3</sup> sá\*-sí<sup>2</sup> tái. Yes, there are 3 or 4 bikes there.

2) Bô<sup>7</sup>, hia bô<sup>7</sup> pōa\* tái.

c) Tī<sup>3</sup> soa\*-nih<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> lāng bô<sup>3</sup>? Are there people in the mountains?

NB. "Tī" may frequently be omitted in such sentences as a, b, c and d.

d) (Tī) chia ū<sup>3</sup> mng<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Is there a door here?

Chia bô<sup>7</sup> mng<sup>3</sup>. Mng<sup>3</sup> tī hia. There's no door here.  
The door is over there.

-----

D. The LOCATION of a thing/person may be indicated by the use of "tī" plus a place word following the thing/person.

LOCATION: thing/person + "tī" + place.

a) Góá<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sa\*<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi? Where are my clothes?

Lí<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sa\*<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chia. Your clothes are here.

b) Chhòa Siān-si\*<sup>3</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chheh tī<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi?

Í<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chheh tī<sup>3</sup> hia.

c) Liâu Thài-thài é thih-bé tī tah?

I é thih-bé tī in chhù.

d) Siu-lí é ián-pit tī toh?

I é ián-pit tī góa chia. I have her pencil.

5. NB. When answering a question, insert your ANSWERING WORD in the SAME POSITION as the INTERROGATIVE WORD.

a) Che sī sím-mih-lâng é sa\*? These are whose clothes?

He sī góa é sa\*. Those are my clothes.

b) Lí bôeh khi tâh-ūi?

Góa bôeh khi Sin-tek.

c) Lán chia ū kôe-chí bô?

Lán chia bô kôe-chí.

d) Tī toh-ūi ū Bók-su? Where is there a minister?

Tâi-tiong ū Bók-su. In Taichung there is a minister.

6. More on Noun Modifiers. (See Ls 5, Gram. Note 4.)

A. A noun may be modified by a single-word modifier preceding the noun.

I sī hó lâng. He is a good man.

B. A noun can be modified by a phrase.

I sī chin hó é lâng. He is a very good man.

Note: In this sentence in which a modifier ("hó") is itself modified (by "chin"), "ê" is placed before the noun: "chin hó é lâng". "ê" is necessary in this phrase. We may not say: "chin ho lang".

NB. The modifier before the "ê" does not change tone.



C. A noun can also be modified by a whole clause. This is easily done by placing "ê" between the modifying clause and the noun modified. Note: the word before "ê" does not change tone.

a)  $\overset{7}{\text{Âng}} \overset{3}{\text{Bok-su}} \overset{3}{\text{sī}} \overset{3}{\text{chit}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{7}{\text{chin}} \overset{7}{\text{hó}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{7}{\text{lâng}}$ . Rev. Âng is a man who is very good. = Rev. Âng is a very good man. ("Âng Bok-su sī chit ê chin hó" is a clause modifying "lâng".)

b)  $\text{He} \overset{3}{\text{sī}} \overset{7}{\text{chin}} \overset{1}{\text{phai*}} \overset{7}{\text{-khia}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{2}{\text{thih}} \overset{2}{\text{-bé}}$ . That is a difficult-to-ride bicycle. = That is a bicycle which is difficult to ride.

c)  $\overset{7}{\text{Tâi-oân}} \overset{3}{\text{ũ}} \overset{7}{\text{chin}} \overset{3}{\text{-chē}} \overset{7}{\text{chin}} \overset{1}{\text{hó}} \overset{1}{\text{-chia}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{1}{\text{kóe}} \overset{1}{\text{-chí}}$ . Taiwan has a great deal of fruit that is tasty. = Taiwan has a lot of delicious fruit.

NB. To say "good bike/good fruit/good coffee", we should ADD THE APPROPRIATE VERB:

$\overset{1}{\text{hó}} \overset{7}{\text{-khia}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{2}{\text{thih}} \overset{2}{\text{-bé}}$ .       $\overset{1}{\text{hó}} \overset{7}{\text{-chia}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{1}{\text{kóe}} \overset{1}{\text{-chí}}$ .

$\overset{1}{\text{hó}} \overset{7}{\text{-lim}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{7}{\text{kā}} \overset{7}{\text{-pi}}$ .

## 7. How To Say: "one each".

Note how easily the expression "one each, 2 each", etc., is formed:

a)  $\overset{1}{\text{Lân}} \overset{3}{\text{ũ}} \overset{3}{\text{nng}} \overset{3}{\text{pún}}$ ,  $\overset{3}{\text{chit}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{3}{\text{lâng}} \overset{3}{\text{chit}} \overset{3}{\text{pún}}$ . We have 2 books, one for each of us.

b) Chia  $\overset{3}{\text{ũ}} \overset{7}{\text{sá*}} \overset{1}{\text{jí}} \overset{7}{\text{keng}} \overset{7}{\text{-chio}}$ ,  $\overset{3}{\text{chit}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{3}{\text{lâng}} \overset{3}{\text{chit}} \overset{3}{\text{jí}}$ . There are 3 bananas here, one for each of you.

c)  $\overset{3}{\text{Chit}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{3}{\text{lâng}} \overset{7}{\text{sá*}} \overset{3}{\text{pún}}$ . 3 (books) for each person.

d)  $\overset{3}{\text{Nng}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{3}{\text{lâng}} \overset{3}{\text{chit}} \overset{3}{\text{tâi}}$ . 1 (vehicle) for every 2 persons.

e)  $\overset{7}{\text{sá*}} \overset{7}{\text{ê}} \overset{3}{\text{lâng}} \overset{3}{\text{nng}} \overset{3}{\text{pún}}$ . 2 (books) for every 3 people.

## 8. Uses of the Construction "hō" + Person + Verb".

A. We have studied this construction with the meaning: "give to someone + Verb". E.g.:

$\overset{1}{\text{Kóe}} \overset{1}{\text{-chí}} \overset{3}{\text{hō}} \overset{1}{\text{li}} \overset{1}{\text{chia}}$ . I give (offer) you fruit to eat.

B. In the same construction "hō·" can mean: "let/allow".

- a) Hō· 7 káp 1 lán 7 lái-khì. Let him come with us.  
 b) Lí 7 é sa\* bōeh 3 hō· 7 chò 3 bô·? Will you let him make your clothes?  
 c) 7 In thài-thài 3 m̄ 3 hō· 7 khi. His wife won't let him go.

~~不 予 以 去~~ -----

9. First State the Subject Matter.

- a) "Tiān-íá\* góa 1 bō 7 sīm-mih 2 ai khòa\*".

Note that, as mentioned in Ls 5, we first state the subject matter that we will talk about: "Movies". Then we talk about it: "I don't care much for them".

- b) Thih-bé 1 góan 3 chhù 3 ũ 7 chit 7 tái 7 chin 1 hō-khĩa, mā 3 ũ 3 chit 7 tái 7 chin 1 phái\*-khĩa. My family has one good bicycle and one poor one.

Note: We may also say that the whole is stated before the part: "Bicycles - one good...one poor one."

LĒ-KÙ

PATTERN SENTENCES

1. bō 7 pòa\* + Measure

- a) Lí 1 ũ 3 chí\* bô·? (P)  
 Bô, góa 1 bō 7 pòa\* kho·.  
 b) Chá-hng 7 bō 7 pòa\* 7 é 7 lāng 3 tī chia 3 chiāh-png.  
 c) In chhù 7 bō 7 pòa\* tái 7 thih-bé.  
 d) 7 í bé 7 é 7 keng-chio 1 góa 3 chiāh 7 bō 7 pòa\* jí. (P)  
 e) Kín-á-jit 7 bō 7 pòa\* chhūt 1 hō-khòa\* 7 é 3 tiān-íá\*. (P)

2. chá-hng 7

- a) Lí 1 chá-hng 3 ũ khi 7 Chióng-hòa 3 bô·?  
 b) Góa 1 chá-hng 7 sia 3 chin-chē jí; lí 1 ũ 3 síá bô·? (P)

- c) Gó<sup>1</sup>a chá<sup>7</sup>-hng bó<sup>7</sup> thák<sup>3</sup>-chheh, khi<sup>2</sup> khòa<sup>2</sup>\* tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\*.  
 d) Lí<sup>1</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-hng khi<sup>2</sup> khòa<sup>2</sup>\* ê tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\* ũ hó<sup>1</sup>-khòa<sup>2</sup>\* bó<sup>3</sup>? (P)  
 e) Lí<sup>1</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-hng khi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> keng<sup>7</sup>-chio, bé<sup>1</sup>-ū bó<sup>3</sup>? (P)

## 3. chhít-thô

- a) Chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lín<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> hia chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô. (P)  
 b) Ín<sup>7</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> soa<sup>2</sup>\*-nín<sup>1</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô; lí<sup>1</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?  
 c) Tí<sup>3</sup> Sín<sup>7</sup>-tek<sup>3</sup> ũ chít<sup>3</sup>-kóa<sup>1</sup> péng<sup>7</sup>-iú<sup>7</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> Tái<sup>7</sup>-tióng<sup>7</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô.  
 (P) *7.11 + 4.11*  
 d) Tí<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ũ láng<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> thák<sup>3</sup>-chheh; chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lín<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hia  
 chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô.  
 e) Lín<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Kó<sup>7</sup>-hiông<sup>7</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô, gó<sup>1</sup>a káp<sup>2</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup>,  
 hó<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

## 4. chhut (Measure)

- a) Góan<sup>1</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-hng bó<sup>7</sup> thák<sup>3</sup>-chheh, khi<sup>2</sup> khòa<sup>2</sup>\* chít<sup>3</sup> chhut<sup>2</sup>  
 tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\*.  
 b) Khòa<sup>2</sup>\* chít<sup>3</sup> chhut<sup>2</sup> tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\* ái<sup>2</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-pēh<sup>2</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> kho\*.  
*七.11 + 4.11*  
 c) Kín<sup>7</sup>-á-jít<sup>3</sup> ũ chít<sup>3</sup> chhut<sup>2</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khòa<sup>2</sup>\*; lán<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup>-khi<sup>2</sup>  
 khòa<sup>2</sup>\*. (P)  
 d) Í<sup>7</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-hng káp<sup>2</sup> kín<sup>7</sup>-á-jít<sup>3</sup> khòa<sup>2</sup>\* sá<sup>7</sup>\* chhut<sup>2</sup> tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\*.

## 5. chhut chhut-lái chhut-khi

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> kín<sup>7</sup>-á-jít<sup>3</sup> ũ bóeh<sup>2</sup> chhut<sup>2</sup>-khi<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?  
 b) Chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lí<sup>1</sup> chhut<sup>3</sup>-lái; gó<sup>1</sup>a bóeh<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup>-ōe.  
 c) Ín<sup>7</sup> chím<sup>1</sup>-á tēh<sup>3</sup> thák<sup>3</sup>-chheh; chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lín<sup>1</sup> chhut<sup>2</sup>-khi. (P)  
 d) Lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> chhut<sup>3</sup>-lái, gó<sup>1</sup>a bóeh<sup>2</sup> chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lí<sup>1</sup> khòa<sup>2</sup>\* tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\*. (P)  
 e) Gó<sup>1</sup>a bóeh<sup>2</sup> chhut<sup>2</sup>-khi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> páu<sup>7</sup> hun.

## 6. chĩm-á/ta\*

- a) Lĩn chhù chĩm-á sĩm-mĩh-lăng tĩ chhù-nĩh? (P)
- b) Bók-su chĩm-á káp llang tẽh kóng-õe.
- c) Chĩm-á tĩ chia thak-chheh ẽ hək-seng ũ chĩn-chẽ bõ\*?
- d) Tái-tiong chĩm-á bõ hõ-khòa\* ẽ tiān-ia\*.
- e) Góan chĩm-á bõeh khĩ chiah-png; lĩ bõeh khĩ bõ\*?
- f) Lán ta\* lĩ-khĩ bé, hó bõ\*?
- g) Ta\* ũ llang tẽh thak-chheh bõ\*?

## 7. ẽ/bẽ ẽ phái\* bẽ phái\* bẽ sĩm-mĩh phái\*

- a) Lâu-su, lĩ ẽ thĩh-bé ẽ chĩn phái\*-khĩa bẽ?
- 1) Ẽ, góa ẽ thĩh-bé chĩn phái\*-khĩa.
- 2) Bẽ, góa ẽ thĩh-bé bẽ phái\*-khĩa.
- b) Tái-oân ẽ keng-chio ẽ phái\*-chiah bẽ?
- Bẽ, Tái-oân ẽ keng-chio chĩn hõ-chiah.
- c) Lĩn chhù ẽ thang-á-mng ẽ phái\*-koai\* bẽ?
- Ẽ, góan chhù ẽ thang-á-mng chĩn phái\*-koai\*.
- d) Tái-gí ẽ phái\*-kóng bẽ?
- Bẽ, Tái-oân-õe bẽ sĩm-mĩh phái\*-kóng.

## 8. góa khòa\* lĩ khòa\* góan khòa\* lĩn khòa\*

(góa khòa\* + Negative)

- a) Góan khòa\*, Lõa Bók-su sĩ chĩn hó ẽ llang.
- b) Kĩn-á-jit bõ thak-chheh; góa khòa\*, lán lĩ-khĩ soa\*-nĩh chhĩt-thõ. (P)
- c) Lán chĩm-á nã khĩ ĩn chhù, góan khòa\*, ĩn tẽh chiah-png á. (P)

d) Gó<sup>1</sup>a khò<sup>1</sup>a\*, Tái<sup>7</sup>-oán<sup>7</sup>-ōe<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> sìm<sup>1</sup>-mìn<sup>2</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-thak<sup>1</sup>; lĩn<sup>1</sup> khò<sup>1</sup>a\*,  
 ũ<sup>3</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-thak<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)

e) Gó<sup>1</sup>a khò<sup>1</sup>a\*, che<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> lầ<sup>7</sup>ng<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>1</sup>; lĩ<sup>1</sup> khò<sup>1</sup>a\*, ũ<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)

9. hỏ<sup>1</sup> + Verb      bô<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup> + Verb      bô<sup>7</sup> sìm<sup>1</sup>-mìn<sup>2</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup> + Verb

a) Gó<sup>1</sup>a chhēng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sả<sup>7</sup>\*-khò<sup>1</sup>. ũ<sup>3</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-khò<sup>1</sup>a\* bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)

1) ũ, lĩ<sup>1</sup> chhēng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sả<sup>7</sup>\*-khò<sup>1</sup>. chĩn<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-khò<sup>1</sup>a\*.

2) Bô, lĩ<sup>1</sup> chhēng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sả<sup>7</sup>\*-khò<sup>1</sup>. bô<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-khò<sup>1</sup>a\*.

b) ĩ<sup>7</sup> bé<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> keng<sup>7</sup>-chio<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-chiah<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)

Ũ, ĩ<sup>7</sup> bé<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> keng<sup>7</sup>-chio<sup>7</sup> chĩn<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-chiah<sup>1</sup>.

OR: bē<sup>3</sup> phải<sup>1</sup>\*-chiah<sup>1</sup>.

c) ĩ<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>. lí<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> bản<sup>7</sup>-liân<sup>3</sup>-pit<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-sía<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)

Bô, ĩ<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>. gó<sup>7</sup>a é<sup>7</sup> bản<sup>7</sup>-liân<sup>3</sup>-pit<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> sìm<sup>1</sup>-mìn<sup>2</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-sía<sup>3</sup>.

d) ĩ<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> khò<sup>1</sup>. bô<sup>7</sup> sìm<sup>1</sup>-mìn<sup>2</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup> chò. 伊个褲無什麼好做

e) Lĩn<sup>1</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>2</sup> khỉ<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>1</sup>a\* é<sup>7</sup> tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-khò<sup>1</sup>a\* bô<sup>3</sup>?

Ũ, gó<sup>1</sup>an<sup>7</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>2</sup> khỉ<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>1</sup>a\* é<sup>7</sup> tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá<sup>3</sup> chĩn<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-khò<sup>1</sup>a\*.

f) Lí<sup>1</sup> tẻ<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>1</sup>a\* é<sup>7</sup> chhēh<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-khò<sup>1</sup>a\* bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)

Ũ, gó<sup>1</sup>a tẻ<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>1</sup>a\* é<sup>7</sup> chhēh<sup>7</sup> chĩn<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-khò<sup>1</sup>a\*.

g) ĩ<sup>7</sup> chò<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sa\* chĩn<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-khò<sup>1</sup>a\*, m<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-chhēng. (P)

h) ĩ<sup>7</sup> sía<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> jĩ<sup>7</sup> chĩn<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-khò<sup>1</sup>a\*. (P)

i) Gó<sup>1</sup>a khò<sup>1</sup>a\*, Tái<sup>7</sup>-oán<sup>7</sup>-ōe<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-kóng. (P)

Tái<sup>7</sup>-gí<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> sìm<sup>1</sup>-mìn<sup>2</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-kóng, lí<sup>1</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> tĩa<sup>3</sup>\*-tĩa<sup>3</sup>\* kóng.

j) Tái<sup>7</sup>-oán<sup>7</sup>-lầ<sup>7</sup>ng<sup>7</sup> kóng: Tái<sup>7</sup>-oán<sup>7</sup>-ōe<sup>7</sup> chĩn<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-kóng.

10. hỏe

a) 1) Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hỏe<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

Lĩ<sup>1</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> hỏe<sup>2</sup> bởeh<sup>2</sup> chhông<sup>2</sup>-sía<sup>3</sup>\*h?

a) 2) Gó<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>2</sup>oeh chiah<sup>3</sup>-hun, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ó hóe.

Lí<sup>1</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ó hóe, sī<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ó? Tī<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> hia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lái-tah. (...He has a lighter.)

## 11. hun

a) Chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lí<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-hun. Please have a cigarette.

1) Tó<sup>7</sup>-sī<sup>a</sup>. Thank you. (Spoken if I accept the cigarette.)

2) Tó<sup>7</sup>-sī<sup>a</sup>. Gó<sup>1</sup>a ũ. (No,) thanks. I have some.

3. Gó<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>7</sup>ó chiah. I don't smoke.

4) Gó<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>7</sup>ó ài<sup>2</sup> chiah. I don't feel like smoking right now. (Spoken to a rather close friend.)

Note: People will frequently press one to accept a cigarette, but they ordinarily will not force one who says: "Gó<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>7</sup>ó chiah = I don't smoke. This is not the same as "Gó<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>7</sup>ó ài<sup>2</sup> chiah = I don't want to smoke (now)".

b) Gó<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>2</sup>oeh bé<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> páu<sup>7</sup> hun; tí<sup>3</sup> tóh-ŭi<sup>2</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> láng<sup>7</sup> téh<sup>2</sup> bē?  
 佢 佢

c) Lí<sup>1</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-hó<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-hun. (P)

d) Tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>7</sup> é<sup>3</sup> hák-seng, b<sup>7</sup>ó chiah<sup>3</sup>-hun é<sup>7</sup> láng<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē. (P)

e) Lí<sup>1</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ó chiah<sup>3</sup>-hun, sī<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ó? (P)

M̄<sup>3</sup>-sī, gó<sup>1</sup>a ũ<sup>3</sup> chiah, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> chím-á<sup>1</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ó ài<sup>2</sup> chiah.

## 12. jí (Measure)

a) Lín<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kúí<sup>1</sup> jí<sup>7</sup> keng-chio?

Góan<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>7</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ó p<sup>2</sup>oá\* jí.

b) Chia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>7</sup> sá\* jí, lán<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> é<sup>7</sup> láng<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> jí. (P)

c) Nā<sup>3</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> pá, chiah<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> jí<sup>7</sup> keng-chio<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó. (P)

d) M̄<sup>3</sup>-hó<sup>1</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> chiah, í<sup>7</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> jí<sup>3</sup> á. (P)

## 13. jíp jíp-lái jíp-khì

a) Sī<sup>a</sup> Sián<sup>3</sup>-sī\*, chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lí<sup>1</sup> jíp-lái<sup>7</sup> chē.

b) Ũ<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> é<sup>7</sup> hák-seng iáu<sup>1</sup>-b<sup>3</sup>oē jíp-lái<sup>7</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh.

- c) ỉ chhĩa\* lí jíp-khì; ỉ bõeh káp lí kóng-ōe. (P)
- d) Lí nã jíp-lâi, chhĩa\* lí kóai\*-mng, hó bô\*? 個個
- e) ỉ tẽh sĩa-jĩ, chín bô ải lãng jíp-khĩ khòa\*. (P)

14. kak (Note that when "kho\*" is followed by "kak", "kho\*" DOES NOT CHANGE TONE.)

- a) Cháp kak sĩ chít kho\*, sĩ bô\*?
- b) Sá\* kho\* chhít kak. OR: Sá\* khố\* chhit.
- c) Chít kho\* gō\* kak kio-chỗ khố\*-pòa\*.
- d) Góa ũ gō\*-cháp-ít kho\* nng kak. OR: gō\*-cháp-ít khố\* jĩ.
- e) Chĩm-á lí nã bõeh gō\* kak hō\* lãng, lãng bô ải. (P)

15. keng-chio/kĩn-chio

- a) Che sĩ sĩm-mĩh-lãng ẻ keng-chio?
- b) Lí chĩm-á tẽh chĩa ẻ keng-chio ũ chín hỏ-chĩa bô\*?
- c) Chã-hng ỉ khĩ bé ẻ keng-chio bẽ sĩm-mĩh phải\*-chĩa.
- d) Tái-oãn ẻ keng-chio ũ-iá\* chín hỏ-chĩa.
- e) Keng-chio ũ-iá\* chín hỏ-chĩa, tãn-sĩ góa chĩm-á bô ải chĩa. 個個

16. khĩa

- a) Lí khĩa thĩh-bé bõeh khĩ tởn-ũi? (P)  
Góa khĩa thĩh-bé bõeh khĩ Khu Siãn-sĩ\* ỉn hĩa. 個個
- b) Chã-hng lí khĩa thĩh-bé khĩ Tái-tiong bẽ chhẽh, sĩ bô\*?  
M-sĩ, chã-hng góa khĩa thĩh-bé khĩ bé chít nĩa sa\*.
- c) Chã-hng ỉ khĩa góa ẻ thĩh-bé khĩ khòa\* tiãn-iá\*.

d) G<sup>1</sup>óa é th<sup>2</sup>ih-bé ch<sup>7</sup>in ph<sup>1</sup>ai\*-kh<sup>1</sup>ia; l<sup>1</sup>í é h<sup>3</sup>ô· g<sup>1</sup>óa kh<sup>1</sup>ia, hó b<sup>3</sup>ô·?

e) Th<sup>2</sup>ih-bé k<sup>7</sup>in-á-j<sup>1</sup>it g<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>7</sup>ố b<sup>2</sup>oeh kh<sup>1</sup>ia, l<sup>1</sup>í n<sup>3</sup>ả ải kh<sup>1</sup>ia h<sup>3</sup>ô· l<sup>1</sup>í kh<sup>1</sup>ia. (P)

17. k<sup>7</sup>in-á-j<sup>1</sup>it

a) L<sup>1</sup>í k<sup>7</sup>in-á-j<sup>1</sup>it ừ b<sup>2</sup>oeh th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>ehh b<sup>3</sup>ô·?

b) L<sup>1</sup>im Si<sup>3</sup>an-si<sup>3</sup>\* k<sup>7</sup>in-á-j<sup>1</sup>it b<sup>7</sup>ố t<sup>3</sup>í ch<sup>3</sup>hù-n<sup>3</sup>ih.

c) K<sup>7</sup>in-á-j<sup>1</sup>it é ti<sup>3</sup>an-iá\* b<sup>3</sup>ế ph<sup>1</sup>ai\*-kh<sup>1</sup>oà\*, l<sup>1</sup>í b<sup>2</sup>oeh kh<sup>2</sup>í kh<sup>1</sup>oà\* b<sup>3</sup>ô·?

d) G<sup>1</sup>óa ch<sup>7</sup>in ải k<sup>2</sup>áp l<sup>1</sup>í kh<sup>1</sup>í, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú k<sup>7</sup>in-á-j<sup>1</sup>it ải th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>ehh.

e) G<sup>1</sup>óa kh<sup>1</sup>oà\*, k<sup>7</sup>in-á-j<sup>1</sup>it ừ ch<sup>7</sup>in-ch<sup>3</sup>ế l<sup>1</sup>ang b<sup>2</sup>oeh l<sup>7</sup>ái chia ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>ng. (P)

18. k<sup>7</sup>o-hi<sup>1</sup>ong

19. m<sup>3</sup>-h<sup>1</sup>ó

a) B<sup>7</sup>ố l<sup>1</sup>ang t<sup>3</sup>í h<sup>1</sup>ia; l<sup>1</sup>í m<sup>3</sup>-h<sup>1</sup>ó kh<sup>2</sup>í h<sup>1</sup>ia. (P)

b) L<sup>1</sup>í ải th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>ehh; m<sup>3</sup>-h<sup>1</sup>ó kh<sup>2</sup>í kh<sup>2</sup>oà\* ti<sup>3</sup>an-iá\*.

c) K<sup>7</sup>in-á-j<sup>1</sup>it bé é k<sup>7</sup>oé-ch<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>7</sup>in ph<sup>1</sup>ai\*-ch<sup>1</sup>iah; m<sup>3</sup>-h<sup>1</sup>ó ch<sup>1</sup>iah. (P)

d) B<sup>7</sup>ố-iá\* é ôe m<sup>3</sup>-h<sup>1</sup>ó k<sup>1</sup>ong. 無 別 个 話 不 好 講.

e) Che si<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>3</sup>ehh; m<sup>3</sup>-h<sup>1</sup>ó si<sup>1</sup>a-j<sup>1</sup>i. (P) 是 冊, 不 好 寫 字

20. m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú/t<sup>3</sup>an-s<sup>1</sup>i

a) G<sup>1</sup>óa ch<sup>7</sup>in ải bé, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú b<sup>7</sup>ố ch<sup>1</sup>ai\*.

b) Hun g<sup>1</sup>óa ừ ch<sup>3</sup>iah, t<sup>3</sup>an-s<sup>1</sup>i ch<sup>1</sup>im-á b<sup>7</sup>ố ải ch<sup>1</sup>iah. (P)

c) K<sup>7</sup>eng-ch<sup>1</sup>io ừ-iá\* b<sup>3</sup>ế ph<sup>1</sup>ai\*-ch<sup>1</sup>iah, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú g<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>7</sup>ố si<sup>1</sup>m-m<sup>2</sup>ih ải ch<sup>1</sup>iah. (P)



咖啡 我有去買，但是買唔

d) Chá-hng góa ũ khi bé, tân-sī bé-bô.

e) Ká-pi góa ũ lim, m-kú bó tĩa\*-tĩa\* lim. (P)

咖啡 我有咁 冇 冇 咁 咁 咁 咁

## 21. pau

a) Siu-lí, tĩ hia ũ chít pàu mih-kĩa\*; sī lí ê, sī bó\*? (P)

b) Chít pàu hun ài jĩ-jĩ kho\*, lí nã ài góa khi bé, chhĩa\* lí chí\* hō\* góa. (P)

c) Ĩ chín hó; góa bó hun, ĩ hō\* góa chít pau.

d) Chá-hng lí ê pêng-iú hō\* lí chít pàu mih-kĩa\*, ho\*h? (NB. At times people say "lí ê pêng-iú/góa ê thài-thài, etc." instead of the plural form. Note also that the plural form is NOT used for the singular before a modifier in a phrase such as "lí ê hó pêng-iú".

## 22. phái\*

a) Góa ê thĩh-bé chín phái\*-khĩa, lí ê ũ hó-khĩa bó\*?

b) Tái-oân-ōe ê chheh ē phái\*-thak bē?

c) Ĩ chá-hng bé ê kōe-chí chín phái\*-chiah; bó láng ài chiah.

d) Che sī chá-hng ê tē-bĩ-tê, chín-á chín phái\*-lim. (P)

e) Chá-hng lí khi khòa\* ê tiān-ia\* ē phái\*-khòa\* bē?

f) Góa khòa\*, khò\* chín hó-chò, m-kú sa\* chín phái\*-chò.

## 23. pòa\*

a) Cháp jí keng-chio jí-cháp-gō\* kho\*; chít jí sī nng khò\* pòa\*.

b) Chít pún nã gō\* khò\* pòa\*, góa bē nng pún. (P)

c) Ĩ chít nía bōeh bē lí káu-cháp-gō\* khò\* pòa\*; lí bōeh bé bó\*?

d) Góa bó ài chiah chít jí; lán chít láng chiah chít pòa\*, hó bó\*?

常 常 迷 迷 弗 呀

24. siông-siông/tĩa\*-tĩa\*/pút-sí

- a) Chia siông-siông ũ lǎng lǎi chhít-thô. OR: Siông-siông ũ lǎng lǎi chia chhít-thô.
- b) Lǎu-su tĩa\*-tĩa\* chín ǎi káp hǎk-seng kóng-ōe.
- c) Góa khòa\* lí pút-sí tēh bé sǎ\*-khò\*; lí é sǎ\*-khò\* ũ chín-chē bô\*?
- d) Lí tēh thǎk Tái-oân-ōe, m̄-kú ũ siông-siông kóng bô\*?
- e) Chhia\* lín tĩa\*-tĩa\* lǎi góan chia chhít-thô.

25. soa\*

- a) Tī soa\*-nih ũ chhù bô\*?  
Ū, ũ chhù, m̄-kú bô chín-chē.
- b) Kín-ǎ-jit bô thǎk-chheh, lǎn lǎi-khǐ soa\*-nih chhít-thô, hó bô\*?
- c) Tī Tái-oân ũ chín-chē soa\*; tī soa\*-nih ũ chín-chē koe-chí.
- d) Lǎng kóng Chiông-hòa é soa\*-nih chín hó chhít-thô, ("Lǎng = ũ lǎng"; see Ls 3 Voc. No. 9, note. But many people change tone on "lǎng" even when it does not mean "ũ lǎng".)

26. tái (Measure)

- a) Thnh-bé chít tái ǎi lǎa-chē chí\*? (P)
- b) Góan chhù ũ nng tái thnh-bé, chít tái bē phǎi\*-khĩa, chít tái bô sim-mih hó-khĩa.
- c) Lím Sián-si\* chá-hng bé chít tái tiān-sī, chín hó-khòa\*.

27. Tái-oân

## 28. thính-bé

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> thính-bé<sup>2</sup> bõeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> tòn-ũi<sup>2</sup>? (P)
- b) Che<sup>3</sup> sĩ<sup>1</sup> sìm-mĩh-lâng<sup>7</sup> ế<sup>7</sup> thính-bé<sup>2</sup>? Hô<sup>3</sup>. góa<sup>1</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
(P)
- c) Siu-sũ<sup>1</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> kìn-ả-jít<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> thính-bé<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
*177 ±*
- d) Góa<sup>1</sup> chà-hng<sup>7</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> ỉ<sup>7</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> thính-bé<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> soa\*-nĩh<sup>1</sup> chhĩt-thô<sup>2</sup>.
- e) Kìn-ả-jít<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> thak-chheh<sup>3</sup>, lán<sup>1</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> thính-bé<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>7</sup>-khi<sup>2</sup> Chiông-hòa<sup>7</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

29. tiān-ía\*      chỏ<sup>2</sup> tiān-ía\*

- a) Chhĩ<sup>1</sup> Siān-sĩ\*<sup>3</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> chà-hng<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> tiān-ía\*<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
*條*
- b) Góa<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> tiān-ía\*<sup>3</sup>, m-kú<sup>3</sup> ải<sup>1</sup> chhĩt-pêh-cháp<sup>3</sup>-kho<sup>2</sup>.  
*七八*
- c) Kìn-ả-jít<sup>3</sup> tẻh<sup>2</sup> chỏ<sup>7</sup> ế<sup>3</sup> tiān-ía\*<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hỏ-khòa\*<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
- d) ũ<sup>3</sup> chĩt<sup>3</sup> chhũt<sup>2</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hỏ-khòa\*<sup>7</sup> ế<sup>7</sup> tiān-ía\*<sup>3</sup> chĩm-á<sup>1</sup> tĩ<sup>3</sup> Kỏ<sup>7</sup>-hiông<sup>2</sup> tẻh<sup>2</sup> chỏ<sup>7</sup>.  
*洪雅行伴*
- e) Iũ\*<sup>1</sup> Siān-sĩ\*<sup>3</sup> ỉn<sup>7</sup> hĩa<sup>2</sup> tẻh<sup>2</sup> chỏ<sup>3</sup> tiān-ía\*<sup>3</sup>; lí<sup>1</sup> bõeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

## 30. tiān-sĩ

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> nhũ<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> tiān-sĩ<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
- b) Góa<sup>1</sup> bõeh<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> tiān-sĩ<sup>3</sup>, bô<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> tiān-ía\*<sup>3</sup>.
- c) Chĩm-á<sup>1</sup> tiān-sĩ<sup>3</sup> tẻh<sup>2</sup> chỏ<sup>2</sup> sia\*h? (P)
- d) Tiān-sĩ<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> hỏ-khòa\*<sup>7</sup>; lán<sup>1</sup> lái-khi<sup>2</sup> chhĩt-thô<sup>2</sup>.
- e) Góan<sup>1</sup> nhũ<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>3</sup> tiān-sĩ<sup>3</sup>, m-kú<sup>3</sup> chĩm-á<sup>1</sup> bõeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> bé

## 31. ũ-ía\*

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> kớng<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> bõeh<sup>2</sup> chhĩa\*<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> tiān-ía\*<sup>3</sup>, ũ-ía\*<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

- b) Chā<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>1</sup> í<sup>7</sup> bé<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> kēng<sup>7</sup>-chio<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup>-iá\*<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> phái\*<sup>1</sup>-chiah<sup>1</sup>.
- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> kīn<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-jít<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup>-iá\*<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> thāk<sup>3</sup>-chheh<sup>3</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 d) Lāng<sup>7</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> Tāi<sup>7</sup>-gí<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> phái\*<sup>1</sup>-kóng<sup>3</sup>; ũ<sup>1</sup>-iá\*<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> phái\*<sup>1</sup>-  
 kóng.  
 e) Tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> kōe<sup>1</sup>-chí<sup>1</sup> gōa<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup>-iá\*<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chiah<sup>1</sup>. (P)

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF PATTERN SENTENCES MARKED "P"

1. a) Do you have any money? (This means "on your person".)  
 No, I don't have a dollar on me.  
 d) I didn't eat a single one of the bananas he bought.  
 e) There isn't one good movie playing today.
2. b) I wrote a lot of characters yesterday; did you? (An elementary school student speaking; he has to practise writing characters every day.)  
 d) Was the movie you saw yesterday good?  
 e) You went to buy bananas yesterday; were you able to buy any?
3. a) Please come to my house for a visit. (From "hia" we know that this is spoken away from the house.)  
 c) A few Hsinchu friends have come to Taichung for a little break. (Note that a Verb ("lâi") without "a" may be translated as Perfect Tense in English.)
4. c) There's a good one (movie) on today; let's go see it. (Note that since the noun is not stated the tone on "chhut" does not change.)
5. c) They're studying now; please go outside. (Spoken to kids.)  
 d) If you come out (to meet me) I'll treat you to a movie. (Talking on the phone to a friend.)
6. a) Who in your family is in the house now?
8. b) There's no school today; I've got an idea we ought to go recreating in the mountains. (Lit., ... I think, let's go recreating in the mountains.)  
 c) If we go to their house now I think they'll be eating.  
 d) I don't think Taiwanese is very easy; do you think it's easy?  
 e) I don't think anyone wants to eat this; do you think anyone does?
9. a) Are my clothes beautiful?  
 b) Are the bananas he bought good ones?  
 c) Is the fountain pen he gave you a good one?

9. f) Is that a good book you're reading?  
 g) The clothes he makes are nice-looking but terrible to wear (that is, poorly made/too small, etc.).  
 h) He writes beautiful characters.  
 i) I don't think Taiwanese is easy to speak.  
 (If) Taiwanese is not easy to speak, you must speak it constantly.
11. c) Don't smoke./You shouldn't smoke.  
 d) Lit., The students here: those who don't smoke are many.  
 e) You don't smoke, do you?  
 Yes, I smoke, but I don't want to smoke now.
12. b) There are 3 (bananas) here, one for each of us.  
 c) It's good to eat a banana at the end of a meal.  
 d) Don't give it to him; he has eaten a lot (of bananas already).
13. c) He asks you to go in; he wants to talk with you. (Note that "jip" does not change tone.)  
 e) She's writing her characters; she hates it when people go in to watch her. (Note that many people, especially young girls, do not like to have anyone watch them writing - they feel their writing is poor.)
14. e) These days if you give 50 cents to somebody he won't take it. (It's of no value.) (For tone on the second "lâng" see note at Lē-Kū No. 25 d.)
16. a) Where are you going to ride the bike to?  
 I'm cycling to Mr. Khu's house. (Note: if "boeh" were omitted, the question and answer would be Past Tense.)  
 e) I'm not going to ride the bike today; if you want to ride it go ahead (I'll let you ride it).
17. e) It looks to me like a lot of people will come to eat here today.
19. a) There's no one there; don't you go there.  
 c) The fruit we bought today is no good; don't eat it.  
 (Note: "m̄-hó chiah" means "Don't eat it/You must not eat it". "Bô hó-chiah" would mean "It does not taste good".)  
 e) This is a book; don't write on it.
20. b) I do smoke but I don't want to right now.  
 c) It's true that bananas aren't bad but I don't care so much for them.  
 e) I do drink coffee but not all the time.
21. a) There's a package (of something) there, Sister; is it yours?  
 b) A pack of cigarettes is \$22; if you want me to go buy some, please give me the money.

22. d) This is yesterday's tea (it was prepared yesterday); it's no good now.
23. b) If it's \$5.50 a book I'll buy two. (Note that in speaking to the salesperson this simplified form "góa bé" is a common way of saying "I want to buy" or "I will buy".)
26. a) Bicycles: one costs how much?
28. a) Where are you cycling to?  
b) Whose bike is this? Let me ride it, OK?
30. c) What's on TV now?
31. e) It's true I didn't eat the fruit here. (A child denying allegations.)

KU

SENTENCES

1. ĭ kóng bōeh sia-jī, m̄-kú sia bó pōa\* jī.
2. Kín-á-jit é png bó pōa\* é lāng ái chiah. (S)
3. Góa chin ái chhia\* lí, m̄-kú kín-á-jit khò-nih bó pōa\* kho. 褲裡無半
4. Chā-hng góa káp ĭ chhūt-khī bé chin-chē mih-kīa\*.
5. Chā-hng ĭ hō. góa gō-chap kho, góa iáu-bōe iōng.
6. Kō-hiōng é péng-iú sī chā-hng lái, m̄-sī kín-á-jit. (S)
7. ĭ khi Kō-hiōng chhit-thô, bó tī chhù-nih.
8. Góan chīm-á tēn thak-chheh; chhia\* lín khi hia chhit-thô.
9. Sīu-lí, chhia\* lín lái góan hia chhit-thô.
10. Lí é thih-bé hō. góa khiá, góa chhia\* lí khò\* chit chhūt tiān-ia\*, hó bó? (S)
11. Chā-hng ũ chit chhūt tiān-ia\* chin hō-khò\*, lí ũ khi khò\* bó?
12. Góan chā-hng tī chia kóng-ōe, bó chō sim-mih.
13. ĭn tī chia chhōng-sia\*h? (S)

個仔遮創哈

14. Koeh Siān-si<sup>3</sup>\* bō<sup>7</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chia; í<sup>7</sup> chhūt<sup>2</sup>-khī<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> mih-kīa\*.
15. Lí<sup>1</sup> chīm-á<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chhōng-sia\*h<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? (S)
16. Tân<sup>1</sup> Siān-si<sup>3</sup>\*, lín<sup>1</sup> pēng-iú<sup>7</sup> chhia\* lí<sup>1</sup> chīm-á<sup>1</sup> khī<sup>2</sup> í<sup>7</sup> hia. (S)
17. Chīm-á<sup>1</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chia ũ<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup> Tái-gí<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 18. Góa<sup>1</sup> chīm-á<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khī<sup>2</sup> Sín-tek; lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khī<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 19. Lí<sup>1</sup> kīn-á-jit<sup>7</sup> chhēng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sa\* bé<sup>3</sup> phái\*-khòa\*.  
 20. Í<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> bān-liān-pit<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> phái\*-sía<sup>3</sup> bé<sup>3</sup>? (S)  
 21. Í<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> iōng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> gōan-chū-pit<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> phái\*-sía<sup>3</sup> bé<sup>3</sup>? (S)  
 22. Góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, í<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> kēng-chio<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> sīm-mih<sup>2</sup> hó-chiah.  
 23. Tī<sup>3</sup> hia ũ<sup>3</sup> chin-chē<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> chhōng-sia\*h?  
 24. Lōa<sup>1</sup> Siān-si<sup>3</sup>\* tī<sup>3</sup> hia káp<sup>2</sup> Chhī<sup>7</sup> Thài-thài<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> kōng-ōe.  
 25. Che<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>1</sup> hó-chò; hō<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> chò. (S)  
 26. Góa<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>1</sup> hó-khòa\*, lí<sup>1</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> khòa\* bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 27. Nā<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hó-khòa\* é<sup>7</sup> tiān-ia\*, góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khī<sup>2</sup> khòa\*.  
 28. Bók-sū-niū<sup>3</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> kīn-á-jit<sup>7</sup> chhēng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sa\* chin<sup>1</sup> hó-khòa\*.  
 29. Ū<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> kōng<sup>7</sup> Tái-oān-ōe<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>1</sup> hó-kōng, ũ<sup>3</sup>-ia\* bō<sup>3</sup>? (S)  
 30. Hák-seng<sup>3</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> chiah-hun<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> sīm-mih<sup>2</sup> hó.  
 31. Tī<sup>3</sup> chia ũ<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>3</sup> hun<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 32. Pēng-iú<sup>7</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> lái, lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chhia\* ín<sup>3</sup> jip-lái<sup>7</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? (S)  
 33. Í<sup>7</sup> bé<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> kēng-chio, góa<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> pōa\* jí.  
 34. Í<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> kēng-chio, chá-hng<sup>7</sup> khī<sup>2</sup> soa\*-nih<sup>3</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> sí-  
 gō<sup>3</sup> jí.  
 35. He<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>3</sup> nāng<sup>3</sup> kak OR: pēh<sup>2</sup> khó<sup>7</sup> jī. (S)  
 36. Che<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> chhit<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>3</sup> sá\* kak OR: chhit<sup>2</sup> khó<sup>7</sup> sa\*.  
 37. Pit<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>3</sup> lāk<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup> kak OR: lāk<sup>3</sup> khó<sup>7</sup> peh.  
 38. Lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> khī<sup>2</sup> Tái-tiong, chhia\* lí<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> kēng-chio, hó<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?

39. Keng-chio <sup>3</sup>ũ-<sup>1</sup>ia\* chin hó-chiah, <sup>3</sup>m-kú góa <sup>1</sup>bó chin <sup>2</sup>ai chiah. (S)
40. <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>3</sup>tĩa\*-<sup>3</sup>tĩa\* khĩa thĩh-bé khĩ thak-chheh. (S)
41. <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>7</sup>é thĩh-bé <sup>7</sup>bó chin hó-khĩa, sī <sup>3</sup>bô\*? (S)  
 sī, <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>7</sup>é thĩh-bé <sup>7</sup>bó chin hó-khĩa.
42. Kín-<sup>1</sup>á-jit <sup>7</sup>é <sup>3</sup>tiān-<sup>1</sup>ia\* nã <sup>3</sup>góan Tái-oân-lâng khòa\*, <sup>3</sup>ũ-<sup>1</sup>ia\* chin hó-khòa\*. (S)
43. Che sī <sup>3</sup>góa <sup>7</sup>é thĩh-bé; lí <sup>1</sup>ai khĩa <sup>3</sup>bô\*?
44. Góa <sup>7</sup>é thĩh-bé lí <sup>1</sup>bôeh khĩa khĩ tóh-<sup>2</sup>ũ?
45. Lí <sup>7</sup>kín-<sup>1</sup>á-jit <sup>2</sup>ai thak-chheh <sup>3</sup>bô\*? (S)
46. Kín-<sup>1</sup>á-jit <sup>3</sup>Lôa Bók-su <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>7</sup>lái chia <sup>3</sup>bô\*?
47. <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>7</sup>chã-hng <sup>3</sup>ũ khĩ Chióng-hòa; <sup>7</sup>kín-<sup>1</sup>á-jit <sup>7</sup>bó <sup>2</sup>bôeh khĩ.
48. Góan <sup>1</sup>chhù tĩ <sup>3</sup>Kó-hiông; <sup>1</sup>chhĩa\* <sup>1</sup>lín <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>2</sup>chhit-thô.
49. <sup>1</sup>Lín khòa\*, <sup>7</sup>ĩn tĩ chia <sup>7</sup>lím <sup>2</sup>tê, <sup>7</sup>bó <sup>2</sup>têh thak-chheh. (S)
50. Lí <sup>1</sup>khòa\*, <sup>7</sup>góa <sup>7</sup>é sa\* <sup>3</sup>ũ hó-khòa\* <sup>3</sup>bô\*?
51. Góa <sup>7</sup>é chheh <sup>3</sup>hō. lí <sup>1</sup>khòa\*, <sup>3</sup>tān-sī <sup>3</sup>m-hó <sup>1</sup>sĩa-jī.
52. Tĩ <sup>3</sup>soa\*-<sup>1</sup>nih <sup>7</sup>é <sup>3</sup>lâng <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>7</sup>lâng <sup>7</sup>lím <sup>7</sup>ká-pi <sup>3</sup>bô\*?
53. Tĩ <sup>3</sup>góa <sup>7</sup>é chheh-nih <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>1</sup>sĩa <sup>7</sup>chin-chē <sup>3</sup>jī.
54. <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>7</sup>chã-hng khĩ <sup>2</sup>soa\*-<sup>1</sup>nih <sup>1</sup>bé <sup>7</sup>chin-chē <sup>3</sup>tê (OR <sup>7</sup>tê-bí).
55. Che sī <sup>3</sup>chit <sup>3</sup>pau chheh, <sup>3</sup>m-sī <sup>3</sup>chit <sup>3</sup>pau sa\*.
56. <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>3</sup>hō. <sup>7</sup>góa <sup>3</sup>nng <sup>7</sup>pau hun, <sup>7</sup>góa <sup>3</sup>chit <sup>3</sup>pau <sup>7</sup>hō. lí. (S)
57. <sup>7</sup>Chã-hng <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>1</sup>bé <sup>3</sup>chit <sup>1</sup>nĩa sa\*, <sup>3</sup>bē <sup>1</sup>phái\*-khòa\*.
58. <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>3</sup>m-sī <sup>3</sup>phái\*-lâng; <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>3</sup>chit <sup>7</sup>é <sup>7</sup>chin hó <sup>7</sup>é <sup>7</sup>lâng.
59. Lí <sup>1</sup>kóng che <sup>2</sup>ai <sup>3</sup>nng <sup>7</sup>khō. <sup>3</sup>pò\*, sī <sup>3</sup>bô\*?
60. Lí <sup>1</sup>nã <sup>2</sup>ai bé, <sup>7</sup>ĩ <sup>3</sup>bôeh <sup>3</sup>bē lí <sup>1</sup>chhit-chap-gō. <sup>3</sup>khō. <sup>7</sup>pò\*.
61. Sĩa Siān-sī\*, lí <sup>1</sup>ũ <sup>3</sup>tĩa\*-<sup>3</sup>tĩa\* <sup>3</sup>iông Tái-oân-ōe <sup>7</sup>kóng <sup>3</sup>bô\*?
62. Tái-pak <sup>7</sup>góa <sup>7</sup>siông-siông khĩ <sup>2</sup>chhit-thô. (S)



63. Tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\* bô<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khòa\*, lán<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup>-khí<sup>2</sup> soa\*-nih<sup>1</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô.
64. Tī<sup>3</sup> soa\*-nih<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chê<sup>3</sup> chhù<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
但 今 何 不 何 何
65. Góa<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thín<sup>2</sup>-bé, lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> pêng-iú<sup>7</sup> tén<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (S)
66. Tī<sup>3</sup> hia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thín<sup>2</sup>-bé; sī<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ê, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
但 今 何 不 何 何
67. In<sup>7</sup> m̄-sī<sup>3</sup> Tái-oán-lâng<sup>7</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (S)  
 M̄-sī<sup>3</sup>, in<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> Tái-oán-lâng<sup>7</sup>.
68. In<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> tén<sup>3</sup> thak<sup>7</sup> Tái-gí.  
但 今 何 不 何 何
69. Góa<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>2</sup> ai<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>7</sup> tái<sup>3</sup> tiān-sī<sup>3</sup>, tân-sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> chí\*.  
但 今 何 不 何 何
70. Lí<sup>1</sup> khia<sup>7</sup> Liâu Siān-si\*<sup>3</sup> é<sup>7</sup> thín<sup>2</sup>-bé<sup>3</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> toh?  
但 今 何 不 何 何
71. Góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, che<sup>3</sup> m̄-sī<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> thín<sup>2</sup>-bé.
72. Lí<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> pit<sup>7</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>, m̄-kú<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> hia.  
但 今 何 不 何 何
73. In<sup>7</sup> tī<sup>2</sup> hia<sup>2</sup> tén<sup>2</sup> kóng-ōe<sup>3</sup>, bô<sup>2</sup> tén<sup>3</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh.
74. Góa<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> tiān-sī<sup>3</sup>, chhia\*<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> khui<sup>1</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (S)
75. Chá-hng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> tiān-sī<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó-khòa\*, lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> khòa\*<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
但 今 何 不 何 何
76. Lí<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>3</sup> tiān-iá\*, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 M̄-sī<sup>3</sup>, góa<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>3</sup> tiān-iá\*.
77. Kín-á-jit<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> tiān-iá\*<sup>3</sup> tén<sup>2</sup> chò<sup>2</sup> sia\*h?
78. Chá-hng<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> pêng-iú<sup>3</sup> ũ-iá\*<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup> lái, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
但 今 何 不 何 何
79. Lí<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>7</sup> í<sup>1</sup> chá-hng<sup>7</sup> bé<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> keng-chio<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> hó-chiah, ũ-iá\*<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
但 今 何 不 何 何
80. Í<sup>7</sup> ũ-iá\*<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> chiah-hun, m̄-sī<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> hun<sup>7</sup> í<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> chiah.
81. Góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, í<sup>7</sup> ũ-iá\*<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kóng-ōe.

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED "S"

2. Nobody at all wants to eat what they put out for us today. (See Grammar Note 9: "Today's food not a single person wants to eat. "Png" here means "the meal".)
6. My friend from Kaohsiung came yesterday, not today. (Note the use of "sī" to emphasize "chá-hng".)

10. Let me ride your bike and I'll treat you to a movie (some time), OK?
13. What are they doing here?/What did they do here?/What were they doing here? (Note that "teh" is not always necessary for the "-ing" verbs.)
15. Are you going to do something now? (May I bother you for a moment?)
16. Mr. Tân, your friend asks you to go over to his place now.
20. Is that fountain pen he gave you lousy to write with? (This is probably a gift. Contrast with Sentence 21.)
21. Is the ballpoint pen he let you use a poor one?
25. This is easy to do; I'll let you do it.
29. Some people say Taiwanese is very easy to speak (easy to learn to speak), is that true? (I.e., do you think it's easy to speak?)
32. When (OR: If) your friends come, do you invite them in? (This is asked of children.)
35. That costs \$8.20. (Note the tone on "kho'" in each case.)
39. It's true that bananas are good to eat, but I don't like them an awful lot.
40. He usually rides his bike to school.
41. His bike is not very good, is it?  
No, his bike is not very good.
42. We Taiwanese think that movie today is really (truly) very good. (Lit., Today's movie, if we Taiwanese see it, it's truly very good to see.)
45. Do you have to study today? (Do you have class today?)
49. Look, they're here drinking tea; they're not studying. (See note on Sentence 13.)
56. He gave me 2 packs of cigarettes; I'll give you a pack. (From the context we know the tenses of "hō'": the 1st clause is Past Tense; the 2nd is actually Present Tense: I now give you a pack.)
62. I often go to Taipei for some fun.
65. I'm going to buy a bicycle; do you have any friends selling them? (It is better to buy from someone known: cheaper, and easier to get it repaired when necessary.)
67. They're not Taiwanese, are they?  
Yes, they are Taiwanese.
74. I want to watch TV, please turn it on. ("Khui = open" may be used of turning on a switch.)

TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. Where did you go?  
I didn't go anywhere.
2. The bananas he bought are not bad. 伊买个芭蕉物歹哈
3. Did you go anywhere yesterday?  
Yes, I went to Kaohsiung.
4. Don't write in the book.
5. My bicycle is no good.
6. I don't think he's going.
7. You didn't go to Changhua yesterday, did you?  
No, I didn't go to Changhua yesterday; I went to Kaohsiung.
8. Our books are at the minister's; where are yours?
9. Are there any windows there?  
None at all.
10. Where are there Sisters?  
There are Sisters in Taichung. 咱这有真滑真好哈个果子
11. We have (Our place here has) a lot of good fruit.
12. Ask him to come in here and have a seat.
13. He doesn't want to come in.
14. Will your wife let you go?
15. We have 2 bikes here; let's each of us ride one, OK?
16. This is the pen my friend gave me. 这是阮朋友予我个笔

The Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences:

1. Lí khǐ tōh-ūi?  
Bô, góa bô khǐ toh/tah/tōh-ūi. (Gram. Note 1.A.b 1)
2. Ī bé é keng-chio bê phái\*-chiah.
3. Chá-hng lí ū khǐ tōh-ūi bô?  
Ū, góa khǐ kô-hiông.
4. Tī chheh-nih m-hó sīa-jī.

5. Gó<sup>1</sup>á é<sup>7</sup> th<sup>2</sup>nh-bé<sup>7</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ố hó<sup>1</sup>-kh<sup>1</sup>ĩa.
6. Gó<sup>1</sup>á kh<sup>1</sup>òa\*, í<sup>7</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ố b<sup>2</sup>ốeh kh<sup>1</sup>ì.
7. Lí<sup>1</sup> chà<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>3</sup> m̄-sĩ<sup>3</sup> (OR: b<sup>7</sup>ố) kh<sup>2</sup>ỉ Chi<sup>7</sup>ông-hò<sup>7</sup>a, sĩ<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?  
 Sĩ<sup>1</sup>, gó<sup>1</sup>á chà<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>3</sup> m̄-sĩ<sup>3</sup> (OR: b<sup>7</sup>ố) kh<sup>2</sup>ỉ Chi<sup>7</sup>ông-hò<sup>7</sup>a; gó<sup>1</sup>á kh<sup>2</sup>ỉ  
 Kó<sup>7</sup>-hi<sup>1</sup>ông.
8. Gó<sup>1</sup>án é<sup>7</sup> ch<sup>3</sup>h<sup>3</sup>eh tí<sup>3</sup> B<sup>3</sup>ok-su h<sup>1</sup>ĩa.; lín<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>1</sup> tí<sup>3</sup> t<sup>2</sup>nh-ũ<sup>1</sup>i?
9. (Tĩ<sup>3</sup>) h<sup>1</sup>ĩa ũ<sup>3</sup> th<sup>7</sup>àng-á<sup>1</sup>-m<sup>3</sup>ng b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?  
 B<sup>7</sup>ố p<sup>2</sup>òa\* ê<sup>1</sup>.
10. Tĩ<sup>3</sup> t<sup>2</sup>nh-ũ<sup>1</sup>i ũ<sup>3</sup> Sĩ<sup>7</sup>u-lí?  
 Tái<sup>7</sup>-ti<sup>3</sup>ong ũ<sup>3</sup> Sĩ<sup>7</sup>u-lí.
11. Lán<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>7</sup>ín-ch<sup>3</sup>ē ch<sup>7</sup>ín hó<sup>1</sup>-ch<sup>1</sup>ĩa é<sup>7</sup> k<sup>7</sup>ốe-ch<sup>1</sup>í.
12. Ch<sup>1</sup>hĩa\* í<sup>7</sup> j<sup>3</sup>íp-lá<sup>7</sup>i chia<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>3</sup>ē.
13. Í<sup>7</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i j<sup>3</sup>íp-lá<sup>3</sup>i.
14. Lín<sup>1</sup> th<sup>2</sup>ai-th<sup>2</sup>ai b<sup>2</sup>ốeh h<sup>3</sup>ố\* lí<sup>1</sup> kh<sup>1</sup>ỉ b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?
15. Th<sup>2</sup>nh-bé<sup>1</sup> lán<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> n<sup>3</sup>ng t<sup>1</sup>ai, lán<sup>1</sup> ch<sup>3</sup>ít é<sup>7</sup> l<sup>7</sup>ang kh<sup>7</sup>ĩa ch<sup>3</sup>ít t<sup>1</sup>ai,  
 hó<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?
16. Che sĩ<sup>3</sup> gó<sup>1</sup>án p<sup>7</sup>êng-iú<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup>ố\* gó<sup>7</sup>á é<sup>7</sup> pít.

## Tē Chhít Khò

## Lesson 7

## TUI-ŌE

## DIALOGUE

Tī Tē\* Siān-si\* in chhù 佇鄭先生個房

K = Khó. Bok-su 許牧師 T = Tē\* Siān-si\* 鄭先生

- T1: Khó. Bok-su, lái-chē, lái-chē. 來坐  
 K1: Hó. Tē\* Siān-si\*, chít páu thng-á hō. lí é gín-á chiah. 鄭先生 個仔 哈
- T2: Tó-sīa. Lí chím-á khia sú-ku-tah, bó khia ó.-thó.-bái,  
 sí bó? 四仔 哈
- K2: In-ūi hit tái ó.-thó.-bái góa bē lāng, só.-i chím-á bé  
 chít tái sú-ku-tah.
- T3: Chhia\* lái lái-bīn chē. 內面
- K3: Hó, chin tó-sīa. Chhia\* mng, lí chím-á ũ kúi é gín-á? 真多謝
- T4: Ū nng ê nīa-nīa. Chím-á chít ê khi thak-chheh; chít ê tī  
 gōa-bīn é chhiu-á-kha tén chhít-thó. 樹仔咬
- K4: Lín chít keng chhù chin hó. Lái-bīn ũ kúi keng? 椅仔
- T5: Ū sá\* keng páng-keng, chít keng chiah-png-keng káh chít  
 keng khén-thia\*. Lán ta\* lái-khi chiah-png-keng chiah-  
 png. 椅仔 椅桌
- K5: Tó-sīa. Lín é chiah-png-tōh-á káh í-á lóng chin hó-khò\*.  
 Che bōeh khi tōh-ūi bé? 椅桌
- T6: Tī tái-tiong ũ chin-chē lāng tén bē í-toh; lí nā ài bé,  
 góa káh lí khi bé.
- K6: Hó, góa nā bōeh bé, góa bōeh chhia\* lí káh góa khi.
- T7: Chhia\* chē. Lán lái chiah-png. Lí bōeh iōng tó-á káh  
 chhiám-á chiah, á-sī bōeh iōng tī chiah? 刀仔

- K7: Gó<sup>1</sup>a bó<sup>2</sup>eh i<sup>3</sup>ong tī<sup>1</sup> chiáh. 箸
- T8: Lín<sup>1</sup> Bí-kok-lâng<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lán<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiá<sup>1</sup>u i<sup>3</sup>ong tī<sup>3</sup> chiáh-p<sup>3</sup>ng bó<sup>3</sup>? 美國俚
- K8: Gó<sup>1</sup>a khò<sup>3</sup>a\*, ũ<sup>3</sup>. M<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup>-chē. 相仔
- T9: Bók<sup>3</sup>-su, lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> chiáh<sup>3</sup> pá<sup>3</sup>, tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kám<sup>7</sup>-á. Gó<sup>1</sup>a khò<sup>3</sup>a\*,  
chiáh<sup>3</sup> pá<sup>3</sup>, chiáh<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> liáp<sup>3</sup> kám<sup>7</sup>-á chin<sup>7</sup> hó.
- K9: Tó<sup>7</sup>-sī<sup>1</sup>a. Phái<sup>1</sup>\*-sè<sup>1</sup>, chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* m<sup>1</sup>ng, lín<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> piān<sup>3</sup>-só<sup>3</sup>. tī<sup>3</sup> tōh<sup>2</sup>-ūi<sup>1</sup>? 3 部
- T10: Tī<sup>3</sup> hia.

-----  
SIN-GÍ                      VOCABULARY

1. à 啊 (sound, at beginning of sentence, expressing mood of weariness/disappointment, etc.)  
 À, che sī<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> ê, m̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> gó<sup>1</sup>a ê. Ah, this is his, not mine.
2. á/á-sī 或 / 或是 or. (Connectives such as "á/á-sī" always change tone.)  
抑 抑 抑 是
- Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>1</sup>\* á<sup>1</sup> bó? Do you have money or not?  
 Lí<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>1</sup> á<sup>1</sup> m̄? Are you going òr not?  
 Lí<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak<sup>7</sup> á-sī<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup> Chióng-hò<sup>7</sup>a? Are you going to Taipei or to Changhua?
3. Bí-kok 美國 America/U.S.A.  
 Bí-kok-lâng Americans.  
 Bí-kok-hun 葷 American cigarettes.
4. chāng 樣標 (Measure for trees/plants/flowers in a pot or in plants in the ground; not cut flowers)  
樣 樣
- Chit chāng<sup>3</sup> keng<sup>7</sup>-chio. One banana tree.  
 Hia ũ<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> chāng<sup>7</sup> kám<sup>7</sup>-á. There are a lot of tangerine trees there. 相仔
5. Chhí<sup>1</sup>a\*-m<sup>1</sup>ng (lí)/Chhōn-m<sup>1</sup>ng (lí) 請問 May I ask (you)/ Please tell me. (Polite, parenthetical form to introduce a question.) 係 係
- Chhí<sup>1</sup>a\*-m<sup>1</sup>ng, piān<sup>3</sup>-só<sup>3</sup>. tī<sup>3</sup> tōh<sup>2</sup>-ūi<sup>1</sup>? My I ask you where the toilet is?

- ✓ 6. chhiám-á 叉子 fork (eating utensil). (Measure: ki)  
 Tī tōh-téng ũ chhiám-á bō? Are there forks on the table?  
 桌 頂
7. chhiú 手 hand. (Measure: ki)  
 Lâng ũ n̄ng kī chhiú. Humans have 2 hands.
8. chhiū-á 樹木 tree. (Measure: châng)  
 Tī hit châng chhiū-á hia ũ láng tēn bē kóe-chí. There's somebody selling fruit by that tree.  
 賣果子
9. chiah-p̄ng-keng 飯廳 / 餐廳 dining room. (Measure: keng)  
 Chhia\* lín lái chiah-p̄ng-keng chiah-p̄ng. Please come to the dining room to eat.  
 廳 飯 間
10. chit 這 this/(with a plural numeral) these. (Modifier; never stands alone, is followed by measure of what is modified.)  
 Chit liáp kām-á chin hó-chiah. This tangerine is very tasty.  
 Chit sá\* pūn chheh sī sim-mih-lâng ê? Who owns these 3 books?
11. ē-hiáu 會 / 懂 to know how to/understand. (Negative:  
 "bē-hiáu")  
 Chit jī gōa ē-hiáu sí, bē-hiáu thak. I know how to write this character but don't know how to pronounce it.  
 這字我 會 寫 但 曉 讀
12. gín-á 小孩 child. (Measure: ê) (See Vocab. Note.)  
 Hit ê gín-á chin pháí\*. That child is naughty.  
 Lí ũ kúí ê gín-á? How many kids do you have?
13. gōa 外 多 (Used with numbers to mean) more than (the preceding number) (In Ls 8 we will use "gōa" with "o'clock" to mean "after".)  
 jī-chap-gōa more than 20 (and less than 30).

亦

Cháp-ít kho· sī cháp-gōa kho·; cháp-káu kho· iā-sī  
 cháp-gōa kho·. \$11 is more than \$10; \$19 is also  
 more than \$10.

Cháp-sī khō·-gōa more than \$14 (and less than \$15).

14. gōa-bīn/gōa-kháu 外面 / 外頭 outside.

Gín-á, khi gōa-bīn chhit-thô. Go outside and play,  
 kids.

Ū lâng tī gōa-kháu bô·? Is there anybody outside?

15. hit 那 that/(with a plural numeral) those. (Modifier;  
 never stands alone, is followed by measure of  
 what is modified.)

Hít pún chheh sī gōa ê. That book is mine.

Lí ê m̄-sī chhit pún, sī hit pún. This is not yours;  
 yours is that one.

16. í-á 椅子 chair. (Measure: tè; some say: "chiah".)

Tī hia ū kúi tè í-á? How many chairs are there over  
 there?

17. í-toh 桌椅 chairs and tables/furniture.

Chhū-nih ai iōng chin-chē í-toh. A house has to have  
 a lot of furniture.

18. ín-ūi 因爲 because/since.

Í bōeh chhía\* lí, ín-ūi í ū chí\*. He's going to treat  
 you to a meal since he has money. (This means he  
 happens to have money at the moment or that he is  
 rich.)

Í chá-hng bô lâi, ín-ūi khi Tái-pak. He didn't come  
 yesterday because he went to Taipei.

19. kám-á 橘子 tangerine. (Measure: liáp)

Hít liáp kám-á bô hó-chiah. That tangerine tastes bad.

Lín ū lâng ai chiah kám-á bô·? Anybody want a tangerine?



20. keng 間 a room; Measure for houses, buildings and rooms.

<sup>1</sup>Lín <sup>3</sup>lāi-bīn <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>1</sup>kúí keng? How many rooms do you have  
(in your house)?

<sup>2</sup>Chít <sup>7</sup>kéng <sup>3</sup>chhù <sup>1</sup>sī <sup>2</sup>sím-mih-lâng ê? Whose house is this?

21. kha 脚 (Noun) foot/leg (of persons/animals; leg (of  
table/chair). (Measure: ki)

kha 下 (Noun suffix) the foot of (mountain/tree); under  
(tree/bed/chair/table/vehicle).

<sup>3</sup>Lâng <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>7</sup>nng <sup>1</sup>ki kha. Humans have 2 feet.

<sup>3</sup>Tī <sup>1</sup>i-<sup>1</sup>a-kha <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>3</sup>chít <sup>1</sup>pún <sup>1</sup>chheh. There's a book under the  
chair.

22. khéh-thia\* 客廳 living room/parlor/reception room.  
(Measure: keng)

<sup>1</sup>Chhia\* <sup>1</sup>lín <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>2</sup>khéh-thia\* <sup>1</sup>chē. Please come and sit in  
the living room.

<sup>3</sup>Tī <sup>2</sup>khéh-thia\* <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>3</sup>lâng <sup>3</sup>bô? Is there anyone in the  
living room?

23. ki 支 (Measure for hand/leg and for things considered  
somewhat slender that usually can be grasped with  
one hand.)

<sup>3</sup>Chít <sup>7</sup>pau <sup>3</sup>hun <sup>1</sup>ū <sup>1</sup>kúí ki? How many cigarettes are there  
in a pack?

內面 內底

24. <sup>3</sup>lāi-bīn/<sup>3</sup>lāi-té 裏面/裏頭 on the inside/inside/the  
interior.

<sup>7</sup>ī <sup>3</sup>tī <sup>3</sup>lāi-té. He's inside.

<sup>1</sup>Lóng <sup>7</sup>bô <sup>7</sup>lâng <sup>3</sup>tī <sup>3</sup>lāi-bīn. There's no one at all inside.

25. liap 粒 (Measure for things that are round or thought  
of as round such as balls/candies/fruit.)

<sup>3</sup>Chít <sup>7</sup>pau <sup>7</sup>thng-á <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>1</sup>kúí liap? How many pieces of candy  
are there in a bag? (L.t., a package of  
candy has how many pieces?)

26. <sup>3</sup>lóng <sup>3</sup> 都 all/both/entirely; always; (with neg.) never.

<sup>3</sup>m-<sup>3</sup>sī <sup>3</sup>lóng not all/not entirely.

<sup>1</sup>lóng <sup>3</sup>m-<sup>3</sup>sī none are.

<sup>1</sup>Bí-<sup>2</sup>kók-<sup>3</sup>lâng <sup>3</sup>m-<sup>3</sup>sī <sup>1</sup>lóng <sup>3</sup>ũ chí\*. Not all Americans have money.

<sup>3</sup>Tī chia <sup>7</sup>é chheh <sup>1</sup>lóng <sup>3</sup>m-<sup>3</sup>sī <sup>1</sup>góa ê. None of the books here are mine.

<sup>7</sup>Ī <sup>1</sup>lóng <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>7</sup>khía <sup>7</sup>sū-<sup>2</sup>kú-tah <sup>1</sup>lâi. He always likes to come by scooter.

27. <sup>3</sup>nīa-nīa <sup>3</sup> 而已 only. (Used only at end of clause/sentence.)

<sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>3</sup>chít <sup>7</sup>é <sup>3</sup>lâng <sup>7</sup>bóeh <sup>3</sup>khì <sup>3</sup>nīa-nīa, <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>3</sup>bô\*? Are you the only one going?

<sup>1</sup>Sī, <sup>1</sup>góa <sup>3</sup>chít <sup>7</sup>é <sup>3</sup>lâng <sup>3</sup>nīa-nīa. Yes, I'm the only one.

<sup>7</sup>Kám-á <sup>3</sup>chít <sup>7</sup>liap <sup>7</sup>khó\* <sup>3</sup>pò\* <sup>3</sup>nīa-nīa. Tangerines are only a dollar and a half each.

28. <sup>7</sup>ô°-<sup>1</sup>thó°-<sup>7</sup>bái/ki-chhia <sup>7</sup> 機車 motorcycle. (Measure: tái) ("<sup>7</sup>ô°-<sup>1</sup>thó°-<sup>7</sup>bái" - foreign word.)

<sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>7</sup>khía <sup>7</sup>ô°-<sup>1</sup>thó°-<sup>7</sup>bái <sup>1</sup>lâi. I came by motorcycle.

29. <sup>7</sup>Oán-<sup>7</sup>lîm <sup>7</sup> 員林 Yuanlin (name of large town in Changhua County).

30. <sup>7</sup>pâng-keng <sup>7</sup> 房間 bedroom. (Measure: keng)

<sup>2</sup>Chít <sup>3</sup>keng <sup>1</sup>sī <sup>7</sup>góa <sup>7</sup>é <sup>7</sup>pâng-keng. This is my bedroom.

<sup>1</sup>Góan <sup>3</sup>chhù <sup>7</sup>ũ <sup>7</sup>sá\* <sup>7</sup>kéng <sup>7</sup>pâng-keng. Our house has 3 bedrooms.

31. <sup>1</sup>phái\*-<sup>7</sup>sè <sup>7</sup> 不好意思 be sorry/be embarrassed/feel awkward/unsuitable/awkward/inconvenient/unpardonable/unjustifiable.

<sup>1</sup>Phái\*-<sup>7</sup>sè, <sup>7</sup>chā-hng <sup>1</sup>góa <sup>7</sup>bô <sup>7</sup>khì. Sorry, I didn't go yesterday.

<sup>7</sup>I <sup>1</sup>phái\*-<sup>2</sup>sê <sup>3</sup>jíp-lâi. He's too embarrassed to come in./  
He would feel it awkward to come in.

32. piān<sup>3</sup>-só<sup>3</sup> 廁所 toilet. (Measure: kenq)

Chhia<sup>1</sup>\*-mng, piān<sup>3</sup>-só<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> tōh-ūi? May I ask you where  
the toilet is?

<sup>7</sup>I khi<sup>2</sup> piān<sup>3</sup>-só<sup>3</sup>. He went to the toilet.

33. só<sup>1</sup>-í<sup>1</sup> 所以 therefore/consequently/so.

<sup>7</sup>In-ūi<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> chí\*<sup>7</sup>, só<sup>1</sup>-í<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> bé. He doesn't have the  
money and so he doesn't want to buy.

Chā<sup>7</sup>-hng bó<sup>7</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh, só<sup>1</sup>-í<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô. No  
school yesterday so I went out to have some fun.

✓ 34. sū<sup>7</sup>-kū<sup>2</sup>-tah 速克達 motor scooter. (Measure: tâi)  
(Foreign word.)

Chít<sup>2</sup> tâi<sup>7</sup> sū<sup>7</sup>-kū<sup>2</sup>-tah sī<sup>3</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup>-lâng ê? Whose is this  
scooter?

35. tè<sup>7</sup> 塊 (Measure for tables/chairs/blackboards/erasers/  
smaller towels/cookies/certain candies.)

Tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>1</sup> kúi<sup>2</sup> tè<sup>2</sup> tōh-á, kúi<sup>2</sup> tè<sup>2</sup> í<sup>1</sup>-á? How many tables  
and chairs are there here?

36. -téng 頂/上 the top/summit/on top of/on. (Suffix to a  
noun.)

Lí<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> sa\*<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>1</sup> í<sup>1</sup>-á-téng. Your shirt is on the chair.

37. thng<sup>7</sup>-á 糖果 candy. (Measure: "tè" OR: "liap", depending  
on its shape.)

Kúi<sup>1</sup> liap<sup>3</sup> thng<sup>7</sup>-á? How many pieces of candy?

Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>h thng<sup>7</sup>-á bó<sup>3</sup>? Do you want some candy?

38. tī<sup>7</sup> 筷子 chopsticks. (Measure to be studied in Ls 12.)

Lí<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu<sup>1</sup> iōng<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-png<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>? Do you know to use  
chopsticks?

39. to/<sup>7</sup>tó-á 刀子 knife. (Measure: ki) ("To" is a large knife; "tó-á" a small knife.)

<sup>1</sup>Gó<sup>7</sup>á ê <sup>7</sup>tó-á <sup>3</sup>tī <sup>2</sup>tóh-ūi? Where is my knife?

<sup>3</sup>Tī <sup>2</sup>tóh-á-téng <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>3</sup>chít <sup>7</sup>kí to. There's a knife on the table.

40. <sup>2</sup>tóh-á 桌子 table. (Measure: tè; some say: "chiah".)

<sup>3</sup>thák-chhéh-<sup>2</sup>tóh-á desk.

<sup>3</sup>Tī hia <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>1</sup>kúí <sup>2</sup>tē <sup>2</sup>tóh-á? How many tables are there over there?

<sup>2</sup>Hít <sup>2</sup>tē <sup>3</sup>thák-chhéh-<sup>2</sup>tóh-á <sup>7</sup>chín <sup>1</sup>hó-iōng. That's a good desk.

<sup>2</sup>TUI-ŌE É <sup>7</sup>HŌAN-ÉK

TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

In the home of Mr. Tē\*

T1: *Rev. Khó\**, come in and sit down.

K1: All right. Here's a bag of candy for your kids, Mr. Tē\*. (Lit., this bag...)

T2: Thank you. You ride a scooter now, not a motorcycle?

K2: I sold that motorcycle, so now I've bought this scooter. (Lit., Because I sold that motorcycle to someone, so...)

T3: Please come inside (lit., ...to sit).

K3: All right, thank you very much. How many children do you have now, may I ask?

T4: Only two. One has gone to school now; one is playing outside under the tree.

K4: This house of yours is very good. How many rooms are there (lit., ...inside)?

T5: There are 3 bedrooms, a dining room and a living room. Now let's go to the dining room to eat.

K5: Thank you. Your dining room table and chairs are all nice-looking. Where would I go to buy them?

T6: There are many people selling furniture in Taichung; if you want to buy any I'll go with you.

K6: OK. If I'm going to buy, I'll ask you to go with me.

T7: Please sit down. Let's eat. Do you want to use a knife and fork or chopsticks?

K7: I'll use chopsticks.

T8: Among you Americans are there some (lit., people) who know how to use chopsticks?

K8: I think so. But there are not many.

- T9: Reverend, if you've finished eating (i.e., the main course), there are tangerines here. At the end of a meal I think it's very good to eat a tangerine.
- K9: Thanks. Excuse me, could you tell me where the bathroom (lit., toilet) is?
- T10: Over there.

-----

TŨI-ŌE É CHŪ-KÁI      NOTE ON DIALOGUE

对 话 个 注 解

In T1 Mr. Tĕ\*, the host, invites Rev. Khó\* to come into his house. Rev. Khó\* replies "Hó", but a moment later the host again invites him in, and he does enter. When thus invited, people will reply "Hó" or "To-sīa" or both but will not necessarily enter; they often will continue on their way.

-----

SĪN-GÍ É CHŪ-KÁI      VOCABULARY NOTE

gín-á (Voc. No. 12) means "child", usually up through elementary school or junior high; but there is no tight restriction on age. In fact, a father will call his son of any age "Góa é gín-á".

In direct address to a child or children, many people will say merely: "Gín-á". A more polite term is "Sío pēng-iú = Little friend". This is a set phrase - "sío" is not the ordinary word for "little".

In the Dial. K1 says "lí é gín-á". Here "gín-á" can be singular or plural. Note the use of the singular form "lí" + "é" with "gín-á". We do not say "Goan/Lin gin-a". With all other relatives we use the plural form with singular meaning: "góan/lán/lín/in", without "é".

-----

7. 文 法

BŪN-HOAT      GRAMMAR

1. MEASURES WITH "chit/hit (this/that)"

A. The proper measure of a noun must be used whenever the noun is modified by a numeral (see Ls 5) or certain other words, such as "chit" or "hit".

a) Chit é lâng = one person/a person.

b) Hit é lâng = that person.

- c) Chit<sup>2</sup> nia<sup>1</sup> sa\* = this dress.  
 d) Nng<sup>3</sup> pun<sup>1</sup> chheh = 2 books.  
 e) Hit<sup>2</sup> chhut<sup>2</sup> tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\* = that movie.  
 f) Chit<sup>2</sup> ji<sup>1</sup> keng<sup>7</sup>-chio = this banana.  
 g) Sa\*<sup>7</sup> tái<sup>3</sup> thih<sup>7</sup>-bé = 3 bicycles.

B. Measures are so important that in this lesson we are introducing 5 more: chāng (Voc. No. 4); keng (No. 20); ki (No. 23); liap (No. 25); tè (No. 35).

Examples of Measures:

Chit <sup>3</sup> chāng <sup>7</sup> chhīu-á. 一樣樹仔	a tree/one tree.
Nng <sup>3</sup> pun <sup>1</sup> chheh. 兩本冊	2 books.
Sa* <sup>7</sup> é <sup>7</sup> hāk <sup>3</sup> -seng.	3 students.
Sī <sup>2</sup> é <sup>7</sup> pēng <sup>7</sup> -iú.	4 friends.
Gō <sup>3</sup> kī <sup>7</sup> tō <sup>7</sup> -á. 五支刀仔	5 knives.
Hit <sup>2</sup> keng <sup>7</sup> chhū. 彼間茨	that house.
Lak <sup>3</sup> kī <sup>7</sup> chhiam <sup>1</sup> -á. 六支叉仔	6 forks.
Chhit <sup>2</sup> -pēh <sup>2</sup> keng <sup>7</sup> pāng <sup>7</sup> -keng. 七、八間	7 or 8 bedrooms.
Pēh <sup>2</sup> -chāp <sup>3</sup> -sa* <sup>7</sup> tè <sup>2</sup> thng <sup>7</sup> -á. 83	83 pieces of candy.
Kau <sup>1</sup> tè <sup>2</sup> tōh <sup>2</sup> -á/kau <sup>1</sup> chia <sup>2</sup> tōh <sup>2</sup> -á.	9 tables.
Chāp <sup>3</sup> tè <sup>2</sup> (chia <sup>2</sup> ) thāk <sup>3</sup> -chhēh <sup>2</sup> -tōh <sup>2</sup> -á.	10 desks.
Chit <sup>2</sup> keng <sup>7</sup> chhū.	this house.
Sa* <sup>7</sup> -chāp <sup>3</sup> -it <sup>2</sup> tè <sup>2</sup> (chia <sup>2</sup> ) í <sup>1</sup> -á.	31 chairs.
Jī <sup>3</sup> -chāp <sup>3</sup> -jī <sup>3</sup> liap <sup>7</sup> thng <sup>7</sup> -á.	22 pieces of candy.
Gō <sup>3</sup> -chāp <sup>3</sup> -sa* <sup>7</sup> jī <sup>1</sup> keng <sup>7</sup> -chio.	53 bananas.
Chāp <sup>3</sup> -sī <sup>2</sup> pun <sup>1</sup> chheh.	14 books.
Chhit <sup>2</sup> -chāp <sup>3</sup> -gō <sup>3</sup> kī <sup>7</sup> gōan <sup>7</sup> -chū <sup>1</sup> -pit.	75 ballpoint pens.
Chit <sup>3</sup> tái <sup>7</sup> ó <sup>7</sup> -thō <sup>1</sup> -bái.	1 motorcycle.

N <sup>3</sup> ng t <sup>7</sup> ai s <sup>7</sup> -ku-t <sup>2</sup> ah.	2 scooters.
Ch <sup>3</sup> it ê l <sup>7</sup> ang.	one person.
Ch <sup>2</sup> it ê l <sup>7</sup> ang.	this person.
H <sup>2</sup> it ê l <sup>7</sup> ang.	that person.
H <sup>2</sup> it t <sup>7</sup> ai th <sup>2</sup> ih-bé.	that bike.
Ch <sup>2</sup> it n <sup>1</sup> ia sa*. 這領衫	this shirt.
N <sup>3</sup> ng n <sup>1</sup> ia khò*.	2 pairs of trousers.

2. This is mine.                      That's yours.

A. We learned in Ls 5, Grammar Note 3, Sentence h, that when a noun is understood but not spoken, if a measure is used the measure does not change tone. This is also true when "chit/hit" are used with the measure:

- a) Ch<sup>2</sup>it p<sup>3</sup>un s<sup>1</sup>i g<sup>3</sup>óa ê.                      This (book) is mine.  
 b) H<sup>2</sup>it li<sup>1</sup>ap ũ h<sup>3</sup>o-chi<sup>1</sup>ah b<sup>3</sup>o? Does that one taste good?  
 c) H<sup>2</sup>it n<sup>1</sup>ia s<sup>3</sup>i lí ê. 彼領是這個 That one is yours.

B. The rule that the tone of the measure does not change when the noun is not expressed is especially true when the number before the measure is emphasized.

<sup>7</sup>In k<sup>1</sup>ui ê bo<sup>2</sup>eh kh<sup>2</sup>i T<sup>7</sup>ai-pak; k<sup>1</sup>ui ê bo<sup>2</sup>eh kh<sup>2</sup>i K<sup>7</sup>o-hi<sup>7</sup>ong?

<sup>7</sup>In s<sup>7</sup>a\* ê bo<sup>2</sup>eh kh<sup>2</sup>i T<sup>7</sup>ai-pak; s<sup>2</sup>i ê bo<sup>2</sup>eh kh<sup>2</sup>i K<sup>7</sup>o-hi<sup>7</sup>ong.

3. Exception to Rule on Tone of the Measure:

When the number is NOT emphasized, the tone of the measure may change, even if the noun is not stated.

This is an exception.

- a) Lí ê ch<sup>7</sup>eh n<sup>3</sup>ng-s<sup>7</sup>a\* p<sup>1</sup>un h<sup>3</sup>o g<sup>1</sup>óa kh<sup>3</sup>o<sup>7</sup>a\*, hó b<sup>3</sup>o? How about giving me 2 or 3 of your books to read? (To ask for permission is important; the number is not important.)  
 b) G<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>7</sup>o chí\*<sup>7</sup>; ch<sup>1</sup>hi<sup>1</sup>a\* lí g<sup>3</sup>o-l<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>ap kh<sup>7</sup>o h<sup>7</sup>o g<sup>7</sup>óa, hó b<sup>3</sup>o? (h<sup>3</sup>o g<sup>1</sup>óa chí<sup>3</sup>ah-p<sup>3</sup>ng)

4. HOW TO SAY: These 3 people; those few people:

chit/hit	NUMERAL	MEASURE	NOUN
----------	---------	---------	------

NB. 

chit/hit	kúi	MEASURE	NOUN
----------	-----	---------	------

 = These few/Those few + Noun.

These/Those	NUMBER	MEASURE	NOUN
Chít <sup>2</sup> /Hít <sup>2</sup>	sá <sup>7</sup> *	é <sup>7</sup>	lâng
"	kúi <sup>1</sup>	é <sup>7</sup>	lâng
"	qō <sup>3</sup>	é <sup>7</sup>	Tái-oán-lâng
"	nng <sup>3</sup>	é <sup>7</sup>	mng
"	sá <sup>7</sup> *	é <sup>7</sup>	thang-á-mng
"	qō <sup>3</sup> -lak <sup>3</sup> 五.天	nia <sup>1</sup>	sa*
"	cháp-qōa <sup>3</sup> 十.天	pún <sup>1</sup>	chheh
"	si <sup>2</sup> ↓	té <sup>2</sup>	l-á
"	nng <sup>3</sup> ✓	té <sup>2</sup>	tōh-á
"	sá <sup>7</sup> *-si <sup>2</sup> 三, 四	ji <sup>1</sup>	keng-chio
"	sá <sup>7</sup> * 3	tái <sup>7</sup>	thih-bé
"	sá <sup>7</sup> * 3	tái <sup>7</sup>	sú-kú-tah
"	nng <sup>3</sup> 2	kí <sup>7</sup>	kha
"	si <sup>2</sup> -cháp-qōa <sup>3</sup> 四.天	kí <sup>7</sup>	tó-á
"	káu <sup>1</sup> -cháp-káu <sup>3</sup> 九	kí <sup>7</sup>	ián-pit
"	sá <sup>7</sup> *-cháp-qōa <sup>3</sup> 五	kí <sup>7</sup>	chhiam-á
"	nng <sup>3</sup> 2	é <sup>7</sup>	pêng-iú
"	sá <sup>7</sup> * 3	é <sup>7</sup>	hó pêng-iú
"	qō <sup>3</sup> 5	cháng <sup>7</sup>	chhiu-á
"	nng <sup>3</sup> 2	pau <sup>7</sup>	Tái-oán-hun



These/Those	NUMBER	MEASURE	NOUN
Chít <sup>2</sup> /Hít <sup>2</sup>	gō <sup>3</sup> -lák <sup>3</sup>	liáp <sup>3</sup>	kám-á <sup>7</sup>
"	sá <sup>7</sup> *	keng <sup>7</sup>	páng-keng <sup>7</sup>
"	nng <sup>3</sup>	tái <sup>7</sup>	ó <sup>7</sup> -thó <sup>1</sup> -bái
"	sí <sup>2</sup> -gō <sup>3</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup>	liáp <sup>3</sup>	thng-á <sup>7</sup>
"	sá <sup>7</sup> *-sí <sup>2</sup> -cháp <sup>3</sup>	té <sup>2</sup>	thng-á <sup>7</sup>
"	sá <sup>7</sup> *	nía <sup>1</sup>	sa*

5. HOW TO SAY: "That book of yours/This shirt of mine".

These expressions are more common in Taiwanese than in English.

a) Lí<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh --- that book of yours/your book.

b) Lí<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> nía<sup>1</sup> sa\* -----that shirt of yours.

c) Góa<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> nía<sup>1</sup> sa\* --- this shirt of mine.

d) Í<sup>7</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thńh-bé -- that bicycle of his.

e) Lí<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> lóa<sup>3</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>1</sup>\*?

Góa<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> jī<sup>3</sup>-gō<sup>3</sup> khō<sup>7</sup>-pò<sup>1</sup>.\*.

f) Chhī<sup>1</sup> Siān<sup>3</sup>-sí<sup>3</sup>\* hít<sup>2</sup> nía<sup>1</sup> sa\* chin<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khòa\*. Góa<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> nía<sup>1</sup> sa\* chin<sup>7</sup> phái<sup>1</sup>\*-khòa\*. (That shirt of Mr. Chhī's...)

g) Lí<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thńh-bé<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khĩa<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?

Ū, góa<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thńh-bé<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> phái<sup>1</sup>\*-khĩa.

h) Góa<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chin<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>1</sup>\*; lí<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> lóa<sup>3</sup>-chē?

i) Lí<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> páu<sup>7</sup> hun<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> ki?

Ū chhít<sup>2</sup>-pēh<sup>2</sup> ki. Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Chít<sup>2</sup> kí<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> chiah.

j) Sīa<sup>3</sup> Siān<sup>3</sup>-sí<sup>3</sup>\* hít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>-thó<sup>1</sup>-bái<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khĩa. That motorcycle of Mr. Sīa's is very good.

6. RELATIVE CLAUSE WITH "chit/hit".

A. A noun phrase or pronoun may precede and modify a "chit/hit" phrase:

<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
 Koeh Siān-si\* hīt tái ó·-thó·-bái chín hỏ-khĩa. That  
 motorcycle of Mr. Koeh's is very good.

B. The modifier preceding a "chit/hit" phrase can be a whole clause:

a) <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
 Aŋg Thài-thài tẻh khĩa hīt tái sủ-kủ-tah bẻ phẩi\*  
 khĩa. The motorcycle that Mrs. Aŋg is riding (OR:  
 rides) is a very good one. (Note that the tone on  
 the word before "hit" ("khĩa") does not change.)

b) <sup>1</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
 Gỏan chả-hng khỏa\* hīt chhủt tiān-iả\* chín hỏ-khỏa\*.  
 That movie we saw last night was a good one.

c) <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
 Gỏan Siu-sủ tẻh thỏk chít pủn chheh chín hỏ-thỏk.  
 This book we Brothers are studying is very easy.

7. NOTE ON "chín<sup>7</sup>-chẻ = very much/very many".

"Chín<sup>7</sup>-chẻ" may be used with a measure but is very commonly used without a measure.

a) Chín<sup>7</sup>-chẻ<sup>3</sup> sa\* OR: chín<sup>7</sup>-chẻ<sup>3</sup> nĩa sa\*. very many  
 clothes /very many articles of clothing.

b) Chín<sup>7</sup>-chẻ<sup>3</sup> chheh.

c) Chín<sup>7</sup>-chẻ<sup>3</sup> thỉnh-bẻ.

8. The SUFFIX "-ả".

A. The suffix "-ả", often added to nouns, originally indicated smallness but now is probably used more for euphony.

B. RULES FOR TONE CHANGES ON THE NOUN WITH "-ả"

1. EXCEPT for nouns in the 7th or 8th tones, all nouns which have the suffix "-ả" change tones according to the general rule for tone changes:

<sup>1</sup> i-ả chair    <sup>7</sup> kảm-ả tangerine    <sup>2</sup> tỏh-ả table

2. When the tone of the noun before the "-a" is in the 7th or 8th tone, that tone DOES NOT CHANGE.

chhīu-á tree

C. A Note on PRONUNCIATION OF THE SUFFIX "-á":

On certain words the final consonantal or vowel sound is carried over into the "-á":

kám-á tangerine      gín-á child  
 thng-á candy      chhīu-á tree      chhiám-á fork

These words are pronounced as if spelled: kám-má

gín-ná      thng-ngá      chhīu-uá      chhiám-má

Listen carefully to the teacher's pronunciation of these sounds, and contrast them with, for example, "chap-it", where the "p" sound must not be carried over to the "i". Only when the final sound is "-á" is the sound of the previous syllable carried over. But do not exaggerate the sound that is carried over; for example, the "ngá" of "thng-ngá".

LE-KU  
 例 可

PATTERN SENTENCES

1. á

- a) À, í iáu-bōe lâi.  
 b) À, kìn-á-jit í bó bōeh lâi.  
 c) À, góa chin bó ãi thak-chheh.  
 d) À, góa ê gín-á chin pháit\*.

2. á/á-sī

- a) Che sī lí ê á-sī í ê?  
 b) Ín bōeh khi Oán-lím; lí bōeh khi á m̄? (P)  
 c) Lí sī kóng kìn-á-jit bó ãi thak-chheh, á-sī bōeh thak-chheh?  
 d) Tī tōh-á-téng ê thng-á lí ũ chiah á bó? (P)

e) Lí ê sĩ chít tãi á-sĩ hít tãi?

3. Bĩ-kok

a) Nã khi Bĩ-kok ải iông chín-chê chí\* bô\*?

b) Tĩ chia thak-chheh ê hək-seng ũ kúi ê Bĩ-kok-lăng?

c) Lí chiah Bĩ-kok-hun; chít kí hō\* góa, hó bô\*?

d) Tĩ Tãi-oân ê Bĩ-kok-lăng ũ chít-kóa ē-hiáu kóng

Tãi-oân-ōe. (P)

4. chāng

a) Chít chāng chhīu-á.

b) Tĩ soa\*-nĩh ũ chín-chê (chāng) chhīu-á.

c) Tĩ chia ũ kúi chāng keng-chio, kúi chāng kām-á? (P)

d) Chít chāng kām-á sĩ góan ê, m̄-sĩ lĩn ê.

e) Hək-seng chín ải lải chít chāng chhīu-á-kha  
thak-chheh.

5. Chhĩa\*-m̄ng (lí)/Chiōh-m̄ng (lí) "m̄ng" means "ask".

NB. Polite forms such as this are necessary when asking a question, especially of strangers.

a) Chhĩa\*-m̄ng, piān-só\* tĩ tōh-ūi?

b) Chiōh-m̄ng lí, Áng Bok-su ĩn chhù tĩ tōh-ūi?

c) Chhĩa\*-m̄ng, ũ lāng bōeh khi Tãi-tiong bô\*?

d) Siu-lí, chhĩa\*-m̄ng, lí kĩn-á-jít bōeh thak-chheh bô\*?

e) Chhĩa\*-m̄ng lí, chít tãi sú-kú-tah sĩ lí ê, sĩ bô\*?

6. chhiām-á

a) Tĩ tōh-á hia ũ chhiām-á bô\*?

Ū, tĩ tōh-á hia ũ chap-gōa kí chhiām-á.

b) Lí ē-hiáu iông chhiām-á káp tō-á chiah-p̄ng bē?

c) Chít k<sup>7</sup>í chhiám-á b<sup>7</sup>ố sé, l<sup>1</sup>í kh<sup>2</sup>í sé.

d) Góan chia b<sup>7</sup>ố chhiám-á; i<sup>3</sup>ông t<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>1</sup>iah, hó b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?

### 7. chhiú

a) L<sup>3</sup>âng ù n<sup>3</sup>ng k<sup>7</sup>í chhiú.

b) L<sup>1</sup>í é chhiú-n<sup>1</sup>ih ù s<sup>3</sup>ím-m<sup>2</sup>ih m<sup>3</sup>ih-k<sup>1</sup>ia\*? (P)

c) I<sup>7</sup> t<sup>3</sup>ia\*-t<sup>3</sup>ia\* i<sup>3</sup>ông chít k<sup>7</sup>í chhiú t<sup>2</sup>eh kh<sup>7</sup>ia ó<sup>7</sup>·-thó<sup>1</sup>·-bái.

### 8. chhiu-á

a) Chít ch<sup>3</sup>ang s<sup>1</sup>í s<sup>3</sup>ím-m<sup>2</sup>ih chhiu-á?

Che s<sup>3</sup>í k<sup>7</sup>eng-chio.

b) Soa\*-n<sup>1</sup>ih n<sup>3</sup>ả b<sup>7</sup>ố chhiu-á ch<sup>7</sup>ín ph<sup>1</sup>ai\*-kh<sup>1</sup>òa\*.

c) I<sup>7</sup>n ch<sup>3</sup>ê t<sup>1</sup>í chhiu-á-k<sup>1</sup>ha t<sup>2</sup>eh k<sup>7</sup>ong-ôe.

d) T<sup>3</sup>í l<sup>1</sup>án g<sup>3</sup>oa-b<sup>3</sup>ín ù ch<sup>7</sup>ín-ch<sup>3</sup>ê chhiu-á, só<sup>1</sup>·-i<sup>1</sup> g<sup>1</sup>ín-á ch<sup>7</sup>ín  
 ải l<sup>7</sup>ái chia ch<sup>2</sup>hít-thó.

e) L<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ái-kh<sup>2</sup>í h<sup>2</sup>ít ch<sup>7</sup>ang chhiu-á-k<sup>1</sup>ha h<sup>3</sup>ia th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>heh,

hó b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?

### 9. chiah-png-keng

a) L<sup>1</sup>ín ch<sup>7</sup>hù é chiah-p<sup>3</sup>ng-keng t<sup>1</sup>í t<sup>2</sup>oh-úi?

b) H<sup>2</sup>ít keng s<sup>3</sup>í p<sup>7</sup>ang-keng, m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>3</sup>í chiah-p<sup>3</sup>ng-keng.

c) T<sup>3</sup>í góan ch<sup>7</sup>hù é chiah-p<sup>3</sup>ng-keng ù chít t<sup>2</sup>ê t<sup>2</sup>oh-á k<sup>2</sup>áp  
 l<sup>3</sup>ak t<sup>2</sup>ê i<sup>1</sup>-á n<sup>3</sup>ia-n<sup>3</sup>ia.

d) Ch<sup>1</sup>im-á s<sup>3</sup>ím-m<sup>2</sup>ih-l<sup>3</sup>âng t<sup>1</sup>í chiah-p<sup>3</sup>ng-keng t<sup>2</sup>eh chiah-p<sup>3</sup>ng?

e) L<sup>1</sup>í n<sup>3</sup>ả ải chiah k<sup>3</sup>oe-ch<sup>1</sup>í, t<sup>3</sup>í chiah-p<sup>3</sup>ng-keng ù ch<sup>7</sup>ín-ch<sup>3</sup>ê.

### 10. chit

a) Chít k<sup>2</sup>eng ch<sup>7</sup>hù s<sup>3</sup>í s<sup>3</sup>ím-m<sup>2</sup>ih-l<sup>3</sup>âng é?

b) Chít p<sup>1</sup>un ch<sup>3</sup>heh ch<sup>7</sup>ín hó-kh<sup>1</sup>òa\*, l<sup>1</sup>í ải kh<sup>1</sup>òa\* b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?

c) Chít li<sup>3</sup>ap k<sup>7</sup>am-á ch<sup>7</sup>ín hó-ch<sup>1</sup>iah, h<sup>2</sup>ít li<sup>1</sup>ap b<sup>7</sup>ố hó-ch<sup>1</sup>iah.

d) Chít ê gín-á nā ũ chí\* lóng khi bé thng-á.

e) Chít chhút tiān-ia\* chín hō-khòa\*, lí ũ khi khòa\*  
bô\*?

11. ē-híau                      bē-híau

a) Lí ē-híau kóng Tái-gí bē? (P)

1) Góa bē-híau.

2) Góa bô sim-mih ē-híau.

3) Góa lóng bē-híau.

b) Ō-tho-bái góa ē-híau khi; sú-kū-tah góa bô sim-  
mih ē-híau khi.

c) Chít jī góa ē-híau thak, bē-híau sía.

d) Khu Thai-thai, lí ē-híau iōng tī chiah-png bē?

e) Í ē-híau chō í-toh, bē-híau chō thng-á-mng.

12. gín-á

a) Gín-á (OR: Sio pēng-iú), chhia\* lín khi góa-bīn  
chhit-thō.

b) Lí chim-á ũ kui ê gín-á?

c) Góa bé sú-kū-tah sí bōeh hō. góa ê gín-á. (P)

d) Í sí Tē\* siān-si\* ê gín-á.

e) Thng-á á-sī kōe-chí, gín-á lóng chín ai chiah.

13. gōa

a) Chá-hng ũ chap-gōa ê lāng tí chia chiah-png. (P)

b) Iān-pit chít ki ai nng khō. gōa; chap ki ai jī-  
chap-gōa kho.

c) Lí kóng hit nia sa\* ai káu-chap-gōa kho, á-sī gō-  
chap-gōa kho?

- d) 7 3 3 3 3 7 7 3 3  
 7 3 3 3 3 7 7 3 3  
 7 3 3 3 3 7 7 3 3  
 In-úi tia\*-tia\* ũ chin-chē lāng lái chia chiah-png,  
 số\*-l tĩ chia ũ sả\*-cháp-gōa kĩ tō-á káp chhiām-á.
- e) Hít ê hāk-seng ũ chap-gōa kĩ gōan-chū-pit.

## 14. gōa-bīn/gōa-kháu

- a) Lán lái-khĩ gōa-bīn thak-chheh, hó bô\*?
- b) Tĩ gōa-kháu hīt tái ó\*-thó\*-bái sĩ lí ê, sĩ bô\*?
- c) Bók-su bô tĩ lái-bīn; tĩ gōa-bīn tēn khòa\*-chheh.
- d) Ắng sin-sẻ\*, gōa-bīn ũ chit ê lāng bẻh káp lí  
 kóng-oe.
- e) In chhù ê gōa-bīn ũ chin-chē chhiū-á.

## 15. hit

- a) Góa bẻh chhēng chit nía; hīt nía góa bẻ ải chhēng.
- b) Hīt ê lāng bẻh lái chia chhōng-sia\*h? (P)
- c) Hīt nng ê gin-á chit ê ải chiah kām-á, chit ê ải  
 chiah keng-chio. (P)
- d) Lí khĩa hīt tái bẻ sủm-mủn phải\*-khĩa. (P)
- e) Lí tẻh kóng hīt chhut góa iáu-bẻ khòa\*. (P)

## 16. i-á

- a) Tĩ lí ê páng-keng ũ i-á bô\*?
- b) Chit tẻ i-á ũ hó-chē bô\*? (NB. Hó-chē = comfortable/  
 nice to sit in.)
- c) I chẻ tĩ i-á-tẻng tẻn khòa\*-chheh.
- d) Chit keng bẻ pỏa\* tẻ i-á, lí hĩa ũ bô\*?
- e) I chẻ ê i-á chin hó-chẻ, số\*-l ũ chin-chẻ lāng ải  
 bẻ. (P)

## 17. í-toh

- a) Tí chia ũ lǎng tēh bē í-toh bō? <sup>3 7 2 3 1 3</sup>
- b) Góa ũ chít ē pēng-iú tēh bē í-toh, góa lǎng khi í hia bé. <sup>1 3 3 7 7 2 3 1 1 2 7</sup>
- c) Kín-á-jít bō thak-chheh, m̄-kú hāk-seng ái sé í-toh. <sup>7 1 1 7 3 3 1 3 2 1 1</sup>
- d) Kín-á-jít ũ chin-chē lǎng bōeh lái chia chiah-png; <sup>7 1 1 3 7 3 2 7 3</sup>  
tí chiah-png-keng ũ chin-chē í-toh bō? <sup>3 3 3 3 7 3 1 3</sup>

## 18. ín-ūi

"ín-ūi" and "só'-í" are used more often in Taiwanese than "because" and "therefore" in English; furthermore, "ín-ūi" and "só'-í" are used in the same sentence much more often than "because" and "therefore" are used in the same English sentence. "In-ūi" and "só'-í" together may often be translated: "and so".

- a) ín-ūi bō chí\*, só'-í bō bé. (P) <sup>7 3 7 1 1 7</sup>
- b) ín-ūi í bō bōeh khi, só'-í góa bō khi. (P) <sup>7 3 7 1 1 7 1 7</sup>
- c) Chá-hng góa bō lái, sí ín-ūi kǎh pēng-iú khi Tái-pak. (P) <sup>7 1 7 3 7 2 7 2 7</sup>
- d) ín-ūi bō ká-pi, só'-í góa lǐm kún-chúí. (P) <sup>7 3 7 1 1 7 1 1</sup>

## 19. kám-á

- a) Ū lǎng bōeh chiah kám-á bō? <sup>3 7 2 3 7 3</sup>
- b) Kín-á-jít í bé ē kám-á chin hó-chiah. <sup>7 1 7 7 7 1</sup>
- c) Kín-á-jít bō bé kám-á, ũ keng-chio; chiah keng-chio, hó bō? <sup>7 1 7 3 7 3 7 7 3</sup>
- d) Gín-á (OR: Sio pēng-iú), chít nng liap kám-á hó. lín chiah, lín chít ē lǎng chít liap. <sup>1 1 2 3 3 7 3 1 1</sup>
- e) Chím-á ē kám-á chin phai\*-chiah, m̄-hó bé. <sup>1 7 7 1 3 3 1 1</sup>  
<sub>今仔 柑仔 3 壞 不好買</sub>

## 20. keng

- a) Í tí Tái-tiong ũ nng keng chhù. <sup>7 3 7 3 3 7</sup>



- b) Lí <sup>1</sup>chím-<sup>1</sup>á bé <sup>2</sup>hít <sup>7</sup>keng <sup>3</sup>chhù <sup>1</sup>ũ <sup>3</sup>kúi <sup>7</sup>keng?
- c) Chít <sup>2</sup>keng <sup>1</sup>chím-<sup>1</sup>á <sup>7</sup>bó <sup>2</sup>ái <sup>2</sup>chò <sup>7</sup>pāng-keng, <sup>2</sup>bóeh <sup>2</sup>chò <sup>3</sup>chiáh-<sup>3</sup>pāng-keng. (P)
- d) Tī <sup>3</sup>Tái-oân <sup>3</sup>nā <sup>2</sup>bóeh <sup>1</sup>bé <sup>3</sup>chít <sup>7</sup>keng <sup>3</sup>chhù <sup>2</sup>ái <sup>7</sup>chín-<sup>3</sup>chē <sup>3</sup>chí\*.

21. kha Noun and noun-suffix.

- a) Lāng <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>3</sup>nāng <sup>7</sup>kí <sup>7</sup>kha.
- b) Tī <sup>3</sup>í-<sup>1</sup>á-<sup>1</sup>kha <sup>2</sup>hít <sup>1</sup>pún <sup>3</sup>chheh <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>1</sup>lí <sup>1</sup>é, <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>3</sup>bó\*? (P)
- c) In <sup>7</sup>chhù <sup>3</sup>tī <sup>7</sup>sóá\*-<sup>7</sup>kha. (P)
- d) Tī <sup>3</sup>chhiū-<sup>1</sup>á-<sup>3</sup>kha <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>7</sup>sá\*-<sup>2</sup>sī <sup>7</sup>é <sup>1</sup>lāng <sup>2</sup>téh <sup>1</sup>kóng-<sup>1</sup>ōe.
- e) Tī <sup>3</sup>tōh-<sup>1</sup>á-<sup>3</sup>kha <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>1</sup>kúi <sup>7</sup>kí <sup>7</sup>lāng <sup>7</sup>é <sup>7</sup>kha? (P)
- f) Lí <sup>1</sup>é <sup>7</sup>ián-<sup>7</sup>pit <sup>3</sup>tī <sup>2</sup>hít <sup>2</sup>tē <sup>2</sup>tōh-<sup>7</sup>á <sup>7</sup>é <sup>7</sup>kha <sup>7</sup>hia. Your pencil is by that table leg. (NB. Distinguish "tōh-á é kha = by the table leg" from "tōh-á-kha = under the table". See Sentences b and e.)

22. khéh-thia\*

- a) Ū <sup>3</sup>chín-<sup>3</sup>chē <sup>3</sup>lāng <sup>3</sup>tī <sup>2</sup>khéh-thia\* <sup>2</sup>téh <sup>2</sup>chē.
- b) Chít <sup>2</sup>keng <sup>2</sup>bóeh <sup>2</sup>chò <sup>2</sup>khéh-thia\*, <sup>2</sup>hít <sup>2</sup>keng <sup>2</sup>bóeh <sup>2</sup>chò <sup>7</sup>pāng-keng.
- c) Bī-Giok, <sup>1</sup>chhia\* <sup>1</sup>lín <sup>7</sup>pēng-iú <sup>3</sup>jíp-<sup>2</sup>khí <sup>2</sup>khéh-thia\* <sup>2</sup>chē.
- d) Chhút-<sup>2</sup>khí <sup>2</sup>gōa-bīn <sup>3</sup>chhít-thô, <sup>3</sup>m-hó <sup>3</sup>tī <sup>2</sup>khéh-thia\* <sup>2</sup>chhít-thô.

23. ki (measure for hands and feet and for most objects that can be grasped with one hand and, generally speaking, are shaped like a pen/cigarette/baseball bat/knife/telephone, etc.)

- a) Chít <sup>3</sup>páu <sup>7</sup>hun <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>1</sup>kúi <sup>7</sup>kí <sup>7</sup>hun (OR: <sup>1</sup>kúi <sup>7</sup>ki)?
- b) Góan-<sup>7</sup>chú-<sup>1</sup>pit <sup>3</sup>chít <sup>3</sup>ki <sup>2</sup>ái <sup>3</sup>lōa-<sup>3</sup>chē?
- c) Tī <sup>3</sup>tōh-<sup>1</sup>á-<sup>2</sup>téng <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>3</sup>nāng <sup>7</sup>kí <sup>7</sup>tó-<sup>2</sup>á <sup>2</sup>káp <sup>2</sup>sí <sup>7</sup>kí <sup>1</sup>chhiám-<sup>1</sup>á.
- d) Lí <sup>1</sup>ũ <sup>3</sup>hun <sup>3</sup>bó\*? Chít <sup>3</sup>kí <sup>7</sup>hō\* <sup>7</sup>góa, <sup>3</sup>hó <sup>3</sup>bó\*?

e) Hít é lāng ũ chít kí chhú nīa-nīa, m̄-kú ē-hiáu khfa  
 7°-tho<sup>1</sup>-bái.

24. lāi-bīn/lāi-té

a) Í tī lāi-té téh káh lāng kóng-ōe.

b) Chhia\* lín lāi lāi-bīn chē.

c) Tī hít keng é lāi-bīn ũ piān-só. bō\*?

d) Chá-hng góa lóng bō khi tōh-ūi, lóng tī lāi-té. M 7A

e) Í-á lóng tī góa-bīn, lāi-té bō pōa\* tè.

25. liáp

a) Lí é thng-á chít liáp hō. góa chiah, hó bō\*?

b) Í bō ái chiah-png; í bōeh chiah chít liáp kám-á  
 nīa-nīa.

c) Thng-á góa ũ nng liáp, chít liáp hō lí. \* 7

d) Chá-hng bé é thng-á chīm-á bō pōa\* liáp á. (P)

e) Kám-á chít liáp ái lōa-chē chí\*?

26. lóng      m̄-sī lóng      lóng m̄-sī

a) Bō lāng bō ái khi, lóng bōeh khi. (P)

b) Lín nā bō ái chiah, lóng hō. góa chiah.

c) Tōh-á-téng é chheh lóng m̄-sī góa ê. (P)

d) Tī chia thak-chheh é hak-seng m̄-sī lóng sī Sín-hū,  
 ũ chít-kóa sī Bōk-su. (P)

e) Hun káh ká-pi góa lóng bō chiah. I never smoke  
 cigarettes or drink coffee.

NB. "Chiah = to eat", we here translate as  
 "smoke" and "drink". It has many other common  
 meanings, such as "take (medicine)/suckle  
 (mother's milk)/live (to such an age)".

## 27. nĩa-nĩa 囍囍

- a) ĩ b<sup>2</sup>oeh khi nĩa-nĩa, g<sup>1</sup>oan l<sup>1</sup>ong b<sup>7</sup>o b<sup>2</sup>oeh khi. (P)
- b) Chit nĩa p<sup>2</sup>eh-ch<sup>3</sup>ap kho<sup>3</sup> nĩa-nĩa; l<sup>1</sup>ĩ b<sup>2</sup>oeh bé b<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>?  
 c) G<sup>1</sup>oan chh<sup>7</sup>u b<sup>7</sup>o k<sup>7</sup>a-pi, ũ k<sup>3</sup>un-ch<sup>3</sup>uí nĩa-nĩa.
- d) K<sup>7</sup>am-á g<sup>1</sup>oá bé ch<sup>7</sup>in-ch<sup>3</sup>ē liap, m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>3</sup>ĩ bé chit liap nĩa-nĩa.
- e) Ch<sup>7</sup>a-hng g<sup>1</sup>oá chiah ch<sup>3</sup>ap-g<sup>3</sup>oá k<sup>3</sup>i hun nĩa-nĩa.
- f) Ch<sup>7</sup>a-hng g<sup>1</sup>oá chit é l<sup>7</sup>ang t<sup>3</sup>ĩ chh<sup>7</sup>u-n<sup>3</sup>ih nĩa-nĩa, l<sup>1</sup>ong b<sup>7</sup>o l<sup>7</sup>ang l<sup>7</sup>ai. I was home alone yesterday; nobody came at all. (NB. g<sup>1</sup>oá chit é l<sup>7</sup>ang = I one person = I alone.)

28. 7<sup>1</sup>o-tho<sup>1</sup>o-bái/k<sup>7</sup>ĩ-chhia

- a) Lí ũ 7<sup>1</sup>o-tho<sup>1</sup>o-bái b<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>?  
 b) Lí ch<sup>7</sup>a-hng bé h<sup>2</sup>ít tái k<sup>7</sup>ĩ-chhia ũ h<sup>3</sup>ó-kh<sup>1</sup>ĩa b<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>? (P)  
 c) T<sup>3</sup>ĩ tái-tiong kh<sup>7</sup>ĩa 7<sup>1</sup>o-tho<sup>1</sup>o-bái é l<sup>7</sup>ang ch<sup>7</sup>in-ch<sup>3</sup>ē.  
 d) T<sup>3</sup>ĩ g<sup>3</sup>oá-b<sup>3</sup>ĩn h<sup>2</sup>ít tái 7<sup>1</sup>o-tho<sup>1</sup>o-bái s<sup>3</sup>ĩ s<sup>3</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih-l<sup>7</sup>ang é?  
 e) Lí bé h<sup>2</sup>ít tái 7<sup>1</sup>o-tho<sup>1</sup>o-bái ái l<sup>3</sup>oá-ch<sup>3</sup>ē chí\*?

29. Oán-l<sup>7</sup>im 囍林30. p<sup>7</sup>ang-keng

- a) ĩ t<sup>3</sup>ĩ p<sup>7</sup>ang-keng t<sup>2</sup>eh kh<sup>2</sup>oá\*-ch<sup>3</sup>eh.  
 b) G<sup>1</sup>oan chh<sup>7</sup>u ũ n<sup>3</sup>ng keng p<sup>7</sup>ang-keng nĩa-nĩa.  
 c) ĩ é p<sup>7</sup>ang-keng-m<sup>7</sup>ng b<sup>7</sup>o koai\*, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú ĩ b<sup>7</sup>o t<sup>3</sup>ĩ hia. (P)  
 d) N<sup>3</sup>ā b<sup>2</sup>oeh s<sup>1</sup>ĩa-j<sup>1</sup>ĩ, kh<sup>2</sup>ĩ lí é p<sup>7</sup>ang-keng s<sup>1</sup>ĩa.  
 e) (T<sup>3</sup>ĩ) g<sup>1</sup>oá é p<sup>7</sup>ang-keng b<sup>7</sup>o pi<sup>3</sup>an-s<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>.

31. p<sup>1</sup>hái\*-s<sup>2</sup>é I'm sorry; be embarrassed; unjustifiable, etc.

- a) ĩ t<sup>3</sup>ĩ g<sup>3</sup>oá-b<sup>3</sup>ĩn, p<sup>1</sup>hái\*-s<sup>2</sup>é j<sup>1</sup>ip-l<sup>3</sup>ai.  
 b) ĩn-ũi b<sup>7</sup>o chí\*, s<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>-ĩ p<sup>1</sup>hái\*-s<sup>2</sup>é k<sup>2</sup>an lí kh<sup>2</sup>ĩ kh<sup>2</sup>oá\*  
 ti<sup>3</sup>an-iá\*.

- c) Gó<sup>1</sup> tĩa<sup>3</sup>\*-tĩa<sup>3</sup>\* hō<sup>3</sup>. lí<sup>1</sup> chhĩa<sup>7</sup>\*, chín<sup>7</sup> phái<sup>1</sup>\*-sè.  
 d) Phái<sup>1</sup>\*-sè, gó<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> iōng<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>1</sup> chiah, gó<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> iōng<sup>3</sup>  
 tō<sup>7</sup>-á káp<sup>2</sup> chhiám<sup>1</sup>-á.  
 e) ĩn-úi<sup>3</sup> Tái-oân-ōe<sup>7</sup> gó<sup>1</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu, số<sup>1</sup>\*-í<sup>1</sup> phái<sup>1</sup>\*-sè<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>1</sup>  
 iōng<sup>3</sup> Tái-oân-ōe<sup>7</sup> kóng.

32. piān<sup>3</sup>-số<sup>3</sup>.

- a) Chhĩa<sup>1</sup>\*-mng, tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> piān<sup>3</sup>-số<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 b) Gó<sup>1</sup> kĭn-ă-jít<sup>7</sup> iău-bōe<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> piān<sup>3</sup>-số<sup>3</sup>.  
 c) Chiōh<sup>2</sup>-mng, piān<sup>3</sup>-số<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> tōh-úi<sup>2</sup>?

33. số<sup>1</sup>-í

- a) Chhít<sup>2</sup> chhút<sup>2</sup> tiān-ía<sup>3</sup>\* chín<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>1</sup>-khòa\*, số<sup>1</sup>\*-í<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup>  
 khòa\*.  
 b) Chhít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>7</sup> í<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> gó<sup>1</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> kho°, số<sup>1</sup>\*-í<sup>1</sup>  
 gó<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> bé.  
 c) ĩn-úi<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> lōng<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> thak, số<sup>1</sup>\*-í<sup>1</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu. (P)  
 d) Chhít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thih<sup>2</sup>-bé<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>1</sup>-khĩa, số<sup>1</sup>\*-í<sup>1</sup> lōng<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> lăng<sup>2</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup>  
 khĩa.  
 e) ĩn-úi<sup>3</sup> Lău-su<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> lâi, số<sup>1</sup>\*-í<sup>1</sup> hăk<sup>3</sup>-seng<sup>1</sup> lōng<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup>  
 chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô.

34. sũ<sup>7</sup>-kũ<sup>2</sup>-tah

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> sũ<sup>7</sup>-kũ<sup>2</sup>-tah á-sĩ<sup>3</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>\*-thó<sup>1</sup>\*-bái?  
 b) Chĩm-á<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> lăng<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> sũ<sup>7</sup>-kũ<sup>2</sup>-tah.  
 c) Tī<sup>3</sup> gōa<sup>3</sup>-kháu<sup>2</sup> hĭt<sup>7</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> sũ<sup>7</sup>-kũ<sup>2</sup>-tah sĩ<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ê, sĩ<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 d) Tī<sup>3</sup> sũa<sup>7</sup>\*-tég<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> lăng<sup>7</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> sũ<sup>7</sup>-kũ<sup>2</sup>-tah, m-kũ<sup>3</sup>  
 ũ<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> lăng<sup>7</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>\*-thó<sup>1</sup>\*-bái.

## 35. tè

- a) Lí hō· góa hít tè thng-á chin hó-chiah.  
 b) Chít tè í-á hō· lí chē.  
 c) Góa ê páng-keng bó tōh-á; lí nā ū, chít tè hō· góa iōng.  
 d) Tōh-téng ê thng-á góa lóng bó chiah pōa\* tè.  
 e) Chhia\*-mng, chít tè í-á lí ū tēh chē bó\*?

## 36. -téng

- a) Chhia\*-mng, góa ê chheh ū tī lí ê páng-keng ê tōh-á-téng bó\*?  
 b) Lí ê sa\* sī tī í-á-téng, m-sī tī tōh-á-téng.  
 c) Kín-á-jit hak-seng lóng bóeh khi sóa\*-téng chhit-thō; lí bóeh khi bó\*?  
 d) Tī tōh-á-téng chít pún chheh sī sim-mih-lâng ê?  
 e) Hít ê gín-á tī chhiū-á-téng tēh chhōng-sia\*h?

## 37. thng-á

- a) Góa ū thng-á, lín ai chiah bó\*?  
 b) Lí khi bé thng-á, bé-ū bó\*?  
 c) Tiu\* Siān-si\*, chít páu thng-á hō· lín ê gín-á chiah.  
 d) Chít páu thng-á góa chiah nng-sá\* liap nīa-nīa.

## 38. tī

- a) Ū lāng bóeh iōng tī chiah-png bó\*?  
 b) Hít ê gín-á bē-hiáu iōng tī chiah-png.  
 c) Sín-hū, lí nā bē-hiáu iōng tī chiah-png, tī chia ū tō-á káp chhiām-á.  
 d) Tī tōh-ūi ū lāng tēh bē tī?

39. to/to<sup>7</sup>-á

- a) Gó<sup>1</sup>a chia <sup>3</sup>ũ chhiám-á, bô<sup>7</sup> to<sup>7</sup>-á; lí <sup>1</sup>ũ nng<sup>3</sup> kí to<sup>7</sup>-á bô<sup>3</sup>?
- b) Hít <sup>7</sup>ê gín-á <sup>2</sup>ài to<sup>7</sup>-á bôeh chhông-sia\*h? (P)
- c) To<sup>7</sup>-á <sup>3</sup>m-hô<sup>1</sup> hô<sup>3</sup> gín-á chhít-thô. (P)
- d) Lí bé hít kí to<sup>7</sup>-á <sup>2</sup>ài gô<sup>3</sup>-cháp kho<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
- e) Chít kí to<sup>7</sup>-á chin hó-khóa\*, <sup>3</sup>m-kú chin phái\*-iōng.

40. toh-á thak-chhéh-toh-á

- a) Chít tē toh-á lí bé lóa-chē chí\*?
- b) Chít tē thak-chhéh-toh-á ũ lánng tēh iōng bô<sup>3</sup>?
- c) Tī toh-á-téng hít pún chhéh lí <sup>2</sup>ài khóa\* bô<sup>3</sup>?
- d) Tī lí ê páng-keng ũ toh-á bô<sup>3</sup>?  
Ū chít tē toh-á, <sup>3</sup>m-kú bô<sup>7</sup> póa\* tē i-á.
- e) Tōh-téng ũ tī bô<sup>3</sup>? Are there chopsticks on the table? (Note: people frequently understand "toh-téng" as referring to the dining room table, while "toh-á-téng" refers to any other table.)

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF PATTERN SENTENCES MARKED "P"

- 2. b) They're going to Oân-lím; are you going or not? ("Á m? = or are you unwilling to go?")
- d) Did you eat the candy (that was) on the table or didn't you?
- 3. d) There are a few Americans on Taiwan who can speak Taiwanese. (Note: "kóa" changes tone, though the noun does not follow "kóa" - it precedes. In this respect "kóa" is similar to "ki" in the previous sentence.)
- 4. c) How many banana and tangerine trees are there here?
- 7. b) What do you have in your hand?
- 11. a) Can you speak Taiwanese?
  - 1) I can't.
  - 2) I can't speak it very well.
  - 3) I can't speak it at all.

12. c) I bought a scooter with the intention of giving it to my offspring. (Note: the offspring could be either sex and any age. The scooter may or may not have already been given to the intended recipient.)
13. a) Somewhere between 11 and 19 people ate here yesterday.
15. b) What's that guy doing around here? (He could be standing outside at the gate, or he could be inside the building. "Boeh lâi chia chhông sia\*h?" could also mean that he intends to come at a future date.)
- c) One of those 2 kids likes tangerines and one likes bananas. (Note the whole before the part: "2 kids" is stated first, then each of the 2.)
- d) That one (vehicle) that you ride is not bad.
- e) I haven't yet seen that one (movie) you're talking about.
16. e) The chairs he makes are very good and so lots of people want them.
18. a) I didn't have any money so I didn't buy any.
- b) He didn't want to go so I didn't go.
- c) I didn't come yesterday; it's because I went to Taipei with a friend.
- d) There's no coffee so I'm drinking water. OR: There wasn't any coffee so I drank water.
20. c) This room we don't want as a bedroom any more; we're going to make it a dining room.
21. b) Is that book under the chair yours?
- c) Their house is at the foot of the mountain.
- e) How many human legs are under the table? (Teacher asks student.)
25. d) There isn't a single piece left of the candy I bought yesterday. (Note: "a" with "bô pòa\* liap" for emphasis. See Ls 4, p. 79: the Particle "a".)
26. a) There's no one who doesn't want to go; we're all going.
- c) None of the books on the table are mine.
- d) Not all the students studying here are priests; there are some who are ministers.
27. a) He's the only one going; none of us are going.
28. b) Is that motorcycle you bought yesterday a good one?
30. c) His bedroom door is not closed, but he's not there. (Most people close their bedroom door when not in the bedroom.)

33. c) Because you don't study at all you don't do well (in school don't know the answers). (Here "thak" means private study.)
39. b) What does that kid want a knife for?  
 c) Don't give the kid a knife to play with.

FLUENCY PYRAMID

thính-bé  
 n<sup>3</sup>ng t<sup>7</sup>ái th<sup>2</sup>ính-bé  
 h<sup>1</sup>ít n<sup>3</sup>ng t<sup>7</sup>ái th<sup>2</sup>ính-bé.  
 ỉ h<sup>1</sup>ít n<sup>3</sup>ng t<sup>7</sup>ái th<sup>2</sup>ính-bé.  
 ỉ h<sup>1</sup>ít n<sup>3</sup>ng t<sup>7</sup>ái th<sup>2</sup>ính-bé, ch<sup>3</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>ái ch<sup>7</sup>ín hó-kh<sup>1</sup>á.  
 ỉ h<sup>1</sup>ít n<sup>3</sup>ng t<sup>7</sup>ái th<sup>2</sup>ính-bé, ch<sup>3</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>ái ch<sup>7</sup>ín hó-kh<sup>1</sup>á, ch<sup>3</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>ái ch<sup>7</sup>ín phá<sup>1</sup>\*-kh<sup>1</sup>á.

RULE ----- THE WHOLE BEFORE THE PART.

WHOLE ---- h<sup>1</sup>ít n<sup>3</sup>ng t<sup>7</sup>ái th<sup>2</sup>ính-bé

PART ---- ch<sup>3</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>ái

Note: "ch<sup>3</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>ái...ch<sup>3</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>ái..." We may leave "tái" in the 5th tone but it is more commonly changed to 7th.



## KÙ

SENTENCES

1. À, kìn-á-jít í bô lái.
2. Lí bôeh khi á m?
3. Che sī lí ê á-sī í ê?
4. Sī lí bô khi bé á-sī lí bé-bô? 誰 買 買 誰
5. Góa ũ hun, lí bôeh chiah bô?
6. Khó Siān-sī\* ín é gín-á lóng khi Bī-kok thak-chheh.
7. Góan chhū ũ chin-chē chāng keng-chio. (S)
8. Chit chāng sī sim-mih chhū-á?
9. Chhia\*-mng, tī tōh-ūi ũ lāng tēh bē í-toh?
10. Chhia\*-mng, Lāu Bók-su ũ tī chhū (OR: tī chhū-nih) bô?
11. Chioh-mng, Chhōa Lāu-su kìn-á-jít ũ lái bô?
12. Ū lāng iōng chhiām-á chiah-png; lí ē-hiáu bē?
13. Lí chā-hng khi bé chhiām-á, bé-ū bô?
14. Góa bô ài iōng chhiām-á, góa bôeh iōng tī.
15. Lí chhiū-nih ũ sim-mih?
16. Lí ē-hiáu iōng chit kí chhiū khia ó'-tho'-bái bē?
17. Chit chāng chhū-á tī chia ũ-ia\* chin hó.
18. Chit chāng chhū-á lí nā bô ài, góa bôeh ài.
19. Lán lái-khi chiah-png-keng chiah-png.
20. Chīm-á ũ lāng tī chiah-png-keng bô?
21. Chit pún sī Tái-oān-ōe é chheh.
22. Chit é gín-á chin ài khōa\* tiān-sī, lóng bô ài thak-chheh.
23. Í kóng chit chāng sī kam-á, ũ-ia\* bô?
24. Lí é mīa lí ē-hiáu sía bē?
25. É-hiáu kóng Tái-gí é Bī-kók-lāng ũ chin-chē, sī bô?

26. Lí ē<sup>1</sup>-hiáú<sup>3</sup> chò<sup>2</sup> í<sup>1</sup>-toh; ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáú<sup>1</sup> chò<sup>2</sup> thàng<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-mng<sup>3</sup> bê<sup>3</sup>?
27. Chē<sup>3</sup> tí<sup>3</sup> hia<sup>2</sup> hít<sup>7</sup> é<sup>1</sup> gín-á<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> sīm-mih-lâng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>1</sup> gín-á<sup>3</sup>?
28. Góa<sup>1</sup> chīm-á<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>7</sup> é<sup>1</sup> gín-á<sup>3</sup> nĩa-nĩa. (S)
29. Ũ<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> gín-á<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>3</sup>-bīn<sup>2</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô<sup>1</sup>.
30. Góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, che<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> pún<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> sá\*-cháp<sup>3</sup>-góa<sup>3</sup> kho\*.
31. Chá<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>3</sup> tí<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-png<sup>7</sup> é<sup>1</sup> lêng<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> cháp<sup>3</sup>-góa<sup>3</sup> ê<sup>1</sup>.
32. Chīm-á<sup>3</sup> hək-seng<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>3</sup> tí<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>3</sup>-bīn<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup>-ōe<sup>1</sup>.
33. Lí<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> thək<sup>3</sup>-chheh, tí<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>3</sup>-kháu<sup>2</sup> chhông<sup>2</sup>-sia\*h?
34. Gín-á<sup>1</sup> (OR: Sio<sup>1</sup> pēng-iú<sup>7</sup>), m<sup>3</sup>-hó<sup>1</sup> tí<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>7</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> thín<sup>2</sup>-bé<sup>2</sup>, khi<sup>2</sup> góa<sup>3</sup>-bīn<sup>2</sup> khĩa.
35. Tí<sup>3</sup> chhiū<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-kha<sup>2</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> é<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> sīm-mih-lâng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>1</sup> gín-á<sup>3</sup>?
36. Lí<sup>1</sup> chīm-á<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> khòa\* hít<sup>1</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khòa\* bó<sup>3</sup>?
37. Hít<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> piān<sup>3</sup>-só\*, m<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> pāng<sup>7</sup>-keng.
38. Tí<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup> í-á<sup>1</sup>, chhia\* lí<sup>1</sup> chē.
39. Chít<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>1</sup> í-á<sup>1</sup>; hít<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?
40. Tí<sup>3</sup> í-á<sup>1</sup>-teng<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> pau<sup>7</sup> hun<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>1</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?
41. Lín<sup>1</sup> chhù<sup>7</sup> é<sup>1</sup> í-toh<sup>7</sup> lóng<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khòa\*.
42. Hək-seng<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>3</sup> thək<sup>3</sup>-chheh<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>1</sup> í-toh<sup>1</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáú<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>3</sup> bê<sup>3</sup>? (S)
43. In-úi<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> chí\*, só<sup>1</sup>-í<sup>1</sup> kín-á<sup>7</sup>-jít<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> hun.
44. Í<sup>7</sup> kín-á<sup>1</sup>-jít<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>1</sup> thək<sup>1</sup>, in-úi<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> káh<sup>7</sup> pēng-iú<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> sóa\*-teng.
45. In-úi<sup>3</sup> kám-á<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, só<sup>1</sup>-í<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>1</sup>.
46. Chīm-á<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> kám-á<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, m<sup>3</sup>-hó<sup>1</sup> bé.
47. Lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> keng<sup>7</sup>-chio<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> keng<sup>7</sup>-chio<sup>1</sup>, góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> kám-á<sup>7</sup>.
48. Tí<sup>3</sup> tōh-á<sup>2</sup>-kha<sup>1</sup> he<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> sīm-mih<sup>2</sup> mih<sup>3</sup>-kia\*?

49. Lí é pit tí hít tẽ tôn-á é kha hia. (S)
50. Tí keng-chio-kha hít é lãng sĩ Tē\* Siã-sĩ\*, sĩ bô\*?
51. Tí lí é chhiu-nih hít kí pit sĩ góa ê, sĩ bô\*?
52. Lí ữ hun bô\*? Chít kí hō· góa.
53. Góa ữ chít kí bãn-liãn-pit kãh chít kí gōan-chú-pit  
nĩa-nĩa. 原 2 7
54. Chã-hng lĩn ữ kúi é lãng khi khĩa\* tiãn-iá\*?
55. Thng-á chít pau jĩ-jĩ kho·, lí bõeh bé kúi pau?
56. Lí é pit tí hít tẽ tôn-á-kha hia. (S)
57. Tí chia ữ chít liáp kãm-á, lĩn sãm-mĩh-lãng ải chĩa? (S)
58. Lí bé é thng-á chín hõ-chĩa, chít liáp ải kúi kho·?
59. Tái-oãn-õe m-sĩ lũng chín hõ-kóng, ữ chít-kĩa chín phái\*-  
kóng. (S) 原 3
60. Chít pún lí lũng ẽ-hiáu bẽ? (S)
61. Ỉn lũng bõeh khi, lí bõ ải khi, sĩ bô\*?
62. Kĩn-ả-jít góa chít é lãng bõeh thak-chheh nĩa-nĩa.
63. Góa chã-hng bõ chĩa-png, lũng chĩa kõe-chí nĩa-nĩa.
64. Lí koai\* mng nĩa-nĩa, lũng bõ koai\* thang-ả-mng.
65. Kĩn-ả-jít lí ữ khĩa ỏ·-tho·-bái lãi bô\*?
66. Lí sĩ bõeh bé ỏ·-tho·-bái ả-sĩ bõeh bé su-ku-tah?
67. Ủ lãng kóng Oãn-lĩm é kãm-á chín hõ-chĩa, ữ-iá\* bô\*?
68. Lí kóng ữ chít é Oãn-lĩm é Bók-su bõeh lãi chia thak-  
chheh, sĩ bô\*?
69. Góa chã-hng bõ khi chhít-thô, lũng tỉ pãng-keng khĩa\*-  
chheh.
70. Ỉ é pãng-keng é thang-ả-mng ữ koai\*, m-kũ mng bõ koai\*.

71. Chít keng sī lí é pāng-keng, sī bó·?
72. Chím-á ũ lāng tī piān-só· bó·?
73. Góa chà-hng káh kin-á-jit lóng iáu-bōe khi piān-só·.
74. Kin-á-jit góa é gin-á bōeh lái, só·-l̄ góa bó bōeh thak-chheh.
75. In-ūi kin-á-jit é keng-chio chin hó-chiah, só·-l̄ góa bōeh chiah nng-sá\* jí.
76. In-ūi góan thài-thài bó ái góa chiah-hun, só·-l̄ góa chím-á bó chiah.
77. Lí chít tái su-ku-tah ũ chin hó-khia bó·?
78. Nā bōeh khi sóa\*-téng, khia su-ku-tah phái\*-khia.
79. Che chấp kho· kúi tè? (S)
80. Góa é chí\* ũ tī lí hit té tōh-á-téng bó·?
81. Oân-lím é sóa\*-téng góa tia\*-tia\* khi.
82. Tī í-á-téng hit pàu hun sī lí é á-sī góa ê?
83. Lín kúi é bōeh chiah thng-á, kúi é bōeh chiah koe-chí?
84. Hit nng é gin-á tia\*-tia\* ái chiah thng-á.
85. Í khi khoa\* chít chhut tiān-ía\* ái chiah chít pàu thng-á.
86. Tái-oân-lāng lóng iōng tī chiah-png, Bī-kók-lāng ũ bó·?
87. Tī tōh-á-téng ũ tī, tó-á káp chhiám-á; lí nā bē-hiáu iōng tī, chhia\* lí iōng tó-á káp chhiám-á chiah.
88. Góa sī kóng "tó-á", m-sī kóng "tōh-á".
89. Tī chiah-png-keng é tōh-á-téng ũ chít-kóa tó-á bó·?
90. Tī hit té tōh-á hia ũ chít-kóa koe-chí, lí ái chiah bó·?

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED "S"

7. We have a lot of bananas (lit., our family/home has a lot of banana trees). (Though "chin-chē" is used here, to show we mean "trees" we may not omit the measure.)
28. I have only 1 child now. ("Now" indicates that this is a young parent.)
42. The students want to study but don't have any desks; do you know how to buy them (i.e., are you able to pick out the right kind)?
49. Your pen is by that table leg.
56. Your pen is under that table.
57. There's a tangerine here; which of you wants it?
59. Not every Taiwanese word is easy to pronounce, some of it is difficult (to pronounce).
60. Do you understand this whole book?/Do you know everything in this book?
79. How many pieces of this can you get for \$10?

BUN-TĒQUESTIONSAnswer The Following Questions:

1. Chit<sup>3</sup> pau<sup>7</sup> hun<sup>2</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> jī<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>; sá\*<sup>7</sup> pau<sup>2</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> lōa<sup>3</sup>-chē? 60.
2. Âng<sup>3</sup> Siān<sup>3</sup>-sī\*<sup>3</sup>, lín<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> tē<sup>2</sup> tōh<sup>2</sup>-á, kúi<sup>1</sup> tē<sup>2</sup> í<sup>1</sup>-á?
3. Tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>1</sup> chīm<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> hāk<sup>3</sup>-seng<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>3</sup> thāk<sup>3</sup>-chheh?
4. Tī<sup>3</sup> hia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> pūn<sup>1</sup> chheh? Lóng<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ē, sī<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?
5. Chā<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khōa\*<sup>2</sup> tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\*<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?
6. Lí<sup>1</sup> hīt<sup>2</sup> nīa<sup>1</sup> khò<sup>•</sup> Tái<sup>7</sup>-oān<sup>7</sup>-chī\*<sup>2</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> lōa<sup>3</sup>-chē?
7. Tī<sup>3</sup> hia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup> tē<sup>2</sup> tōh<sup>2</sup>-á, cháp<sup>3</sup>-gōa<sup>3</sup> tē<sup>2</sup> í<sup>1</sup>-á, sī<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?
8. Lí<sup>1</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> keng<sup>7</sup>-chio<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Chia<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> jí? Ū<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?
9. Í<sup>7</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> khōa\*<sup>2</sup>-chheh, lí<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> chheh<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> khōa\*<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?

10. 7 1 7 1 2 1 1 7 1 7  
 í bô sa\*; lí bôeh kúi nía hō í? (Note: In "kúi + Measure", the measure does not change tone, since "kúi" indicates emphasis on the number.)
11. 1 3 1 2 3 3 1 1 1 2 3 1  
 Lí ũ thính-bé bô? Ū kúi tái? Lí hít tái bē phái\*-khĩa, sī bô?
12. 7 7 7 1 3  
 Tái-oân-ōe chín hó-kóng, sī bô?
13. (Tī) 3 1 3 1 7 3 1 7 3  
 lán chia ũ kúi é Lâu-su, kúi é hək-seng?
14. (Tī) 3 1 3 7 3 3 3 3 7 3  
 lí hĩa ũ thính-á bô? Bôeh chít liáp hō í chĩa bô?
15. 2 3 3 3  
 Hít nng nía sī sa\*, sī bô?
16. (Tī) 3 1 3 7 2 3 7  
 lán chia ũ kúi chāng chhīu-á? Hít chāng sī keng-chio, sī bô?
17. 1 2 3 7 7 7 3  
 Lí hít kí sī Tái-oân é iān-pit, sī bô?
18. 1 3 3 7 3 3 1 3 1 3  
 Lí nā ũ chín-chē chí\*, bôeh chít-kóa hō góa iōng bô?
19. 1 3 1 7 7 7 1 3 1 7 3  
 Lí ũ kúi é Tái-oân-pêng-iú? In lóng sī hó pêng-iú, sī bô?
20. 7 3 2 3 1 3 2 3 3  
 In m khi khòa\* tiān-ía\*; lán nng é lái-khi khòa\*, hó bô?
21. 1 2 3 3 1 7 7 1 1 1  
 Góa bôeh chĩa-png; góa chia ũ tó-á, bô chhiám-á; lí hĩa ũ bô?
22. 1 7 2 3 1 2 1 3 3 7 7  
 Góa chín ài chĩa Bí-kók-hun, lí ũ bô? Chít kí hō góa.
23. 2 3 3 1 7 7 3  
 Hít nng é sī lí é pêng-iú, sī bô?
24. 7 1 1 3 1 2 1 7 2 2 3  
 Í kóng lí ũ thính-bé. Lí é thính-bé tī tōh-ūi?
25. 3 1 1 3 3 1 3 1 3 3  
 Tī í-á-téng ũ chít-kóa chheh, sī lí é, sī bô?
26. 3 7 1 3 7 7 3 3 1 3  
 Tī Tái-pak lí ũ Tái-oân-pêng-iú bô? Ū kúi é?
27. 1 7 1 7 1 7 3 3 3 3  
 Lí kìn-á-jit khĩa ó-tho-bái lái thək-chheh, sī bô?
28. 1 2 7 7 2 3 3  
 Chhĩa\*-mng, lí bôeh khĩa kí-chhia khi soa\*-ninh bô?
29. 7 3 3 1 7 3  
 In nng é sī hó pêng-iú, sī bô? (I.e., friends of each other, not necessarily friends of yours.)

TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. Is that scooter you're riding a good one?
2. How many of them went to Hsinchu yesterday?  
More than 50 of them went.
3. This piece (of candy) is for you.
4. Do you want some candy? (Here's) a piece for you.
5. There are many books in his room.
6. What (kind of) tree is that?  
That's a tangerine tree.
7. Is that book you're studying difficult?
8. Who's that outside sitting under the tree reading a book?
9. May I ask you where the toilet is?
10. That isn't a tangerine tree, is it?  
No, it isn't.
11. Are all the people inside ministers?
12. Not all the kids are outside; there are several inside.

-----

The Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences:

1. Lí teh khia hit tái su-ku-tah ũ hó-khia bô? OR: Lí khia hit tái su-ku-tah ũ hó-khia bô?  
Lí khia hit tái su-ku-tah ũ hó-khia bô?
2. Chá-hng in kui ê khi sin-tek?  
Ū gô-chap-gôa ê khi.
3. Chit liap (tè) hó lí chiah.
4. Lí ai chiah thng-á bô? Chit tè (liap) hó lí chiah.  
(Grammar Note 3. B.)
5. Í ê pâng-keng ũ chin-chê chheh. / Ū chin-chê chheh tí í ê pâng-keng.
6. Hit châng sī sim-mih chhīu-á?  
Hit châng sī kám-á.

7. Lí<sup>1</sup> tén<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>1</sup> phái\*-thak<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>?
8. Chē<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> gōa-bīn<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> chhīu-á<sup>3</sup>-kha<sup>1</sup> hia<sup>2</sup> tén<sup>2</sup> khóa\*-chheh<sup>2</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>  
sī<sup>3</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup>-lâng?
9. Chhia\*-mng<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>7</sup>/Chion<sup>2</sup>-mng<sup>7</sup> lí<sup>7</sup>, piān<sup>3</sup>-só<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> tōh-ūi<sup>3</sup>?
10. Hít<sup>2</sup> châng<sup>3</sup> m̄-sī<sup>3</sup> kām-á<sup>7</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
Sī<sup>3</sup>, he<sup>3</sup> m̄-sī<sup>3</sup>.
11. (Tī<sup>3</sup>) lāi-bīn<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> Bók-su<sup>3</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
12. Gín-á<sup>1</sup> m̄-sī<sup>3</sup> lóng<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> gōa-kháu<sup>3</sup>; ū<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-kóa<sup>1</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> lāi-té<sup>3</sup>.



## Tē Pēh Khò

## Lesson 8

## TŪI-ŌE

## DIALOGUE

H = Hák-seng      Tēh siōng-khò 行工課  
 L = Lāu-su 老師 (Tī lán hák-hāu) 行嘅學校

H1: Lāu-su, gáu-chá, lí sī iōng-kia\*-é lái hák-hāu, sī bó\*?

L1: M-sī, góa khía su-ku-tah lái.

H2: Lí tui chhù-nih khía lái hák-hāu, ái khía jī-cháp hun bó\*?

L2: M-bían; khía chap hun nīa-nīa.

H3: Lāu-su, lí chít tiám-cheng ái siōng-khò bó\*?

L3: Ài, lán káu-tiam khai-sí. Kia 行, lán lái-khi káu-sek. Lí chá-hng thak tē kúi khò? 收字

H4: Góa chá-hng thak tē pēh khò.

L4: Chít tiám-cheng lán kónh lái thak tē pēh khò; lán lái khoa\* chít-páh lak-chap-gō\* iah. Lán tui chia khai-sí, kónh thak chít pái, hó bó\*? 165R

H5: Lāu-su, chít kú góa ū chít é bün-tê.

L5: Ū sim-mih bün-tê? Chhia\* lí mng.

H6: Chít kú é i-sù góa chái-ia\*, m-kú an-chóa\* tī chia bó chóan-im? 行通

L6: Lí sī kóng: "chheng" káp "bān", sī bó\*? Ū-ia\*, lán nā kóng: "chít chheng kho\*" á-sī "chít-bān kho\*" lóng ū chóan-im. M-kú nā-sī "chít-chheng nng-páh kho\*", "chheng" m-bían chóan-im; nā kóng: "chít-bān nng-chheng kho\*", "bān" sī m-bían chóan-im. Che lán ái chái-ia\*.

H7: Lāu-su, chhia\*-mng, "kúi" sī tē jī sia\*, sī bó\*?

- L7: "Kùi" sī<sup>3</sup> tē<sup>3</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup> sia\*. Nā<sup>3</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> "kúi", hoat-im<sup>2</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> bŭn-tê.  
 H8: Tó<sup>7</sup>-sīa<sup>3</sup> Lâu-su. Láng<sup>7</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> Tái-oán-ōe<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-kóng; ũ<sup>3</sup>-iá\*!  
 ũ<sup>3</sup>-iá\*!  
 L8: Nā<sup>3</sup> tīa\*-tīa\*<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> kóng, tīa\*-tīa\*<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> hók-sip, góa<sup>1</sup>  
 khòa\*, bē<sup>3</sup> phái\*-kóng. Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> bŭn-tê<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>? Nā<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> bŭn-tê, lán<sup>1</sup>  
 chīm-á<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> hā<sup>3</sup>-khò.  
 H9: Lâu-su, hit<sup>2</sup> ũi<sup>3</sup> Lím<sup>7</sup> Lâu-su bŭn-á-chài<sup>7</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> chhia\*<sup>1</sup> lán<sup>1</sup>  
 chia<sup>3</sup>-pŭng, lí<sup>1</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?  
 L9: Boeh. Lín<sup>1</sup> hák-seng<sup>3</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>3</sup> bē?  
 H10: Góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, lóng<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> khi.

SĪN-GĪ

VOCABULARY

1. ǎn-chóa\*/chóa\*-iū\* 怎樣 / 怎麼 how/what/why/what happened.  
 Chá-hng<sup>7</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ǎn-chóa\*<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> lái? Why didn't you come  
 yesterday?  
 He<sup>2</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> ǎn-chóa\*<sup>1</sup> chò? How are you going to do that?  
 I<sup>7</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> ǎn-chóa\*? What did he say?
2. bān 萬 ten thousand/10,000.  
 Che<sup>2</sup> ǎi<sup>1</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> bān? How many tens of thousands (of  
 dollars) does this cost?  
 Che<sup>2</sup> ǎi<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-bān. This costs ten thousand.  
 Che<sup>2</sup> ǎi<sup>1</sup> bān<sup>3</sup> kúi? What amount of money between 10,000  
 and 20,000 does this cost?  
 Che<sup>2</sup> ǎi<sup>1</sup> bān<sup>3</sup> sá\*-sī<sup>2</sup> kho\*. This costs \$13,000 or \$14,000.
3. bŭn-á-chài/hán-á-chài 明天 tomorrow.  
 Bŭn-á-chài<sup>7</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>? Are you going tomorrow?

4. bō<sup>7</sup> í-sù<sup>2</sup> 沒意思 no meaning/meaningless/senseless/  
ridiculous; Nonsense!

Chít kù<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> í-sù<sup>2</sup>. This sentence is meaningless.

Lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>2</sup> í-sù<sup>2</sup>. If you don't go it will be  
ridiculous./Your not going wouldn't be right at all.

5. bün-tê<sup>3</sup> 問題 problem/question; exam question. (Measure for  
"problem/question": ê; for "exam question": tiâu.)

Nā<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> bün-tê<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> mng<sup>3</sup> Lāu-su. If you have any question  
you should ask the teacher.

Chít<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>1</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> sīm-mih<sup>2</sup> bün-tê<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Do you have any  
questions about this lesson?

6. chai/chai-ia<sup>7</sup>\* 知道 to know (a fact)/know about.  
(Negative: "m<sup>3</sup>-chai/m<sup>3</sup>-chai-ia<sup>7</sup>\*" --- can also mean  
"to wonder".)

Í<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> chai/chai-ia<sup>7</sup>\* bō<sup>3</sup>? Where did he go,  
do you know? OR: Do you know where he went?

Gó<sup>1</sup>a m<sup>3</sup>-chai. I don't know.

Gó<sup>1</sup>a chai-ia<sup>7</sup>\* í<sup>7</sup> sē<sup>2</sup>\* sīm-mih<sup>1</sup>, m<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> m<sup>3</sup>-chai<sup>7</sup> í<sup>7</sup> sīm-mih<sup>2</sup> mīa.  
I know his surname but not his given name.

M<sup>3</sup>-chai<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>. I wonder if anybody is  
going.

7. chheng 千 thousand.

Chít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thih-bé<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chheng-jī<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>, ē<sup>3</sup> kùi<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>? This  
bicycle costs \$1,200; is that expensive? (Note "ē"  
with undesirable quality.)

Bē<sup>3</sup> kùi<sup>3</sup>; chin<sup>7</sup> siok<sup>7</sup>. That's not expensive; it's  
very cheap.

Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> chheng? How many thousand do you want/need?

8. chiah<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>2</sup> 這些 these. ("Chiah<sup>2</sup> ê", unlike "chit = this", is  
never followed by the measure of the noun modified.)

Chiah<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chheh<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>7</sup>. lí<sup>1</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? I'll give these books  
to you; do you want them?

Gó<sup>1</sup>a ài<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>3</sup> nīa-nīa. I only want this one.

Chiān<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chí\*<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>1</sup> sīm-mīh-lāng ê? Whose money is this?

Note: We may consider "chí\*" to be plural.

9. chóan 轉 to change.

chóan-sia\*/chóan-im to change the tone (on a Taiwanese word).

Tē<sup>3</sup>-it<sup>2</sup> sia\* chóan<sup>1</sup> tē<sup>3</sup>-chhī<sup>2</sup>t sia\*. The 1st tone changes to the 7th tone. ↘ ↗

10. ē 會 will/shall. (Sign of Future Tense; Negative: "bē".)

ī<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> lâi bē<sup>3</sup>? Will he/she come? ("Bē" here is the sign of the interrogative.)

Bē, ī<sup>7</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> lâi. No, he/she won't come.

11. hā-khò 下課 to finish class (end of the period).

līn<sup>1</sup> kú<sup>1</sup> tiám hā-khò<sup>3</sup>? What time is your class over?

Hā-khò<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Are you going anywhere after class?

12. hāk-hāu 學校 school. (Measure: as building: "keng"; as an organization: "ê". But in practice people may not distinguish that clearly.)

ī<sup>7</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chhī<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> hāk-hāu<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> Lāu-su<sup>3</sup>. He's a teacher at this school.

Chhī<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> hāk-hāu<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> lōa-chē<sup>3</sup> hāk-seng<sup>3</sup>? How many students does this school have? (Note: "lōa-chē", unlike "kú", does not require the measure of the noun modified.)

13. hiāh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> 那些 those. ("Hiāh ê" is never followed by the measure of the noun modified.)

Hiāh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>2</sup> hia<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> chhōng-sia\*h? What are those people doing there?

Tī<sup>3</sup> tōh-á-téng<sup>1</sup> hiāh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chhiām-á<sup>1</sup> iáu-bōe<sup>3</sup> sé. Those forks on the table haven't been washed yet.

14. hoát<sup>2</sup>-im 發音 pronounce; pronunciation.

Chít jī àn-chóá\* hóat-im? How do you pronounce this character?

Góá chím-á khài-sí<sup>1</sup> tēh thak hóat-im. I am now beginning the study of pronunciation. (Note the phrase "khài-sí tēh": "I have (now) begun and am studying".)

15. hók<sup>3</sup>-síp 複習 review one's lessons.

Lán chím-á lái hók-síp. Let's review now.

Ái hók-síp tē-pēh khò. We must review Ls 8.

16. hun 分 minute (of time). (Can be used of the time on the clock and in Time How Long phrases.)

Chím-á sá\*-tiám chap hun. It's 3:10 now.

Chít khò góá síá jī-chap hun. I wrote this lesson in 20 minutes.

17. hún<sup>7</sup>-cheng 分鐘 minute (of time; used only in a Time How Long expression; less common than "hun").

Túì chia khi hia ái kha kúí hún-cheng? How many minutes does it take to ride from here to there?

Ái kha sí-chap-gō\* hun. It takes 45 minutes.

18. hún<sup>1</sup>-pit 粉筆 chalk. (Measure: ki)

Ō-pang hia ū hún-pit bó\*? Is there chalk at (OR: on) the blackboard. (Note the necessity of saying "hia".)

Iōng hún-pit síá. Write with chalk.

19. í<sup>2</sup>-sù 意思 meaning/idea. (Measure: ê)

Che sí góá é í-sù. This is what I mean./This is my idea.

Chít kù é í-sù sí sím-mín? What's the meaning of this sentence?

20. iáh/phi\* 頁 page (of a book).

Hít pún chheh ũ kúi iáh? How many pages are there in that book?

Hít pún ũ nng-páh-gōa iáh. It has over 200 pages.

21. ìn 回答 to answer.

Gōa mng (lí), lí ìn (gōa). I'll ask and you answer.  
(Teacher to student.)

Lí ãn-chóa\* bō ìn? Why don't (OR: didn't) you answer?

22. iōng + Verb + ê (OR: ēng + Verb + ê)

by means of. (This construction emphasizes the Verb; the tone on "ê" follows the 1-3-7 Rule.)

Gōa iōng-kia\*-ê lâi. I came here by walking (not any other way).

Ai ēng-sía-ê. You must write it. (Don't depend on oral communication.)

✓ 23. kâu-sek/kâu-sit 教室 classroom. (Measure: keng)

Tī kâu-sek ũ hún-pit bō? Is there chalk in the classroom?

Hák-seng tī kâu-sek tēh thak-chheh. The students are in the classroom studying.

24. khài-sí 開始 begin; beginning.

Kúi tiám bōeh khài-sí? What time do we start?

Chim-á khài-sí thak tē-pēh khò. Now we begin Ls 8.

25. khò 課 lesson.

Chít khò chin hō-thak. This lesson is very easy.

Chít pún chheh ũ kúi khò? How many lessons are there in this book?

26. không 零 zero/cypher. (Used to express "zero" when it appears between 2 numerals, including in time on the clock; see Grammar Note 8 B.)

Nhĩng-pāh không gō̄ khō. \$205.

Chĩt-bān không gō̄-chāp khō. \$10,050.

Chĩm-á chāp-jĩ-tĩam không káu hun. It's now 12:09

27. kĩa\* 走/行 to walk. (Later we will use "kĩa\*" of machinery/engines/watches/vehicles to mean "run".)

Gó̄a bōeh iōng-kĩa\*-ê khī. I'll walk there.

28. koh 再/又 again/also; and (a connective for verbs and modifiers); another/more/take a further step.

Chhĩa\* lí kōh kōng chĩt pái. Please say it again.

Keng-chio chin siok kōh chin hó-chiah. Bananas are very cheap and very tasty. (Note that in connecting modifiers "and" is not expressed by "kah/kap".)

29. kù 句 (Noun) a word of 2 or more characters/phrase/sentence. ("Kù" is also the Measure for "oē = words", Ls. 3.)

Chĩt kù ũ sīm-mĩh i-sù? What does this sentence (expression) mean?

Chĩt kù oē chin ũ i-sù. This is a meaningful sentence. (It has a good meaning.)

30. kùi 貴 expensive. (See Ls 3, Voc. No. 8: "kùi = honorable".) (Opposite of "siok", No. 38.)

Ē kùi bē? Is it expensive? OR: Was it expensive?

Bē kùi. It isn't (wasn't) expensive.

Ī hĩt nĩa sa\* chin kùi. His shirt was very expensive.

31. Lán lái + Verb 我們來 Let's ... (Similar to Ls 5, Voc. No. 19: "Lán lái-khī".)

Lán lái sĩa-jĩ. Let's write.

32. m̄<sup>3</sup>-bián 不用 / 不必 there's no need/it's not necessary.  
 Kín-á-jít m̄<sup>3</sup>-bián thák<sup>3</sup>-chheh. No school today.  
 ĩ<sup>7</sup> bōeh khi; lí<sup>1</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-bián khi. He's going; you don't have to go.
33. m̄ng 問 to ask (a question); to greet.  
 Lí<sup>1</sup> ǎn<sup>2</sup>-chóa\* bō<sup>7</sup> m̄ng<sup>7</sup> góa? Why didn't you ask me?  
 Nā<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu, ǎi<sup>2</sup> m̄ng<sup>7</sup> láng. If you don't know, you must ask someone.
34. 黑板 黑板 blackboard. (Measure: tè)  
 ǒ<sup>7</sup>-pang hiáh<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> jī lí<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu bē<sup>3</sup>? Do you know those characters on the blackboard?
35. pah 百 hundred.  
 Chít<sup>3</sup> kí<sup>7</sup> bān<sup>3</sup>-lián<sup>7</sup>-pit ǎi<sup>2</sup> kúí<sup>1</sup> pah? How many hundred (dollars) does a fountain pen cost?  
 Bō<sup>7</sup> kúí<sup>1</sup> pah. Not many.
36. pái/kái/piàn 次 / 遍 turn/time/occasion.  
 Góa<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> pái<sup>3</sup> nīa-nīa. I only came once.  
 Chít<sup>2</sup> jī<sup>1</sup> chhí<sup>1</sup>a\* lí<sup>1</sup> sí<sup>1</sup> gō<sup>3</sup> pái. Please write this character 5 times.
37. sia\* 聲 tone/sound/noise/voice. (Measure: ê) ("Tone" refers to the 7 Taiwanese tones. At times the "im" of "hoat-im" - Voc. No. 14 - is used in the same sense.)  
 Chít<sup>2</sup> jī<sup>1</sup> tē<sup>3</sup> kúí<sup>1</sup> sia\*? What's the tone on this word?  
 He sí<sup>3</sup> sí<sup>1</sup>m-mih<sup>2</sup> sia\*? What's that noise/sound?
38. síok 便宜 cheap. (Opposite of No. 30.)  
 Lí<sup>1</sup> hīt<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thín<sup>2</sup>-bé<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> síok<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Was your bicycle cheap?  
 Bō<sup>7</sup> síok; chín<sup>7</sup> kùi. Not cheap; it was very expensive.



39. siōng<sup>3</sup>-khò 上課 to have class/to be in class.

kú<sup>1</sup>i tiám<sup>3</sup> siōng-khò? What time is class?

Ī<sup>1</sup> chím-á<sup>2</sup> tē<sup>3</sup> siōng-khò. He's in class now.

40. tē 第 (Prefix to ordinal number/prefix to a number in a series and to "kú<sup>1</sup>i", Ls 5, Voc. No. 18.)

Tē<sup>3</sup> kú<sup>1</sup>i khò? Which lesson?

Tē<sup>3</sup>-ít<sup>2</sup> khò. Lesson one.

Tē<sup>3</sup> kú<sup>1</sup>i iáh? Which page?

Tē<sup>3</sup> sá<sup>7</sup>\*-páh<sup>2</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>\*-cháp<sup>3</sup>-chhít<sup>2</sup> iáh. Page 357.  
357

41. tíam 點 dot/spot/speck/point/drop/small amount/o'clock.  
(In this lesson "tíam" will be used only in reference to the time of day.)

Chím-á<sup>1</sup> kú<sup>1</sup>i tíam? What time is it?

1) Sá<sup>7</sup>\*-tiám-pòá\*. 3:30.

2) Tiám-gōa<sup>7</sup>. It's after one o'clock (and before two). (This is the "gōa" of Ls 7, Voc. No. 13.)

42. tiám-cheng 鐘點 / 小時 hour(s) (used only in Time How Long expressions); class period.

Khía<sup>7</sup> thín<sup>2</sup>-bé<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hia<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> khiá<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> tiám-cheng. It takes an hour to ride a bike there.

Lí<sup>1</sup> kín-á-jít<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup> kú<sup>1</sup>i tiám-cheng? How many hours will you study today? (Note: this usually means: "How many classes?")

Chít<sup>2</sup> tiám-cheng lí<sup>1</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> siōng-khò<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Do you have class this period?

43. tòe 跟 to follow/follow after; imitate.

Ī<sup>1</sup> tōe<sup>2</sup> gōa<sup>1</sup> thak<sup>1</sup>. Read this after me.

Ī<sup>1</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>2</sup> tōe<sup>2</sup> gōa<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khiá<sup>2</sup>\* tián-íá<sup>3</sup>\*. Yesterday he went with me to a movie. ("Tòe" implies that I treated him to the movie.)

44. tùi 從/對 from/to/as to/with regard to; (with verb of motion) to pass through/pass by.

ĭ tùi<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hia. He went from here to there.

ĭ tùi<sup>2</sup> gin-á<sup>1</sup> kóng. He said it to the child/He told the child (children).

ĭ tùi<sup>2</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó. He is good to me.

45. ūi 位 (Measure for persons; used in place of "ê" to show special respect.)

Chit<sup>2</sup> ūi<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>1</sup> sīm<sup>2</sup>-mīn<sup>7</sup> siān-si\*? Who is this gentleman?  
(This is a polite way of asking a third party this information in the presence of the gentleman.)

-----  
TŪI-ŌE É HOAN-ĒK      TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

In Class

H1: Good morning, Teacher; you walked to school, did you?

L1: No, I rode the scooter.

H2: Does it take 20 minutes to ride from home to school?

L2: Not that long; it only takes 10 minutes. ("M<sub>3</sub>-bián", lit., "It is not needed OR necessary" to ride 20 minutes.)

H3: Do you have class this period, Teacher?

L3: Yes, we begin at 9 o'clock. Let's go to the classroom (lit., Walk, let's go to the classroom). Which lesson did you study yesterday?

H4: Yesterday I studied Lesson 8.

L4: This period let's study Ls 8 again; let's look at page 165. Let's begin (from) here and read it once more, OK?

H5: I have a question about this sentence, Teacher.

L5: What is the problem? Please ask.

H6: I know the meaning of this sentence. but why don't you change tone here?

L6: Are you speaking of "thousand" and "ten thousand"? It's true that if we say: "one thousand dollars" or "ten thousand dollars", both change tone. But if we say "one thousand two hundred dollars", "thousand" does not have to change tone; if we say "ten thousand and (plus) two thousand dollars", there is no need to change the tone on "ten thousand". We have to know this.

H7: Let me ask you, teacher, "expensive" is in the 2nd tone, isn't it?

- L7: "Expensive" is in the 3rd tone. If we say "kúi" that means the pronunciation is wrong. (He sī = That (circumstance) is.../The fact is that...) (Note: in the 2nd tone "kúi = ghost".)
- H8: Thank you, teacher. People say Taiwanese is not easy to speak (OR: pronounce); it's true! it's true!
- L8: If we're always speaking it and constantly reviewing, I don't think it's hard. Do you have any questions? If you don't have any questions let's end class now.
- H9: Teacher, that (distinguished) Teacher Lím is treating us to a meal tomorrow; are you going?
- L9: Yes. Are all you students going? ("Ē" is Future Tense.)
- H10: I think everybody will go.

7  
BUN-HOAT                      GRAMMAR

1. FUTURE TENSE: "ē/bē"

A. Simple future is expressed by the use of "ē/bē" = "will/will not".

- a) 7.ē<sup>3</sup> lâi bē<sup>3</sup>?                      Will he/she come?
- 1) Ē, 7.ē<sup>3</sup> lâi.                      Yes, he/she will come.
- 2) Bē, 7.bē<sup>3</sup> lâi.

✓ B. Boeh - ē

1. In Ls 4 we learned that "ài" usually indicates a stronger sense of volition than "boeh".

- a) Gó<sup>1</sup>a bō<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>4</sup>.                      I'll go.
- b) Gó<sup>1</sup>a ài<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>4</sup>.                      I want to go.

2. But when "boeh" is contrasted with "ē", the ordinary sign of the Future Tense, there is usually some volition being expressed in "boeh", while "ē" is a mere statement of fact. Thus:

- a) Gó<sup>1</sup>a bō<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>4</sup>.                      I will go. (Very likely an indication of willingness.)
- b) Gó<sup>1</sup>a ē<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>4</sup>.                      I'll go. (No indication of any desire; a mere statement of the fact that I will go.)

2. BY MEANS OF:

iōng	VERB	ê
------	------	---

We use "iōng/ēng" to emphasize a verb indicating the means by which something is done. Frequently the phrase is translated into English simply by the main verb alone. The "ê" follows the 1-3-7 Rule for tone changes. (See Ls 4.)

Lī sī iōng-kîa\*-ê lâi, sī bô'?' You walked here, didn't you?

1) Sī, góa iōng-kîa\*-ê lâi.

2) M-sī, góa khîa thîh-bé lâi.

3. FACT and EXPECTATION

a) Lāu-su ū lâi bô'?' Did the teacher come? (Here we are inquiring about the fact of whether the teacher came.)

b) Lāu-su ū lâi bôe? Has the teacher come yet? (This means the teacher is expected to come.)

4. THE MEASURES "ê" and "ūi"

Lán chia ū kúi ūi Lāu-su? How many teachers are there here?

"Ūi" indicates respect for a person; but in informal speech it is not always necessary: "ê" may be used.

5. THE POLITE "lán"

In the sentence "Lán chia ū kúi ūi Lāu-su?", the use of "lán" would seem to indicate that both speaker and listener are in the same school. This is not necessarily so.

"Lán chia/Lán hia" can be very polite ways of saying "Your place here/there".

6. ADDRESSING A TEACHER

A. A teacher is ordinarily addressed as "Teacher". If his surname is used, the tone of the surname changes. (Ls 3: Surnames.)

a) Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su, gâu<sup>7</sup>-chá.

b) Ông<sup>7</sup> Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su, lǐ<sup>1</sup> kìn<sup>7</sup>-ǎ-jít<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> chá<sup>1</sup> lâi. Mr. Ông, you're very early (earlier than usual) today.

B. A woman teacher is more frequently addressed by her maiden name rather than by her husband's surname. If her maiden name is Tiu\* and her husband's name is Ông, she is usually addressed as "Tiu\* Lâu-su", occasionally as "Ông Thái-thái", but never as "Ông Lâu-su".

太太

## 7. EXPRESSIONS OF TIME - Position in the Sentence

The position in the sentence of expressions of time differs according to whether it is Time Within Which (to be studied later), Time When or Time How Long. (In English these expressions may precede or follow the verb.)

A. Expressions of TIME WHEN, the point at which the action of the verb takes place, precede the verb:

a) ǐ<sup>7</sup> chà<sup>7</sup>-hng lâi. He came yesterday.

b) Chhòa<sup>2</sup> Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su kìn<sup>7</sup>-ǎ-jít<sup>1</sup> ẽ<sup>3</sup> lâi. Teacher Chhòa will come today.

今天

B. TIME HOW LONG, the length of time that the action of the verb takes, follows the verb. See Dial. H2 and L2:

a) ǐ<sup>2</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> jǐ<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> hun<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Do you have to ride for 20 minutes?

M<sup>3</sup>-bián; khĩa<sup>7</sup> chap<sup>3</sup> hun<sup>3</sup> nĩa<sup>3</sup>-nĩa<sup>3</sup>. No (you don't need 20 minutes); it only takes 10 minutes.

b) ǐ<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak<sup>7</sup> sǎ\*<sup>7</sup> lé-pài<sup>1</sup>. He went to Taipei and stayed there 3 weeks. (In English this is the Past Tense; he is back home now.)

c) ǐ<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak<sup>7</sup> sǎ\*<sup>7</sup> lé-pài<sup>1</sup> ǎ<sup>3</sup>. He went to Taipei and has been there for 3 weeks. (NB. The use of "a" is an indication that he is still in Taipei. As in any language, such nuances are important for the meaning.)

8. NUMERALSA. Tone Changes on Numerals.

1. Numbers under one thousand always change tone (according to the regular rule for tone changes).

sá\*<sup>7</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> é lāng.<sup>7</sup>                      chít<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> é lāng.<sup>7</sup>

nāng<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> é lāng.<sup>7</sup>

2. Chheng = 1000.

- a) If there is a numeral or the word "khòng" (see below: following "chheng", "chheng" does not change tone:

chít<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>3</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> é lāng.<sup>7</sup>

- b) If there is no numeral following "chheng", "chheng" does change tone:

chít<sup>3</sup>-chhēng<sup>7</sup> é lāng.<sup>7</sup>

3. The rule for "chheng" in 2 above also holds for "bān":

a) chít<sup>3</sup>-bān<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-chhēng<sup>7</sup> é lāng.<sup>7</sup>

b) chít<sup>3</sup>-bān<sup>3</sup> é lāng<sup>7</sup>/chít<sup>3</sup>-bān<sup>3</sup> lāng.<sup>3</sup>

B. Khòng = zero.1. RULE FOR USE OF "khòng":

No matter how many numerals in a figure, whenever there is a zero/zeros between any 2 numerals from 1 to 9, the zero/zeros are read "khòng" (once only):

a) 101 people      chít<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> khòng<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> é lāng.<sup>7</sup>

b) 707 books      chhít<sup>2</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> khòng<sup>2</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh.

c) 404 garments      sī<sup>2</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> khòng<sup>2</sup> sī<sup>2</sup> nīa<sup>1</sup> sa\*.

d) 902 vehicles      káu<sup>1</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> khòng<sup>2</sup> nāng<sup>3</sup> tái.

2. TONE RULE:

- a) When used before "khòng", "pah" (= "hundred") changes tone. "Chheng" (= "thousand") and "bān" (= "ten thousand") do not change tone before "khòng".

- a) 308 doors      sá\*<sup>7</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> không<sup>2</sup> péh<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> mng.  
 b) 1,004 people      chít<sup>3</sup>-chheng không<sup>2</sup> sĩ<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lêng.  
 c) 10,400 (trees)      chít<sup>3</sup>-bân không<sup>2</sup> sĩ<sup>2</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> châng.

3. PRACTICE: read the numbers on the left without looking at the romanization:

- a) 107      chít<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> không<sup>2</sup> chhit.  
 b) 3,037      sá\*<sup>7</sup>-chheng không<sup>2</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-chhit.  
 c) 50,001 people      gô<sup>3</sup>-bân không<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lêng. (Note that "không" is not repeated.)

4. "Không" with TIME OF DAY.

The rule for the use of "không" in No. 1 above can be applied to the Time of Day: if there is a zero between the hour and the minute, read it "không":

- a) 1:01      chít<sup>3</sup>-tiám không<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> hun.  
 b) 2:02      nng<sup>3</sup>-tiám không<sup>2</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> hun.  
 c) 3:05      sá\*<sup>7</sup>-tiám không<sup>2</sup> gô<sup>3</sup> hun.  
 d) 9:09      káu<sup>1</sup>-tiám không<sup>2</sup> káu<sup>1</sup> hun.  
 But: e) 9:10      káu<sup>1</sup>-tiám chấp<sup>3</sup> hun.

NB. The rule for the use of "không" is as stated above. But today there is a tendency to drop "không".

C. HOW TO READ HIGH FIGURES.

The first principle to remember is that while the Western world begins with "thousand" as the basic number for large amounts, the Oriental begins with "ten thousand". Thus 250,000 is 250 thousand in the West but 25 ten thousands in the East.

TO READ:      250,000      251,111

1) Rewrite the figure without commas:

250000      251111

2) Counting from right to left, put a period after (every) 4 units:

25.0000      25.1111

3) Write "bān" in place of the period:

25 bān 0000

25 bān 1111

4) Read the 1st block (25) plus "bān" (plus whatever follows):

25 bān            25 bān chít<sup>3</sup>-chheng chít<sup>3</sup>-pāh<sup>2</sup> cháp<sup>3</sup>-it

-----  
How do you read the following numbers? (The romanization follows.)

a) 100,000      b) 500,000      c) 900,000      d) 120,000

e) 185,000      f) 166,332      g) 274,709      h) 621,050

a) cháp<sup>3</sup>-bān.      b) gō<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-bān.      c) káu<sup>1</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-bān.

d) cháp<sup>3</sup>-jī<sup>3</sup>-bān.      e) cháp<sup>3</sup>-pēh<sup>2</sup> bān gō<sup>3</sup>-chheng.

f) cháp<sup>3</sup>-lāk<sup>3</sup> bān lāk<sup>3</sup>-chheng sá<sup>7</sup>\*-pāh<sup>2</sup> sá<sup>7</sup>\*-cháp<sup>3</sup>-jī.

g) jī<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-chhit<sup>2</sup> bān sī<sup>2</sup>-chheng chhit<sup>2</sup>-pāh<sup>2</sup> khǒng<sup>2</sup> káu.

h) lāk<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-jī<sup>3</sup> bān chít<sup>3</sup>-chheng khǒng<sup>2</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-cháp.

Note tones on "bān" and "chheng".  
-----

D. FOR SHORT: "khó<sup>7</sup>-it": "pāh<sup>2</sup>-it kho<sup>7</sup>", etc.

I. For every dime from \$1.10 to \$1.90, the following abbreviations are commonly used:

khó<sup>7</sup>-it    khó<sup>7</sup>-jī    khó<sup>7</sup>-sa\*    khó<sup>7</sup>-sì    khó<sup>7</sup>-pòà\*

khó<sup>7</sup>-lāk    khó<sup>7</sup>-chhit    khó<sup>7</sup>-pēh    khó<sup>7</sup>-káu

(Do NOT use "chít = one" with these expressions.)

II. For amounts in tens from \$110 to \$190 the following are commonly said: ("Chít = one" is dropped.)

pāh<sup>2</sup>-it<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>7</sup>            pāh<sup>2</sup>-jī<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>7</sup>            pāh<sup>2</sup>-sá<sup>7</sup>\* kho<sup>7</sup>

pāh<sup>2</sup>-sī<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>7</sup>            pāh<sup>2</sup>-gō<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>7</sup>            pāh<sup>2</sup>-lāk<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>7</sup>

pāh<sup>2</sup>-chhit<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>7</sup>            pāh<sup>2</sup>-pēh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>7</sup>            pāh<sup>2</sup>-káu<sup>1</sup> kho<sup>7</sup>



Note: When "kho\*" is understood it can be dropped.

Hít<sup>2</sup> nĩa<sup>1</sup> sa\*<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> lōa<sup>3</sup>-chē? Páh<sup>2</sup>-sa\*.

III. Amounts in hundreds from 1100 to 1900: ("chheng" changes tone)

chhēng <sup>7</sup> -it	chhēng <sup>7</sup> -jī	chhēng <sup>7</sup> -sa*
chhēng <sup>7</sup> -sì	chhēng <sup>7</sup> -gō*	chhēng <sup>7</sup> -lák
chhēng <sup>7</sup> -chhit	chhēng <sup>7</sup> -peh	chhēng <sup>7</sup> -káu

IV. Amounts in thousands from 11,000 to 19,000: ("bān" changes tone)

bān <sup>3</sup> -it	bān <sup>3</sup> -jī	bān <sup>3</sup> -sa*	bān <sup>3</sup> -sì	bān <sup>3</sup> -gō*
bān <sup>3</sup> -lák	bān <sup>3</sup> -chhit	bān <sup>3</sup> -peh	bān <sup>3</sup> -káu	

V. Read the numbers on the left without looking at the romanization.

1. 126 chít<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> jī<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-lák.
2. 274 nng<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> chhit<sup>2</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-sì.
3. 313 sa\*<sup>7</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> cháp<sup>3</sup>-sa\*.
4. 487 sì<sup>2</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-chhit.
5. 565 gō\*<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> lák<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-gō\*.
6. 659 lák<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> gō\*<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-káu.
7. 792 chhit<sup>2</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> káu<sup>1</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-jī.
8. 881 pēh<sup>2</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-it.
9. 944 káu<sup>1</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> sì<sup>2</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-sì.
10. 1,018 chít<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>2</sup> khōng<sup>2</sup> cháp<sup>3</sup>-peh.
11. 2,196 nng<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> káu<sup>1</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-lák.
12. 108 chít<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> khōng<sup>2</sup> peh.
13. 304 sa\*<sup>7</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> khōng<sup>2</sup> sì.
14. 707 chhit<sup>2</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> khōng<sup>2</sup> chhit.

15. 8,019 pēh<sup>2</sup>-chheng khōng<sup>2</sup> cháp<sup>3</sup>-káu.
16. 13,000 bān<sup>3</sup>-sa\*.
17. 15,010 chít<sup>3</sup>-bān gō<sup>3</sup>-chheng khōng<sup>2</sup> cháp<sup>3</sup>.
18. 1,600 chheng<sup>7</sup>-lák.
19. 9,089 káu<sup>1</sup>-chheng khōng<sup>2</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-káu.
20. 79,000 chhít<sup>2</sup>-bān<sup>3</sup>-káu.
21. 111,000 cháp<sup>3</sup>-ít<sup>2</sup>-bān chít<sup>3</sup>-chheng.
22. 33,333 sá<sup>7</sup>\*-bān sá<sup>7</sup>\*-chheng sá<sup>7</sup>\*-pāh<sup>2</sup> sá<sup>7</sup>\*-cháp<sup>3</sup>-sa\*.
23. 220,000 classrooms jī<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-jī<sup>3</sup>-bān<sup>3</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> káu<sup>2</sup>-sek.

LE-KU

PATTERN SENTENCES

1. ǎn<sup>2</sup>-chóa\*/chóa\*-iū\*

a) Lí ǎn<sup>1</sup>-chóa\* m̄<sup>3</sup> jip<sup>3</sup>-lái?

b) Chít kù<sup>2</sup> bōeh ǎn<sup>2</sup>-chóa\* thak? (P)

c) Ín<sup>7</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> bōeh khi<sup>7</sup>, lí ǎn<sup>2</sup>-chóa\* bō<sup>7</sup> ǎi khi?

d) Lí bō<sup>7</sup> khí<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>-tho<sup>1</sup>-bái lái; lí ǎn<sup>2</sup>-chóa\* lái? (P)

e) Í<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> mng<sup>7</sup> lí, lí ǎn<sup>2</sup>-chóa\* bō<sup>7</sup> ǎi ín<sup>7</sup>?

2. bān 10,000. cháp<sup>3</sup>-bān 100,000.

a) Lí ũ<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-bān<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?

b) Hít<sup>7</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>-tho<sup>1</sup>-bái chít<sup>3</sup>-bān<sup>3</sup> nng<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>7</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>, ũ<sup>3</sup> siok<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? (OR: bān-jī.)

c) Lí ǎi<sup>2</sup> cháp<sup>3</sup>-bān<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chheng<sup>2</sup>-sia\*h?

d) Hít<sup>7</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> chhù<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>2</sup> pēh<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> bān, lí ǎi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? (P)

3. bín<sup>7</sup>-ǎ<sup>1</sup>-chài/hán<sup>7</sup>-ǎ<sup>1</sup>-chài

a) Bín<sup>7</sup>-ǎ<sup>1</sup>-chài ǎi<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?

- b) ĩ kɪn-á-jít nã bô lâi, bɪn-á-chài ẽ lâi.  
 c) Lɪn bɪn-á-chài bœh lái góan chhù chhít-thô bô?  
 d) Góá m̄-sĩ kóng kɪn-á-jít bœh khi, sĩ bɪn-á-chài.  
 e) Bɪn-á-chài lí ũ bœh khi tóh-ũi bô?

佢住

## 4. bô ĩ-sù

- a) Hít chhút tiān-íá\* bô ĩ-sù, chín phái\*-khòa\*. (P)  
 b) ĩ sía chít kú oe bô sɪm-mih ĩ-sù. (P)  
 c) Chít pún chheh bô ĩ-sù, góá bô ải thak. (P)  
 d) ĩ kóng bœh lâi, m̄-kú bô lâi, chín bô ĩ-sù. (P)

## 5. bũn-tê

- a) Chít khò lí ũ sɪm-mih bũn-tê bô?  
 b) Lí ải góá chhia\* lí khòa\* tiān-íá\*, bô bũn-tê. (P)  
 c) Góá chhia\* m̄ng lí chít ẽ bũn-tê, hó bô?  
 d) ĩ tia\*-tia\* bô lái thak-chheh, ũ sɪm-mih bũn-tê,  
 sĩ bô? (P)

## 6. chai/chài-íá\*

- a) Lí bœh kóng sɪm-mih góá chai. (P)  
 b) Hít ẽ Lí Siān-sĩ\* lí chài-íá\* ĩ sɪm-mih m̄a bô?  
 c) ĩ ẽ lâi á bẽ lâi, lí chai-íá\* bô?  
 d) Chít khò góá lóng ẽ-hiáu; lí m̄ng, góá lóng' chài-íá\*.  
 e) Góá kóng ẽ oe lí lóng chài-íá\* ĩ-sù bô?

## 7. chheng

- a) Chít-chheng kho.  
 b) Hít tái thih-bé lí bé kú chheng?

吃餅
5445-  
 c) Tī<sup>3</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-pāng<sup>3</sup>-keng<sup>3</sup> hiāh<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> í<sup>1</sup>-toh<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>2</sup>-pāh<sup>2</sup>  
 siāp<sup>2</sup>-gō<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>. (Note that here "chheng" does not  
 change tone.)

d) Che nā<sup>3</sup> chheng<sup>7</sup>-gōa<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>, bē<sup>3</sup> kùi. (P)

### 8. chiah ê

a) Chiah<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> mih<sup>3</sup>-kīa\* sī<sup>3</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup>-lāng<sup>2</sup> ê?

b) Chiah<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> hāk<sup>3</sup>-seng<sup>3</sup>, m̄<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> Lāu<sup>3</sup>-su.

c) Tī<sup>3</sup> tōh<sup>1</sup>-ā<sup>1</sup>-téng<sup>7</sup> chiah<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> kōe<sup>1</sup>-chí<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
吃餅

d) Chiah<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> jī<sup>1</sup> chhia\* lí<sup>1</sup> kōh<sup>1</sup> sia<sup>3</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> pái, hó<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
吃餅

e) Chiah<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> chhū<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> bē, lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
吃餅

9. chóan      The meaning of the character is "to turn; to transfer"; "chóan" has other meanings also. At this time let us use it only of changing the tone on a word.

a) Chit<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>3</sup> nng<sup>3</sup>-pāh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> "chheng" m̄<sup>3</sup>-biān<sup>1</sup> chóan. (P)

b) Chheng<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> tē<sup>3</sup>-it<sup>2</sup> sia\*, só<sup>1</sup>-í<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chóan<sup>1</sup> tē<sup>3</sup>-chhit<sup>2</sup> sia\*.

c) Hōat<sup>2</sup>-im nā<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-híau, chīm<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>1</sup> lán<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> thak<sup>3</sup> chóan<sup>1</sup>-sia\*. (P)

d) Chit<sup>2</sup> jī<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> tē<sup>3</sup>-sá\* sia\*, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-biān<sup>1</sup> chóan.

10. ē      Sign of the Future Tense. The negative is "bē".

a) Í<sup>7</sup> bīn<sup>7</sup>-ā<sup>1</sup>-chài<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> lái.

b) Chhi<sup>7</sup> Siān<sup>3</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup>\* kīn<sup>7</sup>-ā<sup>1</sup>-jít<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> lái bē<sup>3</sup>?  
吃餅

1) ē, í<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> lái.

2) Bē, í<sup>7</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> lái.

c) Í<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> lái chia<sup>3</sup> thak<sup>7</sup> Tái<sup>7</sup>-oān<sup>7</sup>-ōe<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>?

d) Lí<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> í<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>, gōa<sup>1</sup> khò\*<sup>3</sup>, í<sup>7</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>.

e) Í<sup>7</sup> bīn<sup>7</sup>-ā<sup>1</sup>-chài<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Tái<sup>7</sup>-pak, só<sup>1</sup>-í<sup>1</sup> í<sup>7</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> lái.

## 11. hā-khò

- a) Lín kúi tiám ē hā-khò?
- b) Nā hā-khò, lí kân góa lái-khí bé mih-kīa\*, hó bô\*?
- c) Chím-á tēh siōng-khò, iáu-bōe hā-khò. (P)
- d) Hā-khò lí ū bōeh khi tōh-ūi bô\*?

## 12. hāk-hāu

- a) Tī chia ū kúi ē hāk-hāu?
- b) Chit ē hāk-hāu ū chin-chē hāk-seng.
- c) Lí kīn-á-jit ai khi hāk-hāu bô\*?
- d) Lín chit keng hāk-hāu ū kúi ūi Lāu-su?

## 13. hiah ê

- a) Hiah ē gin-á tīa\*-tīa\* lái chia chhit-thô.
- b) Hiah ē sa\* chin phái\*-khòa\*, m-hó bé.
- c) Tī tōh-á-téng hiah ē thng-á lí ū chiah bô\*?
- d) Tī góa-kháu hiah ē o\*-tho\*-bái sī tī lái-bīn hiah ê lâng ê.
- e) Góa bé hiah ē keng-chio ū hó-chiah bô\*?

## 14. hóat-im

- a) Góa chím-á tēh thak hóat-im nīa-nīa. (P)
- b) Ū láng kóng tē-sá\* sia\* ē hóat-im chin phái\*-kóng, ū-iá\* bô\*? (P)
- c) Hóat-im nā ē-híau, bōeh khi-sī thak tē ít khò, sī bô\*?
- d) Chit jī bōeh ăn-chóa\* hóat-im, lí ē-híau bē?

15. hók-síp

- a) Lán <sup>1</sup>chím-á <sup>1</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>hók-síp <sup>3</sup>tē-pēh <sup>2</sup>khò.
- b) Nā <sup>3</sup>bōeh <sup>3</sup>ē-hiáu <sup>1</sup>kóng, <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>3</sup>tīa\*-tīa\* <sup>3</sup>hók-síp.
- c) Lán <sup>1</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>hók-síp; <sup>1</sup>lí <sup>1</sup>mng <sup>7</sup>góa, <sup>1</sup>góa <sup>1</sup>ìn, <sup>3</sup>hó <sup>3</sup>bō? (P)
- d) Í <sup>7</sup>thák <sup>3</sup>nīa-nīa, <sup>1</sup>lóng <sup>7</sup>bó <sup>3</sup>hók-síp. (P)
- e) <sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>7</sup>chā-hng <sup>2</sup>kāh <sup>7</sup>kín-á-jít <sup>1</sup>lóng <sup>2</sup>tēh <sup>3</sup>hók-síp <sup>3</sup>tē-pēh <sup>2</sup>khò.

16. hun

- a) <sup>1</sup>Chím-á <sup>1</sup>kúi <sup>1</sup>tiám <sup>1</sup>kúi <sup>1</sup>hun?

  - 1) <sup>1</sup>Chím-á <sup>2</sup>pēh-tiám <sup>2</sup>sī-cháp-sá\* <sup>7</sup>hun.
  - 2) <sup>1</sup>Chím-á <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>1</sup>káu-tiám <sup>2</sup>khóng <sup>1</sup>káu <sup>1</sup>hun.

- b) <sup>1</sup>Lín <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>1</sup>káu-tiám <sup>1</sup>kúi <sup>1</sup>hun <sup>7</sup>khài-sí <sup>1</sup>thák-chheh? (P)

  - <sup>1</sup>Góan <sup>1</sup>káu-tiám <sup>7</sup>khài-sí <sup>3</sup>thák-chheh.

- c) <sup>1</sup>Góan <sup>3</sup>tē-ít <sup>2</sup>tiám-cheng <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>1</sup>káu-tiám <sup>3</sup>gō-cháp <sup>3</sup>hun <sup>3</sup>hā-khò.
- d) <sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>7</sup>khía <sup>2</sup>thín-bé <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>3</sup>hák-hāu <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>7</sup>khía <sup>1</sup>kúi <sup>1</sup>hun?
- e) <sup>1</sup>Chím-á <sup>2</sup>sī-tiám <sup>3</sup>gō-cháp <sup>3</sup>hun, <sup>1</sup>lán <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>3</sup>hā-khò.

17. hún-cheng less common than "hun".

- a) <sup>7</sup>Khía <sup>7</sup>ō-thò-bái <sup>2</sup>khí <sup>7</sup>Chíong-hòa <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>3</sup>jī-cháp <sup>3</sup>hún-cheng <sup>3</sup>bō?
- b) <sup>3</sup>Nā <sup>3</sup>iōng-kīa\*-é <sup>7</sup>ài <sup>2</sup>sá\*-cháp <sup>3</sup>hún-cheng; <sup>3</sup>nā <sup>7</sup>khía <sup>7</sup>sū-kū-tah <sup>3</sup>gō hun <sup>3</sup>nīa-nīa.

18. hún-pit

- a) <sup>3</sup>Tī <sup>7</sup>ō-pang <sup>3</sup>hia <sup>1</sup>ū <sup>3</sup>hún-pit <sup>3</sup>bō? (P)

- b) Kâu-sek bô hún-pit, lí chài-iá\* tī tōh-ūi ũ hún-pit bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 c) Lí hia ũ hún-pit bô<sup>3</sup>? Nng-sá\* kí hō<sup>3</sup> góa sía.  
 d) Bô hún-pit á; lí chài-iá\* bōeh khi tōh-ūi bé bô<sup>3</sup>?

## 19. í-sù

- a) Lí kóng é í-sù sí sim-mih?  
 b) Chít kù ũ í-sù bô<sup>3</sup>? (OR: ũ sim-mih í-sù bô<sup>3</sup>?)  
 c) Chít kù ũ sim-mih phải\* í-sù bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)  
 d) Í kóng é oe chín ũ í-sù. (P)  
 e) Chít kù oe ũ nng é í-sù; m-sí chít é nĩa-nĩa. (P)

## 20. iah/phi\*

- a) Chít pún chheh ũ kúi iah?  
 Chít pún chheh ũ sí-páh không pēh iah.  
 b) Chít kù tī tē chấp-chhít iah.  
 c) Chít tiám-cheng lán lái khóa\* chít-páh sá\*-cháp-gô<sup>3</sup>.  
 iah.  
 d) Lín chài-iá\* "kâu-sek" chít kù sí tī tē kúi phi\*  
 bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 Góan chai; sí tī tē 200 phi\*.  
 e) Tē-pēh khò sí tui chít-páh jī-cháp iah khai-sí,  
 sí bô<sup>3</sup>?

## 21. ìn

- a) Lâu-su tēh mng lí; ãn-chóa\* bô ìn?  
 b) Hók-síp sí Lâu-su mng, hák-seng ãi ìn. (P)

- c) Góá m̄ng lí; lí ản-chóá\* bó ìn góá? Lí chín bó í-sù. (P)  
 d) Í m̄-sí bē-hiáu ìn; í sí bó ải ìn lí.

22. iōng + Verb + ê (OR: eñg + Verb + ê)

- a) Lán iōng-kíá\*-ê lái-khí, hó bó\*?  
 b) Eñg-kíá\*-ê, m̄-bián khíá sú-kú-tah.  
 c) Lí nā bōeh eñg-kíá\*-ê lái góan chhù, ải kíá\* jī-cháp hún-cheng.  
 d) Lí iōng-kóng-ê, m̄-bián iōng-sía-ê.  
 e) Í bó ải iōng-kíá\*-ê khí hák-hāu.

23. káu-sek/káu-sit

- a) Lán hák-hāu ũ kúi keng káu-sek?  
 b) Chím-á tēh siōng-khò, só\*-í hák-seng lóng tī káu-sek.  
 c) Tē\* Láu-su, tī lí hít keng káu-sek ũ hún-pit bó\*?  
 d) Chít keng káu-sek ê í-á bó hó-chē.

24. khai-sí

- a) Góan chia káu-tiám khai-sí siōng-khò. (P)  
 b) Lán kín-á-jít khai-sí thak tē-káu khò, hó bó\*?  
 M-kú tē-pēh khò iáu-bōe hók-síp.  
 c) Góá chím-á khai-sí tēh thak Tái-oán-ōe. (P)  
 d) Tui chím-á khai-sí, góá lóng bōeh iōng Tái-gí kóng.  
 e) Chít tiám-cheng lán tui chít-páh sá\*-cháp iah, tē-chhít kú khai-sí, hó bó\*? (P) P 130

25. khò

- a) Chít khò ũ hó-thak bó\*?  
 1) Chít khò bó sim-mih hó-thak.  
 2) Chít khò bē sim-mih phái\*-thak.



- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> chím-á<sup>1</sup> tén<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup> tē<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> khò?
- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> thak<sup>3</sup> tē<sup>3</sup>-péh<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> tē<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> kù?
- d) Tē<sup>3</sup>-ít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> khò?  
Ũ<sup>3</sup> chap-sá\*<sup>7</sup> khò.

## 26. không

- a) Chím-á<sup>1</sup> chap<sup>3</sup>-jī<sup>3</sup>-tiám<sup>2</sup> không<sup>2</sup> gō<sup>3</sup> hun.
- b) Kín-á<sup>1</sup>-jít<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>7</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> không<sup>2</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> ê.
- c) Chít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thih<sup>2</sup>-bé<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>7</sup> í<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>2</sup> không<sup>2</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-chap<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>.  
7050
- d) Chít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> sū<sup>7</sup>-kú<sup>2</sup>-tah<sup>7</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup>-bān<sup>2</sup> không<sup>2</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>, ũ<sup>3</sup> siók<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
bô<sup>3</sup>?
- e) Góa<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> pāng<sup>7</sup>-keng<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> không<sup>2</sup> gō<sup>3</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> keng. (P)

## 27. kĩa\* to walk.

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> kĩa\*<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi?
- b) Bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> chhù<sup>2</sup> ai<sup>7</sup> kĩa\*<sup>7</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> tiám-cheng?
- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> iōng<sup>3</sup>-kĩa\*-é<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\*, á<sup>1</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> kĩa<sup>7</sup> thih<sup>2</sup>-bé?

## 28. koh

- a) Chhĩa\*<sup>1</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> kōh<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô. (P)
- b) Chít<sup>2</sup> kù<sup>1</sup> chhĩa\*<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kōh<sup>2</sup> kōng<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> pái.
- c) Hít<sup>2</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup> tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\*<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>1</sup>-khòa\*<sup>2</sup> kōh<sup>2</sup> siók. (P)
- d) Lí<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> thng-á<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>1</sup>-chiah; kōh<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> liap<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>7</sup>,  
hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)  $\frac{7}{P}$  我
- e) Chít<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu; lán<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> kōh<sup>2</sup> thak.

f) K<sup>1</sup>oe-chí b<sup>7</sup>ô á; á<sup>2</sup>i k<sup>2</sup>oh bé. We're out of fruit; we have to buy some more. (Note: k<sup>2</sup>oh bé = buy again.)

NB. B<sup>7</sup>ô-á = we don't have any now = we had some fruit but are all out of it now.  
Contrast with Sentence g.

g) K<sup>1</sup>oe-chí g<sup>1</sup>oan chia b<sup>7</sup>ô; l<sup>1</sup>i kh<sup>2</sup>i hia bé.  
(Salesperson:) We don't have fruit here (we don't sell it); go over there to buy it.

29. kù "Kù" as a Taiwanese Noun has 2 or more syllables. A one-syllable word is called "ch<sup>3</sup>it j<sup>3</sup>i".

- a) Ch<sup>3</sup>it kù/Ch<sup>3</sup>it kù òe. a word/phrase/sentence.
- b) Ch<sup>2</sup>it kù ch<sup>7</sup>in ũ<sup>3</sup> i-sù./Ch<sup>2</sup>it kù òe ch<sup>7</sup>in ũ<sup>3</sup> i-sù.
- c) Ch<sup>2</sup>it kù òe m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>3</sup>i t<sup>3</sup>i t<sup>3</sup>e-p<sup>2</sup>eh khò, s<sup>3</sup>i t<sup>3</sup>i t<sup>3</sup>e-ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>it khò.
- d) Ch<sup>2</sup>it n<sup>3</sup>ng-sá\* kù ch<sup>1</sup>hia\* l<sup>1</sup>i thak, hó b<sup>3</sup>ô\*?

30. kùì

- a) Ch<sup>1</sup>im-á k<sup>7</sup>am-á ē kùì bē?
- b) H<sup>2</sup>it n<sup>1</sup>ia sa\* l<sup>1</sup>i bé p<sup>2</sup>ah-g<sup>3</sup>ô\* kho\*, bē kùì.
- c) N<sup>3</sup>ā-s<sup>3</sup>i "siok", l<sup>7</sup>ang ch<sup>7</sup>in á<sup>2</sup>i k<sup>1</sup>ong "bē kùì".
- d) N<sup>3</sup>ng-p<sup>2</sup>ah kho\* ch<sup>7</sup>in kùì; p<sup>2</sup>ah-g<sup>3</sup>ô\* kho\*, hó b<sup>3</sup>ô\*?

31. L<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ái + Verb Let's....

In Ls 5 we learned "L<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ái-kh<sup>1</sup> = Let's go", used when we wish to express motion from this place we are in. "L<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ái" with a verb other than "kh<sup>1</sup>" means "Let's" do something without moving from here.

- a) Ch<sup>1</sup>im-á l<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ái thak t<sup>3</sup>e-p<sup>2</sup>eh khò\*.
- b) K<sup>7</sup>eng-chio b<sup>7</sup>ó h<sup>1</sup>ó-ch<sup>1</sup>iah; l<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ái ch<sup>1</sup>iah k<sup>7</sup>am-á.
- c) L<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ái ch<sup>1</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>ng. (P)
- d) H<sup>3</sup>ā-khò á, l<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ái l<sup>7</sup>im k<sup>7</sup>á-pi.

## 32. m̄-bián

a) Kín-á-jít lín m̄-bián thak-chheh, sī bó·? (P)

Sī.

b) Khía thih-bé khi, góa khòa\*, m̄-bián jī-cháp-hun. (P)

c) Chít jī tī chia m̄-bián chón-sia\*. (P)

d) Lí ài līm-tê bó·? Do you want some tea?

Tó-sīa, m̄-bián, m̄-bián. No, thanks.

(Note the repetition of "m̄-bián". This is a polite answer when offered anything.)

## 33. m̄ng

a) Nā bē-hiáu, ài m̄ng Lāu-su.

b) Lí m̄ng í, í kóng àn-chóa\*? (P)

c) Nā ũ bñh-tê bóeh m̄ng sim-mih-lâng?

d) Góa m̄ng lín chhù é lāng, ín lóng kóng m̄ chài-iá\* lí khi toh.

e) Chhia\*-m̄ng, lí chài-iá\* Khó· Sián-si\* tī tóh-ūi bó·? (P)

## 34. ǝ·-pang

a) Tī ǝ·-pang é jī lí chài-iá\* í-sù bó·?

b) Góa bóeh bé chít tē ǝ·-pang hō· gín-á sia-jī.

c) Lí nā ē-hiáu, chhia\* lí lái ǝ·-pang sia hō· góa khòa\*.

d) Hít keng kàu-sek ũ ǝ·-pang bó·?

## 35. pah

a) Lí kóng che ài kúi pah?

b) Chít nía pāh-gō· kho· bóeh bē bó·? Nā boeh, góa bé n̄ng nía.

c) He ải sả\* - pảh không gồ\* kho\* nĩa-nĩa.

d) Chít keng hək-hầu ẻ hək-seng, gỏa khỏa\*, ữ lắk-chhít-pảh ẻ.

36. pái/kái/piàn

a) Chhĩa\* lí kỏh sĩa chít pái.

b) Chhĩa\* lí kỏh kỏng chít pái.

c) Hít chhút tiần-ía\* chín hỏ-khỏa\*; lí khỉ khỏa\* kúi kái?

d) Lín nả bẻ-hiáu, gỏa bẻh kỏh kỏng chít piàn.

37. sia\*

a) Tái-oân-ỏe ữ kúi sia\*? (P)

ữ pẻh sia\*, m-kú lắn iông chhít sia\* nĩa-nĩa; tẻ lắk sia\* m-biần iông.

b) Sĩ Sín-hủ ẻ "Si" sĩ tẻ kúi sia\*?

"Si" sĩ tẻ-ít sia\*, m-kú ải chỏan tẻ-chhít sia\*.

c) He sĩ sím-mỉh sia\*?

He sĩ ỏ\* -thỏ\* -bái ẻ sia\*.

d) He sĩ sím-mỉh-lâng ẻ sia\*?

He sĩ Kỏeh Bỏk-sủ-nủu ẻ sia\*.

38. siok

a) Kám-ả chít liáp chấp kho\*, bỏ siok.

b) ỉ nả bẻ gỏa chín siok, gỏa bẻh bẻ chín-chẻ.

c) Tỉ Tái-oân bẻ kả-pi bỏ siok.

d) ỉ tẻh khĩa hít tái ỏ\* -thỏ\* -bái ỉ bẻh bẻ gỏa bản-jỉ kho\*, lí khỏa\*, ữ siok bỏ\*?

## 39. siōng-khò

- a) Gó<sup>7</sup>· Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su chím-á<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> tēh siōng-khò<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)
- b) Lín<sup>1</sup> chím-á<sup>1</sup> tēh siōng tē<sup>3</sup> kúí khò<sup>1</sup>? (P)
- c) Siōng-khò<sup>3</sup> á<sup>3</sup>; Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su ǎn<sup>2</sup>-chóá\* iǎu<sup>1</sup>-bôe<sup>3</sup> lái<sup>1</sup>? (P)
- d) Bín<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-chài<sup>1</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-bián<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> siōng-khò<sup>3</sup>; lí<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> toh?

## 40. tē (prefix to ordinal number/number in a series.)

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> chím-á<sup>1</sup> tēh thák<sup>3</sup> tē<sup>3</sup> kúí khò<sup>1</sup>?  
Tē<sup>3</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup> khò.
- b) Tē<sup>3</sup>-pēh<sup>2</sup> khò, tē<sup>3</sup> kúí iáh<sup>1</sup>?  
Tē<sup>3</sup> káu<sup>1</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-gō<sup>3</sup>. iáh<sup>1</sup> 9.51
- c) Bôeh<sup>2</sup> tui<sup>2</sup> tē<sup>3</sup> kúí kù<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>7</sup>-sí<sup>1</sup> thák?  
Tē<sup>3</sup>-chhit<sup>2</sup> kù, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
- d) "Lâng" chít<sup>2</sup> jī<sup>1</sup> tē<sup>3</sup> kúí sia\*?  
"Lâng" tē<sup>3</sup>-gō<sup>3</sup>. sia\*.

## 41. tiám

- a) Chím-á<sup>1</sup> kúí tiám?
- 1) Chím-á<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-tiám.
  - 2) Chím-á<sup>1</sup> nng<sup>3</sup>-tiám.
  - 3) Chím-á<sup>1</sup> tiám-gōa. It's now after one (and before two).
  - 4) Chím-á<sup>1</sup> tiám-pòá\*. It's 1:30.
- Note that "chít (= one)" is not used with "tiám-gōa" or "tiám-pòá\*".
- 5) Chím-á<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-tiám không<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> hun. 1:01.
  - 6) Chím-á<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-tiám cháp<sup>3</sup> hun. 1:10.
  - 7) Chím-á<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-tiám siáp<sup>2</sup>-gō<sup>3</sup>. 1:45.

8) Chím-á nng-tiám không gō°. 2:05.

9) Chím-á chap-tiám jī-chap-gōa hun.

10) Chím-á chap-ít-tiám-pòá\*. 11:30.

Note that when "tiám" is followed by "hun", expressed or understood, "tiám" does not change tone. "Time" changes tone when followed by "pòá\*" or "gōa".

b) Lí kúi tiám ăi siōng-khò?

c) Káu-tiám hək-seng lóng ē lái, sī bō°?

42. tiám-cheng

a) Khòa\* chít chhút tián-ía\* ăi kúi tiám-cheng?

b) Nā khĩa ố°-thó°-bái khi, m-bián chít tiám-cheng. (P)

c) Chít tiám-cheng lán lái hək-síp tē-chhít khò, hó bō°?

d) Góa kìn-ă-jit bōeh thək nng tiám-cheng nĩa-nĩa.

43. tòe 𠵼

a) Góa thək chít kù, lí tòe góa thək chít kù.

b) Lē-Hūn, góa bōeh khi khòa\* tián-ía\*, lí bōeh tòe bō°?

c) Góa sĩa hō° lí khòa\*, lí tòe góa sĩa. (P)

d) Hít ē gin-á chin ăi tòe lánng chhút-khi chhít-thó. (P)

e) Góa kōh kóng chít pái, lí kōh tòe góa kóng.

44. tùi

a) Lí nā bōeh khi Tē\* Sián-si\* ỉn chhù, ăi tùi chia khi. (P)

b) Lí nā chái-ía\*, chhĩa\* lí tùi góa kóng. (P)

c) Ỉn Lâu-su tùi ỉ chin hó. (P)

d) Tùi chia khĩa thĩh-bé khi Chiong-hòa ăi kúi tiám-cheng? (P)

e) Lán tũi chít-páh sǐ-cháp-jǐ iáh khái-sǐ thák, hó bō? (P)

45. ūi

a) Lán hák-hāu ū kúi ūi Lāu-su?

b) Chá-hng lái hít ūi sǐ sǐm-mǐh-lāng?

c) Ū nng ūi Bók-su bǐn-á-chài bōeh lái lán chia thák

Tái-gí, lí chai bō?   
 *to*

d) Chhia\*-mng chít ūi Sián-si\*, kúi sè? (P)

e) Ū chít ūi sián-si\* tǐ gōa-bǐn bōeh káp lí kóng-ōe.

-----  
TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF PATTERN SENTENCES MARKED "P"

1. b) How do you read this sentence?  
d) You did not come by motorcycle; how did you come?
2. d) They'll sell that house for 800,000; do you want to buy it?
4. a) That movie is stupid; it's lousy.  
b) This sentence he wrote is meaningless.  
c) This book makes no sense; I don't want to study it.  
d) He said he would come but he didn't come; that's not right of him.
5. b) You want me to treat you to a movie, no problem. (I have no problem with that = I'm happy to.)  
c) Let me ask you a question, all right?  
d) He's always skipping classes; does he have a problem?
6. a) I know what you're going to say.
7. d) If this is between 1000 and 2000 dollars it's not expensive.
9. a) It's not necessary to change the tone on the "cheng" in (the expression) "\$1200".  
c) Now if you know how to pronounce (OR: know the pronunciation), let's study the changing of tones.
11. c) They're still in class; they haven't finished class yet.
14. a) I'm only studying pronunciation now. (I'm not studying the grammar yet.)

14. b) Some say that the pronunciation of the 3rd tone is difficult; is that true (that it is difficult)?
15. c) Let's review; you ask me some questions and I'll answer, all right? (This sentence may be spoken by either the teacher or the student.)  
 d) He only reads (the text); he doesn't review at all.
16. b) At how many minutes after nine do you start classes?  
 We begin class at 9:00.
18. a) Is there any chalk at the blackboard? (Note "hia" cannot be omitted.)
19. c) Does this sentence have a bad meaning?  
 d) What he says is really meaningful.  
 e) This phrase/sentence has 2 meanings; it doesn't have only 1 meaning.
21. b) In a review the teacher asks and the student must answer. (The reverse is also possible. The student's private review is also called "hok-sip".)  
 c) I greeted you, why didn't you answer me?  
 You're being ridiculous. (Note use of "m̄ng" to mean "greet"; distinguish from Sentences a and b where it means: "ask a question".)
24. a) At our place here we begin class at 9 o'clock.  
 c) Lit., At this time I have begun to study and am studying Taiwanese.  
 e) This period let's start at the 7th sentence on page 130.
26. e) My bedroom is 305. (Note that Taiwanese requires "that one (room)" after the number.)
28. a) Please come again for a visit.  
 c) That movie is a good one and it's cheap.  
 d) The candy you bought is delicious; how about giving me another piece?
31. c) Let's eat (in this room we're talking in). (If we are to eat in a room different from the one we are in now, then we say: "Lán lâi-khî chiah-p̄ng.")
32. a) You don't have school today, do you?  
 No. (We don't.)  
 b) I think to ride a bike (there) would take less than 20 minutes.  
 c) You don't have to change the tone on this word in this case.
33. b) You asked him; what did he say?  
 e) Do you know where Mr. Khó' is, may I ask?
37. a) How many tones are there in Taiwanese?  
 It has 8 tones but we only use 7; the 6th tone is not necessary.



39. a) Is Teacher Gô<sup>1</sup> in class now?  
 b) Which lesson are you studying now? (Siōng = study)  
 c) It's time for class; how come the teacher hasn't come yet. ("A" is exclamatory; "a" may also be considered similar to the Perfect Tense in English: "The time for class has arrived".)
42. b) If you take the motorcycle it doesn't take an hour.
43. c) I'll write it for you to see; you write it after me.  
 d) That kid loves going out with somebody to have some fun. (This is likely a small child, in which case there is no implication of money being spent. See "tòe" in Vocab.)
44. a) If you're going to Mr. Tē\*'s house you have to go through here (OR: pass by here).  
 b) If you know; please tell me. ("Tùi = to")  
 c) His teacher is very good to him.  
 d) How many hours does it take to ride a bike from here to Changhua?  
 e) Let's start from page 142, OK?
45. d) May I ask your surname? (Lit., May I ask this gentleman, what is your surname?) (Note "chít ũi" used in direct address. With different punctuation we may use these words to ask a person the surname of a third person, either in his hearing or not:  
 "Chhīa<sup>1</sup>-mng, chít<sup>2</sup> ũi<sup>3</sup> Siān-si\* kúi<sup>7</sup> sè\*? = Please tell me, what is this gentleman's surname?"

KUSENTENCES

1. Lí<sup>1</sup> ān-chóa\*<sup>2</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> káh<sup>7</sup> í<sup>1</sup> kóng-ōe?
2. Lí<sup>1</sup> chái-iá\*, góa<sup>1</sup> ān-chóa\*<sup>3</sup> m̄<sup>7</sup> chái-iá\*?
3. Sū<sup>7</sup>-kú<sup>2</sup>-tah bó<sup>7</sup> siok; chít<sup>3</sup> tái<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> sí-gō<sup>3</sup>. bān<sup>3</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>.
4. Góa<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>1</sup> í-toh<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> chít-bān<sup>3</sup> nng-chheng<sup>2</sup> pēh-pāh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>.
5. Lí<sup>1</sup> bīn-á-chài<sup>7</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> tiám<sup>2</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>7</sup>?
6. Bīn-á-chài<sup>7</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?
7. Hák-seng<sup>3</sup> kīn-á-jit<sup>7</sup> káh<sup>2</sup> bīn-á-chài<sup>7</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-bián<sup>3</sup> siōng-khò<sup>3</sup>.
8. Í<sup>7</sup> chá-hng<sup>7</sup> kóng<sup>2</sup> hiah<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> ōe<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> í-sù<sup>2</sup>.

9. ỉ b<sup>2</sup>oeh chh<sup>3</sup>ía\* lí, lí n<sup>3</sup>ā b<sup>7</sup>ố kh<sup>7</sup>í b<sup>7</sup>ố ỉ-s<sup>2</sup>ù.
10. ỉ m<sup>7</sup>ng é b<sup>7</sup>ūn-t<sup>3</sup>ê lí l<sup>1</sup>óng ẽ-hi<sup>3</sup>áu ỉn b<sup>3</sup>ê?
11. T<sup>2</sup>ủi ch<sup>2</sup>ít kh<sup>2</sup>ò l<sup>1</sup>ín ỉ s<sup>3</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih b<sup>3</sup>ūn-t<sup>3</sup>ê? (S)
12. Lí ch<sup>7</sup>ā-hng kh<sup>2</sup>í t<sup>2</sup>òh-ũi, g<sup>1</sup>óá ch<sup>1</sup>ai.
13. ỉ k<sup>2</sup>āh lí k<sup>1</sup>óng s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih ỏe, g<sup>1</sup>óá l<sup>1</sup>óng ch<sup>7</sup>ai-i<sup>3</sup>á\*.
14. ỉ kh<sup>2</sup>í s<sup>7</sup>in-tek chh<sup>2</sup>ong-sia\*h, g<sup>1</sup>óá m<sup>3</sup>-ch<sup>1</sup>ai. (S)
15. Lí b<sup>1</sup>é ch<sup>2</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>ái th<sup>2</sup>ih-b<sup>2</sup>é ải ch<sup>2</sup>ít chheng b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?
16. T<sup>3</sup>ỉ t<sup>3</sup>òh-ả-t<sup>2</sup>éng h<sup>2</sup>ít chheng kho. s<sup>3</sup>ỉ lí ẻ, s<sup>3</sup>ỉ b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?
17. Ch<sup>2</sup>iah ẻ s<sup>7</sup>ả\*-kh<sup>7</sup>o. ch<sup>7</sup>ā-hng g<sup>1</sup>óá b<sup>7</sup>ố s<sup>7</sup>ẻ; g<sup>1</sup>óá k<sup>7</sup>in-ả-j<sup>1</sup>ít b<sup>2</sup>oeh s<sup>7</sup>ẻ.
18. Ch<sup>2</sup>iah ẻ m<sup>7</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>ia\* g<sup>1</sup>óá b<sup>7</sup>ố ải, lí n<sup>3</sup>ā ải, n<sup>7</sup>ỏ. lí.
19. Ch<sup>2</sup>iah ẻ g<sup>7</sup>in-ả t<sup>3</sup>ia\*-t<sup>3</sup>ia\* l<sup>7</sup>ái chia chh<sup>2</sup>ít-th<sup>2</sup>ô.
20. "Ch<sup>2</sup>e" k<sup>2</sup>āh "h<sup>2</sup>e" ch<sup>2</sup>ít n<sup>3</sup>ng j<sup>1</sup>ỉ l<sup>1</sup>óng m<sup>3</sup>-bi<sup>1</sup>án ch<sup>1</sup>óan-sia\*. (S)
21. T<sup>3</sup>ẻ-chh<sup>2</sup>ít sia\* ải ch<sup>1</sup>óan t<sup>3</sup>ẻ-s<sup>7</sup>ả\* sia\*, m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>3</sup>ỉ ch<sup>1</sup>óan t<sup>3</sup>ẻ-j<sup>3</sup>ỉ sia\*.
22. G<sup>1</sup>óá kh<sup>7</sup>òá\*, k<sup>7</sup>in-ả-j<sup>1</sup>ít ỉ b<sup>3</sup>ẻ l<sup>1</sup>ái.
23. Lí n<sup>3</sup>ā ỉ chh<sup>3</sup>ía\* ỉ; g<sup>1</sup>óá kh<sup>7</sup>òá\*, ỉ ẻ kh<sup>7</sup>í.
24. N<sup>3</sup>ā b<sup>7</sup>ố b<sup>3</sup>ūn-t<sup>3</sup>ê, l<sup>1</sup>án ch<sup>1</sup>im-ả l<sup>7</sup>ái h<sup>3</sup>ā-kh<sup>7</sup>ò.
25. K<sup>1</sup>áu-ti<sup>1</sup>ám-p<sup>3</sup>òá\* n<sup>3</sup>ĩa-n<sup>3</sup>ĩa, ỉ<sup>1</sup>áu-b<sup>3</sup>ỏe h<sup>3</sup>ā-kh<sup>7</sup>ò.
26. L<sup>1</sup>ín h<sup>3</sup>ak-h<sup>3</sup>āu t<sup>3</sup>ỉ t<sup>2</sup>òh-ũi?
27. L<sup>7</sup>ái h<sup>3</sup>ak-h<sup>3</sup>āu s<sup>3</sup>ỉ b<sup>2</sup>oeh th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>heh, m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>3</sup>ỉ b<sup>2</sup>oeh chh<sup>2</sup>ít-th<sup>2</sup>ô.
28. Lí k<sup>7</sup>in-ả-j<sup>1</sup>ít ải kh<sup>2</sup>í h<sup>3</sup>ak-h<sup>3</sup>āu b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?
29. T<sup>2</sup>ủi k<sup>7</sup>ỏ-hi<sup>7</sup>ông l<sup>1</sup>ái h<sup>2</sup>iah ẻ l<sup>7</sup>ang b<sup>2</sup>oeh t<sup>3</sup>ỉ chia ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>ng b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?
30. H<sup>2</sup>iah ẻ g<sup>7</sup>in-ả t<sup>3</sup>ỉ g<sup>3</sup>óá-b<sup>3</sup>in t<sup>2</sup>ẻh chh<sup>2</sup>ong-sia\*h?
31. Lí b<sup>1</sup>é h<sup>2</sup>iah ẻ t<sup>7</sup>ỏ-ả k<sup>2</sup>áp chh<sup>1</sup>iam-ả ải l<sup>3</sup>ỏa-ch<sup>3</sup>ẻ ch<sup>3</sup>í\*?
32. G<sup>1</sup>óá ch<sup>1</sup>im-ả kh<sup>7</sup>ai-s<sup>1</sup>ỉ t<sup>2</sup>ẻh th<sup>3</sup>ak h<sup>2</sup>ỏat-im n<sup>3</sup>ĩa-n<sup>3</sup>ĩa.
33. T<sup>7</sup>ái-g<sup>7</sup>ỉ ẻ h<sup>2</sup>ỏat-im lí l<sup>1</sup>óng ẽ-hi<sup>3</sup>áu b<sup>3</sup>ẻ?
34. Ch<sup>2</sup>ít j<sup>2</sup>ỉ ản-ch<sup>1</sup>ỏá\* h<sup>2</sup>ỏat-im, lí ch<sup>7</sup>ai-i<sup>3</sup>á\* b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?

35. Lán b<sup>7</sup> t<sup>3</sup>ia\*-t<sup>3</sup>ia\* h<sup>3</sup>ok-s<sup>1</sup>ip, b<sup>2</sup>oeh <sup>2</sup>an-ch<sup>1</sup>oá\* <sup>3</sup>ē-hiáú?
36. Lán l<sup>7</sup>ái h<sup>3</sup>ok-s<sup>3</sup>ip tē-l<sup>3</sup>ak khò k<sup>2</sup>áp tē-ch<sup>2</sup>hít khò.
37. Chít khò g<sup>1</sup>óa i<sup>3</sup>áu-b<sup>3</sup>oē h<sup>3</sup>ok-s<sup>1</sup>ip; lán ch<sup>1</sup>ím-á l<sup>7</sup>ái h<sup>3</sup>ok-s<sup>1</sup>ip.
38. Lán chia k<sup>1</sup>úi hun h<sup>3</sup>ā-khò? (S)  
G<sup>3</sup>ō·-ch<sup>3</sup>ap hun h<sup>3</sup>ā-khò.
39. Ch<sup>1</sup>ím-á ch<sup>3</sup>ap-tiám j<sup>3</sup>ī-g<sup>3</sup>ō· hun, s<sup>1</sup>ī b<sup>3</sup>ō·?
40. Lí s<sup>1</sup>ía ch<sup>2</sup>iah é j<sup>7</sup>ī ài k<sup>1</sup>úi hun?
41. Lí kh<sup>7</sup>ía th<sup>2</sup>ih-bé l<sup>7</sup>ái chia, ài kh<sup>7</sup>ía k<sup>1</sup>úi hun?
42. Ín ch<sup>7</sup>hù t<sup>3</sup>í h<sup>3</sup>ia n<sup>3</sup>īa-n<sup>3</sup>īa, i<sup>3</sup>ōng-k<sup>1</sup>ía\*-é <sup>7</sup>m̄-bián ch<sup>3</sup>ap hun.
43. B<sup>7</sup>ó h<sup>1</sup>ún-pit á; lí kh<sup>2</sup>í bé, hó b<sup>3</sup>ō·?
44. Lí h<sup>2</sup>ít k<sup>7</sup>eng k<sup>2</sup>áu-sek ũ h<sup>1</sup>ún-pit b<sup>3</sup>ō·?
45. H<sup>1</sup>ún-pit ch<sup>7</sup>ín siok, b<sup>3</sup>ē k<sup>1</sup>úi.
46. Chít k<sup>1</sup>ú g<sup>1</sup>óa ē-hiáú th<sup>3</sup>ak, <sup>3</sup>m̄-k<sup>1</sup>ú <sup>3</sup>m̄-ch<sup>7</sup>ai í-s<sup>2</sup>ù.
47. Í k<sup>7</sup>óng chít k<sup>2</sup>ú Tái-oán-ōe ũ n<sup>3</sup>ng é í-s<sup>2</sup>ù.
48. Í m<sup>7</sup>ng é í-s<sup>2</sup>ù lí n<sup>3</sup>ā <sup>3</sup>m̄-chai, lí b<sup>2</sup>oeh <sup>2</sup>an-ch<sup>1</sup>oá\* ín?
49. Láng n<sup>3</sup>ā i<sup>3</sup>ōng Tái-oán-ōe m<sup>7</sup>ng lí, lí <sup>3</sup>ē-hiáú ín b<sup>3</sup>ē?  
G<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>7</sup>ó s<sup>1</sup>ím-m<sup>2</sup>ih <sup>3</sup>ē-hiáú.
50. G<sup>1</sup>óa m<sup>7</sup>ng í, í l<sup>7</sup>óng b<sup>7</sup>ó ài ín g<sup>3</sup>óa.
51. Lí ch<sup>1</sup>ím-á tēh th<sup>3</sup>ak tē k<sup>1</sup>úi iáh?
52. Tē-ch<sup>2</sup>hít khò s<sup>1</sup>ī t<sup>3</sup>í tē chít-p<sup>2</sup>áh kh<sup>2</sup>ông s<sup>7</sup>á\* iáh.
53. Lí i<sup>3</sup>ōng-k<sup>3</sup>óng-é, <sup>3</sup>m̄-bián i<sup>3</sup>ōng-s<sup>3</sup>ía-é.
54. Lí b<sup>2</sup>oeh <sup>3</sup>eng kh<sup>7</sup>ía-th<sup>2</sup>ih-bé-é, á-s<sup>3</sup>ī b<sup>2</sup>oeh <sup>3</sup>eng-k<sup>1</sup>ía\*-é?
55. N<sup>3</sup>ā h<sup>3</sup>ā-khò, k<sup>2</sup>áu-sek é m<sup>7</sup>ng ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ía\* lí koai\*, hó b<sup>3</sup>ō·?
56. K<sup>2</sup>áu-sek é th<sup>7</sup>ang-á-m<sup>7</sup>ng k<sup>2</sup>ah m<sup>7</sup>ng l<sup>7</sup>óng ài koai\*.
57. Si<sup>3</sup>ōng-khò á; lí <sup>2</sup>an-ch<sup>1</sup>oá\* b<sup>7</sup>ó ài kh<sup>2</sup>í k<sup>2</sup>áu-sek?
58. G<sup>1</sup>óa k<sup>7</sup>ín-á-j<sup>1</sup>it b<sup>2</sup>oeh kh<sup>7</sup>ái-s<sup>1</sup>í th<sup>3</sup>ak tē p<sup>2</sup>eh khò.

59. G<sup>1</sup>óa é<sup>7</sup> sa\* lí<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup>áu-b<sup>3</sup>õe kh<sup>7</sup>ai-s<sup>1</sup>ì ch<sup>1</sup>ò, s<sup>1</sup>ī b<sup>3</sup>ô\*?
60. L<sup>1</sup>ín i<sup>1</sup>áu-b<sup>3</sup>õe b<sup>2</sup>oeh kh<sup>7</sup>ai-s<sup>1</sup>ì th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>hèh, s<sup>1</sup>ī b<sup>3</sup>ô\*?
61. K<sup>7</sup>á-pi b<sup>1</sup>ô á<sup>7</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> k<sup>2</sup>òh bé b<sup>3</sup>ô\*? (S)
62. N<sup>3</sup>ā b<sup>3</sup>ē-hi<sup>2</sup>áu, ài<sup>2</sup> k<sup>2</sup>òh th<sup>1</sup>ak. (S)
63. Ch<sup>2</sup>ít kh<sup>1</sup>ò g<sup>1</sup>óa l<sup>1</sup>óng b<sup>7</sup>ố b<sup>3</sup>ũn-tê.
64. B<sup>3</sup>ok-su, lí<sup>1</sup> ch<sup>1</sup>ím-á th<sup>3</sup>ak t<sup>3</sup>ē k<sup>1</sup>úi kh<sup>1</sup>ò?
65. G<sup>1</sup>óa k<sup>7</sup>ín-á-j<sup>1</sup>ít b<sup>2</sup>oeh kh<sup>7</sup>ai-s<sup>1</sup>ì th<sup>3</sup>ak t<sup>3</sup>ē l<sup>3</sup>ak kh<sup>1</sup>ò.
66. Che s<sup>3</sup>ī ch<sup>3</sup>ít-b<sup>2</sup>ān kh<sup>2</sup>ông g<sup>3</sup>ô\*-pah, m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>3</sup>ī ch<sup>3</sup>ít-ch<sup>3</sup>heng kh<sup>2</sup>ông g<sup>3</sup>ô\*-ch<sup>1</sup>áp.
67. Ch<sup>2</sup>ít k<sup>7</sup>éng h<sup>3</sup>ak-h<sup>7</sup>āu é<sup>7</sup> h<sup>3</sup>ak-seng ũ<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>3</sup>ít-ch<sup>3</sup>heng kh<sup>2</sup>ông g<sup>3</sup>ô\*-ch<sup>1</sup>áp ê. 1030
68. K<sup>7</sup>ín-á-j<sup>1</sup>ít g<sup>1</sup>óa i<sup>3</sup>ông-k<sup>7</sup>ia\*-é<sup>7</sup> l<sup>7</sup>ai, b<sup>7</sup>ố kh<sup>7</sup>ĩa ó<sup>1</sup>-th<sup>1</sup>ô\*-b<sup>1</sup>ái.
69. G<sup>1</sup>óa t<sup>2</sup>úi h<sup>7</sup>ia k<sup>7</sup>ia\* l<sup>7</sup>ai chia, j<sup>3</sup>ī-ch<sup>3</sup>áp-g<sup>3</sup>óa hun n<sup>3</sup>ĩa-n<sup>3</sup>ĩa.
70. Lí<sup>1</sup> t<sup>3</sup>ē k<sup>1</sup>úi k<sup>1</sup>ú b<sup>3</sup>ē-hi<sup>2</sup>áu?
71. Kh<sup>1</sup>ó\* si<sup>3</sup>ān-s<sup>3</sup>ī\*, g<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>2</sup>oeh m<sup>3</sup>ng lí<sup>1</sup> ch<sup>3</sup>ít k<sup>2</sup>ú o<sup>2</sup>e, hó b<sup>3</sup>ô\*? (S)
72. N<sup>3</sup>ā ch<sup>7</sup>ín k<sup>1</sup>úi, g<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>7</sup>ố b<sup>2</sup>oeh bé.
73. ĩ<sup>7</sup> t<sup>2</sup>éh b<sup>2</sup>ē é<sup>7</sup> m<sup>3</sup>ih-k<sup>7</sup>ia\* ũ<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>á\* ch<sup>7</sup>ín k<sup>1</sup>úi, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú l<sup>1</sup>óng ch<sup>7</sup>ín hó.
74. H<sup>3</sup>ā-kh<sup>1</sup>ò á<sup>3</sup>; l<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ai ch<sup>2</sup>hít-th<sup>1</sup>ô.
75. Che g<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>3</sup>ē-hi<sup>2</sup>áu; l<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ai m<sup>3</sup>ng L<sup>3</sup>āu-su.
76. Lí<sup>1</sup> l<sup>1</sup>óng b<sup>7</sup>ố ài<sup>2</sup> m<sup>3</sup>ng, b<sup>2</sup>oeh ă<sup>2</sup>n-ch<sup>1</sup>óá\* ē<sup>3</sup>-hi<sup>2</sup>áu?
77. Ó<sup>1</sup>-pang h<sup>2</sup>íah é<sup>7</sup> j<sup>1</sup>ī lí<sup>1</sup> l<sup>1</sup>óng ē<sup>3</sup>-hi<sup>2</sup>áu th<sup>1</sup>ak b<sup>3</sup>ē?
78. ĩ<sup>7</sup> k<sup>1</sup>óng g<sup>1</sup>ín-á i<sup>3</sup>ông é<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>1</sup>-pang ch<sup>3</sup>ít t<sup>2</sup>é ài<sup>2</sup> p<sup>3</sup>ān-g<sup>3</sup>óa kh<sup>1</sup>ó\*, ũ<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>á\* b<sup>3</sup>ô\*?
79. ĩ<sup>7</sup> t<sup>2</sup>éh k<sup>7</sup>ia\* l<sup>1</sup>óng b<sup>7</sup>ố sia\*.
80. T<sup>3</sup>ē-ch<sup>2</sup>hít sia\* k<sup>2</sup>án t<sup>3</sup>ē-s<sup>7</sup>á\* sia\* ch<sup>7</sup>ín p<sup>1</sup>hái\*-k<sup>1</sup>óng.

81. 7 tēh bē chin siok, só<sup>1</sup>-l<sup>1</sup> bé é lāng chin-chē.
82. Nā<sup>3</sup> chit-pāh kho<sup>3</sup> ū-iá\* chin siok.
83. Chīm-á kàu-sek ū lāng tēh siōng-khò<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?
84. 7 chit tiám-cheng bó<sup>7</sup> lái siōng-khò.
85. Góa ê m-sī hīt tái; góa ê sī tē sá\* tái. (S)
86. Tē-it é lāng thak tē-chap kù; tē-jī é lāng thak tē chap-it kù.
87. Lí kúi tiám bóeh kán 7 khi<sup>2</sup> khōa\* tiān-iá\*?
88. Lí chap-it tiám ai siōng-khò bó<sup>3</sup>?
89. Chit ūi sī tui sin-tek lái é sin-hū.
90. Góa chá-hng ū hō<sup>3</sup> lí chit-chheng kho<sup>3</sup>, sī bó<sup>3</sup>?
91. Lí khi in chhū khi kúi pái?
92. Lín chhū tui chia khi, sī bó<sup>3</sup>?
93. Bóeh tui tōh-ūi khai-sí thak?
94. Che góa bē-hiáu; lí khi mng hīt ūi Lāu-su.

-----

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED "S"

11. In regard to this lesson what problem do you have?
14. What he went to Hsinchu for, I don't know.
20. You don't have to change the tone on these 2 words "che" and "he". (Note: "chit nng jī" in apposition with "'che' kah 'he'".)
38. How many minutes after the hour do your classes end? At 50 minutes after the hour (10 minutes before the hour). (Note "lán chia" as the polite way of saying "your place (school) here" - see Grammar Note 5.) (Not using "tiám (= o'clock)" here means that we're asking what time class ends every hour.)
61. We're out of coffee; did you buy some more? (For "bô á" see Lē-kù "koh" No. 28 f.)

62. If you don't know (the material), you have to study it again. ("Thak" here means private study.)
71. I want to ask you something, Mr. Khó', would it be all right?
85. That's not mine; mine is the 3rd one. (E.g., motorcycles in a parking place outside a theatre.)

TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. I think he will come tomorrow.
2. I don't think he will walk here; he will ride his scooter.
3. Good morning, Mrs. Chhí. Has the wife of Kóeh Bók-su come yet?
4. That one (vehicle) of his is nice riding and cheap.
5. How many students are there at your (polite form) place (there)?  
There are 1,030.
6. How many minutes does it take to ride from here?  
It doesn't take a half-hour.
7. How many people are there outside?  
There are 35,000.
8. If it's \$160 it's not expensive. OK, I'll buy it.
9. What time is your class?  
8:05.
10. You don't have to change the tone on "thousand" in this sentence.

The Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences:

1. Góá khòa\*, í bín-á-chài ē lái.
2. Góá khòa\*, í lái chia bē iōng-khā\*-ē lái; í ē khia í ē sú-kú-tah lái. (OR: í bē iōng-khā\*-ē lái chia....)
3. Chhí Thài-thài, gáu-chá. Kóeh Bók-sú-níu ũ lái bōe?
4. Í hīt tái hó-khā kóh síok.

5. L<sup>1</sup>án h<sup>3</sup>ia ũ<sup>3</sup> k<sup>1</sup>ú<sup>7</sup>í é<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup>ák-seng?  
 Ũ<sup>3</sup> chít-chheng<sup>3</sup> không<sup>2</sup> sá<sup>7</sup>\*-cháp<sup>3</sup> ê. (We could answer "G<sup>1</sup>óan h<sup>3</sup>ia ũ<sup>3</sup>..." but not "L<sup>1</sup>án h<sup>3</sup>ia...")
6. T<sup>2</sup>úi chia<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> k<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ía k<sup>1</sup>ú<sup>1</sup>í hun?  
 M<sup>3</sup>-bián<sup>1</sup> k<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ía p<sup>2</sup>oá\*-tiám<sup>1</sup>-cheng.
7. G<sup>3</sup>oá-kháu<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> k<sup>1</sup>ú<sup>7</sup>í é<sup>7</sup> l<sup>7</sup>âng?  
 Ũ<sup>3</sup> sá<sup>7</sup>\*-b<sup>3</sup>ân g<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>·-chheng<sup>7</sup> ê. / Ũ<sup>3</sup> sá<sup>7</sup>\*-b<sup>3</sup>ân-g<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>· ê. (Note tone on "bân".)
8. N<sup>3</sup>ã-s<sup>3</sup>ī p<sup>2</sup>áh-l<sup>3</sup>ák kho<sup>3</sup>·, b<sup>3</sup>ē k<sup>3</sup>uì. H<sup>3</sup>ó, g<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>2</sup>oeh bé.
9. L<sup>1</sup>í k<sup>1</sup>ú<sup>1</sup>í tiám<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> si<sup>3</sup>ông-khò?  
 P<sup>2</sup>eh tiám<sup>2</sup> không<sup>2</sup> g<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>· hun.
10. T<sup>3</sup>ī chít<sup>2</sup> k<sup>2</sup>ú "chheng" m<sup>3</sup>-bián<sup>1</sup> ch<sup>1</sup>óan-sia\*.

Tĕ Kàu Khò

Lesson 9

TUI-ŌE

DIALOGUE

G = GŌ<sup>3</sup> Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\* sī Lāu-su. *吳先生 吳老師*  
 I = Í Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\* *拜託去? 余先生*

I1: GŌ<sup>3</sup> Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\*, lí bō<sup>7</sup> chhut-khì, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?

G1: Bō<sup>7</sup>-là. Í Siān-sī<sup>3</sup>\*, jip-lāi chē. Lí chiah-tàu bōe?

I2: Chiah pá<sup>3</sup> á. Chīm-á tiám-gōa á; lín iáu-bōe chiah, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?

G2: Chiah pá<sup>3</sup> á. Góan lóng chap-jī-tiám chiah tióng-tàu.

I3: Lí tióng-tàu-sī m̄-bat khùn-tióng-tàu, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?

G3: Ū là, góa khùn-khít-lāi á (OR: khùn-khít-lāi á). Góa chīm-á chiah tui lāu-téng loh-lāi nīa-nīa. Lí kìn-á-jit ăn-chóa\* ū sī-kan lái?

I4: Góa sī bōeh mng lí ái khi Kò-hiông chhit-thô bō<sup>3</sup>?

G4: Hó-a. Tàng-sī bōeh khi? Nā-sī kìn-á-jit bōeh khi, góa bō sī-kan, in-ūi góa ē-po<sup>3</sup> ái kòh khi hāk-hāu siông-khò.

I5: M̄-sī kìn-á-jit là. Sī pài-lāk-ē-po<sup>3</sup>. In-ūi pài-lāk-ē-po<sup>3</sup> hiōh-khùn, só<sup>3</sup>-í lán hit ē-po<sup>3</sup> chiah lái-khì.

G5: Kìn-á-jit pài-kúi? Sī pài-sì, ho\*h? Bín-á-chài pài-gō<sup>3</sup>. An̄-ni hó, m̄-kú lán bōeh chē kúi tiám é chia?

I6: Hit tióng-tàu chiah pá lán chē chit-tiám é chia lái-khì. Tióng-tàu-sī lí nā ái khùn-tióng-tàu, chē-chhia chiah hō<sup>3</sup> lí khùn.

G6: Lán kàu hia, iōng-kia\*-é lái-khì bé mih-kia\*; ū lán kóng tī hia é mih-kia\* bé kúi, só<sup>3</sup>-í lán lái-khì hia bé chit-kóa tng-lái.



- I7: Sī-là, lán ăm-sī chiáh kòh chhū̂t lái-khī chhī̂t-thô; kàu  
lê-pài-chái-khí á-sī lê-pài-ē-po· chiáh tng-lâi.
- G7: An̄-ni chin hó. ↑ Siān-sī\*, lí ăm-sī lóng kúi tiám khùn?  
Chái-khī-sī kúi tiám peh-khī̂t-lâi?
- I8: Góa lóng chap-it-tiám chiáh khī̂ khùn; chái-khī̂-sī lāk-  
tiám peh-khī̂t-lâi. M̄-kú chāng-àm in-ūi pēng-iú lâi, só·-i  
kàu chap-jī-tiám-gōa chiáh khī̂ khùn.
- G8: An̄-ni lí chīm-á ē chin ái-khùn bê?
- I9: Ē-là, góa chīm-á bōeh tng lái-khī̂ khùn. Lí nā ũ sí-kan  
chhia\* lí lái góa hia chē.
- G9: Hó-là. Chhia\* lí chiáh kòh lái chhī̂t-thô.

SĪN-GÍVOCABULARY

1. a 啊 (a suffix indicating joy; the tone is irregular -  
see Grammar Note 4.)  
Lí bōeh káp góan khī̂ bô·? Are you going with us?  
Hó-a. Suits me fine.
2. ái-khùn 愛困 / 想睡 be sleepy. (Generally undesirable  
quality: use "ē/bē; see Ls 6, Gram. Note 3.)  
Lí ē ái-khùn bê? Are you sleepy?  
Ē, góa chin ái-khùn. Yes, I am sleepy.  
Lí bē ái-khùn, sī bô·? You're not sleepy, are you?  
Sī, góa ũ khùn-tiòng-tàu. No, I took a nap at noon.
3. ăm-sī 晚上 / 夜間 at night/night-time/during the night.  
Ăm-sī góa bô ái līm ká-pi. I don't like to drink coffee  
at night.  
Góa ăm-sī lóng tī chhū̂-nh. I'm always home at night.

4. <sup>1</sup>ân-ni/<sup>1</sup>ân-ne 這<sup>2</sup>樣 this/this way/such/in this manner.  
 Ân-ni chiah, <sup>3</sup>m-biân <sup>1</sup>kôh <sup>2</sup>iông <sup>3</sup>tô-á kâp <sup>1</sup>chhiâm-á. Eat it like this (with your hands) - you don't have to use a knife and fork. (Koh = take the further step of.)  
<sup>3</sup>Ū <sup>7</sup>lâng <sup>1</sup>ân-ni kóng <sup>3</sup>bô·? Do some people say this?/Do some express this meaning in this way?
5. bat 認<sup>1</sup>識/會 to know/be acquainted with; to have had the experience of. (Negative: <sup>1</sup>m<sup>3</sup>-bat)  
<sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>3</sup>m-bat <sup>3</sup>i. I don't know him.  
<sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>2</sup>bât <sup>7</sup>lái chia <sup>3</sup>bô·? Have you ever come here before?
6. <sup>7</sup>bîn-<sup>1</sup>â-<sup>1</sup>àm 明<sup>1</sup>晚 tomorrow evening/tomorrow night.  
<sup>1</sup>Lân <sup>7</sup>bîn-<sup>1</sup>â-<sup>1</sup>àm <sup>7</sup>lâi-khî <sup>2</sup>khôa\* <sup>3</sup>tiân-<sup>1</sup>íá\*, hó <sup>3</sup>bô·? Let's go see a movie tomorrow night, OK?
7. <sup>1</sup>châi-khí 早<sup>1</sup>上 this morning.  
<sup>7</sup>bîn-<sup>1</sup>â-<sup>1</sup>châi-khí tomorrow morning.  
<sup>7</sup>châng-<sup>1</sup>châi-khí yesterday morning.  
<sup>3</sup>chiah <sup>1</sup>châi-khí to eat breakfast.  
<sup>1</sup>Lín <sup>1</sup>kúí tiám <sup>3</sup>chiah <sup>1</sup>châi-khí? What time do you eat breakfast?  
<sup>1</sup>Góan <sup>2</sup>chhit-tiám <sup>1</sup>chiah. We eat at seven.  
<sup>7</sup>Châng-<sup>1</sup>châi-khí <sup>1</sup>lí <sup>2</sup>ân-<sup>1</sup>chóá\* <sup>7</sup>bô <sup>7</sup>lâi? Why didn't you come yesterday morning?
8. <sup>1</sup>châi-khí-<sup>1</sup>sí 早<sup>1</sup>晨 mornings/in the morning. (Does not mean "this morning".)  
<sup>2</sup>Pài-lâk <sup>1</sup>châi-khí-<sup>1</sup>sí <sup>2</sup>âi <sup>3</sup>siông-khò <sup>3</sup>bô·? Do you have class Saturday mornings?
9. <sup>7</sup>châng-<sup>1</sup>âm/<sup>7</sup>châng-<sup>1</sup>mê 昨<sup>1</sup>晚 last night.  
<sup>7</sup>Châng-<sup>1</sup>âm <sup>7</sup>i <sup>7</sup>lâi <sup>3</sup>tī chia. He came here last night (and stayed for some time OR: is still here).

Chít khò góa cháng-mê lóng bô thak. I didn't study  
this lesson at all last night.

10. chhia 車 vehicle. (Measure: tái) ("Chhia" includes  
trains and all 4-wheeled vehicles: buses/cars/  
vans/trucks.)

Lí ũ chhia bô? Do you have a car (or other type  
of 4-wheeled vehicle)?

I bé chít tái chhia. He bought a car.

11. chiah 才 only/only then/then and only then.

Lí nã bôeh chhia\* góa chiah bôeh khi. I won't go  
unless you're treating. (If you're treating,  
only then will I go.)

Chiah kôh lâi. Come again. (A set phrase spoken to  
any visitor leaving a home/store, etc.; also to  
people leaving after religious services.)

Chiah kôh lâi chē. Come again for a visit. (Same  
use as the above, except that it is not used  
after religious services.)

Chiah kôh lâi chhít-thô. Come again for a visit.  
(Usually spoken to a visitor leaving a home.)

12. ē-po 下午 this afternoon (from 2 p.m. until evening).  
(The tone on "ē" does not change.)

bín-á-ē-po tomorrow afternoon.

cháng-ē-po yesterday afternoon.

Góa ē-po bôeh khi, bín-á-ám chiah bôeh tng-lâi. I'm  
going this afternoon, won't be back till  
tomorrow night. ("-lâi" is enclitic; see Gram.  
Note 2.)

I cháng-ē-po lâi, bín-á-ē-po bôeh tng-khi. He  
came yesterday afternoon and will go home  
tomorrow afternoon.

13. ē-pó-sî 下午時分 in the afternoon/afternoons (from  
about 2 p.m. until evening). (Does not mean "this  
afternoon". Note that the tone on "ē" does not change.)

Góan chít lē-pài ē-pó-sî lóng bôeh thak. We'll be  
studying afternoons all this week.

14. ē-tàu <sup>下午</sup>午時 this afternoon (from about noon till 2 p.m.).  
(Note that the tone on "ē" does not change.)

bīn-ā-ē-tàu tomorrow afternoon (noon till 2 p.m.).

chāng-ē-tàu yesterday afternoon (noon till 2 p.m.).

Ē-tàu bō kēng-chio, ū kām-á nīa-nīa. This noon we don't have any bananas, only tangerines. (Since this is after 12:00 we can say "ē-tàu"; we can also say "tióng-tàu".)

15. ē-tàu-sī <sup>下午</sup>下午時分 in the afternoon/afternoons (noon till 2 p.m.). (Does not mean "this afternoon". Note that the tone on "ē" does not change.)

Ē-tàu-sī góa bō sīm-mīh ài chiāh chin-chē. I don't like to eat much at noon. (We may also say: "tióng-tàu-sī".)

16. ēng-àm <sup>今晚</sup>今晚 tonight.

chiāh-àm/chiāh àm-png. to have supper.

Eng-àm Tē\* Siān-sī\* bōeh lái lân chia chiāh-àm. Mr. Tē\* is coming here tonight for a meal.

17. hāng <sup>項</sup>件 (Measure for affairs/matters/things)

Chit hāng tāi-chì lí ē-hiāu chò bē? Do you know how to do this?

Góa bē-hiāu chò; góa khòa\*, chit hāng tāi-chì chin

phai\*-chò. I don't know how to do it; I think this is a very difficult thing to do.

Góa chā-hng káh í khi bé chin-chē hāng mih-kīa\*.

Yesterday I went with him to buy a lot of things.

18. hiōh-khùn <sup>歇</sup>休息 / <sup>放</sup>放假 rest (noun and verb)/take a break/  
take time off/be absent.

Chā-hng hiōh-khùn, lí khi tch-ūi? Where did you go yesterday on the day off? (Yesterday we had a break (from school or work); where did you go?)

G<sup>1</sup>óa k<sup>7</sup>in-á-j<sup>1</sup>ít b<sup>2</sup>oeh hi<sup>2</sup>oh-kh<sup>7</sup>ùn, b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>h<sup>3</sup>eh. I'm going to take off (OR: rest) today; I don't want to study.

L<sup>1</sup>án ch<sup>2</sup>ít l<sup>1</sup>é-p<sup>3</sup>ài ừ<sup>3</sup> s<sup>7</sup>ả\* j<sup>7</sup>ít ê hi<sup>2</sup>oh-kh<sup>7</sup>ùn; l<sup>1</sup>án l<sup>7</sup>ái-kh<sup>2</sup>ỉ

ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ít-th<sup>2</sup>ô. We have 3 days off this week; let's go have some fun.

19. ho\*h 嗎 (Interrogative sound at end of clause/sentence; expects an affirmative answer. A common affirmative sound answering "ho\*h" is "hè\*/hē\*".)

L<sup>1</sup>ỉ b<sup>2</sup>oeh kh<sup>1</sup>ỉ, ho\*h? You're going, aren't you?

Hè\*/hē\*. Yes.

20. i<sup>1</sup>áu 還 still/yet/another.

Ch<sup>2</sup>ít k<sup>1</sup>ù i<sup>1</sup>áu ừ<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ũn-tê b<sup>3</sup>ố\*? Do you have any question about this sentence? ("i<sup>1</sup>áu" = "Do you still have a problem" after my explaining it?)

Ch<sup>2</sup>ít p<sup>3</sup>ún h<sup>3</sup>ồ\* l<sup>1</sup>ỉ kh<sup>1</sup>oà\*, i<sup>1</sup>áu ch<sup>2</sup>ít p<sup>3</sup>ún g<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>2</sup>oeh kh<sup>1</sup>oà\*. You take this book (this book for you to read); I want to read the other one.

21. j<sup>1</sup>ít 日/太陽 sun/day.

ch<sup>3</sup>ít-j<sup>1</sup>ít one day/the whole day/each day.

Ỉ ch<sup>3</sup>ít-j<sup>1</sup>ít l<sup>7</sup>ái ch<sup>3</sup>ít p<sup>3</sup>ái. He comes once a day.

22. j<sup>1</sup>ít-s<sup>1</sup> 白天/日間 in the daytime. (Lit., "sun-time". Note enclitic; "jít" does not change tone.)

J<sup>1</sup>ít-s<sup>1</sup> g<sup>1</sup>óa ch<sup>7</sup>ín b<sup>7</sup>ố ả<sup>2</sup>i kh<sup>2</sup>oà\* ti<sup>3</sup>ân-i<sup>3</sup>á\*. I hate to watch a movie in the daytime.

Ỉn ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ù j<sup>1</sup>ít-s<sup>1</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ố p<sup>7</sup>ỏa\* ê l<sup>7</sup>âng t<sup>3</sup>ỉ ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ù. None of them are at home in the daytime.

23. k<sup>1</sup>àu 到/到達 to arrive/reach (destination); up to (and including).

k<sup>2</sup>àu-ủi to arrive/reach (destination). (Ủi" = "place" as in "t<sup>2</sup>óh-ủi = what place/where".)

Góá thák kâu chia nĩa-nĩa. I have only studied up to here.

Kúì tiám ē kâu-ūi? What time will we get there?

✓ 24. khít-khì 上去 to go up.

ĭ kúì tiám khít-khì? What time did he go up?

NB. When used at the end of a clause/sentence (but not suffixed to a verb), "khít" does not change tone and "khì" is enclitic.

ĭ khít-khì lāu-téng. He went upstairs. (Note tones on "khít-khì".)

ĭ iāu-bōe peh-khít-khì. He hasn't gone up yet.

NB. Both "khít" and "khì" become enclitics if used as suffix to a verb at the end of a clause/sentence. As such they are called Double Enclitics; see Gram. Note 3.

25. khít-lâi/khí-lâi 起來/起床 to come up; to get out of bed.

ĭ cháí-khí-sī kúì tiám khít-lâi? What time do you get up in the morning?

NB. When used at the end of a clause/sentence (but not suffixed to a verb), "khít" and "khí" do not change tone and "lâi" is enclitic.

Chhia\* ĭ khít-lâi lāu-téng. Ask him to come upstairs. (Note the tones on "khít-lâi".)

ĭ iāu-bōe peh-khít-lâi. He hasn't come up yet. OR: He hasn't gotten out of bed yet.

NB. "Khít/khí" and "lâi" become enclitics if used as suffix to a verb at the end of a clause/sentence. As such they are called Double Enclitics; see Gram. Note 3.

26. khùn 睡覺 to lie at rest; to sleep.

khí khùn to go to bed/to go to lie down and rest. (Distinguish from "to go to sleep", No. 27.)

ĭ chāng-àm kúì tiám khùn? What time did you go to bed last night?

Lí cháng-àm khùn kúí tiám-cheng? How many hours did  
you sleep last night?

Lín sián-si\* lè? Where's your husband?

Ī tēh khùn. He's sleeping (or at least lying down).

✓ 27. khùn-khì / ká-chōe 睡着了 to go to sleep. (Distinguish  
from "go to bed".) (The tones on "khùn" and "khì"  
never change.)

Ī khùn-khì ǎ. / Ī ká-chōe ǎ. He has gone to sleep. /  
He is fast asleep.

✓ Ī tēh khùn, m-kú iáu-bōe ká-chōe. He's in bed but  
hasn't gone to sleep yet. (Note: We may ordinarily  
translate "tēh khùn" as "is sleeping" but at  
times a distinction is made as in this sentence.)

28. khùn-tióng-tàu 睡午覺 to take a noontime nap.

Góá tióng-tàu bó khùn-tióng-tàu, chím-á chín ǎi-khùn.  
I didn't get a nap this noon and now I'm really  
sleepy.

29. là 啦 (Exclamation affirming or emphasizing the word(s)  
it accompanies.)

Lí ū chít-chhēng kho\* bô\*? Do you have \$1000?

Ū là. Yes.

30. lâu 樓 upper story/storied house.

lâu-kha the ground floor/downstairs.

lâu-téng upstairs.

tē + Number + lâu the + Ordinal Number + floor.

Chhia\* lí loh-khí lâu-kha. Please go downstairs.

Chít tiám-cheng góá tī lâu-kha. I study downstairs  
this period.

Chhia\* lí khít-lâi lâu-téng. Please come upstairs.

Ī iáu tī tē-sá\* lâu; iáu-bōe loh-lâi. He's still  
on the 3rd floor; he hasn't come down yet.

Chít keng ũ cháp lâu. This building has 10 stories.

31. lé-pài 星期 week.

Chít lé-pài góan bô thak-chheh; lín ũ bô? We don't have class this week; do you?

Chít khò góa thak nng lé-pài. I studied this lesson for 2 weeks.

32. pài-it 星期一 Monday pài-sì 星期四 Thursday

pài-jī 星期二 Tuesday pài-gō 星期五 Friday

pài-sa\* 星期三 Wednesday pài-lák 星期六 Saturday

lé-pài/lé-pài-jit/Chú-jit/seng-kí-jit 星期日 Sunday  
(See notes at "Lē-Kù".)

33. loh 下 down.

loh-chhia to alight from a train/bus/car.

loh-lâi to come down. (Note: at end of clause/sentence "loh" does not change tone; "lâi" is enclitic.)

loh-khì to go down. (At end of clause/sentence "loh" does not change tone; "khì" is enclitic.)

Ū lánng bôeh loh-chhia bô? Is anyone getting off (here)?

Ī chái-khí tui Tái-pak loh-lâi. He came down from Taipei this morning.

34. pài-kúi? 星期幾? which day of the week?

Kín-á-jit pài-kúi? What day of the week is today?

35. peh 爬 to climb.

peh soa\* climb the mountains.

Ī bôeh peh khít-khí lâu-téng. He's going upstairs.

Lí chái-khí kúi tiám peh-khí-lâi? What time did you get up this morning?



36. sī<sup>7</sup>-cheng 時鐘 clock. (Measure: ê)

Lí ē<sup>1</sup>-hiāu<sup>3</sup> khōa\*<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>7</sup>-cheng bē<sup>3</sup>? Do you know how to tell time?

37. sī<sup>7</sup>-kan 時間 time.

Góa m̄<sup>1</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup> ài<sup>7</sup> lâi<sup>2</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>7</sup>-kan. It's not that I don't want to come, it's that I have no time.

Chīm-á<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> siōng-khò<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>7</sup>-kan. Now it's time for class.

38. sī<sup>7</sup>-pío/sī<sup>7</sup>-pío-á/pío-á/chhiu-pío-á 錶/手錶 watch.

(Measure: ê/liáp. "Sī-pío" is any kind of watch; "chhiu-pío" is used only of a wrist watch.)

Lí é<sup>1</sup> pío-á<sup>7</sup> chīm-á<sup>1</sup> kú<sup>1</sup> tiám? What time is it now by your watch?

Góa é<sup>1</sup> pío-á<sup>7</sup> chīm-á<sup>1</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-tiám sī<sup>2</sup>-cháp-gōa<sup>3</sup> hun. By my watch it's now after five forty.

39. t̄ai<sup>3</sup>-chì 事情 affair/matter. (Measure: hāng)

kóng + Noun/Pronoun + é<sup>7</sup> t̄ai<sup>3</sup>-chì to talk about + Noun/Pronoun.

Lán lái<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>7</sup> í<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> t̄ai<sup>3</sup>-chì. Let's talk about her.

Góa ũ<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>3</sup>-chē<sup>7</sup> t̄ai<sup>3</sup>-chì. I have a lot of business (to take care of)./I have a lot of things to do.

40. t̄ang-sī<sup>7</sup>/sím-mih-sī<sup>7</sup>/tī-sī<sup>3</sup> 何時/什麼時候 when.

Lí t̄ang-sī<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>7</sup>? When are you going?

41. tióng-tàu 中午 this noon.

bīn-á<sup>7</sup>-tióng-tàu tomorrow noon.

cháng-tióng-tàu yesterday noon.

chiah<sup>3</sup> tióng-tàu/chiah<sup>3</sup>-tàu/chiah<sup>3</sup> ē-tàu to have lunch.

Tióng-tàu lí<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> pá<sup>3</sup> bōe<sup>3</sup>? OR: Lí<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> tióng-tàu bōe<sup>3</sup>?  
Did you have lunch yet?

42. <sup>7</sup>tióng-tàu-sí 中午時分 at noontime. (Not referring to "today".)

<sup>7</sup>Tióng-tàu-sí lí <sup>1</sup>bát <sup>2</sup>khún-tióng-tàu <sup>3</sup>bô? Did you ever take a nap at noon?

43. <sup>7</sup>tng-khì 回去 to go back home. (Note enclitic. Can also mean "to return to where one was", as to one's place in church after Communion. See Note at Lē-Kū No. 43.)

<sup>7</sup>Í <sup>7</sup>chā-hng <sup>7</sup>tng-khì. He went home yesterday.

<sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>7</sup>táng-sí <sup>2</sup>bōeh <sup>7</sup>tng-khì? When are you going home?

44. <sup>3</sup>tng-lâi 回來 to come back home. (Note enclitic.)

<sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>7</sup>táng-sí <sup>2</sup>bōeh <sup>3</sup>tng-lâi? When are you coming back home?

<sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>7</sup>bín-á-ē-po· <sup>2</sup>chiáh <sup>2</sup>bōeh <sup>3</sup>tng-lâi. I won't come back till tomorrow afternoon.

45. <sup>3</sup>tng-lâi-khì 回家去 to go back home. (Used with first person. See note at Lē-Kū Nos. 43 and 45. Note Double Enclitic - see Gram. Note 3.)

<sup>3</sup>Nā <sup>7</sup>bô <sup>2</sup>ái <sup>2</sup>kōh bé, <sup>1</sup>lân <sup>1</sup>chím-á <sup>3</sup>tng-lâi-khì. If you don't want to buy anything else, let's go home now.

<sup>2</sup>TUI-ŌE <sup>7</sup>Ē <sup>7</sup>HŌAN-ĒK

TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

What day are we going?

I1: You didn't go out, Mr. GŌ? (A form of greeting.)

G1: No. Come in and have a seat, Mr. Í. Have you eaten lunch yet?

I2: Yes. It's after one (already); you haven't eaten yet? (The "a" after "tiám-gōa" emphasizes the lateness of the hour.)

G2: We have. We always eat lunch at 12.

I3: You've never taken a nap at noon, is that right? (Note the repetition of "tióng-tàu".)

G3: I do. I'm up (already). I have only this minute come down from upstairs. How is it you have time to come today? ("Lí kin-á-jit àn-chóa\* ū sí-kan lâi?" is commonly used in speaking to a person considered very busy, such as a shop owner. It need not be answered directly.)

- I4: I want to ask you: would you like to go to Kaohsiung for some recreation?
- G4: Great! When are you going? If you're going today I don't have the time - I have to go to school again this <sup>3</sup> afternoon for class. ("Hó-a" - see Voc. No. 1 and LĒ-KÙ.)
- I5: Not today. It's Saturday afternoon. We're off Saturday afternoon, so let's go that afternoon. (Chiah - not before (that afternoon)/then and only then.)
- G5: What day is today? It's Thursday, isn't it? Tomorrow is Friday. That's OK (to go Saturday), but what bus will we take? ("Chhia" can also mean "train". "Ho\*h" expects agreement.)
- I6: After lunch that noon let's take the one o'clock. If you like taking a nap at noon, sleep on the bus (lit. riding on the bus only then let you sleep).
- G6: When we get there, we can walk to (where we can) do some shopping. Some say things are not expensive there so let's go there and bring a few things back with us (lit., buy a few things return home).
- I7: Yes (that's the right thing to do), then at night we can go out again and have some fun; we won't come back until Sunday morning or afternoon.
- G7: That's good. What time do you go to bed at night, Mr. Í? What time do you get up in the morning?
- I8: I never go to bed until 11 o'clock ("lóng ... chiah = always... only then = never until"); I get up at six in the morning. But last night a friend came, so I didn't get to bed till after 12.
- G8: So (if that's true) are you very sleepy now?
- I9: Yes, I'm going home to sleep now. When you have time please come over to my house. ("Lái góa hia" indicates that this is spoken away from the speaker's home.)
- G9: OK. And please come back here for a visit.

-----  
<sup>7</sup>  
BUN-HOAT 文法

GRAMMAR

1. PURPOSE

A. Asking a general question of Purpose may take this form:

- a) Lī<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Sīn<sup>7</sup>-tek chō<sup>2</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mīh<sup>2</sup> (chhōng<sup>2</sup>-sia\*h)?  
 What are you going to Hsinchu for? (You are going to Hsinchu to do what?)

To answer: purpose is expressed by the simple verb form:

Góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Sīn<sup>7</sup>-tek chhīt<sup>2</sup>-thô. I am going to Hsinchu to have some fun.

b) Gô<sup>1</sup>· siã<sup>3</sup>-si<sup>3</sup>\* khi<sup>2</sup> Oân<sup>7</sup>-lîm<sup>1</sup> chhông<sup>2</sup>-sia\*h?

ĩ khi<sup>2</sup> Oân<sup>7</sup>-lîm<sup>1</sup> bé chheh. 買冊

B. To ask whether one has/had a specific act in mind use "sī".

a) Lí<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Tâi<sup>7</sup>-pak<sup>2</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô<sup>1</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Is it for a little relaxation that you are going to Taipei?

1) Sī, bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô<sup>1</sup>. 迫迫

2) M̄<sup>3</sup>-sī, góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Tâi<sup>7</sup>-pak<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> Chhōa<sup>2</sup> Bók<sup>3</sup>-su<sup>3</sup>  
kóng<sup>1</sup>-ōe. 蔡 牧師  
拜 託

## 2. SINGLE ENCLITICS

A. An enclitic (Ls 2) is so attached to the preceding word that it loses its own tone and falls into the 3rd tone:

"Chiah pá<sup>3</sup> a."

In "chiah pá<sup>3</sup> a" the "a" is suffixed to "pá" in such a way that the "a" is entirely de-emphasized, though it has a meaning: one is "already full".

## B. EXAMPLES OF SINGLE ENCLITICS

Before we study Double Enclitics let us look at a few Single Enclitics. The "a" in "chiah pá a" is a Single Enclitic. In Ls 6 we learned to use "jíp" and "chhut" with Single Enclitics. In this lesson we have a few more.

a) ĩ<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> tã<sup>3</sup>-chì<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> túi<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kóng; chhia<sup>1</sup>\* lí<sup>1</sup> jíp<sup>1</sup>-khì. He has something he wants to tell you; please go in.

b) ĩ<sup>7</sup> chái<sup>1</sup>-khí<sup>1</sup> chhut<sup>1</sup>-khì; iáu<sup>1</sup>-bōe<sup>3</sup> tng<sup>3</sup>-lâi. He went out this morning and hasn't come back yet.

c) ĩ<sup>7</sup> iáu<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> khùn, iáu<sup>1</sup>-bōe<sup>3</sup> khít<sup>3</sup>-lâi. He's still sleeping; he hasn't gotten up yet.

d) Bín<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-chài<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hiōh<sup>2</sup>-khùn, góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> tng<sup>3</sup>-khì. If tomorrow is a day off, I'm going home.

e) Gó<sup>1</sup>a bô<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> khít-khì<sup>1</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> lóh-lâi<sup>3</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? I don't want to climb up; how about you coming down?

NB. 1. When a word such as "tng-lâi/khít-khì" is at the end of a clause/sentence, the ending ("lâi/khì") is in the 3rd tone and the syllable before it does not change tone ("tng/khít").

NB. 2. When such words are not at the end of a clause/sentence, they follow the regular rule for tone changes. For example:

f) Bín<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-chài<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hióh<sup>2</sup>-khùn<sup>1</sup>, gó<sup>1</sup>a bô<sup>2</sup>eh tng<sup>1</sup>-khí<sup>2</sup> chhù<sup>2</sup>-nìh<sup>3</sup>.  
If tomorrow is a day off, I'm going home.

### 3. DOUBLE ENCLITICS

- A. In Voc, No. 25 we have the sentence "í<sup>7</sup> iáu-bôe<sup>3</sup> peh-khít-lâi<sup>3</sup>. = He hasn't come up yet. OR: He hasn't gotten out of bed yet." Note "khít" changed from 4th to 3rd tone and "lâi" changed from 5th to 3rd. This is known as a Double Enclitic. There is no difference in grammar between the Single and Double Enclitic. The Double Enclitic is also suffixed to the preceding verb ("peh"), which does not change tone.

In many instances either "lâi" or "khì" is the 2nd enclitic; they indicate whether the action of the verb is directed toward or away from the speaker. The 1st enclitic tells us the direction in which the action takes place, whether it is in or out, up or down, towards home or across something.

#### B. EXAMPLES OF DOUBLE ENCLITICS.

- a) Sî<sup>7</sup>-kan kàu<sup>3</sup> á<sup>1</sup>, lán<sup>1</sup> tng-lâi<sup>3</sup>-khì<sup>1</sup>. It's time, let's go home. ("Lâi" here does not indicate direction.)
- b) Chít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> ô<sup>7</sup>-thô<sup>1</sup>-bái<sup>1</sup> chhí<sup>1</sup>\* lí<sup>1</sup> khí<sup>3</sup>-tng<sup>3</sup>-khì<sup>1</sup>.  
Please ride this motorcycle home.
- c) Koeh<sup>2</sup> Thài-thài<sup>2</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> lâu<sup>7</sup>-kha, lí<sup>1</sup> khí<sup>2</sup> chhí<sup>1</sup>\* í<sup>7</sup> peh-khít<sup>3</sup>-lâi<sup>3</sup>. Mrs. Koeh is downstairs; go and ask her to come up.
- d) Í<sup>7</sup> chái<sup>1</sup>-khí<sup>1</sup>-sî<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup>-tiám<sup>3</sup> peh-khít<sup>3</sup>-lâi<sup>3</sup>; cháp<sup>3</sup>-tiám<sup>3</sup>  
He always gets up at 8:00 in the  
chiáh<sup>2</sup> siōng<sup>3</sup>-khò. morning; he doesn't have class till  
10:00.

- e) Hít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh lí<sup>1</sup> táng-sí<sup>7</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> bé-tng<sup>3</sup>-lâi<sup>3</sup>? When are you going to buy that book (and bring it home)?
- f) Ī<sup>1</sup> túi<sup>2</sup> sóa\*-tég<sup>3</sup> kĩa\*-lôh-lâi<sup>3</sup>; Ī<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> chē<sup>3</sup>-chhia. He walked down the mountain; he didn't take the bus.
- g) Lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> chhut-khì<sup>1</sup>, mng<sup>1</sup> chhia\* lí<sup>1</sup> koai\*-khít-lâi<sup>3</sup>. If you're going out please close the door.

NB. "-khít-lâi<sup>3</sup>" as a Double Enclitic sometimes indicates direction, as in Sentence d. But often, as in Sentence g, it has no special meaning except to refer to the accomplishing of the action.

- C. When such expressions as "khít-lâi<sup>3</sup>"/"tng-khì<sup>1</sup>" are attached to a verb but not at the end of a clause/sentence, they follow the regular rule for tone changes:
- a) Gó<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup> khít-khì<sup>2</sup> lâu-tég<sup>7</sup>. I'm going upstairs.
- b) Chhia\* lí<sup>1</sup> lôh-lâi<sup>3</sup> lâu-kha<sup>7</sup>. Please come downstairs.

D. Later we will meet Triple Enclitics - these are the same grammatically as Single and Double Enclitics.

#### 4. The HAPPY "a"

In Ls 4, "The Particle 'a'", we saw several uses of the sound "a". "A" can be used to soften the impact of a word so that it sounds a bit less harsh. "A" may also be added to a word for exclamatory, emphatic or euphonic reasons. In such uses the tone of "a" follows the 1-3-7 Rule.

In Ls 7, Voc. No. 1, we studied the Unhappy "a", in the 3rd tone.

In this lesson "a" is a positive sound expressing joy. The tone on this "a" is IRREGULAR and can be learned only by listening to how people say it. Follow your teacher's pronunciation.

For examples see "Lē-Kù<sup>3</sup>" No. 1.

<sup>3</sup>  
LĒ-KŪ

PATTERN SENTENCES

1. a

a) Chhía\* lí lái hō. góa chhía\*. Please let me treat you to a meal.

Hó-a. I'll be only too happy to. (This is a polite response; it's not certain that I'll go.)

b) Góa bōeh khi lí hia, hó bō? How about my going to your house?

Hó-a; lái-á. Fine! Come right over!


c) Góan lái-khi hō. lí chhía\*. We're going to your house for a meal.

Hó-a; lái-á.

Note: "hō. lí chhía\*" = be invited/treated by you".

"Góa chhía\* lí. = I invite you/I'll treat you."  
(Note enclitic. Unless something else (a movie, etc.) is specified, this means "I'll treat you to a meal.")

"Lái hō. góa chhía\*" means the same: "Come to be treated (to a meal) by me".

2. <sup>2</sup>ái-khùn 

a) Lí ē <sup>2</sup>ái-khùn bē?

b) Chāng-ám bō khùn, chí-m-á chí <sup>2</sup>ái-khùn.

c) Cháp-ít-tiám á, lí iáu bē <sup>2</sup>ái-khùn, sī bō? An-chóa\*  
bō <sup>2</sup>ái khi khùn. (P)

d) Lāng nā <sup>2</sup>ái-khùn, sīm-mih tái-chì lóng bō <sup>2</sup>ái chò.

e) Góa mng lí. lí lóng bō in, lí sī iáu tái <sup>2</sup>ái-khùn,  
sī bō? (P)

3. <sup>2</sup>ām-sí

a) Góa chái-khi-sí ũ līm ká-pi, <sup>2</sup>ām-sí m-bat lim.

- b) Lí nã böeh khi góa hia, chhĩa\* lí âm-sĩ khi. (P)
- c) Lí âm-sĩ lông kúi tiám chiáh khùn? (P)
- d) Í jit-sĩ ũ tĩ chia, âm-sĩ bô.
- e) Âm-sĩ khiá ó·-tho·-bái chín phái\*-khiá. (P)

4. ǎn-ni/ǎn-ne ㄞ ㄞ

- a) Í ǎn-ni kóng, bô í-sù. (P)
- b) Chít kú òe ũ lǎng ǎn-ni kóng bô·? (P)
- c) ǎn-ni kóng ē sít-lé bē? (P)
- d) Lí böeh chhēng ǎn-ni khi Tái-pak, sī bô·? (P)
- e) Góa chhĩa\* lí khiá\* tiān-ia\*; lí chhĩa\* góa chiáh-png, ǎn-ni hó bô·?

5. bat ㄅㄢˋ | m̄-bat ㄇㄢˋ

- a) Tĩ hia hít é lǎng lí bat í bô·?
- b) Hun góa bat chiáh, m̄-kú bô tia\*-tia\* tēh chiáh.
- c) Góa m̄-bat khiá, m̄-chai ē-hiáu khiá bē?
- d) Sít-lé, góa m̄-bat lí; lí ǎn-chóa\* bat góa. (P)
- e) Chít kú góa m̄-bat; lí bat bô·?
- f) Bô thak-chheh é lǎng m̄-bat jī.

6. bín-ǎ-àm

- a) Bín-ǎ-àm lí böeh khi hō·. Khú Sín-hū chhĩa\* bô·?
- b) Eng-àm góa ũ tǎi-chí; bín-ǎ-àm, hó bô·? (P)
- c) Góa bín-ǎ-àm bô tĩ chia; góa bín-ǎ-chái-khi böeh khi Sín-tek.
- d) Lí kóng bín-ǎ-àm ũ kúi é péng-iú böeh lái lǎn chia chiáh-png?



e) ỉ<sup>7</sup> kìn-<sup>7</sup>á-jít<sup>1</sup> khì, bìn-<sup>7</sup>á-<sup>1</sup>àm bōeh tóg-lâi<sup>3</sup>.

7. chái-khí      bìn-<sup>7</sup>á-chái-khí      cháng-chái-khí  
chia<sup>3</sup> chái-khí

a) Lí chái-khí bōeh khì tōh-ūi?

b) Kìn-<sup>7</sup>á-jít<sup>1</sup> ũ kúi é lāng tī chia chia<sup>3</sup> chái-khí?

c) Góa bìn-<sup>7</sup>á-chái-khí bōeh chē<sup>3</sup> pēh-tiám cháp-hun é chia<sup>7</sup> khì Tái-pak.

d) Góa cháng-chái-khí chia<sup>3</sup> khái-sí thak tē-káu khò.

e) ỉ<sup>7</sup> chái-khí iōng-kia\*-<sup>7</sup>é lāi, bō<sup>7</sup> khia<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>-tho<sup>1</sup>-bái.

8. chái-khí-sí

a) Góa chái-khí-sí<sup>1</sup> lóng chhít-tiám chia<sup>2</sup>h pēh-khí-lâi<sup>3</sup>.

b) Chái-khí-sí<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>h-png m-hó. (P)

c) Lí kóng chái-khí-sí<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ái thak-chheh, âm-sí<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>2</sup>h bōeh thak, sí bō<sup>3</sup>?

d) Chái-khí-sí<sup>1</sup> ũ chín-chē<sup>3</sup> lāng lāi chia pēh-soa\*.

e) Góa chái-khí-sí<sup>1</sup> lóng pēh-tiám tui chhù-nih lāi. (P)

9. cháng-àm/cháng-mê

a) Cháng-àm góa bō<sup>7</sup> khì tōh-ūi, góa tī<sup>3</sup> chhù-nih<sup>3</sup> khòa\* tiān-sī.

b) Cháng-mê<sup>7</sup> é tiān-ia\*<sup>3</sup> ũ-ia\*<sup>1</sup> chín hó-khòa\*.

c) Góa m-sī<sup>3</sup> cháng-àm tóg-lâi<sup>3</sup>, góa chái-khí chia<sup>2</sup>h tóg-lâi<sup>3</sup>.

d) Cháng-àm góa khì<sup>2</sup> bé chít-kóa<sup>1</sup> chheh, chín hó-khòa\*;  
lí ái<sup>2</sup> khòa\* bō<sup>3</sup>?

e) Góa cháng-mê<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> khì hō<sup>3</sup> i<sup>7</sup> chhia\*; lí ũ<sup>3</sup> khì bō<sup>3</sup>? (P)

10. chhia

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> sí<sup>3</sup> chē<sup>3</sup>-chhia lái, sí<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>·?
- b) Í<sup>7</sup> chím-á<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> chhia, lí<sup>1</sup> chái-íá\*<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>·?
- c) Í<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> chhia í<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>. (P)
- d) Tí<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>3</sup>-bīn<sup>7</sup> hít<sup>7</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> chhia sí<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ê, sí<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>·?
- e) Chít<sup>7</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> chhia góa<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> sí<sup>2</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> bān; ũ<sup>3</sup> siok<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>·?

11. chia<sup>h</sup>

- a) Góa<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> pá<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> kãh<sup>2</sup> í<sup>7</sup> kóng-ōe. (P)
- b) Góa<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chí\*<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> chia.
- c) Góa<sup>1</sup> chím-á<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> lái nĩa-nĩa. (P)
- d) Chia<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> keng<sup>7</sup>-chio<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>·? Nã<sup>3</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup>.
- e) Bīn-á<sup>7</sup>-chài<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>; m̄<sup>3</sup>-bián<sup>1</sup> chím-á<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>.

12. ē-po<sup>7</sup>      bīn-á<sup>1</sup>-ē-po<sup>7</sup>      cháng-ē-po<sup>7</sup>

- a) Góa<sup>1</sup> ē-po<sup>7</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> lái, eng-àm<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> lái. (P)
- b) Cháng-ē-po<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh, lí<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi<sup>2</sup> chhít-thô?
- c) Góa<sup>1</sup> ē-po<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> siōng-khò; bīn-á<sup>1</sup>-ē-po<sup>7</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-bián.
- d) Ín<sup>7</sup> ē-po<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>3</sup> iōng-kia\*-ê<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Chiōng-hòa, lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> kãh<sup>2</sup> ín<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>·?
- e) Cháng-ē-po<sup>7</sup> ín-ūi<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> pêng-iú<sup>7</sup> lái góan<sup>1</sup> chhù, só<sup>1</sup>-í<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> lái chia.

13. ē-po<sup>7</sup>·-sí<sup>1</sup>

- a) Góan<sup>1</sup> ē-po<sup>7</sup>·-sí<sup>1</sup> thak<sup>3</sup> sã\*-tiám<sup>1</sup>-cheng<sup>3</sup> nĩa-nĩa.
- b) E-po<sup>7</sup>·-sí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> gín-á<sup>7</sup> lái chia chhít-thô.
- c) Góa<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> ē-po<sup>7</sup>·-sí<sup>1</sup> lím<sup>7</sup> ká-pi, âm-sí<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> bê<sup>3</sup> ái<sup>2</sup>-khùn. (P)

d) ỉ<sup>1</sup> chái<sup>1</sup>-khí<sup>1</sup>-sĩ<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> lái; ē-pô<sup>7</sup>·-sĩ<sup>7</sup> chiá<sup>2</sup>h ữ<sup>3</sup> lái. (P)

e) ữ<sup>3</sup> lán<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> ē-pô<sup>7</sup>·-sĩ<sup>7</sup> khí<sup>2</sup> khòa\* tián<sup>3</sup>-iá\*, lí<sup>1</sup> ải<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>·?

14. 下 卷 ē-tàu bín-á-ē-tàu cháng-ē-tàu

a) ē-tàu lí<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh tng-khí<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>·?

b) ē-tàu chiá<sup>3</sup>h pá<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kán<sup>2</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup>-khí<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> mih<sup>3</sup>-kĩa\*, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>·?

c) Cháng-ē-tàu hō<sup>3</sup>· lí<sup>1</sup> chhía\*; bín-á-ē-tàu hō<sup>3</sup>· góa<sup>1</sup> chhía\*.

d) ē-tàu iáu<sup>1</sup> ữ<sup>3</sup> tãi<sup>3</sup>-chí<sup>2</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> chò; bín-á-ē-tàu chiá<sup>2</sup>h khí<sup>1</sup>. (P)

e) Cháng-ē-tàu khí<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh lí<sup>1</sup> ữ<sup>3</sup> khòa\* bô<sup>3</sup>e?

15. ē-tàu-sĩ

a) Góan ē-tàu-sĩ hióh<sup>2</sup>-khún<sup>2</sup> kàu<sup>2</sup> nng<sup>3</sup>-tiám chiá<sup>2</sup>h sióng<sup>3</sup>-khò.

b) ē-tàu-sĩ góa<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> khí<sup>2</sup> lán<sup>7</sup> hia, ỉn-ũi<sup>3</sup> ữ<sup>3</sup> lán<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> khún<sup>2</sup>-tióng<sup>7</sup>-tàu. (P)

c) Góa<sup>1</sup> ē-tàu-sĩ m̄<sup>3</sup>-bát<sup>2</sup> khún<sup>2</sup>-tióng<sup>7</sup>-tàu.

d) ỉ<sup>7</sup> ē-tàu-sĩ lóng<sup>1</sup> tĩ<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>3</sup>-bín<sup>1</sup> chiá<sup>1</sup>h, m̄<sup>3</sup>-bát<sup>1</sup> tng<sup>7</sup>-lái<sup>1</sup> chhù<sup>3</sup>-nĩh<sup>1</sup> chiá<sup>1</sup>h.

e) Chiá<sup>2</sup>h é<sup>7</sup> hák-seng ē-tàu-sĩ lóng<sup>1</sup> tĩ<sup>3</sup> hák-hāu<sup>3</sup> chiá<sup>1</sup>h.

16. 7 eng-àm chiá<sup>3</sup>h-àm/chiá<sup>3</sup>h ăm-png

a) Eng-àm kúi<sup>1</sup> tiám<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh chiá<sup>1</sup>h?

b) Eng-àm é<sup>7</sup> tián<sup>3</sup>-sĩ<sup>7</sup> bê<sup>3</sup> phá<sup>1</sup>i\*<sup>1</sup>-khòa\*, ho\*h? (P)

c) Eng-àm lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> sĩa<sup>1</sup>-jĩ, bín-á<sup>1</sup>-chài<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh hō<sup>3</sup>· lí<sup>1</sup> khí<sup>2</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô<sup>1</sup>.

d) Góa<sup>1</sup> chĩm<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>2</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh khí<sup>2</sup> Kó<sup>7</sup>-hiông, eng-àm bô<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh tng<sup>3</sup>-lái<sup>1</sup>.

e) Eng-àm góan<sup>1</sup> Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su lóng<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh lái<sup>7</sup> lán<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> chiá<sup>3</sup>h ăm-png.

17. hāng (Measure for "tāi-chì" and "mih-kīa\*")

- a) Chít hāng tāi-chì chín phái\*-chò. (P)
- b) Hít hāng mih-kīa\* chín kùi; góa bô ái bé. (P)
- c). Góa ê khô-nih bô pōa\* hāng mih-kīa\*; nã ũ, lóng hō̂ lí.
- d) Chín sít-lé, chít hāng tāi-chì góa bē-hiáu chò.

18. hiōh-khùn

- a) Sī-kan kàu ả, lán lái hiōh-khùn.
- b) Góa thak chít tiām-cheng, hiōh-khùn chít tiām-cheng.
- c) Lí khi Tái-pak bōeh hiōh-khùn kúi jít? (P)
- d) Chít lé-pài lán ũ nng jít ê hiōh-khùn, lí bōeh khi toh?
- e) Chít kù oe ín-ũi tĩ chia hiōh-khùn, số̂-ỉ chít jĩ m̄-bián chón-sia\*. (P)

19. ho\*h? Note the affirmative answers to "ho\*h" given here; they are among many that could be given. "Hè\*" or "Hē\*" is an especially common response.

- a) Khōa\* chít chhút tiān-ía\* ái lak-chhít-cháp khô, ho\*h? (P)
  - 1) Sī ả/Sī là/Hè\*/Hē\*/Hè\* là/Hē\* là.
  - 2) M̄-bián là. Gō̂-cháp-gōa khô nĩa-nĩa.
- b) Ỉ kóng kin-ả-jít bōeh lái, ho\*h?
  - 1) Sī là/Hē\*/Hè\*.
  - 2) Bô, Ỉ bô ả-ni kóng.
- c) Chít kù sī tĩ tē-chhít khô, ho\*h?

## 20. iáu ㄟ

- a) Iáu ũ kúì ê lāng iáu-bōe loh-lái? (P)
- b) Í chiah chín-chē á, m̄-kú í kóng í iáu bōeh kòh chiah. (P)
- c) Ká-pi iáu ũ bō? (P)  
Ká-pi bō á.
- d) Lín iáu ài í-á bō? Chia iáu ũ nng tè.
- e) Ó-thò-bái góan ũ nng tái, góa khia chit tái, tí chhù-nih iáu ũ chit tái.
- f) Chia iáu ũ; lín iáu bōeh kòh chiah bō?

## 21. jít "Chit-jít" has several meanings, as noted in these sentences.

- a) Chit-jít ũ jī-chap-sī tiám-cheng. a day has 24 hours.
- b) Góa khùn chit-jít. I slept the whole day.
- c) Góan chit-jít ài thak sī-tiám-cheng é chheh. (P)
- d) Lí bōeh khi hia kúì jít?  
Bōeh khi chit lé-pài.
- e) Góa chit lé-pài hiōh-khùn nng-sá\* jít.
- f) Chhò lí é sa\* m̄-bián gō. jít.

## 22. jít-sí (Note enclitic.)

- a) Í jít-sí lái chia thak-chheh nīa-nīa; âm-sí bō tí chia.
- b) Í jít-sí lóng bō tí chhù; âm-sí chiah ũ tng-lái.
- c) Góa jít-sí ũ chín-chē tái-chì, bō sī-kan káh lí khi.
- d) Góa é tái-chì góa lóng jít-sí chò, âm-sí hiōh-khùn.

1/17/76

23. kàu kàu-ūi

- a) Lán thak kàu tē 135 iah chiāh hiōh-khùn, hó bō<sup>3</sup>? (P)
- b) Lín chhù kàu bōe? (P)
- c) Lí khòa\*, lán kúi tiám ē kàu-ūi?
- d) Chhít lé-pài góa bōeh tui pài-it khí kàu pài-sì;  
pài-gō<sup>2</sup> chiāh bōeh tng-lái. (P)
- e) Lán chē nng tiám-cheng á, iáu-bōe kàu-ūi, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? (P)

24. khít-khì/khí-khì

- a) Í bōeh kán lí kóng-ōe, chhia\* lí khít-khì.
- b) Lí bōeh khít-khí láu-téng chhōng-sia\*h?
- c) Í tī tē-pēh láu, lán lái khít-khì.

25. khít-lái/khí-lái

- a) Lí bín-á-chái-khí kúi tiám ē khí-lái?
- b) Í tī láu-kha, í bōeh khít-lái.
- c) Í iáu tēh khùn, iáu-bōe khí-lái.
- d) Í khít-lái sá\*-cháp hùn-cheng á.
- e) Lí khí chhia\* í khí-lái tē-sá\* láu.

26. khùn

- a) Góa chāng-àm chap-jī-tiám chiāh khí khùn.
- b) Lí chāng-àm khùn kúi tiám-cheng?
- c) Nā ai-khùn, khí pāng-keng khùn.
- d) Chhít keng hō<sup>3</sup> lí khùn; góa khùn hít keng. (P)

27. khùn-khì/ká-chōe

- a) Í khùn-khí á. OR: Í ká-chōe á.

- b) G<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a k<sup>1</sup>á<sup>1</sup>-tiám kh<sup>2</sup>ỉ khùn, k<sup>2</sup>á<sup>2</sup> ch<sup>3</sup>áp-ít-tiám chiá<sup>2</sup> khùn-kh<sup>1</sup>ỉ.
- c) Ỉ kh<sup>2</sup>ỉ khùn á<sup>3</sup>, m<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> g<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a khò<sup>a\*</sup>, i<sup>1</sup>á<sup>1</sup>-b<sup>3</sup>ò<sup>3</sup>e k<sup>7</sup>á<sup>7</sup>-ch<sup>7</sup>ò<sup>7</sup>e. (P)
- d) Ch<sup>3</sup>ē-chhia lí<sup>1</sup> b<sup>2</sup>át khùn-kh<sup>1</sup>ỉ b<sup>3</sup>ò<sup>3</sup>? (P)
- e) Ỉ l<sup>1</sup>óng b<sup>7</sup>ò<sup>7</sup> ín; g<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a khò<sup>a\*</sup>, khùn-kh<sup>1</sup>ỉ á<sup>3</sup>.

28. khùn-ti<sup>7</sup>óng-tà<sup>7</sup>

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> n<sup>3</sup>á b<sup>7</sup>ò<sup>7</sup> khùn-ti<sup>7</sup>óng-tà<sup>7</sup>, ē-p<sup>7</sup>ó<sup>7</sup>-s<sup>1</sup>í ē<sup>3</sup> á<sup>2</sup>i-khùn b<sup>3</sup>ê?
- b) G<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a ti<sup>7</sup>óng-tà<sup>7</sup>-s<sup>1</sup>í m<sup>3</sup>-b<sup>2</sup>át khùn-ti<sup>7</sup>óng-tà<sup>7</sup>.
- c) Á<sup>2</sup>i khùn-ti<sup>7</sup>óng-tà<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> l<sup>3</sup>àng n<sup>3</sup>á b<sup>7</sup>ò<sup>7</sup> khùn-ti<sup>7</sup>óng-tà<sup>7</sup>, ē-t<sup>2</sup>á<sup>2</sup>-s<sup>1</sup>í ē<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>7</sup>ín á<sup>2</sup>i-khùn.
- d) G<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a k<sup>7</sup>ín-á<sup>1</sup>-j<sup>1</sup>ít b<sup>7</sup>ò<sup>7</sup> khùn-ti<sup>7</sup>óng-tà<sup>7</sup>, ch<sup>1</sup>ím-á<sup>7</sup> ch<sup>7</sup>ín á<sup>2</sup>i-khùn.
- e) Ỉ i<sup>1</sup>á<sup>1</sup>u t<sup>2</sup>é<sup>2</sup>h khùn-ti<sup>7</sup>óng-tà<sup>7</sup>, i<sup>1</sup>á<sup>1</sup>-b<sup>3</sup>ò<sup>3</sup>e p<sup>3</sup>eh-kh<sup>3</sup>í-l<sup>3</sup>ái.

29. là<sup>3</sup> (exclamation affirming or emphasizing the point.)

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>7</sup>ín á<sup>2</sup>i th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>3</sup>ehh b<sup>3</sup>ò<sup>3</sup>?  
 Ũ là. I sure do.

- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>7</sup>ín-ch<sup>3</sup>ē ch<sup>1</sup>í\* b<sup>3</sup>ò<sup>3</sup>?  
 B<sup>3</sup>ò<sup>3</sup> là.

- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> b<sup>2</sup>ó<sup>2</sup>eh kh<sup>1</sup>ỉ, s<sup>1</sup>í b<sup>3</sup>ò<sup>3</sup>?  
 S<sup>1</sup>í là.

- d) Lí<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiá<sup>3</sup>u b<sup>3</sup>ê?  
 ē là.

30. l<sup>7</sup>âu l<sup>7</sup>âu-kha (ground floor) l<sup>7</sup>âu-téng

t<sup>3</sup>ē-ít l<sup>7</sup>âu (only used if more than 2 stories)

- a) Chi<sup>2</sup>ò<sup>2</sup>h-m<sup>7</sup>ng, l<sup>7</sup>âu-k<sup>3</sup>h<sup>3</sup>a ũ<sup>3</sup> pi<sup>3</sup>án-s<sup>3</sup>ó<sup>3</sup>. b<sup>3</sup>ò<sup>3</sup>?  
 b) Lí<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> ch<sup>3</sup>ehh t<sup>3</sup>í t<sup>3</sup>ē-s<sup>7</sup>a\* l<sup>7</sup>âu, b<sup>7</sup>ò<sup>3</sup> t<sup>3</sup>í g<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a chia.

- c) Lâu-téng ũ lǎng tēh khùn, chhĩa\* lín loh-khĩ lâu-kha chhĩt-thô.
- d) Chĩt tiám-cheng lí tĩ lâu-kha thak, m-sĩ tĩ lâu-téng.
- e) Góan chhù é pǎng-keng lóng tĩ lâu-téng. (P)
- f) Lâu-téng bô chiah-pǎng-keng, lâu-kha chiah ũ.
- g) Tiān-sĩ koai\*-khĩt-lái, khĩt-khĩ lâu-téng sia-jĩ. (P)
- h) Sím-mih-lǎng tĩ lâu-téng iáu-bôe loh-lái?
- i) Góan chhù ũ nǎng tái tiān-sĩ; lâu-kha chĩt tái, lâu-téng iǎ chĩt tái.

31. lé-pài week.

- a) Chĩt lé-pài ũ kúi jít?
- b) Pài-it sĩ chĩt lé-pài é tē-ít jít. (P)
- c) Chĩt lé-pài lí bôeh thak kúi tiám-cheng? (This week.)
- d) Chĩt é lé-pài lí ũ bôeh khĩ tōh-ūi bô? ("This Sunday". See No. 32 B below.)

32. A. pài-it            pài-jĩ            pài-sa\*  
pài-sì            pài-gō\*            pài-lák

(These are the days from Monday to Saturday. Sometimes "lé-" is prefixed to these days of the week.)

- a) Pài-it góa káp pēng-iú khĩ Chióng-hòa é sǎa\*-téng chhĩt-thô. (P)
- b) Pài-jĩ tǎg-lái khùn chĩt-jít. — A
- c) Pài-sa\* góa chhĩa\* pēng-iú khĩ khǎa\* tiān-iá\*.
- d) Pài-sì góa khĩa o'-tho'-bái khĩ bé chĩt-kǎa mih-kĩa\*.
- e) Pài-gō\* khĩ siōng-khò.
- f) Pài-lák tĩ chhù-nih káp gín-á chhĩt-thô, khǎa\* tiān-sĩ.



g) Í pài-si-àm pēh-tiám chiáh bōeh lái.

h) Góan pài-gō̄-ē-pō lóng bōeh khī sìn-tek, lín bōeh khī bō̄?

i) Lí pài-lák-chái-khí ài khī hák-hāu bō̄?

j) Pài-jī-ē-tàu lái góan hia chiáh-png, hó bō̄?

B. lé-pài/lé-pài-jit/Chú-jit/seng-kí-jit  
(These terms all mean "Sunday".)

"Lé-pài" is the most common term. It means literally "Worship (Day)" ("Lé-pài" can also mean "week" - see No. 31.)

"Lé-pài-jit" may also be used.

"Chú-jit (=The Lord's Day)" - is the Catholic term for "Sunday", but non-Christians are not familiar with this word. Some Catholics use "Chú-jit" to mean the whole week.

"Seng-kí-jit" is the official, literary term.

a) Lé-pài-àm lí káh góa lái-khí bé pío-á, hó bō̄?

b) Nā bōeh khī, góa lé-pài-jit chiáh ũ sī-kan.

c) Chit lé-pài chiáh é mih-kīa\* góa lóng Chú-jit káp thài-thài khī bé. (P)

d) Chit é lé-pài góa bōeh khī lín chhù, hó bō̄?  
(This Sunday.)

33. loh loh-chhia loh-khī loh-lái

a) Góa bōeh chē káu sìn-tek loh-chhia. (P)

b) Í bōeh khùn á, chhia\* lín loh-khī, hó bō̄?

c) Lí khī chhia\* lín pēng-iú loh-lái chiáh-png.

d) Pēh tī chhīu-á-téng hiáh é gin-á, chhia\* lín loh-lái. (P)

e) Í chē tī ó̄-thō-bái-téng, m loh-lái. (P)

34. p<sup>2</sup>ai-kúí?

- a) Kín-á-jít (sī) p<sup>2</sup>ai-kúí?
- b) Lí p<sup>2</sup>ai-kúí bōeh khi<sup>2</sup> Sín-tek?
- c) Í p<sup>2</sup>ai-kúí bōeh khi<sup>2</sup> bó kóng. OR: Í bó kóng p<sup>2</sup>ai-kúí bōeh khi<sup>2</sup>. (P)
- d) Kín-á-jít nā-sī<sup>3</sup> p<sup>2</sup>ai-sì, chá-hng sī<sup>3</sup> p<sup>2</sup>ai-kúí?
- e) Lí kóng lí p<sup>2</sup>ai-kúí bōeh loh-khi<sup>2</sup> Kó-hiōng? (P)

35. peh

- a) Lí cháí-khí kúí tiám peh-khi<sup>3</sup>-lái?
- b) Hiāh ē gín-á chín<sup>2</sup> ái pēh hít cháng chhiū-á.
- c) Ín bōeh khi<sup>2</sup> pēh-soa\*, lí bōeh kán ín khi<sup>2</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?
- d) Góa pēh khi<sup>2</sup>-lái tiám-gōa<sup>3</sup>-cheng a. (P)
- e) Hít ē láng pēh tí<sup>3</sup> chhū-téng téh chhōng-sia\*h?

36. sí-cheng

- a) Sio péng-iú, lí ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu khòa\* sí-cheng bē?
- b) Hít ē sí-cheng bó téh kía\*; lí khòa\*, kàu chim-á iáu kàu-tiám. (P)
- c) Lán hāk-hāu bó sí-cheng, só<sup>3</sup>-í thak-chheh lóng m̄<sup>3</sup>-chái sí-kan.
- d) Lí khi<sup>2</sup> khòa\* hít ē sí-cheng chim-á kúí tiám.

37. sí-kan

- a) Chim-á sī thak-chheh ē sí-kan, lí an-chóa\* téh kóng-ōe?
- b) Hiōh-khùn ē sí-kan kàu á, lán lái hiōh-khùn. (P)

c) Sít-lé, góa chím-á bô sí-kan kâh lí khi bé.

d) Lí táng-sí ũ sí-kan? Góa chhia\* lí khòa\* tiân-ia\*.

e) Nã ũ sí-kan chhia\* lín chiáh kôh lái chhit-thô.

38. sí-pío/sí-pío-á/pío-á/chhiu-pío-á

a) Lí ũ sí-pío bô? ?

Ū, góa ũ pío-á.

b) Lí hit é pío-á chím-á kui tiám? (P)

c) Í hit é chhiu-pío-á chin kui, ai bân-góa kho.

d) Hák-seng thak-chheh nã tia\*-tia\* khòa\* sí-pío, tui

Lâu-su chin sít-lé. (P)

e) Góa bô pío-á; góa pài-lak-âm bôeh lái-khi bé.

39. tãi-chì

kóng lóng é tãi-chì = talk about people.

a) Lí kìn-á-jít ũ sìm-mih tãi-chì bô? (P)

Ū, góa kìn-á-jít ũ chin-chê tãi-chì.

b) Lán m-hô kóng lóng é tãi-chì. (P)

c) Chit é tãi-chì lí bôeh ân-chóa\* chò?

d) Lán hák-hâu é tãi-chì í. lóng chái-ia\*, lí khi mng í.

e) Che m-sí góa é tãi-chì; che sí í é tãi-chì. (P)

f) Iâu ũ tãi-chì bô? Nã bô tãi-chì góa chím-á bôeh

tng-khi. (P)

40. táng-sí/sím-mih-sí/tí-sí

a) Lí táng-sí bôeh khi?

b) Che sí táng-sí é tãi-chì? (P)

- c) Lí kóng lí chín bô sí-kan; ǎn-ni lí sím-mih-sí chiah<sup>2</sup>  
 ũ sí-kan?
- d) Í bô kóng í tī-sí bôeh lái, m-kú góa khòa\*, í  
 bín-á-chài ē lái.
- e) Lí tīa\*-tīa\* kóng bôeh chhía\*, sí tâng-sí?

41. tióng-tàu bín-á-tióng-tàu cháng-tióng-tàu  
 chiah tióng-tàu/chiah ē-tàu/chiah-tàu

- a) Lí tióng-tàu bôeh tng-khí chhù-nih chiah, á-sí bôeh  
 tī chia chiah?
- b) Lái káp góan chiah-tàu, hó bô\*?  
 Tó-sīa, góa chiah pá á.
- c) Cháng-tióng-tàu tī lín hia hó\* lín chhía\*, chín  
 tó-sīa.

Bē là, bē là. It was nothing.

- d) Bín-á-tióng-tàu lán lái-khí góa-kháu chiah-png, hó  
 bô\*? (Out in some eatery.)
- e) Tióng-tàu lí ǎn-chóa\* bô lái chiah?

42. tióng-tàu-sí

- a) Tióng-tàu-sí tī lán hák-hāu chiah-png ē hák-seng bô  
 chín-chē.
- b) Góa chín bô ái tióng-tàu-sí khi lán hia. (P)
- c) Tióng-tàu-sí nã bô khùn-tióng-tàu, ē-pó\*-sí thak-  
 cheh ē ái-khùn.
- d) Góa tióng-tàu-sí nã khi khòa\* tiān-ia\*, lóng tī hia  
 khùn nã-nã. (P)
- e) Tióng-tàu-sí góa chín ái lím ká-pi á-sí tē.

43. tng-khi<sup>1</sup> "to go home." When speaking of others, the speaker says "tng-khi<sup>1</sup>", not "tng-lai-khi<sup>1</sup>".

When speaking of oneself, use "tng-lai-khi<sup>3</sup>" if about to leave for home.

If the speaker is not about to leave right away but will go later, he says: "Góa bōeh tng-khi<sup>1</sup>".

a) Chhòa Siān-si<sup>3</sup>\* chā-hng lái chia, chái-khi<sup>1</sup> tng-khi<sup>1</sup>.

b) Í kóng í chím-á bōeh tng-khi<sup>1</sup>.

c) Tí chia chín hó, lí tng-khi<sup>2</sup> bōeh chhōng-sia\*h?

d) Gô<sup>1</sup> Siān-si<sup>3</sup>\* tng-khi<sup>3</sup> á.

e) Góa bín-á-chài chiāh bōeh tng-khi<sup>1</sup>.

44. tng-lai<sup>3</sup> "to come back home."

a) Í ũ kóng kúi tiám bōeh tng-lai<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

b) Lí eng-ám ũ bōeh tng-lai<sup>7</sup> chiāh-png bô<sup>3</sup>?

c) Í chā-hng khi<sup>2</sup> Kô<sup>7</sup>-hiōng, káu chím-á iáu-bōe tng-lai<sup>3</sup>.

d) Góa chím-á bōeh khi<sup>2</sup> sôa\*-téng, ē-po<sup>1</sup> bōeh tng-lai<sup>7</sup> thak-chheh.

e) Góa nã ũ khi<sup>2</sup> hia, hít pún góa chiāh bé tng-lai<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup>-khòa\*. (P)

45. tng-lai-khi<sup>3</sup> "to go home." Generally used only in the first person, and only if the speaker is about to leave for home.

If the time for leaving is seen as being many hours away, use "tng-khi<sup>1</sup>".

a) Góan bōeh tng-lai-khi<sup>3</sup> á. (P)

b) Góa bōeh tng lai-khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-tiong. (Note change of tones on "tng lai-khi<sup>1</sup>".)

c) Iú<sup>1</sup>\* Siān-si<sup>3</sup>\*, lán kúi tiám bōeh tng-lai-khi<sup>3</sup>?

d) Lán tng lai-khi<sup>2</sup> chiāh-png, hó bô<sup>3</sup>?

e) Gô<sup>3</sup>-tiám á, góa ái tng-lai-khi<sup>3</sup> á. (P)

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF PATTERN SENTENCES MARKED "P"

2. c) It's 11 o'clock; you still don't feel like sleeping? Why don't you go to bed? (The "a" emphasizes the lateness of the hour.)  
 e) I asked you a question and you're not answering at all; you're still sleepy, are you? ("Góa m̄ng lí" can also mean "I called you/I spoke to you". "Teh" may be omitted before "ài-khùn".)
3. b) If you're going to my place please go at night. (Spoken away from home.)  
 c) What time do you go to bed at night? ("Khi" is understood: "khì khùn". "Chiah" need not be translated here but it is very common in this type of sentence.)  
 e) It's difficult to ride a motorcycle at night.
4. a) His talking like that is ridiculous./What he says is nonsense.  
 b) Is this phrase used?/This phrase - do some say it this way?  
 c) If I said this, would it be improper? ("Ē" is used here with an undesirable quality: "sít-lé".)  
 d) Is that what you're going to wear to Taipei?
5. d) I'm sorry, I don't know you; how come you know me?
6. b) I have something on tonight; how about tomorrow night?
8. b) It's not good to skip breakfast.  
 e) In the morning I always leave the house at 8:00.
9. e) I didn't go to the meal he put on last night; did you?
10. c) He would love to go but if he can't get a ride he's not going.
11. a) I'll talk with him after the meal (not until then).  
 c) It's only now that I got here (not before).
12. a) If I don't come this afternoon I'll come tonight.
13. c) If I drink coffee in the afternoon I won't be sleepy at night. (Here "ē" is Future Tense: "ē = it will happen that"; "bē = I do not (want to sleep)".)  
 d) He does not come in the morning; he only comes in the afternoon.
14. d) I still have things to do this afternoon (12:00 to 2:00); I'll go tomorrow afternoon.
15. b) I don't like to go to anybody's house at noon because some people like to take a nap.
16. b) The show on TV tonight is not bad, is it?

17. a) It's very hard to do this.  
b) That thing is very expensive; I don't want to buy it.
18. c) You're going to Taipei to rest for how many days?  
e) Because you pause here in this sentence, you don't have to change the tone on this word.
19. a) To see a movie costs \$60 or \$70, doesn't it?
20. a) How many people haven't come down yet?  
b) He has eaten a lot but he says he's going to eat still more.  
c) Do you have any more coffee?
21. c) We have to study 4 hours (of class) a day. (Note the grammar: "4 hours" modifies "the book".)
23. a) Let's study up to and including page 135 and then take a break, OK? ("Kau" frequently means "up to and including"; in the case of a page it would not necessarily mean finishing the whole page.)  
b) Have we reached your house yet? (Spoken on the bus)  
d) This week I'm going from Monday through Thursday; I won't come back till Friday.  
e) We've been on the bus (train) for 2 hours; aren't we there yet?
26. d) You can sleep in this room (this room for you to sleep); I'll sleep in that room. (Note the change of tone on "khun"; it's as if "hit keng" is the Direct Object of "khun".)
27. c) He has gone to bed, but I don't think he's asleep yet.  
d) Did you ever sleep while riding a bus?
30. e) The bedrooms in our house are all upstairs.  
g) Shut off the TV, go upstairs and write your characters.
31. b) Monday is the 1st day of the week.
32. A. a) On Monday I went with a friend to the Changnua mountain for some recreation. ("S<sup>7</sup>oa\*-téng = mountain top" need not be taken literally.)  
B. c) Sunday I always go with my wife to buy a week's supply of food.
33. a) I'll get off at Hsinchu. (Lit., I'll ride as far as Hsinchu and get off the bus.)  
d) (Lit.,) Those kids who climbed the tree, please come down. (Direct address)  
e) He's sitting on the motorcycle and won't get off. (Note that if the speaker himself is on the motorcycle he will say "loh-khi" instead of "loh-lái" (the child won't get off).)

34. c) What day he's going he didn't say./He didn't say what day he's going.  
e) What day of the week did you say you're going down to Kaohsiung?
35. d) I've been up for an hour.
36. b) That clock has stopped; see, (up till now) it's still at 9:00. (See Ls 8, Voc No. 27: "kíá\* = run". "Lí khóa\*" - see Ls 6, Voc No. 8 NB.)
37. b) It's time for a break (time for a break has arrived); let's knock off. .
38. b) What time have you got?  
d) If a student is always looking at his watch in class, it's very impolite to the teacher.
39. a) Do you have anything on today?  
Yes, I have lots of things to do.  
b) We shouldn't be talking about people. (Gossip)  
e) This is none of my business; it's his business.  
f) Is there anything more to do? If not, I'm going home now.
40. b) When did this happen?
42. b) I hate going to somebody's house in the noontime (for fear he's napping).  
d) Every time I go to the movies at noon I only sleep there. ("Lóng (= always/every time") is translated with the 1st clause.)
44. e) If I go there, I'll buy it for you. (Lit., If I go there, only then will I buy it (that book) and bring it back for you to read it.) (In the 1st clause, "ū" is used to affirm "khi", in contrast with "bô khi".)
45. a) We're going home (now). ("A" softens the impact, making the news more palatable.)  
e) It's five; I have to go home. (The 1st "a" is an exclamation, the 2nd softens the impact.)
-



FLUENCY PYRAMID I

bé mih.  
 lái-khĩ bé mih.  
 Góa bõeh lái-khĩ bé mih.  
 Góa bõeh lái-khĩ Tái-pak bé mih.  
 Góa bín-á-chài bõeh lái-khĩ Tái-pak bé mih.  
 Góa bín-á-chài-khí bõeh lái-khĩ Tái-pak bé mih.  
 Góa bín-á-chài-khí pèh-tiám bõeh lái-khĩ Tái-pak bé mih.  
 Góa bín-á-chài-khí pèh-tiám-pòà\* bõeh lái-khĩ Tái-pak bé mih.

After you have gone through this drill a number of times and can repeat the last sentence with fluency and at normal speed, the instructor should ask the following questions.

1. Lí bín-á-chài-khí bõeh khĩ tóh-ūi? 台儿
2. Lí bõeh khĩ Tái-pak chõ sím-mih? 四 四
3. Lí sī bõeh khĩ Chiong-hòa á-sī bõeh khĩ Tái-pak bé mih?
4. Lí bín-á-chài-khí kúi tiám bõeh khĩ Tái-pak?
5. Lí sī chhít-tiám-pòà\* bõeh khĩ, sī bô\*?
6. Lí sī bõeh khĩ Tái-pak chhít-thô, sī bô\*?
7. Lí sī bín-á-chài-khí á-sī bín-á-àm bõeh khĩ Tái-pak?
8. Lí sī bõeh khĩ Tái-pak khòa\* tián-iá\*, á-sī bõeh khĩ bé mih?
9. Lí bín-á-chài-khí pèh-tiám-pòà\* sī bõeh khĩ Kó-hiông, 不是 sī bô\*?
10. Lí bín-á-chài-khí bõeh khĩ Tái-pak bé sía\*-hòe?

## KÙ

## SENTENCES

1. Cháp-tiám-gōa á, lí iáu bē ái-khùn, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?
2. Lí nā ái-khùn khi<sup>2</sup> khùn, che gōa chiáh chò. (S)
3. Am-sí tī chia ũ chín-chē lāng téh bē mih-kīa\*.
4. Am-sí gōa lóng ũ tī chhù-nih, chhia\* lín lái chē.
5. Lí kìn-á-jit, chhēng án-ni chín hó-khò\*.
6. Lí bōeh chhēng án-ni khi<sup>2</sup> khò\* tiān-ia\*, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?
7. M-sí án-ni sí; gōa sí hó. lí khò\*.
8. Gōan chhù lí iáu m-bat khi<sup>2</sup>, ho\*h?
9. Lí téh kóng chit é lāng gōa bat í; í sē\* Khó, sī bō<sup>3</sup>?
10. Chit kù gōa m-bat; lí bat bō<sup>3</sup>?
11. Í kóng bín-á-àm chiáh bōeh lái, eng-àm bō bōeh lái.
12. Bín-á-àm Chan Siān-sí\* bōeh chhia\*, lí ũ bōeh khi<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?
13. Gōa bō chia-chái-khí, lín ũ sim-mih chia é mih-kīa\*  
bō<sup>3</sup>? (S)
14. Lán chái-khí kón thak tē-chhit khò, bín-á-chái-khí chia<sup>2</sup>  
thak tē-péh khò.
15. Bín-á-chái hiòh-khùn, só<sup>1</sup>-í gōa bín-á-chái-khí káu-tiám  
chia<sup>2</sup> bōeh pēh-khí-lái.
16. Lín ũ lāng chái-khí bōeh khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak bō<sup>3</sup>? (S)
17. Gōa chái-khí-sí tīa\*-tīa\* bō chia<sup>1</sup>.
18. Gōan thài-thài lóng chái-khí-sí chia<sup>2</sup> sé-sa\*. (S)
19. Gōa chāng-àm lóng bō sí-jī; lí ũ sí bō<sup>3</sup>?
20. Gōa chāng-àm ũ tī-chí, só<sup>1</sup>-í bō khi<sup>2</sup> khò\* tiān-ia\*.

21. Chàng-mê lí é păng-keng é thàng-á-mng bô koai\*, lí chái-  
iá\* bô\*?
22. Nã chē-chhia khi, ài kui hùn-cheng?
23. Hít tái chhia sĩ lí é pêng-iú ê á-sĩ lí ê?
24. Lín chē góa é chhia lái-khi, hó bô\*?
25. Góa chím-á bô bôeh bé, ũ chi\* chiáh bôeh bé.
26. Lí kóng, góa chiáh chái-iá\*; lí nã bô kóng, góa m-chai.
27. Chím-á chiáh chít-tiám nĩa-nĩa, iáu ũ sĩ-kan.
28. Góa ē-po· chiáh bé tng-lái hō· lí, hó bô\*?
29. E-po· lí é ó·-tho·-bái ũ bôeh khiá bô\*?
30. Bín-á-ē-po· lí káp góa lái-khi bé chít-kóa í-á, hó bô\*?
31. Góa é kí-chhia í cháng-ē-po· khiá-chhút-khi, kàu chím-á  
iáu-bôe tng-lái. 轉來
32. E-po·-sĩ nng-tiám khi-sĩ sĩng-khò.
33. Lí kóng chái-khi-sĩ bô sĩ-kan; ē-po·-sĩ ũ bô\*?
34. E-tàu chiáh-pá lí bôeh khùn-tiòng-tàu bô\*?
35. Bín-á-ē-tàu lín lóng bôeh khi góa-kháu chiáh-png, sĩ bô\*?  
(S)
36. Lí cháng-ē-tàu khi tōh-ūi? Añ-chóa\* bô lái chiáh-png?
37. In-ūi tái-chì chín-chē, ē-tàu-sĩ góa lóng bô hiòh-khùn.
38. Chít é gín-á ē-tàu-sĩ lóng bô bôeh khùn-tiòng-tàu.
39. Góa eng-àm bôeh kán thài-thài khi bé mih-kĩa\*.
40. Lí eng-àm ũ sim-mih tái-chì bô\*?
41. Lín âm-sĩ kui tiám chiáh-àm?
42. Chhia\* lín lái kán góa chiáh-àm, hó bô\*?
43. Góa iáu chít hāng iáu-bôe chò nĩa-nĩa.

44. Chít hăng mih-kīa\* chin kùi, góa bô bôeh bé.
45. Ĭ chhia\* lí khít-khí tē-lak lâu; Ĭ kóng Ĭ bôeh chít hăng mih-kīa\* hō. lí.
46. Lín bín-á-chài ũ hiōh-khùn bô.?
47. Ĭ chít lé-pài hiōh-khùn nng jít.
48. Ĭ sĩ chin hó ē hək-seng, thək-chheh lóng m-bat hiōh-khùn.
49. Keng-chio góa chiah chít jí nīa-nīa, iáu ũ bô.?
50. Góa lái Tái-tiong iáu m-bat khi khòa\* tiān-iá\*.
51. Chít khò góa iáu chít iah iáu-bōe thək nīa-nīa.
52. Góa chít nīa sa\* hō. lí chò, ai kúi jít?
53. Gín-á-sa\* m-chài sĩ tī tē-gō. lâu á-sī tē-lak lâu tēh bē.  
(S)
54. Nā bôeh khi sòa\*-téng ai jít-sī khi; in-ūi am-sī chin phái\*-kīa\*.
55. Góa jít-sī ũ chin-chē tái-chi; am-sī chiah ũ sĩ-kan.
56. Chít pún chheh lí khòa\* kàu tē kúi iah?
57. Lán nā chē-chhia khi, chap-jī-tiám ē kàu-ūi bē?
58. Tui chīm-á khai-sí góa lóng bô ai kōh chiah-hún.
59. Góa tui pài-it khai-sí chài-khí-sī lóng lak-tiám peh-khí-lái.
60. Ĭ nā khí-lái, chhia\* Ĭ lái chiah-png.
61. Lạng iáu tēh khùn, lín nā bôeh kóng-ōe chhút-khí góa-bīn kóng.
62. Ĭ chīm-á chiah khi khùn nīa-nīa, góa khòa\*, iáu-bōe ká-chōe.
63. Ĭ khùn-khí á, lí bín-á-chài chiah kōh lái, hó bô.?

64. Góá nã khùn-tiòng-tàu lóng khùn kàu nng-tiám-gōa chiáh  
peh-khí-lái.
65. In lóng tī lâu-téng téh kóng-ōe, bō téh thak-chheh.
66. Tī lâu-kha téh kóng-ōe hiáh é gín-á, lí chhia\* in  
chhut-khí, hó bō\*?
67. Chit tái ó·-thó·-bái góá bé chit lé-pài á. (S)
68. Bín-á-chài lé-pài, lí ũ boeh tng-khí Oán-lím bō\*?
69. Lí Bók-su kóng í chit lé-pài é pài-it káp pài-sì bō tī  
chhù-nih. (Monday and Thursday)
70. Góan pài-sa\* bō tī chhù, in-úi boeh khi soa\*-téng.
71. Pài-lak á-sī lé-pài góá chín bō ái khia ó·-thó·-bái, in-úi  
lâng chín-chē.
72. Lí pài-kúi boeh tng-lái?
73. Che sī pài-kúi é tái-chì? (S)
74. Í khùn kàu chim-á iáu-bōe peh-khí-lái.
75. Peh tī chhiū-á-téng hit é gín-á sī lí é gín-á, sī bō\*?
76. Chhù-nih nã bō sí-cheng lóng m̄ chài-iá\* kúi tiám.
77. Sí-pío chín kúi, m̄-kú sí-cheng chín síok.
78. Lí chit é pío-á ái lōa-chē chí\*?
79. Nã bō pío-á lóng m̄ chài-iá\* sí-kan.
80. Góá nã tng-khí chhù-nih lóng bō sí-kan thak-chheh.
81. Lí bō tái-chì á, sī bō\*? An-chóa\* téh chhit-thô? (S)
82. Chit pun chheh lóng sía chit-kóa Bì-kok é tái-chì.
83. Lí tang-sí bé sú-ku-tah?
84. Lí tia\*-tia\* kóng boeh lái góan chhù; lí sim-mih-sí boeh  
lái?

85. Tióng-tàu lí bōeh tī chia chiáh-png, ho\*h?
86. Lín tī chia kúi tiám chiáh-tàu? (S)
87. Í cháng-tióng-tàu khi Tái-pak, góa khòa\*, bín-á-tióng-tàu  
chiah ē tng-lâi.
88. Tióng-tàu-si m-hó khi lāng hia chhit-thô.
89. Lí bōeh tng-khi bōe?
90. Í tng-khi pōa\*-tiám-cheng á.
91. Lín tng-lâi á, góa ē gin-á ăn-chóa\* iáu-bōe tng-lâi?
92. Lí tī hia bōeh chē kúi tiám ē chia tng-lâi?
93. Lán chím-á tng-lâi-khi, hó bō\*?
94. Lán chhit-thô nng-sá\* jit á, góa khòa\*, lán ai tng-lâi-khi.
95. Hó là, lán chē ē-po\* sá\*-tiám ē chia tng-lâi-khi.

-----

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED "S"

2. If you're sleepy go to bed; I'll do this by myself.  
("Chiah = only (me)")
13. I didn't have breakfast; do you have anything to eat?
16. Are any of you going to Taipei this morning?
18. My wife always washes clothes in the morning only.
35. Tomorrow noon you're all going to eat outside, aren't you?  
(At a public eatery.)
53. I don't know whether children's clothes are on the 5th  
floor or the 6th.
67. I've had this motorcycle for a week.
73. What day of the week did this happen?
81. You have nothing to do, do you? Why are you playing?  
(Parent scolds child. "A" is for emphasis.)
86. What time do you eat lunch here?

FLUENCY PYRAMID II

lái chhít-thó.  
<sup>7</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>Tái-tiong <sup>7</sup>chhít-thó.  
<sup>7</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>Tái-tiong <sup>7</sup>chhít-thó.  
<sup>3</sup>Lâu-su <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>Tái-tiong <sup>7</sup>chhít-thó.  
<sup>3</sup>Lâu-su <sup>3</sup>bóeh <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>Tái-tiong <sup>7</sup>chhít-thó.  
<sup>3</sup>Nng <sup>3</sup>úi <sup>3</sup>Lâu-su <sup>7</sup>bfn-á-chài <sup>7</sup>bóeh <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>Tái-tiong <sup>7</sup>chhít-thó.  
<sup>3</sup>Nng <sup>3</sup>úi <sup>3</sup>Lâu-su <sup>7</sup>bfn-á-chái-khí <sup>7</sup>bóeh <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>Tái-tiong <sup>7</sup>chhít-thó.  
<sup>3</sup>Nng <sup>3</sup>úi <sup>3</sup>Lâu-su <sup>7</sup>bfn-á-chái-khí <sup>3</sup>cháp <sup>7</sup>tiám <sup>7</sup>bóeh <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>Tái-tiong <sup>7</sup>chhít-thó.  
<sup>3</sup>Nng <sup>3</sup>úi <sup>3</sup>Lâu-su <sup>7</sup>bfn-á-chái-khí <sup>3</sup>cháp-tiám-pòà\* <sup>7</sup>bóeh <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>Tái-tiong <sup>7</sup>chhít-thó.  
<sup>3</sup>Ū <sup>3</sup>nng <sup>3</sup>úi <sup>3</sup>Lâu-su <sup>7</sup>bfn-á-chái-khí <sup>3</sup>cháp-tiám-pòà\* <sup>7</sup>bóeh <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>Tái-tiong <sup>7</sup>chhít-thó.  
<sup>3</sup>Chióng-hòa <sup>3</sup>ŭ <sup>3</sup>nng <sup>3</sup>úi <sup>3</sup>Lâu-su <sup>7</sup>bfn-á-chái-khí <sup>3</sup>cháp-tiám-pòà\* <sup>7</sup>bóeh <sup>7</sup>lái <sup>7</sup>Tái-tiong <sup>7</sup>chhít-thó.

NB. 1) Whole Before Part: <sup>7</sup>bfn-á-chái-khí <sup>3</sup>cháp-tiám-pòà\*.

2) Time When Before Verb: <sup>7</sup>bfn-á-chái-khí <sup>3</sup>cháp-tiám-pòà\* <sup>7</sup>bóeh <sup>7</sup>lái.

3) Purpose: chhít-thó = for the purpose of a visit.

Questions on Pyramid II

1. Hít nng ũi Lâu-su bœh khi tōh-ūi?
2. Sím-mih-lâng bœh lái Tái-tiong? Sī hák-seng á-sī Lâu-su?
3. Ū kúi ũi Lâu-su bœh lái Tái-tiong?
4. In sī bœh lái Tái-tiong bé mih, sī bô?
5. In sī bœh lái bé mih, á-sī bœh lái chhít-thô?
6. In sī pài-kúi bœh lái?
7. Hít nng ũi Lâu-su sī kin-á-jít bœh lái, á-sī bín-á-chài chiáh bœh lái?
8. In sī bín-á-àm bœh lái, sī bô?
9. In tàng-sí kúi tiám bœh lái?
10. In sī bín-á-chài-khí chap-ít-tiám-pò\* bœh lái, sī bô?
11. Hít nng ũi Lâu-su bœh lái Tái-tiong chhông sia\*-hòe?
12. In sī chài-khí chap-tiám-pò\* bœh lái, sī bô?
13. Hít nng ũi Lâu-su chím-á tī tōh-ūi?
14. Hít nng ũi Lâu-su tàng-sí bœh lái Tái-tiong?

TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. What are you going to Oán-lîm for?  
I'm going to Oán-lîm to buy a motorcycle.
2. You're not going to buy a scooter. are you?  
No, I'm not going to buy a scooter.
3. When will you come back? Not tomorrow night, are you?  
No, I'm not coming back till Saturday afternoon (after 2:00).
4. What day is today?
5. What time is it by your watch?/What time do you have?  
I have 3:15.



6. Please come over for a meal tomorrow noon, OK?  
I sure will!
7. He always gets up at 6:30 in the morning; he has class at 8:05.
8. May I ask you, what floor are children's clothes on?  
Children's clothes are on the 5th floor.
9. He bought those things yesterday afternoon (before 2:00)  
(and brought them home).
10. It's that time - I have to go home.
11. I'm going home Sunday.
12. Monday is the 1st day of the week.

The Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences:

1. Lí bōeh khi Oân-lîm chhông-sia\*h?  
Góa bōeh khi Oân-lîm bé ó·-thó·-bái.
2. Lí m̄-sī bōeh bé sú-ku-tah, ho\*h (OR: sī bō·)?  
Sī, m̄-sī bōeh bé sú-ku-tah.
3. Lí táng-sī bōeh tóg-lâi? M̄-sī bín-á-àm, sī bō·? (OR: ho\*h)?  
Sī; góa pài-lâk-ē-po· chiāh bōeh tóg-lâi.
4. Kín-á-jít pài-kúí?
5. Lí é pío-á chím-á kúí tiám?  
Góa é pío-á chím-á sa\*-tiám chap-gō· hun.
6. Bín-á-tiông-tàu chhia\* lí lái hó· góa chhia\*, hó bō·?  
Hó-a.
7. Í chái-khi-sī lóng lāk-tiám-pòa\* peh-khí-lâi; pēh-tiám  
khong gō· hun ái siông-khò.
8. Chhia\* m̄ng, gín-á-sa\* tī tē kúí lâu tēh bē?  
Gín-á-sa\* tī tē-gō· lâu tēh bē.

9. Hi<sup>2</sup>ah é m<sup>7</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>īa\* í ch<sup>7</sup>ang-ē-tà<sup>3</sup>u bé-t<sup>3</sup>ng-l<sup>3</sup>âi á.
10. S<sup>7</sup>í-kan kà<sup>3</sup>u á, g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a âi t<sup>3</sup>ng-l<sup>3</sup>âi-kh<sup>3</sup>í á.
11. G<sup>1</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a l<sup>1</sup>é-pà<sup>2</sup>i b<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>eh t<sup>3</sup>ng-kh<sup>3</sup>í.
12. P<sup>2</sup>âi-it s<sup>3</sup>í ch<sup>3</sup>ít l<sup>1</sup>é-pà<sup>2</sup>i é t<sup>3</sup>ē-ít j<sup>1</sup>ít.

Tê Cháp Khò

Lesson 10

TUI-ŌE

DIALOGUE

莊 校 所 在 佈 部 市 所 在  
 Chng-khā só'-chāi káp Tó'-chhī só'-chāi

L = Lōa Siān-si\*, chng-khā-lâng

C = Chhī Siān-si\*, tó'-chhī-lâng

C1: Lōa Siān-si\*, lí tēh bó-êng, ho\*h?

L1: Bô là, êng-êng. ò', lí ká-tī sái-chhia lái, sī bó'?

C2: Hè\*, ká-tī sái-chhia nā bōeh chhōng-sia\*h khāh lí-piān là.

L2: M-kú ká-tī-chit-ê tēh sái, khāh ê ài-khùn. Lí kám bē ài-khùn?

C3: Tī góa ê chhia ê lái-bīn ũ lók-ím-ki káp siu-ím-ki; góa tēh sái-chhia lóng mā tēh thia\* lók-ím-tò.

L3: An-ni ũ-ia\* khāh bē ài-khùn. Chhia\* lái-bīn chē là.

C4: Hó, tó-sia. ò', lín tòa chia ũ-ia\* chin hó, chin tiam. chhīu-á kōh chin-chē, không-khi ía chin hó.

L4: Chng-khā só'-chāi kám ũ sīm-mih hó? Khāh tiam, không-khi khāh hó, che sī ũ-ia\*, m-kú ũ chit hāng m-hó, ũ-sí-á nā bōeh chhōng-sia\*h chin bó lí-piān.

C5: Bē là, chīm-á chng-khā ê lō' mā chin tòa-tiâu; nā ũ ó'-thó'-bái á-sí chhia, mā chin lí-piān, kám m-sí?

L5: Sí là, m-kú tòa tī tó'-chhī ê lêng, bōeh khōa\* tiān-ia\* bé mih-kia\*, á-sí ũ-sí pēng-iú nā lái, bōeh chhia\* ín chiah-png lóng chin lí-piān.

C6: Nā chit hāng ũ-ia\*. Lōa Siān-si\*, tī chia ê gin-á lóng lí ê, sī bó'?

L6: M̄-sī, góa ũ sá\* ê; hít nng ê chà-po·-ê káp chít ê chà-bó·-ê  
sī góa ê nĩa-nĩa.

C7: In kúi hòe á?

L7: Tōa-hàn-ê sī chap-jī hòe, tē-jī-ê káu hòe, sē-hàn-ê  
chīm-á chiáh chhít hòe.

C8: In lóng chín gáu tōa. In thak kók-hāu lóng khi tón-ūi thak?

L8: Tui chít tiâu lō· ít-tít khi; iōng-kia\*-ê chhā-put-to  
jī-chap hun nĩa-nĩa, tī hia ũ chít keng kók-hāu; góan chia  
ê gin-á lóng khi hia thak.

C9: In chīm-á thak kúi nī ê?

L9: Tōa-hàn-ê sī gō·-nī-ê, tē-jī-ê sá\*-nī-ê, sē-hàn-ê chiáh  
ít-nī-ê nĩa-nĩa.

C10: In lóng ká-tī iōng-kia\*-ê khi thak-chheh, sī bó·?

L10: M̄-sī là, chái-khi-sī lóng góa iōng ó·-thó·-bái chái in  
khi hak-hāu; ē-pó·-sī hā-khò in ká-tī chiáh iōng-kia\*-ê  
tng-lái; ũ-sī tōa-lāng nā bó·-êng, chái-khi-sī chiáh bát  
kio in iōng-kia\*-ê khi.

C11: Tī chng-khá-hak-hāu, Lāu-su ká-chheh ũ gáu ká bó·?

L11: Bē ham-bān, chín gáu ká. Chhī Siān-si\*, 7 eng-àm tōa chia,  
mài tng-khi, hó bó·?

L12: Tó-sīa, m̄-bián là, góa nā ũ-êng chiáh kòh lái.

SIN-GÍ      VOCABULARY

1. chà-bó·/lí 女 female (of humans only).

Hít keng hak-hāu ê hak-seng lóng sī chà-bó·-ê. The  
students in that school are all girls.

2. chā-po<sup>7</sup>/lâm 男 male (of humans only).

Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> gín-á? How many kids do you have?

Ū<sup>3</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> ê; chít<sup>3</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chā-po<sup>7</sup>-ê, chít<sup>3</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chā-bó<sup>7</sup>-ê<sup>3</sup>. Two;  
1 boy and 1 girl.

3. chài 載 to carry (persons/things) on a vehicle/to give a ride to (a person).

Góa<sup>1</sup> chài<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>? I'll give you a ride, OK?

Hít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> chhia<sup>2</sup> chài<sup>2</sup> chin<sup>7</sup>-chê<sup>3</sup> mih<sup>3</sup>-kīa\*. That truck is carrying a lot of stuff.

4. chhá 吵 to disturb/make a disturbance/annoy by noise or clamor/pester; noisy.

Hiah<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> gín-á<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> gáu<sup>7</sup> chhá. Can those kids make noise!  
(Lit., ... very good at disturbing.)

Ī<sup>7</sup> chhá<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> tiān-ia\*<sup>3</sup>. He's pestering me about going to the movies. (I.e., he wants to go see one.)

5. chhá-pūt-to 差不多 almost/nearly/around/(lit.,) differ very little; (in respect to situation such as language ability) adequate. (To be used later in respect to health to mean "not worse".)

Che<sup>7</sup> chhá-pūt-to<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> bān-gōa<sup>3</sup> kho\*. This will cost more than \$10,000 - something like that.

Chít<sup>2</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> hāng, góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, chhá-pūt-to. I think these 2 things are about the same.

Lí<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> Tâi-gí<sup>7</sup> chhá-pūt-to. Your Taiwanese is adequate.

Góa<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>1</sup> thak<sup>3</sup> nīa-nīa. I'm only getting started. (Lit., It's only now that I'm studying it.)

6. chío 少 few/a little. (Refers to quantity)

chē<sup>3</sup>-chío more or less/many or few/much or little.

Īn<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> chío<sup>1</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-hun. Very few of them smoke. (Lit., They very few persons smoke.)

<sup>1</sup>愛 <sup>3</sup>加 <sup>1</sup>減 <sup>1</sup>讀 <sup>2</sup>即 <sup>3</sup>今晚  
 Ai chē-chiō thāk chiāh ē-hiáu. You have to study  
 as much as you can. (parent to child)

<sup>7</sup>莊 <sup>2</sup>改  
 7. chng-kha 鄉村 / 鄉下 rural area. (This term is relative  
 but generally is used to mean any place outside the  
 larger cities and their suburbs.)

Chhia\* lín lái góan chng-kha chhit-thô. Please come  
 to my home (rural area) for a visit.

8. ê 的 (Substitutes for a noun, and, in combination with  
 the previous word/phrase/clause, forms a new noun-  
 equivalent. See Gram. Note 2. "Ê" follows the 1-3-7  
 Rule.)

He sī í kóng-ê. (= He sī í kóng é ōe.) He's the one  
 who said that. OR: That's what he said.

Che m-sí góa sí-a-ê. (= Che m-sí góa sí-a é jī.) I  
 didn't write this. OR: This is not what I wrote.

9. êng 閒 / 有空 / 有時間 leisure/spare time.

(chín) bô-êng (very) busy.

êng-êng to be at leisure/to have nothing to do.

ū-êng to have spare time.

Góa chín bô-êng; lí ū-êng bô\*? I'm very busy; do you  
 have any time?

Ū, góa chín-á êng-êng. Yes, I have nothing to  
 do now.

<sup>7</sup>精  
 10. gâu 會, 能幹 clever/wise/skillful; be good at doing or  
 making something; important (of people only, as  
 a VIP).

Chit kù lí nā ē-hiáu, chín gâu. If you understand this  
 sentence you're very smart.

Tân Thài-thài chín gâu bé mih-kia\*. Mrs. Tân is a  
 clever shopper.

11. 笨, 差勁, 不會 clumsy/unskillful/slow (of body or mind, but "ham-bān" is not a strong word in Taiwanese).
- Ī chin ham-bān kóng-ōe. He's a poor speaker.  
 Góa chin ham-bān, lí kio hit é lâng chò. I'm very clumsy; tell that guy to do it.
12. 漢個子 (Measure used only with "tōa = big" and "sè = small" and only of persons.)
- Lín é gin-á lông chin tōa hàn. Your kids are all big.
13. 歲 one year of a person's age. (See Note at LĒ-Kù.)
- Lí kúì hòe? How old are you?  
 Góa jī-chap hòe. I am 20.
14. 一直 straight ahead; always/constantly/continuously; to continue (doing something).
- Īt-tit khi. go straight on.  
 Ī tit-tit chò, chò bô hiōh-khùn. He works right through without stopping./He keeps on working and doesn't take a break.
15. 教 to teach/instruct.
- kā-chheh to teach/instruct.  
 Sim-mih-lâng kā lí án-ni chò? Who taught you to do it like that?  
 Īn thài-thài tī hāk-hāu tēh kā-chheh. His wife is a teacher in school.
16. 自己 self/oneself.
- kā-tī-chit-ê oneself alone.  
 Chhia\* lí kān góa khi, hó bô? Please go with me, OK?  
 Góa bô-êng, lí kā-tī khi, hó bô? I'm busy; how about going by yourself.

Ka-tī-chit-ê khi khòa\* tiān-iá\* bô i-sù. It's crazy  
to go to a movie by yourself.

17. kám 難道 How can it be that...?/You mean to tell me  
that...?/Can it be possible that...?

Kám án-ni? How can this be?/Can such a thing be  
possible?

Í khi tōh-ūi, lí kám m̄ chài-iá\*? Do you mean to say  
you don't know where he went?

Lí kóng chit jī sī tē-sá\* sia\*, kám án-ni? You say  
this word is in the 3rd tone - how can that be  
possible?

18. khah 更, 較 (Comparative particle) more; rather/  
somewhat. (With "ài") to prefer.

Sit-lé, che góa khah m̄ chài-iá\*; í khah chài-iá\*.  
Sorry, I don't know much about this; he knows more.

Lí khah ài chiah keng-chio á-sī khah ài chiah kám-á?  
Do you prefer bananas or do you like tangerines  
more?

19. khong-khi 空氣 air.

Thang-á-mng ài khui, khong-khi chiah khah hó. You have  
to open the windows, only then will the air be  
better.

20. kio/niam 叫 to call/to name/tell some one (frequently  
an inferior) to do something.

Kio í lái. Tell him to come.

Góa tēh kio lí; lí án-chóa\* bô ài ìn? I'm calling  
you; why don't you answer?

21. kók-hāu 國民小學 primary school. (Measure: ê/keng.)  
(The characters read: "kók-bin-sio-hak". At times  
the words "kók-sio" and "sio-hak" are used.)

Lí chīm-á thak kók-hāu kúí nī é? What year of  
primary school are you in now?

Sì-nī-é. 4th year.



22. kũ 舊 old. (Does not refer to the age of persons.)

Thĩn-bé bé kũ-é khãh siok. If you buy an old bicycle  
it's cheaper.

Kũ 0'-tho'-bái chin phãih\*-khĩa. An old motorcycle is  
pretty hard to ride.

23. lĩ-piãn 便利, 方便 convenient/handy.

Kã-tĩ ũ chhia chin lĩ-piãn. It's very convenient to  
have your own car.

24. lō· 路 road/path/way/route. (Measure: tĩau)

Tũi chia khi bō lō·. There's no road through here./  
You can't get through here.

Chĩt tĩau lō· chin tĩa tĩa, chin hó-kĩa\*. This road  
is very big; it's very good. ("Kĩa\*" here  
includes any means of travel. "Chin hó-kĩa\*" =  
it's nice for walking/riding/driving.)

Tĩa-lō· road. (Generally means any road for  
4-wheel vehicle traffic.)

M-hó khi tĩa-lō· chhĩt-thō. Don't go playing in the  
road.

25. lok-im/lok 錄音/錄 to record on tape. (Lit., to  
record sound.)

Chĩt khò iãu-bōe lok-im. We haven't recorded this  
lesson yet.

Chĩt tiãm-cheng lãn lãn lok tē-cháp khò. This  
period let's record Ls 10.

26. lok-ĩm-ki 錄音機 tape recorder. (Measure: tĩai)

Lĩ chĩt tĩa lok-ĩm-ki sĩ tĩ tĩh-ũi bé ê? Where did  
you buy this recorder?

✓ 27. lok-ĩm-tòa 錄音帶 recording tape. (Measure: (cassette)  
tē; (open reel) khũn)

Hĩt tē lok-ĩm-tòa ũ hó-thĩa\* bō? Does that tape  
sound good?

28. <sup>勿</sup>mài 不要, 勿 don't (often a command)/don't want to.  
 Khi<sup>2</sup> hia; mãi<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chia. Go over there; don't come here.

Mãi<sup>2</sup> án-ni! Stop that!

29. <sup>那</sup>ná 怎麼, 爲什麼 why?/how can it be that...? (Synonyms: "án-chóa\*/kám")

Chin<sup>7</sup> siok; lí<sup>1</sup> ná<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> bé? That very cheap; why don't you want to buy it?

Ná<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> láng<sup>7</sup> án-ni kóng? How can it be that anyone would say that? (I don't believe anyone says that.)

30. nī<sup>年</sup> 年 year (of 12 months)/year (in school).

Lí<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> Tái-oân<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> tòa<sup>2</sup> kú<sup>1</sup> nī? How long will you stay on Taiwan?

Bōeh<sup>2</sup> tòa<sup>2</sup> chin<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> nī. I'll stay many years.

Kòk<sup>2</sup>-hāu<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> thāk<sup>3</sup> lāk<sup>3</sup> nī. Primary school is 6 years.

31. ò· 噢 (Exclamation; can express joy, sorrow, understanding, etc.; it is best to observe how people use "ò·".)

ò·, ũ<sup>3</sup>-iá\*<sup>1</sup> phái\*-thāk. Oh, it's true that it's difficult (to study).

32. sái 駛, 駕駛 to drive (a 3- or 4-wheeled vehicle)/to fly (plane)/to sail (boat).

Lí<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu<sup>1</sup> sái<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>? Do you know how to drive?

33. sè<sup>小</sup> 小 small/little. (Usually requires the measure of the noun modified. The character reading is "sío"; it appears in certain phrases: "kok-bîn-sío-hak; sío pêng-iú".)

Chit<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>2</sup> sè<sup>2</sup>-pún. This book is very small.

Góa<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> gín-á<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> iáu<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> sè<sup>2</sup>-hàn. All my kids are still small.

34. sin 新 new.

Í kín-á-jít khía sìn ó'-thó'-bái lái hák-hāu. He  
rode a new motorcycle to school today.

35. siu-im-ki 收音機 radio. (Measure: tái)

Lí ái thia\* siu-im-ki bó'³? Do you want the radio on?/  
Do you want to listen to the radio?

Láng tēh kóng-ōe, siu-im-ki mǎi khui. People are  
talking don't turn on the radio.

36. só'-chāi 地方, 所在 place/location. (Measure: ê) (Note  
that "ūi" ("toh-ūi ê ūi") is often used as a  
synonym for "só'-chāi".)

Lí tòa (tī) sīm-mih só'-chāi? Where do you live? (We  
may also ask "Lí tòa tī toh-ūi?")

Góa khòa\*, chng-kha sī kháh hó-tòa ê só'-chāi. I think  
the rural area is a better place to live.

37. Tái-lâm 台南 Tainan. (Name of city/county in the south  
of Taiwan.)

38. thia\* 聽 hear or listen (with the determined purpose  
of hearing) obey/comply with/submit.

Í tēh kóng-ōe chin hó-thia\*. He's really nice to  
listen to.

Lí thia\*, he sī sīm-mih sia\*? Listen. What's that  
sound?

Chít kú ōe gín-á bē-hiáu thia\*. Children don't  
understand this word/phrase/sentence. (Lit.,  
...don't know how to listen to...)

39. tiām 靜, 沉默 quiet (of people and places)/silent;  
silently.

tiām-tiām! keep silent/not answer/not move/(stand)  
still.

Í chin tiām. He is very quiet (does not talk much).

Chia chín tiām. This is a quiet place.

Góa m̄ng í, í lóng tiām-tiām. I asked him but he wouldn't answer at all (lit., was completely silent).

40. tiâu 條 (Measure for long, thin things that are curved, like a road, or can be bent, like a belt; not hard like a sword. Also the measure for songs/problems. Can also mean an item/clause/section of a law/pact/agreement.)

Góa ũ chít tiâu bũn-tê bōeh chhia\* m̄ng lí. I have a problem I would like to ask you about.

Í tòa tī hīt tiâu lō. He lives on that road.

41. tō<sup>7</sup>-chhī 都市 big city/metropolis.

Tō<sup>7</sup>-chhī ê khong-khì chín bō hó. The air in a big city is very bad.

42. tòa 住 to dwell/to stay in a place.

Lí tòa tī tōh-ūi? Where do you live?

Mài tng-khì, tòa góan chia, hó bō? Don't go home; stay here (at our place).

43. tōa 大 big/large/great/extensive/the elder/full-grown. (Usually requires the measure of the noun modified. A few expressions such as "tōa-lâng/tōa-lō" do not require a measure.)

Tōh-á ũ khah tōa-tè-ê bō? Do you have a bigger table?

Kam-á nā tōa liap khah hō-chiah. Bigger tangerines are better tasting.

44. tōa-lâng 大人, 成人 adult. (Measure: ê)

Che sī tōa-lâng chhēng-ê, m-sī gín-á chhēng-ê. This (garment) is for an adult, not a child.

45.  $\overset{3}{\bar{u}}-\overset{3}{s\hat{i}}/\overset{3}{\bar{u}}-\overset{7}{s\bar{i}}-\overset{7}{\acute{a}}$  有時 / 有時候 sometimes/occasionally/now  
and then.

$\overset{3}{\bar{U}}-\overset{3}{s\bar{i}}$   $\overset{1}{g\bar{o}a}$   $\overset{2}{k\bar{h}\bar{i}}$   $\overset{7}{\bar{i}}$   $\overset{7}{h\bar{i}a}$ ;  $\overset{3}{\bar{u}}-\overset{7}{s\bar{i}}$   $\overset{7}{\bar{i}}$   $\overset{7}{l\bar{a}i}$   $\overset{1}{g\bar{o}a}$   $\overset{1}{c\bar{h}i\bar{a}}$ . Sometimes I  
go to his place; sometimes he comes here.

$\overset{3}{\bar{M}}-\overset{3}{s\bar{i}}$   $\overset{3}{t\bar{i}a^*}$ - $\overset{3}{t\bar{i}a^*}$   $\overset{7}{\bar{i}}$   $\overset{7}{c\bar{h}h\bar{i}a^*}$   $\overset{3}{g\bar{o}a}$ ,  $\overset{3}{\bar{u}}-\overset{7}{s\bar{i}}-\overset{1}{\acute{a}}$   $\overset{1}{g\bar{o}a}$   $\overset{7}{c\bar{h}h\bar{i}a^*}$   $\overset{3}{\bar{i}}$ . He  
doesn't always treat me; sometimes I treat him.

$\overset{2}{T\bar{U}I}-\overset{7}{\bar{O}E}$   $\overset{7}{\bar{E}}$   $\overset{7}{H\bar{O}A\bar{N}}-\overset{1}{\bar{E}K}$

TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

Rural area and the big city ( $\overset{1}{S\bar{O}^*}$ - $\overset{1}{c\bar{h}\bar{a}i}$  = place)

L = Mr. Lōa, a rural person. C = Mr. Chh<sup>h</sup>, a big city  
person.

C1: Mr. Lōa! You're busy, aren't you? (A common phrase of  
greeting.)

L1: No, I have nothing to do. Oh, you yourself drove (a car)  
here, didn't you? (This latter is also a kind of  
greeting.)

C2: Yes; if you drive yourself it's more convenient if you  
want to do anything.

L2: But if you're driving alone you get sleepier. Aren't  
you sleepy?

C3: There's a recorder and radio in my car; all the time I'm  
driving I'm also listening to the recorder.

L3: If you do that it's true that you won't be so sleepy  
(will be less sleepy). Please come in and sit down.

C4: All right, thank you. Oh, your living here is really  
good; it's very quiet, there are lots of trees and also  
the air is great.

L4: Do you mean to say that there's something good about  
the country? (Lit., Rural places is it possible that  
they have something good?) It's true that it's quieter  
and the air is better; but there's one thing that's not  
good: sometimes it's very inconvenient if you want to  
do something.

C5: No; now the country roads are also very big; if you  
have a motorcycle or a car it's also very convenient,  
isn't it? ( $\overset{1}{K\bar{a}m}$   $\bar{m}-\bar{s}\bar{i}$  = is it possible that this is not  
true?)

L5: Yes, but for people living in a big city, if you want to  
see a movie, go shopping, or if occasionally friends come  
and you want to treat them to a meal, it's all very  
convenient.

C6: This is true. (Lit., If (you mean) this matter it's true.)  
Are all the kids here yours, Mr. Lōa?

- L6: No. I have 3. Only those 2 boys and this girl are mine.  
 C7: How old are they?  
 L7: The oldest one is 12, the second one is 9 and the youngest is only 7 (now).  
 C8: They're all big for their age. (See Vocab. Note.) Where do they go for primary school? (Lit., They study primary school they all go where to study?)  
 L8: You go by this road straight ahead, walk only about 20 minutes, there's a primary school there; all the kids in our area go there.  
 C9: What year are they in now?  
 L9: The oldest is in 5th grade, the second one is in 3rd and the youngest is only in 1st.  
 C10: They all walk to school (lit., to study) themselves, do they? (I.e., or does someone bring them?)  
 L10: No. Mornings I always ride them to school by motorcycle; in the afternoon after class they then ("chia") walk home by themselves; sometimes when I (lit., the adult/adults) am busy, only then have I told them to walk in the morning. ("Tōa-lâng" here would include his wife if she occasionally takes them to school.)  
 C11: In rural schools are the teachers good? (Lit., the teachers teach are they good at teaching?)  
 L11: They're not bad (not unskilled), they're good. Stay here tonight, Mr. Chhî, don't go home; how about it?  
 C12: Thanks but it's not necessary; when I have time I'll come again.

SĪN-GÍ É CHŪ-KÁI

VOCABULARY NOTE

"Gâu tōa" means, lit., he's very good at getting big = he's growing fast = he's big for his age.

The same can be said of plants and animals.

Chhî chhng chhū-á gâu tōa. This tree is growing fast.

BŪN-HOAT

GRAMMAR

1. RELATIVE CLAUSES.

A. "He is a man who is very good." This sentence, a relative clause in English, can be translated very simply into Taiwanese as:

Ī sī chhng hó é lāng.

B. The modifier of the noun ("lãng") can be a whole clause:

Che sī<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hó-khĩa<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> thĩn-bé. This is a very good bike.

C. A Relative Clause can precede "chit/hit/chiãh ê/hiãh ê":

a) Chĩm-á<sup>1</sup> tĩ<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> tẽh<sup>1</sup> sĩa-jĩ<sup>7</sup> chĩt<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> gĩn-á<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> gấu<sup>7</sup> sĩa.  
The boy/girl who is writing characters here now is a good writer (OR: writes very well).

b) Lĩ<sup>1</sup> chãng-chái-khĩ<sup>7</sup> tẽh<sup>2</sup> khĩa<sup>1</sup> hĩt<sup>7</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> sin<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> kĩ-chhia<sup>7</sup>  
chin<sup>7</sup> hó-khĩa<sup>1</sup>, ho\*h? That new motorcycle you were riding yesterday morning is very good, eh?

c) Ē-po<sup>7</sup> lĩi<sup>2</sup> chĩah<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chá-pó<sup>7</sup>-gĩn-á<sup>1</sup> lũng<sup>2</sup> tẽh<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup> kók-hũu<sup>2</sup>  
lák-nĩ-ê<sup>7</sup>. These boys who have come here this afternoon are all studying 6th grade of primary school.

d) Ĩ<sup>7</sup> tẽh<sup>2</sup> bẽ<sup>2</sup> hiãh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> kũ-chhia<sup>3</sup> mã<sup>3</sup> bẽ<sup>3</sup> phĩi\*-sái<sup>1</sup>. Those old cars he's selling aren't bad. ("Mã = iã", with negative = "either". The implication is that new cars are not bad and those old cars aren't either, but it is not strictly necessary to translate "mã/iã" -they can be seen as exclamatory.)

## 2. "ê" AS A NOUN-EQUIVALENT.

a) He sĩ<sup>3</sup> ĩ<sup>7</sup> kóng<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> ōe. That is what he said./Those are the words he spoke./He is the one who said that.

Sentence a may be shortened to:

b) He sĩ<sup>3</sup> ĩ<sup>7</sup> kóng-ê<sup>3</sup>. That is the he-said-thing./Those are the he-said-ones./That is what he said./He is the one who said that.

RULE 1: Here "ê" stands for "ê<sup>7</sup> ōe". We drop "ōe" and join "ê" in an intimate way (by the use of the 1-3-7 Rule) to the preceding clause to form a NOUN-EQUIVALENT.

c) Hĩt<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>1</sup> sĩ<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hó-khĩa<sup>1</sup>-ê<sup>7</sup>. That's a good one.

- d) Liāu Siān-sī\* chāng-ē-tàu bé hīt tái ố°-thồ°-bái sī bē<sup>3</sup> phái\*-khĩa-ê.<sup>7</sup> That motorcycle that Mr. Liāu bought yesterday afternoon (before 2:00) is not a bad one.
- e) Lín chīm-á tēh thāk ê chheh ũ hỏ-thāk bỗ°? Are the books you're studying now easy?  
 ũ, góan chīm-á tēh thāk-ê chín hỏ-thāk. Yes, the ones we're studying now are easy.
- f) Hīt nía sī lỏa-chē chí\* bé-ê? How much did you pay for that?

RULE 2: The verb "sī" is a linking verb meaning "equals". Preceded by a noun or noun-equivalent ("Hīt nía") it is followed by a noun or noun-equivalent ("bé-ê").

Compare Sentences g and h:

- g) Lé-pài hīt chhút tiān-ía\* chín hỏ-khỏa\*. That movie Sunday was very good.
- h) Pài-sī-ám hīt chhút tiān-ía\* sī chín hỏ-khỏa\*-ê. That movie Thursday night was a very good one.  
 (Note: If we say "sī" we must add "ê", since the "equals" requires a noun-equivalent on both sides.)

### 3. NOUN COMPOSED OF A VERBAL PHRASE WITH "ê".

There are many common nouns formed by a verbal phrase with the suffix "ê", which follows the 1-3-7 Rule.

- a) Kǎ-chheh-ê<sup>3</sup> = teach-books-one = teacher. This is not used in Direct Address. The more common term is "Lǎu-su".
- b) Bé mih-kĩa\*-ê<sup>7</sup> = the buy-things-person = customer.  
 ỉ sī lǎi bé mih-kĩa\*-ê. He's come to buy something.

Note: In these terms "ê" replaces "ê lǎng".



13107  
<sup>3</sup>  
 LĒ-KŪ

PATTERN SENTENCES

1. chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>·/lí

- 1) chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>·-lâng = woman. ("Chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>·-lâng" can also mean "wife" but as such is used only by the husband.)
  - 2) chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>·-gín-á = girl.
  - 3) chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>· Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su.
  - 4) lí hāk-seng/lí<sup>1</sup>-seng/chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>·-hāk-seng = female student.
- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> gín-á?
- 1) Góa<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>·-gín-á nĩa-nĩa.
  - 2) Góa<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-pó<sup>1</sup>·-ê, nng<sup>3</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>·-ê.
  - 3) Góa<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> póa\* ê.
  - 4) Góa<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> gín-á.
- b) Góan<sup>1</sup> hāk-hāu<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chín-chē<sup>3</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>· Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su.
- c) Hít<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> hāk-hāu<sup>3</sup> é<sup>7</sup> hāk-seng lóng<sup>1</sup> sĩ<sup>3</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>·-ê.
- d) Híah<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>·-gín-á chā<sup>7</sup>-hng trng-lái<sup>3</sup>.
- e) Góan<sup>1</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>·-lâng bē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu<sup>1</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> sa\*, só<sup>1</sup>·-í<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sa\* lóng<sup>1</sup> sĩ<sup>3</sup> bé-ê<sup>3</sup>.
- f) Lâm<sup>7</sup>-seng lóng<sup>1</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chia, lí<sup>1</sup>-seng lóng<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hia.

2. chā<sup>7</sup>-pó<sup>7</sup>·/lâm

- 1) chā<sup>7</sup>-pó<sup>7</sup>·-lâng = man. ("Chā<sup>7</sup>-pó<sup>7</sup>·-lâng" can also mean "husband" but as such is spoken only by the wife.)
  - 2) chā<sup>7</sup>-pó<sup>7</sup>·-gín-á boy.
  - 3) chā<sup>7</sup>-pó<sup>7</sup>· Lâu<sup>3</sup>-su. male teachers.
  - 4) lâm<sup>7</sup> hāk-seng/lâm<sup>7</sup>-seng/chā<sup>7</sup>-pó<sup>7</sup>·-hāk-seng.
- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> sa\*; lí<sup>1</sup> sĩ<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-pó<sup>7</sup>·-ê<sup>1</sup>  
 chhēng-ê<sup>7</sup>, á<sup>1</sup>-sĩ<sup>3</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>7</sup>·-ê<sup>3</sup> chhēng-ê<sup>7</sup>? (P)

- b) Ū l<sup>3</sup> l<sup>7</sup> l<sup>1</sup> k<sup>7</sup> k<sup>1</sup> k<sup>7</sup> p<sup>7</sup>·-g<sup>1</sup> g<sup>2</sup> á k<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> ài c<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> t<sup>2</sup>-th<sup>1</sup> ô, ũ<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>3</sup> á\* b<sup>3</sup> ô<sup>1</sup>?  
 c) H<sup>3</sup> k<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>1</sup> s<sup>1</sup> l<sup>1</sup> k<sup>1</sup> k<sup>1</sup> k<sup>7</sup> p<sup>7</sup>· L<sup>3</sup> a<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>2</sup> k<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> p<sup>1</sup> ái\*; c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup>-b<sup>1</sup> ô<sup>1</sup>.  
 L<sup>3</sup> a<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>2</sup> k<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> h<sup>1</sup> ó.  
 d) C<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> t<sup>2</sup> k<sup>7</sup> k<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup>-h<sup>7</sup> a<sup>3</sup> ũ l<sup>7</sup> l<sup>7</sup>-s<sup>3</sup> s<sup>3</sup> i<sup>3</sup> a<sup>3</sup> ũ l<sup>1</sup> l<sup>1</sup>-s<sup>7</sup> s<sup>7</sup>.

3. chàì


- a) L<sup>1</sup> n<sup>3</sup> a<sup>3</sup> b<sup>2</sup> óeh k<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á o<sup>1</sup>·-th<sup>1</sup>·-b<sup>2</sup> ái k<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> Ch<sup>7</sup> i<sup>7</sup> óng-h<sup>1</sup> óa, g<sup>1</sup> óa h<sup>3</sup>· l<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup>  
 chàì, h<sup>3</sup> ó b<sup>3</sup> ô<sup>1</sup>? (P)  
 b) L<sup>1</sup> k<sup>7</sup> a<sup>3</sup>-t<sup>3</sup> i<sup>3</sup> c<sup>3</sup>-c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> l<sup>1</sup> a<sup>1</sup>-s<sup>3</sup> i<sup>7</sup> l<sup>7</sup> a<sup>2</sup> ng c<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> ài l<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> l<sup>7</sup> a<sup>7</sup> i<sup>7</sup> é?  
 c) C<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> t<sup>7</sup> ái o<sup>1</sup>·-th<sup>1</sup>·-b<sup>2</sup> ái m<sup>2</sup> a<sup>2</sup> i<sup>3</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> ài n<sup>7</sup> g<sup>7</sup> é l<sup>7</sup> a<sup>7</sup> ng. (P)  
 d) C<sup>2</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á h<sup>7</sup> é i<sup>1</sup>-th<sup>1</sup> l<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> b<sup>2</sup> óeh a<sup>2</sup> n<sup>1</sup>-c<sup>1</sup> óa\* c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> ài-t<sup>7</sup> n<sup>7</sup> g<sup>7</sup>-k<sup>1</sup> h<sup>1</sup>? (P)  
 G<sup>1</sup> óa b<sup>2</sup> óeh i<sup>3</sup> óng k<sup>7</sup> a<sup>7</sup>-t<sup>7</sup> i<sup>7</sup> é c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> i<sup>3</sup> a<sup>3</sup> c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> ài-t<sup>7</sup> n<sup>7</sup> g<sup>7</sup>-k<sup>1</sup> h<sup>1</sup>.  
 e) G<sup>1</sup> óa b<sup>3</sup> e<sup>3</sup>-h<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> óu chàì; i<sup>7</sup> n<sup>3</sup>-ũ i<sup>1</sup> g<sup>7</sup> óa b<sup>7</sup> ó s<sup>1</sup> i<sup>7</sup> m<sup>2</sup>-m<sup>2</sup> i<sup>3</sup> h<sup>1</sup> óu k<sup>1</sup> h<sup>1</sup> á.

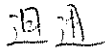
4. chhá

- a) G<sup>3</sup> óa-b<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> n<sup>7</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> i<sup>7</sup> a<sup>7</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> i<sup>7</sup> n<sup>7</sup>-c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> e<sup>7</sup>, c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> i<sup>7</sup> n<sup>7</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á. (noisy)  
 b) C<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> t<sup>2</sup> k<sup>7</sup> e<sup>7</sup> ng c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> i<sup>7</sup> n<sup>7</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á, g<sup>1</sup> óa b<sup>7</sup> ó ài t<sup>2</sup> óa c<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> t<sup>2</sup> k<sup>2</sup> e<sup>2</sup> ng.  
 c) L<sup>1</sup> i<sup>3</sup> t<sup>3</sup>-t<sup>3</sup> i<sup>3</sup> t<sup>3</sup> c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> á, s<sup>3</sup> i<sup>3</sup> c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> á b<sup>2</sup> óeh c<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> óng-s<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> a\* h? (P)  
 I<sup>7</sup> s<sup>3</sup> i<sup>3</sup> c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> á b<sup>2</sup> óeh c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> á p<sup>3</sup> k<sup>1</sup> h<sup>2</sup> ó k<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> i<sup>1</sup> b<sup>7</sup> e<sup>7</sup> t<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> g<sup>7</sup>-á.  
 d) I<sup>7</sup> t<sup>2</sup> e<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> th<sup>3</sup> ák-c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> e<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup>, l<sup>1</sup> i<sup>2</sup> m<sup>2</sup> a<sup>2</sup> i<sup>2</sup> k<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> i<sup>2</sup> h<sup>1</sup> i<sup>3</sup> a<sup>3</sup> c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> á i<sup>3</sup>.  
 e) S<sup>7</sup> i<sup>7</sup> u-í<sup>7</sup> m<sup>7</sup>-k<sup>1</sup> i<sup>3</sup> n<sup>3</sup> a<sup>3</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> i<sup>7</sup> n<sup>7</sup> t<sup>3</sup> óa-s<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> a\*, c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> i<sup>7</sup> n<sup>7</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á.

5. chhá<sup>7</sup>-pút<sup>2</sup>-to

- a) C<sup>1</sup> h<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> m-á c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á p<sup>2</sup> ú<sup>2</sup> t<sup>7</sup> ó k<sup>2</sup> a<sup>2</sup> u-ũ i<sup>7</sup> á. (P)  
 b) C<sup>1</sup> h<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> m-á c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> t<sup>7</sup> ái s<sup>7</sup> u<sup>7</sup>-k<sup>7</sup> u<sup>2</sup>-t<sup>7</sup> a<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á p<sup>2</sup> ú<sup>2</sup> t<sup>7</sup> ó ài l<sup>3</sup> óa-c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> e<sup>3</sup> c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> i\*?  
 c) C<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> t<sup>2</sup> k<sup>1</sup> h<sup>1</sup> ó g<sup>1</sup> óa c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á p<sup>2</sup> ú<sup>2</sup> t<sup>7</sup> ó l<sup>1</sup> óng e<sup>3</sup>-h<sup>3</sup> i<sup>3</sup> óu.  
 d) G<sup>1</sup> óa k<sup>1</sup> h<sup>1</sup> óa\*, l<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á p<sup>2</sup> ú<sup>2</sup> t<sup>7</sup> ó s<sup>3</sup> á\*-c<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup> á p<sup>3</sup> h<sup>1</sup> óe; ũ b<sup>3</sup> ô<sup>1</sup>? (P)  
 e) C<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> t<sup>2</sup> n<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> a<sup>3</sup> s<sup>3</sup> a\* h<sup>3</sup> ó. l<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> ó, c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á p<sup>2</sup> ú<sup>2</sup> t<sup>7</sup> ó ài k<sup>1</sup> u<sup>2</sup> i<sup>1</sup> t<sup>1</sup>?  
 e) C<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup> t<sup>2</sup> n<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> a<sup>3</sup> s<sup>3</sup> a\* h<sup>3</sup> ó. l<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup> c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> ó, c<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup> á p<sup>2</sup> ú<sup>2</sup> t<sup>7</sup> ó ài k<sup>1</sup> u<sup>2</sup> i<sup>1</sup> t<sup>1</sup>?

6. chío 

- a) Lán chia é hək-seng chē á chío?
- b) Í lóng chiah chín chío, số·-í lóng bō khǎh tōa-hàn. (P)
- c) Tī Tái-oân sē-tái chhia khǎh chē, tōa-tái chhia khǎh chío.
- d) Kín-á-jít m-sī lē-pǎi-jít, chín chío lǎng lái chia chhít-thō. 
- e) Chím-á kám-á chín chío, số·-í chín kùi.

## 7. chng-kha

- a) Chhia\* lín lái góan chng-kha chhít-thō.
- b) Tōa chng-kha nā ũ chhia á-sī ố·-tho·-bái ía chín lí-pian.
- c) Chng-kha é hək-hāu chín sē keng, ín-ũi gín-á bō chín-chē.
- d) Góa chín ải tōa chng-kha, ín-ũi chng-kha é khóng-khì chín hó.

## 8. ê (in combination with other words forms a noun.)

- a) Híah é jī m-sī í sía-ê, sí góa sía-ê. (P)
- b) Hít nía sa\* m-sī iông-chò-ê, sí bé-ê. (P)
- c) Chít tái thih-bé sí Lí Sín-hū tén khĩa-ê. (P)
- d) Góa ải khòa\* é chheh í lóng bō, bō ải khòa\*-ê ũ chín-chē. (P)
- e) Sa\* góa ải chheng sin-ê, bō ải chheng kū-ê. (P)
- f) Tī hia tén khĩa thih-bé-ê sí sim-mín-lǎng? (P)

9. êng      b<sup>7</sup>ô-êng      ù-êng      êng-êng

a) Lí k<sup>1</sup>in-á-jit<sup>7</sup> ù-êng b<sup>3</sup>ô? G<sup>1</sup>óa ù<sup>3</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> h<sup>3</sup>ang t<sup>3</sup>ai-chi<sup>3</sup> b<sup>2</sup>oeh  
chh<sup>1</sup>ia\* lí ch<sup>1</sup>ò. (P)

Ū, g<sup>1</sup>óa k<sup>1</sup>in-á-jit<sup>7</sup> êng-êng.

b) Í t<sup>2</sup>eh b<sup>7</sup>ô-êng, lí m<sup>1</sup>ai kh<sup>2</sup>i chh<sup>1</sup>á í. (P)

c) Lí s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih-s<sup>1</sup>i chiah<sup>2</sup> ù-êng? (P)

10. g<sup>7</sup>âu      g<sup>7</sup>âu t<sup>7</sup>ōa = big for his age.

a) Í ù<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> g<sup>7</sup>âu th<sup>3</sup>ak-chh<sup>3</sup>eh b<sup>3</sup>ô? (P)

1) Ū, í chin<sup>7</sup> g<sup>7</sup>âu th<sup>3</sup>ak-chh<sup>3</sup>eh.

2) B<sup>7</sup>ô, í b<sup>7</sup>ô s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih g<sup>7</sup>âu th<sup>3</sup>ak-chh<sup>3</sup>eh.

3) Í b<sup>3</sup>ē h<sup>7</sup>am-b<sup>7</sup>ān.

b) H<sup>2</sup>it ê<sup>7</sup> gin-á chin<sup>7</sup> g<sup>7</sup>âu chiah<sup>7</sup>, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú b<sup>7</sup>ô g<sup>7</sup>âu t<sup>7</sup>ōa. (P)

c) Í chin<sup>7</sup> g<sup>7</sup>âu k<sup>1</sup>ong-ōe; lí n<sup>3</sup>ā m<sup>7</sup>ng í, í l<sup>1</sup>ong ē<sup>3</sup>-hi<sup>1</sup>áu in.

d) Í chin<sup>7</sup> g<sup>7</sup>âu k<sup>2</sup>ā-chh<sup>3</sup>eh; g<sup>1</sup>óa chin<sup>7</sup> ai h<sup>3</sup>ô. í k<sup>1</sup>ā.

11. h<sup>7</sup>am-b<sup>7</sup>ān 預報

a) Í chin<sup>7</sup> g<sup>7</sup>âu ch<sup>2</sup>ō t<sup>3</sup>ai-chi<sup>3</sup>, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú th<sup>3</sup>ak-chh<sup>3</sup>eh chin<sup>7</sup> h<sup>7</sup>am-b<sup>7</sup>ān.

b) H<sup>2</sup>it ūi L<sup>3</sup>āu-su t<sup>2</sup>eh k<sup>2</sup>ā-chh<sup>3</sup>eh b<sup>3</sup>ē h<sup>7</sup>am-b<sup>7</sup>ān.

c) G<sup>1</sup>óa n<sup>3</sup>ā th<sup>3</sup>ak h<sup>3</sup>ô. í thia\*, í l<sup>1</sup>ong b<sup>3</sup>ē-hi<sup>1</sup>áu, ū-i<sup>1</sup>ā\* chin<sup>7</sup>  
h<sup>7</sup>am-b<sup>7</sup>ān. (P)

12. hàn (Measure used only with "t<sup>7</sup>ōa" and "s<sup>2</sup>è" and only of persons.)

a) Lí ê<sup>7</sup> gin-á chin<sup>7</sup> t<sup>7</sup>ōa-hàn; g<sup>1</sup>óa ê<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup>áu chin<sup>7</sup> s<sup>2</sup>è-hàn.

b) Ông Si<sup>3</sup>an-si<sup>3</sup>\* chin<sup>7</sup> t<sup>7</sup>ōa-hàn, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú in th<sup>2</sup>ai-th<sup>2</sup>ai chin<sup>7</sup>  
s<sup>2</sup>è-hàn.

c) S<sup>2</sup>è-hàn gin-á kh<sup>2</sup>ān ai chh<sup>2</sup>it-th<sup>2</sup>ô, kh<sup>2</sup>ān b<sup>7</sup>ô ai th<sup>3</sup>ak-chh<sup>3</sup>eh.

d) Í g<sup>7</sup>ô. hòe n<sup>3</sup>īa-n<sup>3</sup>īa, an-ni chin<sup>7</sup> t<sup>7</sup>ōa-hàn. (P)

13. hòe "age". In Taiwan nearly everyone uses the traditional method of counting age, by which a person is 2 years old at the 1st Lunar New Year after birth.

a) Lí kúì hòe?

Góá jī-gō<sup>3</sup> hòe/Góá jī-gō<sup>3</sup>.

b) Gín-á kúì hòe ài thak-chheh?

Gín-á chhít-pēh hòe ài thak-chheh.

c) Lí khòa\*, Âng Sian-si\* chhā-pūt-tó kúì hòe?

Góá khòa\*, 7 chhā-pūt-tó si-chap hòe.

d) Liāu Bok-su, lí kúì hòe chō Bok-su?

Góá jī-chhít hòe khāi-si chō Bok-su.

14. ít-tít/tít-tít

a) Góá ít-tít kio lí, lí àn-chóa\* ít-tít kĩa\*? (P)

Góá m̄-chai-iá\* lí tēh kio.

b) Chhĩa\*-m̄ng, Chióng-hòa si tui chít tiau lō. ít-tít

khì, si bō<sup>3</sup>? (P)

c) Góá m̄ng í chít hāng tãi-chì, í tít-tít kóng, kóng bō

híoh-khùn. (P)

d) Tít-tít kĩa\*, nã kàu-ūi góá chiah kóng. (P)

e) Nã hó-chiah ê mih-kĩa\* í lóng ít-tít chiah, chiah bō

híoh-khùn.

15. kà kã-chheh

a) Lí chít tiām-cheng kã kàu tē kúì khò? (P)

Kã kàu tē-chap khò.

b) Láng tēh kà, í lóng bō ài thia\*, só<sup>1</sup>-í bē-híau.

c) Lí chít-jit ài kǎ kúi tiám-cheng é chheh? (P)

d) Lí tī tōh-ūi tēh kǎ-chheh?

16. kǎ-tī kǎ-tī-chít-ê

a) Sī í kǎ-tī kóng-ê.

b) Kǎ-tī é tǎi-chì kǎ-tī nǎ m̄ chò, sía\*-lâng bōeh chò?  
(P)

c) In-ūi bō lǎng bōeh kǎh í khi, só-í í kǎ-tī-chít-ê  
bōeh khi.

d) Chǎ-bō-gín-á ǎm-sī kǎ-tī-chít-ê kǎ\* bō sīm-mih hó.

e) Jī ài kǎ-tī sía, mǎi tǎi\*-tǎi\* kǎo lǎng sía. (P)

17. kám

a) Kám ǎn-ni? (P)

b) Lí kám m̄ chǎi-íá\*? (P)

c) Góa bōeh khi, í ía bōeh khi; lí kám bō bōeh khi? (P)

d) Tī hia tēh lâi hít é lǎng kám m̄-sī íu\* Sian-sí\*? (P)

e) Chít kù é í-sù kám ǎn-ni? (P)

f) Tī Tǎi-tiong kǎo\* tiǎn-íá\* chin síok, ho\*h? (P)

Kám ǎn-ni? Péh-kǎu-chap kho kám ū síok?

18. khah khǎh ài = prefer. khǎh bō ài = not like very much.

a) Chít kù khǎh hó-kóng. (P)

b) Chít é khǎh hó.

c) Chít kù khǎh ū lǎng kóng; hít kù khǎh bō lǎng kóng. (P)

d) Chít tǎi thǎn-bé khǎh phǎi\*-khǎ.

e) Góa khǎh ài kǎ-tī khǎ o\*-tho\*-bái, khǎh bō ài chē-  
chhia. (P)

f) Lí<sup>1</sup> khān<sup>2</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>h sīm<sup>1</sup>-mīh<sup>2</sup> kōe<sup>1</sup>-chí?

19. khōng<sup>7</sup>-khì

a) Tī<sup>3</sup> lāi<sup>3</sup>-bīn<sup>2</sup> mǎi<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>h-hun; khōng<sup>7</sup>-khì<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> hó.

b) Tō<sup>7</sup>-chhī<sup>7</sup> ín<sup>7</sup>-ūi<sup>3</sup> chhia<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> lāng<sup>1</sup> lōng<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē, sō<sup>1</sup>-ī<sup>1</sup> khōng<sup>7</sup>-khì<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> hó.

c) Thāng<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-mǎng<sup>2</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> khui, ăn<sup>1</sup>-ni<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>2</sup>h ũ<sup>3</sup> khōng<sup>7</sup>-khì.

d) Tōa<sup>2</sup> sōa\*-tég<sup>7</sup> khōng<sup>7</sup>-khì<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó. (P)

e) Gōa<sup>3</sup>-bīn<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> khōng<sup>7</sup>-khì<sup>7</sup> khān<sup>2</sup> hó, chhia<sup>1</sup>\* lín<sup>1</sup> lāi<sup>7</sup> gōa<sup>3</sup>-bīn.

✓ 20. kio<sup>1</sup>/hiām

a) Chhia<sup>1</sup>\* lí<sup>1</sup> kio<sup>2</sup> í<sup>7</sup> lāi.

b) Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kio<sup>2</sup> í<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?

c) Chhia<sup>1</sup>\* lí<sup>1</sup> kio<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> chhia<sup>7</sup> lāi.

d) Lí<sup>1</sup> hiām<sup>7</sup> í<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chhōng<sup>2</sup>-sia\*h? (P)

Gōa<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> hiām<sup>7</sup> í<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> pāu<sup>7</sup> hun.

e) Lāng<sup>7</sup> lōng<sup>1</sup> kio<sup>2</sup> í<sup>7</sup> Ā-Sêng. Everybody calls him Ā-Sêng.

Note: When used with "A", "Sêng" is likely the final character of his full name; sometimes the middle character, frequently his nickname.

21. kōk<sup>2</sup>-hāu

a) Í<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> kōk<sup>2</sup>-hāu<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>3</sup> Lāu--su.

b) Íu\* Sian-sī\* tī<sup>3</sup> kōk<sup>2</sup>-hāu<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> kǎ<sup>2</sup>-chheh, sī<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?

c) Chít<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> kōk<sup>2</sup>-hāu<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> tōa<sup>3</sup>-keng, hāk<sup>3</sup>-seng<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> nng<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>7</sup>-gōa<sup>3</sup> ê.

d) Chīm<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>7</sup> tō<sup>7</sup>-chhī<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> kōk<sup>2</sup>-hāu<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> Lāu<sup>3</sup>-su<sup>7</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-bō<sup>3</sup>-ê<sup>3</sup> khān<sup>2</sup> chē.

e) Tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> thāk<sup>3</sup> kōk<sup>2</sup>-hāu<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>3</sup>-piān<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?

22. kũ old (not of persons, except in reference to occupation; distinguished from "new", as "old and new students/principal").

- a) Lĩ hĩt tái ỏ<sup>7</sup>-thỏ<sup>1</sup>-bái sĩ sin-ê<sup>1</sup> á-sĩ kũ-ê<sup>7</sup>?  
Sĩ kũ-ê<sup>7</sup>, m-sĩ sin-ê<sup>1</sup>.
- b) Sin-ê<sup>1</sup> khảnh kùi, kũ-ê<sup>7</sup> khảnh sỏk.
- c) Ỉn-ũĩ chĩt nĩa khảnh kũ, sỏ<sup>1</sup>-ĩ ỉ lỏng bỏ<sup>7</sup> ải chhẽng.
- d) Chĩt tái thĩnh-bẻ chĩn kũ, chĩn phỏi\*-khĩa.
- e) Chĩt tĩa sĩ sỏn-lỏ<sup>7</sup>; kũ-lỏ<sup>7</sup> sĩ hĩt tĩa.

23. lĩ-pĩan 利便

- a) Nã ũ chĩ<sup>3</sup>\* bẻh bẻ<sup>1</sup> sỏm-mĩh lỏng chĩn lĩ-pĩan. (P)
- b) Nã kả-tĩ<sup>3</sup> sỏi-chhia, bẻh khĩ<sup>2</sup> tỏh-ũĩ lỏng khảnh lĩ-pĩan.
- c) Nã tỏa tĩ<sup>3</sup> hỏk-hầu, kỏh tĩ<sup>3</sup> hĩa chĩa<sup>3</sup>, ũ-iả<sup>1</sup>\* chĩn lĩ-pĩan.
- d) Tỏa sỏa\*-tẻng nã bẻh bẻ<sup>1</sup> mĩh-kĩa\*, ũ-iả<sup>1</sup>\* khảnh bỏ<sup>7</sup> lĩ-pĩan.

24. lỏ<sup>7</sup>

- a) Hĩt tĩa lỏ<sup>7</sup> ũ chĩn tỏa-tĩa bỏ<sup>7</sup>?
- b) Chĩa\*-mĩng, Sỏn-tek sĩ tũi chĩt tĩa lỏ<sup>7</sup> tĩt-tĩt khĩ, sĩ bỏ<sup>7</sup>?
- c) Lỏ<sup>7</sup> nã sẻ<sup>2</sup>-tĩa, chhia chĩn phỏi\*-sỏi.
- d) Tũi chia bẻh khĩ<sup>2</sup> ỉn chhủ bỏ<sup>7</sup> lỏ<sup>7</sup>.
- e) Tỏa-lỏ<sup>7</sup> chhia chĩn-chẻ, mải khĩ<sup>2</sup> tỏa-lỏ<sup>7</sup> chhĩt-thỏ. (P)

25. lỏk-im/lỏk

- a) Ỉ lỏk-im ê<sup>7</sup> sĩa\* chĩn hỏ-thĩa\*.



- b) G<sup>1</sup>oá l<sup>3</sup>ók k<sup>2</sup>áu t<sup>3</sup>ē-ch<sup>3</sup>áp kh<sup>0</sup>, ch<sup>3</sup>áp-<sup>2</sup>ít kh<sup>0</sup> i<sup>1</sup>áu-b<sup>3</sup>ōe l<sup>0</sup>ók. (P)
- c) L<sup>1</sup>í k<sup>2</sup>io g<sup>1</sup>oá l<sup>3</sup>ók-im, l<sup>1</sup>í ũ l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-t<sup>3</sup>òa b<sup>3</sup>ō?<sup>3</sup>
- d) Ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ĩa\* l<sup>1</sup>í m<sup>2</sup>ãi k<sup>1</sup>óng-<sup>0</sup>ē, g<sup>1</sup>oá t<sup>2</sup>ēh l<sup>3</sup>ók-im.
- e) L<sup>1</sup>í n<sup>3</sup>ā l<sup>3</sup>ók kh<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup> t<sup>3</sup>ōa-si<sup>a</sup>\* kh<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup> h<sup>1</sup>ō-thi<sup>a</sup>\*.

26. l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-ki

- a) L<sup>1</sup>í é ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ĩa ũ l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-ki b<sup>3</sup>ō?<sup>3</sup>  
Ũ, ũ l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-ki m<sup>3</sup>ā ũ s<sup>1</sup>i<sup>u</sup>-<sup>7</sup>im-ki.
- b) Ch<sup>2</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>ái l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-ki ch<sup>7</sup>ín t<sup>3</sup>ōa-t<sup>7</sup>ái, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú l<sup>3</sup>ók-im é si<sup>a</sup>\*  
b<sup>7</sup>ō ch<sup>7</sup>ín h<sup>0</sup>.
- c) I<sup>3</sup>ōng l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-ki th<sup>3</sup>ak T<sup>7</sup>ái-o<sup>7</sup>án-<sup>0</sup>ē ch<sup>7</sup>ín l<sup>3</sup>í-p<sup>3</sup>īan.
- d) Ch<sup>1</sup>ím-<sup>á</sup> l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-ki ch<sup>7</sup>ín-ch<sup>3</sup>ē i<sup>3</sup>ā ch<sup>7</sup>ín si<sup>0</sup>ók. (P)

27. l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-t<sup>3</sup>òa

- a) Ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ĩa\* l<sup>1</sup>í kh<sup>2</sup>í b<sup>1</sup>é ch<sup>3</sup>ít-n<sup>3</sup>ng t<sup>2</sup>ē l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-t<sup>3</sup>òa.
- b) S<sup>2</sup>í t<sup>2</sup>ē ch<sup>3</sup>ít p<sup>2</sup>h<sup>0</sup> kho<sup>0</sup> é l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-t<sup>3</sup>òa, l<sup>1</sup>í kh<sup>0</sup>ò\*, s<sup>3</sup>í h<sup>0</sup>-<sup>3</sup>é  
á m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>1</sup>ī? ("S<sup>2</sup>í t<sup>2</sup>ē ch<sup>3</sup>ít p<sup>2</sup>h<sup>0</sup> kho<sup>0</sup> é l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-t<sup>3</sup>òa": we may  
also say: "\$100 s<sup>2</sup>í t<sup>2</sup>ē é l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-t<sup>3</sup>òa/l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-t<sup>3</sup>òa s<sup>2</sup>í t<sup>2</sup>ē  
\$100/l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-t<sup>3</sup>òa \$100 s<sup>2</sup>í t<sup>2</sup>ē".) (P)
- c) Ch<sup>2</sup>ít t<sup>2</sup>ē l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-t<sup>3</sup>òa l<sup>1</sup>í k<sup>2</sup>io g<sup>1</sup>oá l<sup>3</sup>ók-im, s<sup>3</sup>í b<sup>2</sup>ōeh l<sup>3</sup>ók  
s<sup>1</sup>ím-m<sup>2</sup>ih?
- d) L<sup>1</sup>í b<sup>2</sup>ōeh b<sup>1</sup>é s<sup>1</sup>á\*-ch<sup>3</sup>áp h<sup>7</sup>ún-cheng-<sup>é</sup> á-s<sup>3</sup>í b<sup>2</sup>ōeh b<sup>1</sup>é l<sup>3</sup>ák-  
ch<sup>3</sup>áp h<sup>7</sup>ún-cheng é l<sup>3</sup>ók-<sup>7</sup>im-t<sup>3</sup>òa?

28. m<sup>2</sup>ãi

- a) M<sup>2</sup>ãi l<sup>7</sup>ái ch<sup>2</sup>ít é s<sup>1</sup>ó\*-ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ai ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ít-th<sup>0</sup>.
- b) G<sup>1</sup>oá n<sup>3</sup>ā b<sup>7</sup>ō k<sup>0</sup>óng, i<sup>3</sup>ā ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ĩa\* l<sup>1</sup>í m<sup>2</sup>ãi k<sup>0</sup>óng. (P)

- c) ỉ<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> lăng<sup>7</sup> khôa\* ỉ<sup>7</sup> sĩa-jĩ, lí<sup>1</sup> mải<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>7</sup>.  
 d) Gôa<sup>1</sup> tẻh<sup>2</sup> bô<sup>7</sup>-êng, lí<sup>1</sup> mải<sup>2</sup> chhá, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 e) ỉ<sup>7</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-png, mải<sup>2</sup> chăi<sup>2</sup> ỉ<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khôa\* tiăn<sup>3</sup>-iá\*.

29. ná

- a) ỉ<sup>7</sup> nã<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> lâi, lí<sup>1</sup> chăi<sup>7</sup>-iá\* bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)  
 b) ỉn<sup>7</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> thăk<sup>3</sup>-chheh; lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>7</sup>?  
 c) Chin<sup>7</sup> hỏ<sup>1</sup>-chiah, lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> chiah?  
 d) Che<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lăng<sup>7</sup> ăn-ni<sup>1</sup> kóng? OR: Kám<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lăng<sup>7</sup> ăn-ni<sup>1</sup> kóng?  
 (P)  
 e) Nã<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> kăh<sup>2</sup> ỉ<sup>7</sup> kóng-ôe?  
 f) Nã<sup>1</sup> ẽ<sup>3</sup> ăn-ni<sup>1</sup>? (P)

30. ní

- a) Kôk<sup>2</sup>-hău<sup>2</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> thăk<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> ní?  
 ăi<sup>2</sup> thăk<sup>3</sup> lăk-ní.  
 b) Gôa<sup>1</sup> chhă<sup>7</sup>-pút<sup>2</sup>-tô<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-ní m̄<sup>3</sup>-băt<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khôa\* tiăn<sup>3</sup>-iá\*.  
 c) Gôa<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> sũ<sup>2</sup>-ku<sup>2</sup>-tah bé<sup>1</sup> nng<sup>3</sup>-să<sup>7</sup>\* ní<sup>3</sup> nĩa-nĩa.  
 d) Tái<sup>7</sup>-oăn<sup>7</sup>-ôe lí<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> thăk<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> ní?

31. ò.

- a) ò., chít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thĩh<sup>2</sup>-bé chin<sup>7</sup> phái\*-khĩa.  
 b) ò., chiah<sup>2</sup> ẽ<sup>7</sup> kă<sup>7</sup>-pi chin<sup>7</sup> phái\*-lim. (P)  
 c) ò., sĩ<sup>3</sup> ăn-ni. (P)  
 d) ò., ăn-ni chin<sup>7</sup> kúi, gôa<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> bé. (P)  
 e) ò., lí<sup>1</sup> ẽ<sup>7</sup> gĩn-á chin<sup>7</sup> gâu.

32. sái

- a) ỉ<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> gâu sái<sup>1</sup>-chhia, gôa<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> chẽ<sup>3</sup> ỉ<sup>7</sup> ẽ<sup>7</sup> chhia. (P)

- b) Chít tái chhia chín kū á, chín phái\*-sái.  
 c) Lí nã bô ái sái-chhia khi, chē-chhia khi mã hó.  
 d) Hít tái chhia sĩ sim-mih-lâng sái lái chia ê? (P)  
 e) Góa ê chhia hō. ũ\* Sian-sĩ\* sái khi tái-lâm.  
 f) Hít tái chhia sĩ Tē\* Sian-sĩ\* sái-tng-lái ê. (P)

33. sè <sup>細</sup> <sup>502</sup> Usually requires a measure.

- a) Chā-bō<sup>1</sup>-gin-á kóng-ōe lóng chín sē-sia\*.  
 b) Góa chia sē-jí-ê, tōa-jí-ê hō lí.  
 c) Chít pún khā sē-pún khā siok.  
 d) Che sĩ chít ê lóng khùn ê pāng-keng, só<sup>1</sup>-l<sup>1</sup> chín sē-keng.  
 e) Chít nía sa\* <sup>細</sup> <sup>502</sup> ē sē-nía bē? (P)  
 Bē là, bē sē-nía.

34. sin

- a) Ō<sup>1</sup>-tho<sup>1</sup>-bái lí sĩ bōeh bé sin-ê, á-sĩ bōeh bé kū-ê?  
 b) Sín lái hít ê Sín-hū ē-hiáu iōng tī chia-png bē?  
 c) Chít nía sa\* iáu chín sin, lí nã bô ái chhēng?  
 d) Che m-sĩ sin-ê; che bé chít-ni á. (P)  
 e) Tī góa-bīn hít tái sín chhia sĩ sia\*-lâng ê?

35. siu-im-ki

- a) Lí ái thia\* siu-im-ki bō<sup>3</sup>? Góa khui hō lí thia\*.  
 b) Lí nã bô ái thia\* siu-im-ki, tī chia ũ lók-im-tò.  
 c) Jit-sĩ nã bô tiān-sĩ, góa lóng thia\* siu-im-ki.  
 d) Chít hāng tái-chi sĩ góa thia\* siu-im-ki kóng-ê. (P)

36. số<sup>1</sup>-chāi

- a) Hít số<sup>1</sup>-chāi sĩ<sup>3</sup> sìm-mih số<sup>1</sup>-chāi?
- b) Tĩ sốa\*-tég ũ<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> lãng tòa é số<sup>1</sup>-chāi.
- c) Lí kóng chít pún<sup>1</sup> chheh lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> sĩa<sup>1</sup> mĩa, sĩ<sup>3</sup> sĩa<sup>1</sup> tĩ<sup>3</sup> sìm-mih số<sup>1</sup>-chāi?
- d) Chít é số<sup>1</sup>-chāi chín<sup>7</sup> phái\*-kĩa\*, lí<sup>1</sup> mãi<sup>2</sup> lâi.
- e) Chít é số<sup>1</sup>-chāi chín<sup>7</sup> tĩam, thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh chín<sup>7</sup> hó.

37. Tái-lâm 台南

38. thia\*

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> thia\*, he m<sup>3</sup>-chài sìm-mih sĩa\*? (P)
- b) Chít tẻ<sup>2</sup> lók-ĩm-tòa chín<sup>7</sup> phái\*-thia\*, mãi<sup>2</sup> bé.
- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> lóng bô<sup>7</sup> tẻ<sup>2</sup> thĩa\* Lâu-su é<sup>7</sup> oē, số<sup>1</sup>-ĩ<sup>1</sup> chĩa<sup>2</sup> bẻ<sup>3</sup>-hiáu. (P)
- d) Gó<sup>1</sup> ản-ni kóng, lí<sup>1</sup> ẻ<sup>3</sup>-hiáu thĩa\* bẻ<sup>3</sup>? (P)

39. tĩam

- a) Hít é<sup>7</sup> lãng chín<sup>7</sup> tĩam, chín<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> kóng-oē.
- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> khảnh<sup>2</sup> tĩam; gó<sup>1</sup> hĩa<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> chhã.
- c) Tĩam-tĩam thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh, mãi<sup>2</sup> kóng-oē.
- d) Bẻ<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh ải<sup>2</sup> khảnh<sup>2</sup> tĩam é số<sup>1</sup>-chāi khảnh<sup>2</sup> hó.

40. tĩau

- a) Chhĩa\*-mng, chít tĩau lō<sup>7</sup> bẻ<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup> tẻ<sup>2</sup>-ũi?
- b) Lĩn tẻ<sup>2</sup>-khi<sup>2</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> sĩa<sup>1</sup> chít gỏ<sup>3</sup> tĩau bũn-tẻ<sup>2</sup>. (P)
- c) Gỏ<sup>1</sup>an chhũ<sup>2</sup> tẻ<sup>2</sup> chít tĩau lō<sup>7</sup> tẻ<sup>3</sup>-tẻ<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup>. (P)
- d) Lẻ<sup>1</sup> hẻ<sup>3</sup>-hầu chít tĩau lō<sup>7</sup> kẻ<sup>2</sup>-chẻ<sup>2</sup> Sẻ<sup>7</sup>-bẻ<sup>7</sup>-lō<sup>7</sup>. (P)

41. tó<sup>7</sup>-chhī

- a) Tó<sup>7</sup>-chhī<sup>3</sup>-gín<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> khǎn<sup>2</sup> gáu<sup>7</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh, sī<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)
- b) Īn<sup>1</sup> chím<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> tóa<sup>2</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chia; chím<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>7</sup> tóa<sup>2</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> tó<sup>7</sup>-chhī.
- c) Tó<sup>7</sup>-chhī<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chhia<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē, kĩa\*-lō<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> phái\*-kĩa\*.
- d) Tó<sup>7</sup>-chhī<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> mih<sup>3</sup>-kĩa\* chín<sup>7</sup>-chē, lí<sup>1</sup> ǎi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> ū. (P)
- e) Tóa<sup>2</sup> tó<sup>7</sup>-chhī<sup>7</sup> khóng<sup>7</sup>-khì<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-hó; tóa<sup>2</sup> chng<sup>7</sup>-kha<sup>7</sup> khǎn<sup>2</sup> hó.

## 42. tóa

- a) Chhia\* m̄ng, lí<sup>1</sup> tóa<sup>2</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> tōh-ūi? (live)  
Góa<sup>1</sup> tóa<sup>2</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> Sam<sup>7</sup>-bín<sup>7</sup>-lō<sup>7</sup>.
- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> khǎn<sup>2</sup> ǎi<sup>2</sup> tóa<sup>2</sup> tó<sup>7</sup>-chhī, á<sup>1</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> khǎn<sup>2</sup> ǎi<sup>2</sup> tóa<sup>2</sup> chng<sup>7</sup>-kha?
- c) Hiǎh<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> pēng<sup>7</sup>-iú<sup>7</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> tóa<sup>2</sup> n̄ng<sup>3</sup>-sá\* jít, iǎu<sup>1</sup>-bōe<sup>3</sup> tng<sup>2</sup>-khì.
- d) Chít<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>2</sup> khǎn<sup>2</sup> tóa<sup>3</sup>-keng, hō<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> tóa, góa<sup>1</sup> tóa<sup>2</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> keng. (P)
- e) Lí<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> pēng<sup>7</sup>-iú<sup>2</sup> tóa<sup>2</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> Tái<sup>7</sup>-tióng<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

## 43. tōa Usually requires a measure.

- a) Bók<sup>3</sup>-su, lí<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chhia<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> tōa-tái.
- b) Chít<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-p̄ng<sup>3</sup>-keng<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> tōa<sup>3</sup>-keng, tĩa\*-tĩa\* ū<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> láng<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-p̄ng<sup>3</sup>, ho\*h?
- c) Īn<sup>7</sup>-ūi<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> khǎn<sup>2</sup> sē<sup>2</sup>-hàn, só<sup>1</sup>-í<sup>1</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>-thó<sup>1</sup>-bái<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ǎi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> tōa-tái-é<sup>7</sup>.
- d) Hít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> tōa<sup>3</sup>-pún; góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, ǎi<sup>2</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> chí\*.

e) Hít ê lāng chin tōa-chiah (OR: chin gáu chiah)

44. tōa-lāng

a) Góan chhù ũ nng é tōa-lāng, sá\* é gin-á.

b) Tōa-lāng tēh kóng-ōe, gin-á mãi chhá.

c) In lóng sī tōa-lāng, lí án-ni kóng in lóng ē-hiáu thia\*.

d) Chít keng hāk-hāu é hāk-seng lóng sī tōa-lāng, bó gin-á tēh thak.

45. ũ-sī/ũ-sī-á 有時仔

a) ĩ m-sī chin tiām; ĩ ũ-sī-á chin ái kóng-ōe.

b) Góa ũ-sī-á khia hīt tái sin-é; ũ-sī-á khia chít tái kū-é.

c) Góa ăm-sī ũ-sī cháp-tiám khùn, ũ-sī cháp-jī-tiám chiah khùn.

d) Ũ-sī ĩ lái góan chia chē, ũ-sī góa khi ĩn hia chē.(P)

e) M-sī tīa\*-tīa\* góa chhía\* ĩ, ũ-sī-á ĩ iā bát chhía\* góa.

FLUCNCY PYRAMID

Lânq chín gấu lĩm kả-pi.

Hít ê lânq chín gấu lĩm kả-pi.

Têh kóng-ōe hít ê lânq chín gấu lĩm kả-pi.

Têh kóng Tâi-oân-ōe hít ê lânq chín gấu lĩm kả-pi.

Têh kóng Tâi-oân-ōe hít nng ê lânq chín gấu lĩm kả-pi.

Tĩ hĩa têh kóng Tâi-oân-ōe hít nng ê lânq chín gấu lĩm kả-pi.

Legend: The word underlined with a straight line \_\_\_\_\_ is the subject.

The words underlined with a dotted line \_ \_ \_ are modifiers of the subject.

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF PATTERN SENTENCES MARKED "P"

2. a) You say you're going to buy clothes; are you going to buy men's clothes or women's?
3. a) If you're going to ride the motorcycle to Changhua give me a ride, will you?  
c) Don't ride 2 people on a motorcycle. (It's against the law.)  
d) How are you going to get this furniture home?  
I'll use my own truck to take them home. ("Góa kả-tĩ ê chhia" - "Góa" need not be expressed when it is understood.)
4. c) You're a constant pest - what do you want? (Says Daddy.)  
He's pestering us because he wants \$10 to buy candy. (Says Ma.)
5. a) He has just about arrived (at his destination)./We're almost there.  
d) You look to me like you're about 30; are you?
6. b) He never eats much, so he's not getting any bigger.
8. a) It wasn't he who wrote those characters, it was I.  
b) That garment wasn't made-to-order, it was bought.  
c) Fr. Lí rides this bike/uses this bike. ("Têh khĩa-ê". Here "teh" does not mean that he is riding it now but that he habitually rides it.)

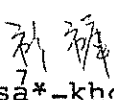
8. d) The books I want he doesn't have at all; the ones I don't want he has a lot of.  
e) I like new clothes; I don't like old ones.  
f) Who is that bike-rider over there?
9. a) Do you have any time today? There's a matter I would like to ask you to take care of.  
Yes, today I'm free.  
b) He's busy (now); don't disturb him.  
c) When will you be free? (At what time only then will you have leisure?)
10. a) Is he good at studies?/Is he a good student?  
1) Yes, he's very good.  
2) No, he's not such a good student.  
3) He's not bad.  
b) That kid can really eat but he's not especially big (no bigger than his age group).
11. c) If I read it to him (for him to listen to), he doesn't understand at all; it's true he's slow.
12. d) (If) He's only five, (in that case) he's pretty big. (= gâu-tōa.)
14. a) I kept calling you; why did you continue walking?  
I didn't know you were calling me.  
b) May I ask you, Changhua is straight down this road, isn't it? (Changhua: go by this road straight ahead...)  
c) I asked him something and he talked continuously without stopping.  
d) (Let's) Walk straight ahead; I'll tell you when we get there. (Note: this can also mean: Drive straight ahead.)
15. a) This period you taught up to and including what lesson?  
I taught up to and including Ls 10. (Note: "kàu" means he is either in Ls 10 or has finished it. If he has not begun Ls 10 he should not say "kau te 10 kho".)  
c) How many periods do you teach in a day?
16. b) If one doesn't take care of his own affairs, who's going to do it for him?  
e) You have to write the characters yourself; don't always tell somebody to write them (for you).
17. a) Can it be thus?/Can that be true?  
b) You mean to say you don't know?  
c) I'm going, he's also going; aren't you going?



17. d) That man over there coming this way - isn't that Mr. Iû\* (Here "kám" asks only an ordinary question.)  
 e) Can that possibly be the meaning of this sentence?  
 f) Movies in Taichung are very cheap, aren't they? How can you say that? How can you possibly say \$80 or \$90 is cheap?
18. a) This sentence is easier to say.  
 c) More people say this word; that word is not so common. (The latter clause is a polite way of saying no one says it that way.)  
 e) I prefer riding a motorcycle (myself as driver); I don't care for the bus.
19. d) If you live in the mountains, (you will find) the air is very good.
20. d) You called him and want him to do what? = You're telling him to do what?  
 I want to tell him go buy a pack of cigarettes.
23. a) If you want to buy anything it's always very convenient to have the money.
24. e) There are a lot of vehicles on the road; don't go playing on the road.
25. b) I recorded through Ls 10; I haven't recorded Ls 11 yet.
26. d) These days there are many recorders and they are also very cheap.
27. b) Do you think that tapes which cost \$100 for four are good or not? (The four for-\$100-kind of tape.)
28. b) If I don't speak of it, I'll ask you not to speak of it either.
29. a) Why won't he come, do you know?  
 d) How can anybody talk like this?/Do you mean to say people would say something like this?  
 f) Why would anybody do a thing like that?/How did that happen?
31. b) Aw, this coffee is awful. (Remember: "coffee" takes the plural form: "chiah ê"; "a cup of coffee" is singular.)  
 c) Oh, so that's the way it is. (Understanding.)  
 d) Oh, that's very expensive; I don't want to buy it. (An-ni = as such/at such a price.)
32. a) He's a very good driver; I like to ride in his car.  
 d) Who is the one who drove that car here?  
 f) It was Mr. Tē\* who drove that car home (here).

33. e) Is this garment too small?  
No, it's not too small. (The use of "ē" with the modifier "sè" indicates that "sè" is undesirable here, hence the translation "too small". If we wanted a small garment we would not use "ē".) (Later we will study the ordinary word for "too".)
34. d) This is not a new one; I've had it for a year.
35. d) I heard them saying this on the radio.
38. a) Listen; I wonder what that sound is.  
c) You're not listening to (OR: obeying) the teacher at all; that's why you're doing poorly.  
d) Can you understand what I said? (Lit., I speak thus, are you able to hear?)
40. b) When you go home you must write (the answers to) these 5 questions.  
c) Our house is straight along this road.  
d) The road our school is on is called Three People's Road.
41. a) City kids are smarter in school, aren't they?  
d) (Lit.,) The things they're selling in the big cities are very many; what you want to buy they have them all.
42. d) This room is bigger, it's for you; I'll stay in that one.
45. d) Sometimes he comes to my house and sometimes I go to his house.

KÙSENTENCES

1. Tī<sup>3</sup> chhīu<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-kha<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh<sup>2</sup> hīt<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>-gīn<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> bat<sup>3</sup>  
i<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?
2. Sī<sup>3</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-po<sup>1</sup>-ē<sup>1</sup> chāi<sup>2</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>-ē<sup>3</sup>; kám<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>-ē<sup>3</sup> chāi<sup>2</sup>  
chá<sup>7</sup>-po<sup>1</sup>-ē<sup>1</sup>? (S)
3. Chīt<sup>2</sup> chhūt<sup>2</sup> tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\* chá<sup>7</sup>-po<sup>1</sup>-ē<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> khòa\* khān<sup>2</sup> chē, chá<sup>7</sup>-  
bó<sup>1</sup>-ē<sup>3</sup> khān<sup>2</sup> chíó. (S)
4. Lín<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>-ē<sup>3</sup> chhēng<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup>-khò<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>? 
5. Chīm<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>1</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>-lāng<sup>1</sup> sái<sup>1</sup>-chhia<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chē.
6. Chīt<sup>3</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>-thò<sup>1</sup>-bái<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu<sup>1</sup> chāi<sup>2</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>?

7. Ỉ k<sup>2</sup>o l<sup>1</sup>án k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>i t<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup> ỉn h<sup>1</sup>ia, ỉ b<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>eh s<sup>1</sup>ái-ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ia l<sup>1</sup>ái chà<sup>1</sup> l<sup>3</sup>án.
8. L<sup>1</sup>í n<sup>3</sup>á ē<sup>3</sup>-hi<sup>1</sup>á<sup>3</sup>u l<sup>1</sup>án-ni k<sup>3</sup>óng, l<sup>1</sup>án-ni l<sup>1</sup>í é T<sup>7</sup>ái-o<sup>7</sup>án-ōe ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>á-p<sup>2</sup>út-to  
á. (S)
9. Ch<sup>2</sup>ít n<sup>1</sup>ia sa\* h<sup>3</sup>o. l<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>0</sup>ò, ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>á-p<sup>2</sup>út-t<sup>0</sup> á<sup>1</sup>i k<sup>1</sup>ú<sup>1</sup>i j<sup>1</sup>ít?
10. Ỉ ch<sup>3</sup>ē k<sup>1</sup>á<sup>3</sup>u-ti<sup>1</sup>ám é ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ia, ch<sup>1</sup>ím-á ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>á-p<sup>2</sup>út-t<sup>0</sup> k<sup>2</sup>á<sup>3</sup>u-ūi á.
11. S<sup>2</sup>ít-lé, g<sup>1</sup>oá ē<sup>3</sup>-hi<sup>1</sup>á<sup>3</sup>u k<sup>3</sup>óng é T<sup>7</sup>ái-o<sup>7</sup>án-ōe i<sup>1</sup>á<sup>3</sup>u ch<sup>7</sup>ín ch<sup>3</sup>ío.
12. Ỉ l<sup>1</sup>óng ch<sup>3</sup>iah ch<sup>7</sup>ín ch<sup>3</sup>ío.
13. Ch<sup>3</sup>ít-j<sup>3</sup>ít ch<sup>3</sup>iah ch<sup>3</sup>ít p<sup>7</sup>áu hun, l<sup>1</sup>án-ni b<sup>3</sup>ē ch<sup>3</sup>ío.
14. G<sup>1</sup>oán ch<sup>7</sup>ng-k<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>á-h<sup>3</sup>ák-h<sup>1</sup>āu l<sup>1</sup>óng ch<sup>7</sup>ín s<sup>2</sup>ē-keng.
15. T<sup>2</sup>oá t<sup>3</sup>í ch<sup>7</sup>ng-k<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>á n<sup>3</sup>á b<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>eh ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ia\* l<sup>7</sup>áng ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>7</sup>ng, ch<sup>7</sup>ín b<sup>0</sup>ó  
l<sup>3</sup>í-p<sup>1</sup>ān.
16. Ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ia\* l<sup>1</sup>ín l<sup>7</sup>á<sup>1</sup>i g<sup>1</sup>oán ch<sup>7</sup>ng-k<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>á ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ít-th<sup>0</sup>o.
17. Ch<sup>2</sup>iah é j<sup>1</sup>í g<sup>1</sup>oá k<sup>0</sup>h<sup>0</sup>oá\*, m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>3</sup>í ch<sup>7</sup>á-b<sup>0</sup>ó-ê s<sup>3</sup>ía-ê, s<sup>3</sup>í ch<sup>7</sup>á-po-ê  
s<sup>3</sup>ía-ê.
18. Ch<sup>2</sup>iah é k<sup>0</sup>é-ch<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>7</sup>ín h<sup>1</sup>ó-ch<sup>3</sup>iah, s<sup>3</sup>í l<sup>1</sup>í b<sup>3</sup>é-ê, s<sup>3</sup>í b<sup>0</sup>ó?
19. L<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>3</sup>ít l<sup>1</sup>é-p<sup>1</sup>ài p<sup>2</sup>ài-k<sup>1</sup>ú<sup>1</sup>i k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ák ũ-ê<sup>3</sup>ng? (S)
20. L<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>1</sup>ím-á ũ-ê<sup>3</sup>ng b<sup>0</sup>ó? 汝今仔有閒 嗎
21. G<sup>1</sup>oá ch<sup>1</sup>ím-á é<sup>3</sup>ng-ê<sup>3</sup>ng, b<sup>0</sup>ó t<sup>2</sup>éh ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ông-sia\*h.
22. H<sup>2</sup>ít ũi L<sup>3</sup>āu-su ch<sup>7</sup>ín g<sup>7</sup>áu k<sup>2</sup>á-ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>eh, ỉ s<sup>3</sup>í ch<sup>3</sup>ít ũi h<sup>0</sup>ó é L<sup>7</sup>āu-su.
23. H<sup>2</sup>ít é g<sup>1</sup>ín-á ch<sup>7</sup>ín g<sup>7</sup>áu p<sup>2</sup>éh ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ū-á.
24. Ỉ ch<sup>3</sup>áp h<sup>0</sup>è á, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú<sup>1</sup>i i<sup>1</sup>á<sup>3</sup>u ch<sup>7</sup>ín s<sup>2</sup>ē-h<sup>2</sup>án.
25. L<sup>1</sup>í é g<sup>1</sup>ín-á ũ l<sup>1</sup>óng ch<sup>7</sup>ín t<sup>3</sup>oá-h<sup>2</sup>án b<sup>0</sup>ó?
26. Ch<sup>3</sup>ē ũ-i<sup>1</sup>á\* ch<sup>7</sup>ín h<sup>1</sup>ó-ch<sup>0</sup>ò, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú<sup>1</sup>i g<sup>1</sup>oá ch<sup>7</sup>ín h<sup>7</sup>ám-b<sup>1</sup>ān, i<sup>1</sup>á<sup>3</sup>u b<sup>3</sup>ē-h<sup>1</sup>íá<sup>3</sup>u.
27. Ông S<sup>3</sup>ian-s<sup>3</sup>í\* ỉn é g<sup>1</sup>ín-á th<sup>3</sup>ák-ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>eh l<sup>1</sup>óng b<sup>3</sup>ē h<sup>7</sup>ám-b<sup>1</sup>ān.
28. L<sup>1</sup>í k<sup>0</sup>h<sup>0</sup>oá\*, h<sup>2</sup>ít é ch<sup>7</sup>á-b<sup>0</sup>ó-g<sup>1</sup>ín-á ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>á-p<sup>2</sup>út-t<sup>0</sup> k<sup>1</sup>ú<sup>1</sup>i h<sup>0</sup>è?

29. Tī<sup>3</sup> Tái-oân, gín-á kúi hòe khài-sī<sup>1</sup> thak kók-hāu?
30. Nā<sup>3</sup> ũ hó-chiah ê mih-kīa\*, í lóng ít-tít chiah, chiah bó<sup>7</sup> hiōh-khùn.
31. Mái tít-tít<sup>3</sup> khòa\* tiān-sī, ái thak-chheh.
32. Góa chin<sup>7</sup> ái lí kà; lí kà góa, hó bó\*?
33. Bōeh ăn-chóa\* ká-chheh, che sī Lāu-su ê tái-chi.
34. Chít tiām-cheng bó<sup>7</sup> Lāu-su, lí ká-tī thak, hó bó\*?
35. Lí sī ká-tī-chít-ê bōeh khi, á-sī ũ lóng bōeh kán lí khi?
36. Chhòa siān-sī\* khi tōh-ūi, lí kám m̄ chái-iá\*?
37. Lí kóng he sī góa kóng-ê; kám án-ni?
38. Bín-á-chái-khí lí bōeh khán chá<sup>1</sup> peh-khí-lái bó\*?
39. Sio-pêng-iú, chhia\* lín khán khi hia chhít-thô, hó bó\*? (S)
40. Chít hāng tái-chi góa khán m̄ chái-iá\* bōeh ăn-chóa\* chò.
41. Thang-á-mng mái koi\*; nā koi\*, ê bó<sup>7</sup> kóng-khi.
42. Chái-khí-sī ê kóng-khi chin hó, lí ái khán chá<sup>1</sup> peh-khí-lái khán hó.
43. Lí tēh kio góa, á-sī tēh kio í?
44. Lí sī ăn-chóa\*? Kio lóng bē ín.
45. Lí tī tōh-ūi thak kók-hāu?
46. Ông siān-sī\* chim-á bōeh lái lán chít ê kók-hāu chò Lāu-su.
47. Í bó<sup>7</sup> ái chhēng kú-sa\*; í kóng kú-sa\* khán phái\*-khòa\*.
48. Hít tái chia í sai chít ní á, m̄-kú iáu chin sin.
49. Bōeh khi ín hia chin bó<sup>7</sup> lí-piān, lóng ái iōng-kia\*-ê.
50. Chim-á bōeh khi Tái-pak chin lí-piān, chia chin-chē.
51. Chít tiau lō<sup>7</sup> chin tōa tiau, m̄-kú chia iá chin-chē.

52. B<sup>2</sup>oeh khi<sup>2</sup> in hia li<sup>1</sup> ch<sup>7</sup>ai-i<sup>1</sup>á\* l<sup>1</sup>ō• b<sup>3</sup>ō•?  
 M<sup>3</sup>-chai, l<sup>1</sup>an l<sup>7</sup>ai m<sup>7</sup>ng l<sup>7</sup>ang.
53. L<sup>1</sup>in ũ<sup>3</sup> t<sup>2</sup>eh b<sup>3</sup>ē ch<sup>2</sup>it p<sup>1</sup>un ch<sup>7</sup>eh é l<sup>3</sup>ok-i<sup>7</sup>m-t<sup>1</sup>ōa b<sup>3</sup>ō•?
54. Ch<sup>2</sup>it t<sup>7</sup>ai l<sup>3</sup>ok-i<sup>7</sup>m-ki b<sup>6</sup>ố s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih hó, s<sup>1</sup>ố•-l<sup>1</sup> l<sup>3</sup>ok-i<sup>7</sup>m é sia\* i<sup>3</sup>á b<sup>7</sup>ố hó.
55. Ch<sup>1</sup>im-á l<sup>3</sup>ok-i<sup>7</sup>m-t<sup>1</sup>ōa ch<sup>7</sup>in s<sup>1</sup>ok, ch<sup>2</sup>it-p<sup>2</sup>ah kho• s<sup>7</sup>á\*-s<sup>2</sup>i t<sup>2</sup>ē.
56. I<sup>7</sup> n<sup>3</sup>á b<sup>7</sup>ố ai thia\*, m<sup>2</sup>ai k<sup>2</sup>ah i<sup>7</sup> k<sup>7</sup>ong. (S)
57. Ch<sup>1</sup>ai-khi<sup>1</sup>-s<sup>1</sup>á g<sup>1</sup>oa ũ<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>1</sup>í-á ũ<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>1</sup>iah-ch<sup>1</sup>ai-khi<sup>1</sup>, ũ<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>1</sup>í-á b<sup>1</sup>ō.
58. H<sup>2</sup>it t<sup>7</sup>iau l<sup>1</sup>ō• ch<sup>7</sup>in s<sup>2</sup>é t<sup>1</sup>iau, g<sup>1</sup>oa kh<sup>1</sup>oa\*, m<sup>2</sup>ai s<sup>1</sup>ai-ch<sup>1</sup>hia khi<sup>1</sup>.
59. I<sup>7</sup> T<sup>7</sup>ai-o<sup>7</sup>an-ōe th<sup>3</sup>ak ch<sup>2</sup>it n<sup>1</sup>í n<sup>3</sup>ia-n<sup>1</sup>ia, t<sup>3</sup>an-s<sup>3</sup>i ch<sup>7</sup>in g<sup>7</sup>au k<sup>7</sup>ong.
60. L<sup>1</sup>í n<sup>3</sup>á th<sup>3</sup>ak s<sup>7</sup>á\*-n<sup>1</sup>í-é, ch<sup>1</sup>im-á ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>-p<sup>2</sup>ut-t<sup>7</sup>ố ch<sup>3</sup>ap hòe, ho\*h?
61. L<sup>1</sup>í n<sup>1</sup>á hi<sup>2</sup>ah g<sup>7</sup>au t<sup>1</sup>ōa; l<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>7</sup>in g<sup>7</sup>au ch<sup>1</sup>iah, ho\*h?
62. L<sup>1</sup>í n<sup>1</sup>á b<sup>7</sup>ố ai an-ni ch<sup>1</sup>ò?
63. L<sup>1</sup>í k<sup>7</sup>ong l<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>1</sup>iah s<sup>2</sup>i jí, ò•, l<sup>1</sup>í ũ<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>á\* ch<sup>7</sup>in g<sup>7</sup>au ch<sup>1</sup>iah.
64. N<sup>3</sup>á i<sup>7</sup> s<sup>1</sup>ai é ch<sup>1</sup>hia g<sup>1</sup>oa b<sup>7</sup>ố ai ch<sup>1</sup>ē.
65. T<sup>2</sup>ui chia s<sup>1</sup>ai k<sup>2</sup>au T<sup>7</sup>ai-pak ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>-p<sup>2</sup>ut-t<sup>7</sup>ố ai n<sup>3</sup>ng-ti<sup>1</sup>am-g<sup>3</sup>oa cheng.
66. H<sup>2</sup>it t<sup>7</sup>ai s<sup>2</sup>é-t<sup>7</sup>ai ó•-th<sup>1</sup>o•-b<sup>3</sup>ai s<sup>3</sup>i ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>-b<sup>3</sup>ố•-é t<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>1</sup>á-é. (S)
67. K<sup>7</sup>am-á n<sup>3</sup>á s<sup>2</sup>é-li<sup>1</sup>ap ch<sup>7</sup>in ph<sup>1</sup>ai\*-ch<sup>1</sup>iah.
68. L<sup>1</sup>í t<sup>7</sup>ang-s<sup>1</sup>í khi<sup>2</sup> bé ch<sup>2</sup>it n<sup>1</sup>ia s<sup>7</sup>in-sa\*?
69. Ch<sup>2</sup>it t<sup>7</sup>iau s<sup>3</sup>i s<sup>7</sup>in-l<sup>1</sup>ō•, s<sup>1</sup>ố•-l<sup>1</sup> kh<sup>2</sup>ah t<sup>3</sup>ōa-t<sup>1</sup>iau; k<sup>3</sup>ū-l<sup>1</sup>ō• kh<sup>2</sup>ah s<sup>2</sup>é t<sup>7</sup>iau.
70. G<sup>1</sup>oa t<sup>2</sup>eh th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>7</sup>eh, ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ia\* l<sup>1</sup>í m<sup>2</sup>ai khi<sup>7</sup> s<sup>7</sup>iu-i<sup>7</sup>m-ki, hó b<sup>3</sup>ố•?
71. Ch<sup>2</sup>it t<sup>7</sup>ai m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>3</sup>i s<sup>7</sup>iu-i<sup>7</sup>m-ki n<sup>3</sup>ia-n<sup>1</sup>ia, i<sup>3</sup>á ũ<sup>3</sup> l<sup>3</sup>ok-i<sup>7</sup>m-ki.
72. Ch<sup>2</sup>it é s<sup>1</sup>ố•-ch<sup>1</sup>ai l<sup>1</sup>í b<sup>2</sup>at l<sup>1</sup>ai b<sup>3</sup>ố•?
73. Ch<sup>2</sup>it l<sup>1</sup>é-p<sup>1</sup>ai l<sup>1</sup>í ũ<sup>3</sup> b<sup>2</sup>oeh khi<sup>2</sup> s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih s<sup>1</sup>ố•-ch<sup>1</sup>ai ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>it-th<sup>1</sup>o b<sup>3</sup>ố•?

74. Tái-lâm hít ê tó'-chhī ũ chín tōa bô'?
75. Lí nã bōeh sái-chhia khi Tái-lâm, góa chē lí ê chhia, hó bô'?
76. Lâu-su tēh kóng, í lóng bô tēh thia\*.
77. Í káh lí kóng Tái-oán-ōe lí ē-hiáu thia\* bē?
78. Góa khah ai tōa sōa\*-téng, ín-ūi sōa\*-téng khah tīam.
79. Hít ê lāng chín tīam, lí nã mng chít kù, í chiah ín chít kù.
80. Tiām-tiām thia\*, mãi kóng-ōe.
81. Chít tīau bñn-tē lí ē-hiáu ín bē?
82. Chhia\*-mng, chít tīau lō' bōeh khi tōh-ūi?
83. Lō' nã sē-tīau, chhia chín phái\*-sái.
84. Góa chín bô ai tōa tó'-chhī, ín-ūi lāng chín-chē, chín chhá.
85. Tái-tiong chít ê tó'-chhī, chim-á chhá-pút-tó ũ káu-cháp-gōa-bān lāng.
86. Lí chim-á tēh tōa ê chhù sī ká-tī bé-ê, sī bô'?
87. Í khi Tái-lâm tōa nng-sá\* jít á, iáu-bōe thg-lái.
88. Chít tīau lō' chim-á chín tōa-tīau, chhia chín hó-sái.
89. Góa m-sī tīa\*-tīa\* iōng Tái-oán-ōe kóng, ũ-sí-á nīa-nīa.

-----

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED "S"

2. Boys do the driving for the girls; don't tell me it's ever happened that girls do the driving for the boys. (Kám ũ lāng etc., lit., Do you mean to say that there are some people who do this: girls give rides to boys?)

3. It's mostly men who are going to see this movie, few women go.
8. If you know how to say that, then you're doing all right in Taiwanese (you know the common, ordinary language).
19. On which day of the week do you have more free time?  
(Chit lé-pài = the whole week.)
39. Little friends, please go over there a little farther to play, OK?
56. If he won't listen, don't talk to him (about that matter).
66. That's a woman's motorcycle (not a man's).

TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. That scooter is one that's very good.
2. The one who came yesterday to buy things has come again.
3. This small child is very smart; if you ask him (anything) he always knows how to answer.
4. That wasn't written by you, was it? 是不是你写的, 是不是?  
No. 是.
5. Do you mean to tell me that people do such a thing?
6. Do you prefer living in the big city or in the rural area?
7. This boy is very naughty; he won't listen to me at all.
8. How old are you?  
I'm seven.
9. What year (of school) are you in?  
I haven't started school yet.
10. You told him go do some shopping; why hasn't he come back yet?  
我告诉他去买, 他那里去了?
11. I'm calling you; why don't you answer?
12. Whether you go by this road or that one it's all about the same.

The Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences:

1. Hít tái sú-kú-tah sī chít tái chín hó-khĩa-ê.
  2. Chá-hng lái bé mih-kĩa\*-ê hít ê chín-á kòh lái-á.
  3. Chít ê sê-hân gín-á chín gâu; lí nã mng í, í lóng ê-hiáu ìn.
  4. He m-sí lí sía-ê, sí bô-?
- sí.
5. Kám ũ láng án-ni?
  6. Lí khah ái tòa tó'-chhi, á-sí khah ái tòa chng-kha?
  7. Chít ê (chá-pó'-) gín-á chín pháí\*; lóng m thía\* góa ê oe.
  8. Lí kúi hòe?
- Góa chhít hòe.
9. Lí tén thak kúi ní ê?
- Góa iáu-bôe thak.
10. Lí kio (OR: hiám) í khi bé mih-kĩa\*; í nã (OR: án-chóa\*) iáu-bôe tng-lái?
  11. Góa tén kio (OR: hiám) lí; lí nã bô ìn?
  12. Nã tui chít tiau lô- á-sí hít tiau khi lóng chhá-pút-to.



TĒ Cháp-ít Khò

Lesson 11

TŪI-ŌE 對話

DIALOGUE

Oh Tái-gí

聯合語彙 先生

L = Lí Sian-si\*, hák-seng.

N = Ng Sian-si\*.

L1: Sián-si\*, lí kìn-á-jít bō-êng, ho\*h?

N1: Bē là. Lái chē, lái chē. Lí tòa tí tōh-ūi?

L2: Góa tòa tí Sám-bín-lō. hít keng hák-hāu; tí hia tēh oh Tái-gí.

N2: Lí Tái-gí hiáh gáu kóng.

L3: Nā-ū. Góa oh kui kó'-goeh-á nīa-nīa. Bō sim-mih ē-híau.

N3: Oh Tái-gí m-chái bōeh an-chóa\* oh?

L4: Oh Tái-gí káp oh Eng-gí chhā-pūt-to: ai tui hóat-im khái-sí.

N4: Sī khóa\* hân-jī oh, sī bō'?

L5: Tái-seng sī iōng Eng-gí é jī oh, oh chhā-pūt-tō chit-nng ní, chíah khóa\* hân-jī oh.

N5: Tīa\*-tīa\* ū sin é hák-seng lái oh, sī bō'?

L6: Siōng-siōng ū. Téng kó'-goeh chhe (OR: téng kó'-goeh é chhe-nih) ū chit é hák-seng lái thak, m-kú í bōeh thak ní-pòà\* nīa-nīa.

N6: Oh ní-pòà\* nā ē-híau kóng, an-ni ít-tēng chin gáu. Lán hia é hák-seng lóng sī tōh chit kok é láng?

L7: Tōh chit kok é láng lóng ū; ū chin chē Bī-kók-láng; Tiōng-kók-láng mā ū.

N7: Phái\*-sè, góa khi theh khi-chúi.

L8: M<sup>3</sup>-bián, m<sup>3</sup>-bián.

N8: M<sup>3</sup>-bián khèh-khì. Chhia\* lí lim.

L9: Tò<sup>7</sup>-sīa. Sián<sup>7</sup>-si\*, lín<sup>1</sup> chít keng khèh-thia\* chia<sup>2</sup> tōa<sup>3</sup>-keng,  
nā<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> ít-jī<sup>3</sup> chap<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lāng-kheh<sup>7</sup> lái<sup>3</sup> iā<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>3</sup> bũn-tê.

N9: Sī<sup>1</sup> là, góan<sup>7</sup> lâu-kha<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>2</sup> chò<sup>2</sup> khèh-thia\*, lâu-téng<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>2</sup>  
chò<sup>2</sup> pāng-keng, só<sup>1</sup>-l<sup>1</sup> khèh-thia\* chia<sup>2</sup> khān<sup>3</sup> tōa-keng.

L10: Lín<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chhù<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>2</sup>-nih<sup>3</sup> tōa-keng, lâu-téng<sup>7</sup> tǎi-khai<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chin-  
chē<sup>3</sup> keng pāng-keng, ho\*<sup>h</sup>?

N10: Ū<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>2</sup> keng, chít<sup>3</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> pa-pah<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> ma-mah<sup>2</sup> tén<sup>2</sup> khùn;  
chít<sup>3</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> gin-á<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> pāng-keng; góa<sup>1</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> chá-bó<sup>1</sup>-lāng<sup>2</sup> khùn<sup>2</sup>  
chít<sup>3</sup> keng; iáu<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> chò<sup>2</sup> lāng-khèh-keng.

L11: Lín<sup>7</sup> ká-téng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>2</sup> chò<sup>2</sup>-hóe<sup>1</sup> tōa, ũ<sup>3</sup>-iá\*<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hó.

N11: Sián<sup>7</sup>-si\*, chhia\*<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ong-lái. Che<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> téng-jit<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup>  
soa\*-nih<sup>1</sup> thèh-tng-lái<sup>3</sup> é. Chím-á<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> ong-lái<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> sng, chin<sup>7</sup>  
ti\*, chin<sup>7</sup> hó-chia<sup>3</sup>. M<sup>3</sup>-bián<sup>1</sup> khèh-khì.

L12: Góa<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> khèh-khì. Ò<sup>3</sup>, ũ<sup>3</sup>-iá\*<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> ti\*.

N12: Chhù<sup>3</sup>-nih<sup>1</sup> iáu<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup> kúi-nā-liáp; lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> tng-khì, séng<sup>7</sup> thèh<sup>3</sup>  
kúi-liáp-á<sup>1</sup> tng-khì, aũ<sup>3</sup>-pái<sup>3</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> lái<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> kón<sup>2</sup> thèh.

L13: Tò<sup>7</sup>-sīa. An<sup>1</sup>-ni<sup>7</sup> chin-chē<sup>7</sup> á.

TR 13

SIN-GÍ

VOCABULARY

1. au/áu-á 杯子 cup. (Usually not used of a tall one.)  
(Measure: tè)

Tòh-téng<sup>2</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> tè<sup>2</sup> au-á<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> sim-mih-lāng<sup>1</sup> lim-é<sup>1</sup>? Who drank  
the cup on the table?

2. <sup>1/2</sup>āu- 下 next.

<sup>3</sup>āu-jít sometime (in the future but not the distant future).

<sup>3</sup>āu-lé-pài next week.

<sup>3</sup>āu-kó'-gòeh next month.

<sup>3</sup>āu-pái next time; sometime. (Frequently equivalent to "<sup>3</sup>āu-jít" but can also mean the distant future.)

<sup>3</sup>Āu-jít nā ū khi chiāh kâ lí bé. I'll buy it for you if I go there sometime.

<sup>1</sup>Góa chīm-á bé ō'-thó'-bái; <sup>3</sup>āu-pái bōeh bé chhia. I bought a motorcycle now; next time I'll buy a car.

3. chhe 初 (Refers to the first 10 days of the month.)

<sup>3</sup>Āu-kó'-gòeh chhe (OR: chhe-nih) chiāh bōeh khi. I'm not going until the first third (first 10 days) of next month.

<sup>7</sup>Kin-<sup>1</sup>á-jít <sup>3</sup>cháp-jī-gòeh chhē kúí? Today is December what?

<sup>7</sup>Kin-<sup>1</sup>á-jít chhē-lák. Today is the 6th.

4. <sup>2</sup>chiāh-nih/<sup>3</sup>chiai 這麼 such/so/as...as. (See Gram. Note 1.)

<sup>1</sup>Nā <sup>2</sup>chiāh-nih <sup>3</sup>kùi? How come it's this expensive?

Bē là, <sup>7</sup>chín siok. It's not expensive; it's very cheap.

<sup>1</sup>Lí nā <sup>1</sup>chiāh <sup>2</sup>gâu? How come you're so smart?

<sup>1</sup>Nā-ū. Hardly (I can hardly be called smart). (Note the modest answer: "Ná-ū = Hardly/Not at all".)

5. <sup>2</sup>chō-hóe 一起; 一塊, 一同 together.

<sup>1</sup>Lán <sup>2</sup>chō-hóe <sup>7</sup>lâi-khi. Let's go together.

<sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>7</sup>bô <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>7</sup>kâh <sup>1</sup>chē <sup>3</sup>chō-hóe. I don't want to sit together with him.

## 6. Eng-gí 英語 English language.

Eng-gí góa bô chin gâu kóng. I'm not very good at speaking English.

Chhia\* lí kâ góan kâ Eng-gí, hó bô? Please teach us English, OK?

Sít-lé, góa chim-á bô sim-mih sí-kan. I don't have much time now, I'm very sorry.

## 7. gōa-kok 外國 foreign country.

gōa-kok-lâng foreigners.

Lí bāt khi gōa-kok chhit-thô bô? Have you ever gone abroad for a little recreation?

Ū chin-chê gōa-kok-lâng tòa tī Tâi-oân. There are many foreigners living in Taiwan.

## 8. -gōeh 月 (With number: name of month. "Gōeh" is enclitic here. The number changes tone if the day follows.)

chia*-gōeh/it-gōeh	Jan.	chhit-gōeh	July.
jī-gōeh	Feb.	peh-gōeh	Aug.
sa*-gōeh	Mar.	káu-gōeh	Sep.
sì-gōeh	Apr.	cháp-gōeh	Oct.
gō-gōeh	May.	cháp-it-gōeh	Nov.
lák-gōeh	June.	cháp-jī-gōeh	Dec.

Kin-á-jit (sī) chia\*-gōeh táng-sí? Today is January the what? (Which of the 31 days is it?)

Cháp-jī-gōeh jī-gō-gōeh chhia\* lí lái góan chia. Please come here on Dec. 25.

Lí kúi-gōeh bōeh khi? What month are you going?

(Note tones on "kúi-gōeh".)

9. hàn-jī/Tiòng-kòk-jī 漢字；中國字 the Han characters/  
Chinese characters. (Measure: jī)

Lí bát kúi jī hàn-jī? How many characters do you know?

1) Hàn-jī góá iáu-bōe khài-sī óh. I haven't begun  
the study of characters yet.

2) Góá bát chít-póá\*-jī-á nīa-nīa./Góá bát kúi-jī-á  
nīa-nīa. — 半 字 仔  
I only know a few characters.

10. hiáh-nih/hiah 那麼 such/so/as...as.

Lí kìn-á-jit ná hiáh jīn-chin? Why are you so  
認真 diligent today?

Ná-ū. Not at all. (I'm hardly diligent.)

Í kóng hit keng bōeh bē sí-páh bān; kám ái hiáh kùi?  
He says he'll sell that house for 4 million; is  
it possible that it could be that expensive?

11. iā...iā/mā...mā/ā...ā 也...也 both...and/(with negative)  
neither...nor.

Chít hāng tāi-chì í iā chài-iá\*, góá iā chài-iá\*. Both  
he and I know about this. (He knows about this  
matter and I also know about it.)

Tī chia iā ū keng-chio iā ū oŋg-lái; lí ái chiah sia\*h?  
Here we have bananas and pineapples; what do you  
want?

12. ít-tēng 一定 certain/definite; certainly/definitely.  
(Negative: "bó ít-tēng".)

Lí ū ít-tēng bōeh khi bō? Are you definitely going?

1) Ū, ū ít-tēng. Yes, it's certain.

2) Bó ít-tēng. It's not certain.

He sí ít-tēng é. That's certain.

He bó ít-tēng. That's not certain.

- ✓ 13. <sup>3</sup>jīn-chin/<sup>2</sup>pia\*-sì/<sup>2</sup>pia\*-sè/<sup>2</sup>phān-piā\* 認真, 努力 diligent.  
<sup>3</sup>Hak-seng <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>3</sup>jīn-chin <sup>7</sup>thāk-chheh. Students must study hard.
- <sup>3</sup>Lāu-su <sup>2</sup>kio <sup>7</sup>ī <sup>1</sup>sia-jī, <sup>7</sup>ī <sup>7</sup>chin <sup>2</sup>pia\*-sì <sup>2</sup>sía. The teacher told him to write and he's writing very diligently.
14. kâ 爲, 給, 向 for/to/from/on/at. (Used as prefix of object placed before verb.)
- <sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>7</sup>sī-kan <sup>3</sup>bô? <sup>1</sup>Góá <sup>3</sup>kâ <sup>1</sup>lí <sup>1</sup>kóng <sup>3</sup>chit <sup>3</sup>hāng <sup>3</sup>tāi-chì. Do you have some time? I'd like to tell you about something.
- <sup>3</sup>Kâ <sup>1</sup>lín <sup>1</sup>bé <sup>3</sup>mih-kīa\*. Anybody here? (Shouted by customer who sees no salesperson in the shop. Lit., "(I want to) buy something from you".)
- <sup>1</sup>Góá <sup>3</sup>nā <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>3</sup>chhut-khì, <sup>1</sup>góá <sup>2</sup>chiāh <sup>3</sup>kâ <sup>1</sup>lí <sup>1</sup>bé. If I go out I'll get (buy) it for you.
15. <sup>7</sup>Kā-gī 嘉義 Chiayi (name of city/county in south central Taiwan).
16. <sup>7</sup>kā-têng/<sup>7</sup>ké-têng 家庭 family. (Measure: ê)
- <sup>1</sup>Lín <sup>7</sup>kā-têng <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>1</sup>kúí <sup>7</sup>é <sup>7</sup>lāng? How many are there in your family?
- <sup>1</sup>Góan <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>3</sup>gō. ê: pa-pah, ma-mah <sup>2</sup>káp <sup>7</sup>sá\* <sup>7</sup>é <sup>1</sup>gín-á. There are 5 of us, daddy, mommy, and 3 kids.
17. <sup>2</sup>khèh-khì 客氣 politeness/formality; reserved/polite/formal; humble.
- <sup>3</sup>M-biān <sup>1</sup>khèh-khì. No need to be so formal./Make yourself at home. Etc.
- <sup>7</sup>Í <sup>1</sup>kóng-ōe <sup>7</sup>chin <sup>2</sup>khèh-khì. He speaks very courteously./He speaks very humbly.
18. <sup>2</sup>khí-chúí 汽水 one kind of carbonated drink. (At times is taken to mean soft drink in general. Measure: kòan/poe)
- <sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>2</sup>ài <sup>7</sup>lím <sup>2</sup>khí-chúí <sup>3</sup>bô? Do you want a soft drink?

Chít kòan khi-chúi ũ kúi poe? How many glasses will a  
bottle of soft drink fill? (Preparing to treat  
people to a meal.)

19. kó'-gòeh/gòeh-jít 個月 month.

Chít kó'-gòeh ũ sá\*-cháp-jít nīa-nīa. This month has  
only 30 days.

Lí thak kúi kó'-gòeh á? How many months have you  
studied?

20. kòan 罐, 瓶 bottle/jar/jug/can. ("Kòan" is the measure  
for what is contained in a bottle/jar, etc.)

Chhia\* lí khi bé chít kòan khi-chúi tng-lái. Please go  
buy a bottle of soft drink.

21. kok 國 kingdom/country.

Lí sī tōh chít kok é lāng? What country are you from?

Lāng lóng ái ká-tī é kok. Everyone loves his own  
country.

22. Kók-gí 國語 the National Language.

Hít é gōa-kók-lāng chin gâu kóng Kók-gí. That  
foreigner speaks the National Language very well.

23. kúi + Measure + á 幾 + 單位 a few. (See Gram. Note 2.)

Gōa ũ kúi-khó'-á nīa-nīa. I only have a few dollars.

Lí é chheh kúi-pún-á hō' gōa khò\*, hó bō'? Let me  
read a few of your books, OK?

✓ 24. kúi + ā/nā + Measure 好幾 + 單位 several/a small  
quantity of. This is a slightly larger quantity than  
the above term - no. 23; see Gram. Note 3.)

I chiah kúi-ā-jí ā, iáu bōeh kōh chiah. He has eaten  
several and he still wants more.

Iáu ũ kúi-nā é lāng iáu-bōe lái chiah-png. There are  
still a few people who haven't come to eat yet.

25. lāng-kheh 客人, 顧客 visitor/guest/customer/passenger.  
(Measure: ūi/ê).

Ū chit ê lāng-kheh tī lāu-kha bōeh kâh lí kóng-ōe.  
There's a visitor downstairs who would like to speak with you.

Hít ê lāng-kheh iáu tēh khùn. That guest is still sleeping.

Ū chit ê lāng-kheh bōeh bé mih-kīa\*. There's a customer (in the shop) who wants to buy something.

Góa chē hīt tái chia lāng-kheh chin-chē. There were many passengers on the bus I was on.

26. lāng-khêh-keng 客房 bedroom for guests. (Measure: keng)

Chit keng sī lāng-khêh-keng. This is the guest bedroom.

Góan chhù ê lāng-khêh-keng chin sē-keng. The guest bedroom in our house is very small.

27. ma-mah/lāu-bú/lāu-bó 媽媽 mother.

Lín ma-mah ū tī chhù bô\*? Is your mama at home?

Góan ma-mah tēh chō Lāu-su. My mama is a teacher.

28. nò. 吧, 了, 啊 (exclamation emphasizing the preceding word or phrase.)

Che sī sim-mih, lí chai bô\*? What is this, do you know?

Chai nò., he sī tē-bī-tê. I do; that's tea.

29. òh 學 to learn/imitate/(in certain combinations) school.

Góa chim-á tēh òh Tái-oân-ōe. I'm learning Taiwanese now.

Hít ê sē-hàn-gin-á tēh òh kóng-ōe. That little fellow is learning to talk.

Ī chin sē-hàn, m-kú ē-hiáu òh lāng sia-jī. He's very small but he can (knows how to) imitate people writing.



30. <sup>7</sup>oŋg-lâi 鳳梨 pineapple. (Measure: "liap"; of slice: "tè")  
 Chít <sup>3</sup>liap <sup>7</sup>oŋg-lâi <sup>3</sup>ũ ti\* <sup>3</sup>bô? Is this pineapple sweet?
31. pa-pah/<sup>3</sup>lâu-pē 爸爸 father.  
 Chái-khí <sup>1</sup>lín pa-pah <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>1</sup>lâi <sup>3</sup>bô? Did your father come  
 this morning?  
 I<sup>7</sup>n pa-pah <sup>1</sup>góa bat <sup>3</sup>i. I know his father. (Note that  
 "i" is expressed, referring to "his father".)
32. p<sup>2</sup>áh-bān 百萬 million.  
 chh<sup>7</sup>éng-bān ten million.  
 ek hundred million.  
 cháp-ek <sup>3</sup>one billion.  
 Bé <sup>1</sup>hít <sup>2</sup>kéng <sup>7</sup>chhù <sup>3</sup>m-chái <sup>2</sup>ái <sup>1</sup>kúí <sup>2</sup>páh-bān <sup>3</sup>kho? I wonder  
 how many millions of dollars that house would cost.  
 Hé <sup>2</sup>ái <sup>3</sup>chít-chh<sup>7</sup>éng-bān <sup>3</sup>kho. That costs \$10 million.  
 Ché <sup>2</sup>ái <sup>3</sup>chít-<sup>2</sup>ék <sup>3</sup>kho. This costs \$100 million.
33. p<sup>3</sup>ē-bó/pē-bú 父母 parents. (Lit., father-mother.)  
 Góan <sup>1</sup>pē-bú <sup>3</sup>tóa <sup>2</sup>tī <sup>3</sup>chng-kha. My parents live in the  
 rural area.  
 Góan <sup>1</sup>pē-bú <sup>3</sup>iáu <sup>1</sup>chín <sup>7</sup>chío hòe. My parents are still  
 young.
34. p<sup>1</sup>hó-thong 普通 ordinary/common; ordinarily.  
 Chít <sup>2</sup>kù <sup>7</sup>chín p<sup>1</sup>hó-thong. This sentence is very  
 common.  
 I<sup>7</sup> p<sup>1</sup>hó-thong <sup>7</sup>khía <sup>7</sup>ô-thó-bái <sup>1</sup>lâi. He ordinarily  
 comes by motorcycle.
35. p<sup>7</sup>oe/p<sup>7</sup>oe-á 杯 glass/cup/tumbler. (Measure: tè)  
 Góan <sup>1</sup>bóeh <sup>2</sup>lím-tê, <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>7</sup>p<sup>7</sup>oe-á <sup>3</sup>bô? We want to drink  
 water; are there any glasses?

<sup>3</sup> Ū <sup>2</sup> khah <sup>3</sup> tōa-tè <sup>7</sup> ē <sup>7</sup> pōe-á <sup>3</sup> bō\*? Do you have any bigger glasses? (Note: Remember that "tōa" usually requires the measure ("tè"). Compare "khah hó ē pōe-á": "hó" does not require the measure.)

36. sng 酸, 疼 sour/acid/tart; to ache.

<sup>7</sup> Ōng-lâi <sup>3</sup> ē sng <sup>3</sup> bē? Does the pineapple have a tart taste?

<sup>1</sup> Gōa <sup>7</sup> ē kha <sup>2</sup> kãh <sup>7</sup> chhiú <sup>7</sup> chin sng. My arms and legs ache.

37. <sup>3</sup> tãi-khài 大概, 可能 probably/mainly; probable/for the most part.

Che <sup>3</sup> tãi-khài <sup>7</sup> chin kùi. This probably costs a lot.

<sup>7</sup> ĩ <sup>1</sup> án-ni <sup>3</sup> kóng, <sup>3</sup> tãi-khài <sup>3</sup> ũ-iá\*. That's what he says and it's probably true.

38. <sup>3</sup> tãi-seng/seng 先 in advance/first/beforehand.

<sup>1</sup> Lán <sup>7</sup> sêng <sup>1</sup> chiah, <sup>2</sup> chiah <sup>3</sup> kóng. Let's eat first, then talk (about that matter).

<sup>1</sup> Chái-khí <sup>7</sup> ĩ <sup>2</sup> khah <sup>3</sup> tãi-sêng <sup>7</sup> lâi. He was the first one here this morning./This morning he came ahead of me/us.

39. <sup>1</sup> téng 上/前 the previous.

<sup>1</sup> téng-jit the other day/a few days ago.

<sup>1</sup> téng lé-pài last week.

<sup>1</sup> téng-pái last time.

<sup>1</sup> téng kó'-goeh last month.

<sup>1</sup> téng tiám-cheng the previous class.

40. <sup>1</sup> thēh 拿 to take on the hand (a small object)/carry; (with "hō") to give.

<sup>1</sup> Lí <sup>3</sup> ũ <sup>3</sup> thēh <sup>1</sup> chheh <sup>1</sup> lâi <sup>3</sup> bō\*? Did you bring your book?

<sup>1</sup> Lí <sup>7</sup> ē <sup>3</sup> chhiú-nih <sup>3</sup> thēh <sup>1</sup> sim-mih? What do you have in your hand?

Chiah<sup>2</sup> ê thng-á<sup>7</sup> chhia\*<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> thêh<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>7</sup>. Please give him  
this candy/these candies.

41. thîn 斟, 倒 pour out gently in a small quantity from a  
spout.

Lí<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> thêh<sup>3</sup> pōe-á<sup>7</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> thîn. Go get a glass and pour  
some (tea, etc.) in.

Lâng-kheh<sup>7</sup> lái<sup>7</sup>; chhia\*<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> thîn<sup>7</sup> tê. A visitor has  
come; please pour some tea.

42. ti\* 甜 sweet.

Kín-á-jit<sup>7</sup> ê ong-lái<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> ti\*<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Are the pineapples  
sweet today? (Asking the salesperson in the market.)

Ti\*-ê<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> sīm-mīn<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah. I don't like to eat  
sweets.

43. Tióng-kok 中國 China.

44. tōh/tāh<sup>2</sup> + chit<sup>3</sup> + Measure 那一 + 單位 which one?/whichever  
one.

Tōh<sup>2</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> ê kán<sup>2</sup> tōh<sup>2</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> ê? Which ones?

Lí<sup>1</sup> ê chhia<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> tōh<sup>2</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> t'ai? Which one is your car?/  
Which car is yours?

Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> tōh<sup>2</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> ki? Which one do you want?

Tōh<sup>2</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> kù<sup>3</sup> m̄-bat<sup>3</sup>? Chhia\*<sup>1</sup> m̄ng. Which sentence don't  
you understand? Please ask. (The student has  
already indicated there is a problem.)

45. ũ-ê<sup>3</sup> 有的, 有些 some/some of them/somebody/there are some  
that...

Góa<sup>1</sup> ũ-ê<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>7</sup>-hiáu, ũ-ê<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>7</sup>-hiáu. Some I understand and  
some I don't.

Ū-ê<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> t'ai-chì. Some people  
like to gossip.

Ū-ê<sup>3</sup> só<sup>7</sup>-chāi<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> m̄-bat<sup>3</sup> khi. There are places that I  
haven't been to yet.

- L1: You're very busy today, sir.
- N1: No. Come on in and sit down. Where do you live? (Note: "Bē là." To be "bô êng" when a visitor comes would be undesirable, hence "bē" is used: "bē bô êng = not busy".)
- L2: I live in that school on Three People's Street; I'm studying Taiwanese there.
- N2: You're so good at speaking Taiwanese.
- L3: Hardly. I've only studied several months. ("A" of the Perfect Tense is not needed with "nīa-nīa".) I can't speak very well.
- N3: I wonder how you go about learning Taiwanese.
- L4: Learning Taiwanese and learning English don't differ much: start with the pronunciation.
- N4: You use (lit., look at) the Han characters to study Taiwanese, do you?
- L5: First we use English letters for a year or two then use the Han characters.
- N5: Are there always new students coming to study?
- L6: There always are. A student came to study at the beginning of last month but he's only going to study a year and a half.
- N6: If he knows the language after a year and a half he's certainly very smart. The students there (note the polite "Lán hia") are all from which country? (I.e., do the majority come from a single country?)
- Note: (Note that "lóng", though translated "all", is not exclusive in Taiwanese; it frequently means generally speaking/the majority":
- E.g.: "In lóng ē lâi khâh chē = They'll all come -- for the most part = Most of them will come.
- L7: There are people from every country; there are many Americans; there are Chinese also.
- N7: Excuse me, I'm going to get a soft drink.
- L8: Please don't bother<sub>3</sub> (lit., no need). (Note: it is more polite to repeat "m-bián". The meaning here is: don't go to any trouble to get it, such as leaving the room.)
- N8: (He brings the soft drink into the room.) Don't be so formal - please have a drink.
- L9: Thank you. This parlor of yours is such a big room, sir; if 10 or 20 guests come, no problem. ("Iā" - there is no problem with 1 guest, and there is also no problem with 10 or 20.)
- N9: Yes; our whole 1st floor (OR: downstairs) is a parlor (OR: reception room); the bedrooms are upstairs, and that's why the parlor is rather big. (...lâu-téng chiah...kheh-thia\* chiah... = only upstairs are the bedrooms, so it's only on account of that that the parlor is a rather big room.)

- L10: Your house is so big that the upstairs probably has quite a few bedrooms, I guess.
- N10: There are four: one room is for my dad and mom; one is for the children; my wife and I sleep in one, and there's another room we'll make a guest room.
- L11: Your whole family lives together, that's really good. (Note: The meaning here is that 3 generations can live together.)
- N11: Please have some pineapple, sir. These are some I brought back from the mountains the other day. (Lit., These are the ones I went to the mountains the other day and brought back home.) The pineapples now are not tart, they're sweet, really tasty. Please help yourself. (lit., no need to be too reserved).
- L12: I'm not one to stand on ceremony. Oh, it's true: they're really sweet.
- N12: We still have some of these in the house; when you're going home, take a few with you now (lit., first); next time you come take some more.
- L13: Thanks. This is quite a few.

SĪN-GÍ É CHŪ-KÁI

VOCABULARY NOTES

A. The word for "romanization" is "l<sup>7</sup>ó-má<sup>1</sup>-jī (Roman letters)", but not everyone knows this word. We may say:

"G<sup>1</sup>óan i<sup>3</sup>ng Eng-gí é jī sia Tái-gí."

B. The language we are studying is called "Tái-oân-ōe" by most people. But since the aborigine languages and Hakka also make a claim to being called

"Tái-oân-ōe", distinctions may be made:

1. In speaking to aborigines we call this language we are studying "Pé\*-tē-ōe = Level-land-language = Lowland language".

And the "lowland people" are called: "Pé\*-tē-lâng".

2. Aborigines live in the mountains, generally, hence are called "Sóa\*-tē-lâng = mountain-land-people".

Their language is "Sóa\*-tē-ōe".

3. In speaking to Hakkas ("Khéh-lâng") we may call this language we are studying "Hō-ló-ōe" ("Hoklo" in English), and the people who speak it "Hō-ló-lâng".

Hakka is called "Khéh-ōe" or "Kheh".

- C. "Kók-gí" means the "National (i.e. official) language". Mandarin is the official language decreed by the civil authorities in 1945.

EXAMPLES

a) Sít-lé, góá bē-hiáú kóng Sòa\*-tē-ōe; lí ē-hiáú kóng Pē\*-tē-ōe bē? . Sorry, I can't speak Aborigine; can you speak the Lowland language?

b) Lí ē-hiáú kóng Khéh-ōe bē? Can you speak Hakka?

Note: Sentence b is frequently shortened to:

Lí ē-hiáú kóng Kheh bē?

c) Lí ē-hiáú kóng Hō-ló-ōe bē? Can you speak Hoklo?

BUN-HOAT

GRAMMAR

1. "Chiáh-nih" and "Hiáh-nih" (Voc. Nos. 4 and 10) so/such/ to such an extent.

A. These are used to intensify modifiers. The "nih" is frequently dropped. "Chiah-nih" is thought of as referring to something close to the speaker, even if only an idea. "Hiáh-nih" refers to something away from the speaker.

a) Góá ē chheh chiáh-nih hó; lí ái bé bô? My books are really good; do you want to buy them?

b) Í ē gín-á hiáh-nih pháí\*. His kid is really bad.

c) Góá ē thih-bé chiáh hó-khía; lí bôeh khía bô? (Note the "-nih" is dropped.)

B. SCHEMA. Note in the following words that those beginning with "chi" indicate something near the speaker.

Those beginning with "hi" indicate something away from the speaker.

chia	here.
<sup>3</sup> tī chia	in this place.
chít <sup>2</sup> + measure	this.
chia <sup>2</sup> ê + noun	these.
chia <sup>2</sup> (-nìh) <sup>3</sup> + modifier	so, such.
hia	there.
<sup>3</sup> tī hia	in that place.
hít <sup>2</sup> + measure	that.
hia <sup>2</sup> ê + noun	those.
hia <sup>2</sup> (-nìh) <sup>3</sup> + modifier	so, such.

C. Observe the different forms:

- 1) a) n̄ng<sup>3</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh.      d) chít<sup>2</sup> jī<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh.  
 b) chít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh.      e) chia<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chheh.  
 c) chít<sup>2</sup> n̄ng<sup>3</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh.
- a) 2 books.      b) this book.      c) these 2 books.  
 d) these 20 books.      e) these books.
- 2) a) sá\*<sup>7</sup> kí<sup>7</sup> ián-pit.<sup>7</sup>      d) hít<sup>2</sup> chap-gō\*<sup>3</sup> kí<sup>7</sup> ián-pit.<sup>7</sup>  
 b) hít<sup>2</sup> kí<sup>7</sup> ián-pit.<sup>7</sup>      e) hiah<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> ián-pit.<sup>7</sup>  
 c) hít<sup>2</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup> kí<sup>7</sup> ián-pit.<sup>7</sup>
- a) 3 pencils.      b) that pencil.      c) those 3 pencils.  
 d) those 15 pencils.      e) those pencils.
- 3) a) chít<sup>3</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thih-bé.<sup>2</sup>      c) chít<sup>2</sup> chap-gōa<sup>3</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thih-bé.<sup>2</sup>  
 b) chít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thih-bé.<sup>2</sup>      d) chia<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> thih-bé.<sup>2</sup>
- 4) a) sĩ<sup>2</sup> pâu hun.<sup>7</sup>      d) hít<sup>2</sup> jī<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> pâu hun.<sup>7</sup>  
 b) hít<sup>2</sup> pâu hun.<sup>7</sup>      e) hiah<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> hun.<sup>7</sup>  
 c) hít<sup>2</sup> sĩ<sup>2</sup> pâu hun.<sup>7</sup>

- 5) a) chít<sup>3</sup>-chhêng<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> hák<sup>3</sup>-seng.      d) hiáh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> hák<sup>3</sup>-seng.  
 b) hít<sup>2</sup> nng<sup>3</sup>-chhêng<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> hák<sup>3</sup>-seng.      e) chia<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> hák<sup>3</sup>-seng.  
 c) chít<sup>2</sup> sa<sup>7</sup>\*-chhêng<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> hák<sup>3</sup>-seng.

2. 

kúi <sup>1</sup>	MEASURE	á
------------------	---------	---

      a few

By this phrase the speaker wishes to express a very small quantity. "Nīa-nīa = only" is very naturally used here.

- a) Chít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>3</sup> m̄-sī<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup>-khó<sup>7</sup>·-á<sup>3</sup> nīa-nīa, ái<sup>2</sup> chin<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> chí<sup>1</sup>\*.  
 This book is not just a few dollars; it costs a lot.  
 b) Lán<sup>1</sup> chhū<sup>1</sup> iáu<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup>-liáp<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>7</sup> kám<sup>3</sup>-á<sup>7</sup> nīa-nīa.      We have  
 only a few tangerines left at home.  
 c) Góa<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup>-pún<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> chheh<sup>3</sup> nīa-nīa.      I have only a few  
 books.  
 d) Hák<sup>3</sup>-seng<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup>-kí<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup> ián<sup>7</sup>-pit<sup>3</sup> nīa-nīa.      The students  
 have only a few pencils.  
 e) Tī<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup>-ê<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup> hák<sup>3</sup>-seng<sup>3</sup> nīa-nīa.      There are only  
 a few students here.

3. 

kúi <sup>1</sup>	ā/nā <sup>3</sup>	MEASURE
------------------	-------------------	---------

      several

This expression means a slightly larger quantity than that in 2 above.

- a) Í<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>· lí<sup>1</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup>-ā<sup>3</sup>-nīa<sup>1</sup> sa\*.      He will give you  
 several garments (not just one).  
 b) Góa<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup>-ā<sup>3</sup>-liáp<sup>3</sup> thng<sup>7</sup>-á.      I have several pieces of  
 candy.  
 c) Í<sup>7</sup> chái<sup>1</sup>-khí<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup>-nā<sup>3</sup>-kí<sup>7</sup> hun.      He smoked several  
 (OR: a number of) cigarettes this morning.  
 d) Góa<sup>1</sup> chāng<sup>7</sup>-ám<sup>7</sup> līm<sup>7</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup>-nā<sup>3</sup>-pōe<sup>7</sup> ká<sup>7</sup>-pi.      Last night I  
 drank several cups of coffee.  
 e) Í<sup>7</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup>-ā<sup>3</sup>-pau<sup>7</sup> thng<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>· hít<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> gín<sup>1</sup>-á.      He gave  
 several packets of candy to that kid.



4. kā

"Kā" one of the most common words in the language, is used as the prefix of the object placed before the verb, this object being the equivalent of what is in English either the Direct or Indirect Object. "Kā" may be translated by "for/to/from/on/at".

a) Chh<sup>1</sup>ia\* lí<sup>1</sup> kā<sup>3</sup> g<sup>1</sup>oa k<sup>1</sup>óng. Please tell me (lit., please to me tell).

b) Chít<sup>2</sup> h<sup>3</sup>āng t<sup>3</sup>ai-chì<sup>1</sup> g<sup>1</sup>oa kh<sup>2</sup>h<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ē-hi<sup>1</sup>ǎu ch<sup>1</sup>ò; lí<sup>1</sup> kā<sup>3</sup> g<sup>1</sup>oa ch<sup>1</sup>ò, hó<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ô\*? I'm not good at this; would you mind doing it for me?

1) Hó! G<sup>1</sup>oa kā<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ch<sup>1</sup>ò. OK, I'll do it for you.

2) Sít<sup>2</sup>-lé, g<sup>1</sup>oa k<sup>7</sup>ín-á-jít<sup>1</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ô sí<sup>7</sup>-kan; āu<sup>3</sup> lé-p<sup>1</sup>ài kā<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ch<sup>1</sup>ò, hó<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ô\*? Sorry, I have no time today; how about next week?

c) Chh<sup>1</sup>ia\* lí<sup>1</sup> kh<sup>2</sup>i kā<sup>3</sup> g<sup>1</sup>oa b<sup>3</sup>é chít<sup>3</sup> p<sup>1</sup>ún ch<sup>1</sup>eh, hó<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ô\*? (buy for me)

d) Chi<sup>2</sup>ah é<sup>7</sup> jī lí<sup>1</sup> kā<sup>3</sup> g<sup>1</sup>oa s<sup>1</sup>ía, hó<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ô\*? (write for me)

e) Hít<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> g<sup>1</sup>ín-á b<sup>7</sup>ô ài th<sup>3</sup>ak-ch<sup>1</sup>eh; g<sup>1</sup>oa b<sup>7</sup>ô ài kā<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> k<sup>1</sup>à. (teach him)

f) Í<sup>7</sup> t<sup>2</sup>eh b<sup>3</sup>ē é<sup>7</sup> m<sup>1</sup>ih-k<sup>1</sup>ia\* ch<sup>7</sup>ín k<sup>1</sup>uì, s<sup>1</sup>ô-í<sup>1</sup> l<sup>7</sup>āng b<sup>7</sup>ô ài kā<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> bé. (buy from him)

## 5. More on Numerals. (See Ls 8.)

Inflation has sent the price of building roads, large buildings, etc., into astronomical figures.

A. Practise the following:

- 1) chít<sup>3</sup>-p<sup>2</sup>ān k<sup>7</sup>i i<sup>7</sup>ān-pit 100 pencils.
- 2) chít<sup>3</sup>-p<sup>2</sup>ān kh<sup>2</sup>ông chít<sup>3</sup> t<sup>2</sup>ē th<sup>7</sup>ng-á 101 pieces of candy.
- 3) chít<sup>3</sup>-ch<sup>7</sup>hēng t<sup>7</sup>ai s<sup>7</sup>ú-k<sup>2</sup>ú-tah 1000 scooters.

- 4) chít<sup>3</sup>-chheng chít<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> cháng<sup>7</sup> chhiū-á OR: chheng<sup>7</sup>-ít<sup>2</sup>  
cháng<sup>7</sup> chhiū-á. (Note tone on "chheng".) 1100 trees.
- 5) chít<sup>3</sup>-bān<sup>3</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lāng 10,000 people.
- 6) chít<sup>3</sup>-bān<sup>3</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup>-chheng<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lāng OR: bān<sup>3</sup>-sá\*<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lāng.  
13,000 people.
- 7) ch p-bān 100,000.
- 8) jī<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-bān 200,000.
- 9) chít<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup>-bān 1,000,000/1 million.
- 10) chít<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-bān 1,500,000.
- 11) gō<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> chhit<sup>2</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup>-gō<sup>3</sup>-bān 5,750,000.
- 12) lāk<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup>-gōa<sup>3</sup> bān Over 6 million.
- 13) chít<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>7</sup>-bān 10 million.
- 14) chít<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>7</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup>-bān OR: chheng<sup>7</sup>-gō<sup>3</sup>-bān  
15 million.
- 15) gō<sup>3</sup>-chheng<sup>7</sup>-bān 50 million.
- 16) chít<sup>3</sup>-ek 100 million.
- 17) cháp<sup>3</sup>-ek 1 billion.

## B. Read the following:

- a) \$3,000,000.      b) \$12,000,000.      c) \$4,500,000.  
d) \$1,110,000.      e) \$11,110,000.      f) \$200,000,000.  
g) Tái-oân ũ<sup>3</sup> 18,000,000 ê<sup>7</sup> lāng.

LE-KUPATTERN SENTENCES

## 1. au/au-á

- a) Tê<sup>7</sup>-au-á iā<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> sê<sup>2</sup>-tè-ê<sup>3</sup>, iā<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> tōa<sup>3</sup>-tè-ê<sup>3</sup>. (P)
- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> kōh<sup>2</sup> lim, au-á chhia\*<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> sé<sup>3</sup>-khít<sup>3</sup>-lâi<sup>3</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup>  
bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)

c) Lím hó ê tê lóng iông chín sê-tê ê âu-á. (P)

2. âu-

a) Kín-á-jít góa bô-êng; âu-jít (OR: âu-pái), hó bô? (P)

b) Í m-sĩ chít lé-pài bôeh khi, sĩ âu lé-pài chiáh bôeh khi.

c) Aũ kô-gôeh ũ kúi-nā ê hək-seng bôeh lái thək.

d) Lí nā jīn-chín thək, âu-pái ít-tēng ê chín gáu. (P)

e) Chít tiām-cheng Ko Siān-sĩ\* ká góa kà, âu tiām-cheng tōh chít ũi Lâu-su bôeh ká góa kà?

3. chhe

a) Í kóng chhe-nih bôeh lái, m-kú bô kóng chhe-kúi bôeh lái. (P)

b) Chap-ít-gôeh chhe-it sĩ pài-sa\*.

c) Góa chhe-nih khi Kô-hiông, kàu chap-gô chiáh tng-lái. (P)

d) Chia\*-gôeh chhe-it, chhe-jī, chhe-sa\* lóng hiōh-khùn, lí bôeh khi toh?

4. chiáh-nih/chiah

a) Lí nā chiáh-nih gáu kóng Tái-gí? (P)  
Nā-ū.

b) Lí bé chiáh-nih chē pit bôeh chhông-sia\*h?

c) Chhit hòe nĩa-nĩa, nā chiáh gáu-tōa. (P)

d) Sĩa khāh sê-jī khāh hó-khòah\*, mài sĩa chiáh tōa-jī. (P)

e) Chiáh chē kôe-chí; lí ài chiáh sia\*h? (P)

5. ch<sup>2</sup>ō-h<sup>2</sup>óe

- a) Tī chia g<sup>1</sup>oan l<sup>1</sup>ong ch<sup>2</sup>ō-h<sup>2</sup>óe chia<sup>3</sup>h-p<sup>3</sup>ng.
- b) G<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>7</sup>ó ãi k<sup>2</sup>ãh ìn ch<sup>2</sup>ō-h<sup>2</sup>óe kh<sup>1</sup>ì, g<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>2</sup>óeh k<sup>7</sup>ã-tī kh<sup>1</sup>ì.
- c) Tī h<sup>3</sup>ãk-h<sup>3</sup>ãu l<sup>1</sup>ì k<sup>2</sup>ãh ch<sup>7</sup>ã-po<sup>1</sup>·-ê ch<sup>3</sup>ê ch<sup>2</sup>ō-h<sup>2</sup>óe, ã-sī k<sup>3</sup>ãh ch<sup>7</sup>ã-b<sup>3</sup>ó·-ê ch<sup>3</sup>ê ch<sup>2</sup>ō-h<sup>2</sup>óe?
- d) L<sup>1</sup>ì n<sup>3</sup>ã k<sup>2</sup>ãh l<sup>1</sup>ìn th<sup>2</sup>ãi-th<sup>2</sup>ãi ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ut-kh<sup>1</sup>ì, l<sup>1</sup>ì ù k<sup>3</sup>ãh ì k<sup>7</sup>ãf<sup>7</sup>\* eh<sup>2</sup>ō-h<sup>2</sup>óe b<sup>3</sup>ó·? (P)
- e) G<sup>1</sup>oá b<sup>2</sup>óeh kh<sup>2</sup>ì kh<sup>2</sup>oã\* ti<sup>3</sup>ãn-iá\*, l<sup>1</sup>ãn ch<sup>2</sup>ō-h<sup>2</sup>óe l<sup>7</sup>ãi-kh<sup>1</sup>ì, h<sup>3</sup>ó b<sup>3</sup>ó·?

## 6. Eng-gí

- a) G<sup>1</sup>oan pa-pah tī h<sup>3</sup>ãk-h<sup>3</sup>ãu t<sup>2</sup>êh k<sup>2</sup>ã Eng-gí.
- b) Ph<sup>1</sup>ãi\*-sè, ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ĩa\* l<sup>1</sup>ì k<sup>7</sup>óng T<sup>7</sup>ãi-gí; m<sup>2</sup>ãi k<sup>7</sup>óng Eng-gí, h<sup>3</sup>ó b<sup>3</sup>ó·? (P)
- c) Eng-gí g<sup>1</sup>oá kh<sup>2</sup>ãh ê-hi<sup>3</sup>ãu kh<sup>2</sup>oã\*, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú kh<sup>2</sup>ãh b<sup>3</sup>ê-hi<sup>3</sup>ãu k<sup>7</sup>óng.
- d) L<sup>1</sup>ãn chia ù g<sup>3</sup>oá-k<sup>3</sup>ók-l<sup>2</sup>âng b<sup>2</sup>óeh k<sup>3</sup>ã l<sup>7</sup>âng k<sup>2</sup>ã Eng-gí b<sup>3</sup>ó·? (P)
- e) Ch<sup>1</sup>im-á tī T<sup>7</sup>ãi-o<sup>3</sup>ãn ê-hi<sup>3</sup>ãu k<sup>7</sup>óng Eng-gí ê l<sup>7</sup>âng ch<sup>7</sup>im-ch<sup>2</sup>ê.

7. g<sup>3</sup>oã-kok      g<sup>3</sup>oã-k<sup>2</sup>ók-l<sup>2</sup>âng

- a) L<sup>1</sup>oã Si<sup>3</sup>ãn-sī\* ìn ê g<sup>7</sup>in-á l<sup>1</sup>ong kh<sup>2</sup>ì g<sup>3</sup>oã-kok th<sup>3</sup>ãk-ch<sup>3</sup>eh.
- b) L<sup>1</sup>ì b<sup>2</sup>ãt kh<sup>2</sup>ì g<sup>3</sup>oã-kok ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ít-th<sup>3</sup>ô b<sup>3</sup>ó·?
- c) G<sup>3</sup>oã-kok ê m<sup>7</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>ĩã\* l<sup>1</sup>ong kh<sup>2</sup>ãh k<sup>1</sup>uì, sī b<sup>3</sup>ó·?
- d) Tī T<sup>7</sup>ãi-o<sup>3</sup>ãn ê g<sup>3</sup>oã-k<sup>2</sup>ók-l<sup>2</sup>âng kh<sup>2</sup>ãh ch<sup>1</sup>io ê-hi<sup>3</sup>ãu k<sup>7</sup>óng T<sup>7</sup>ãi-gí. (P)
- e) Û l<sup>7</sup>âng k<sup>7</sup>óng g<sup>3</sup>oã-kok ê m<sup>7</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>ĩã\* l<sup>1</sup>ong kh<sup>2</sup>ãh h<sup>3</sup>ó, ù-i<sup>3</sup>ã\* b<sup>3</sup>ó·?

## 8. -gòeh

- a) Góá chít tái 7. -thó<sup>1</sup>. -bái sī chia\*-gòeh bé-ê<sup>3</sup>.
- b) Góá káu-gòeh lái, káu chím-á thak sī kó<sup>1</sup>. -gòeh á<sup>7</sup>.
- c) Kín-á-jít (sī) chap-ít-gòeh chhê kúi? (P)
- d) Hák-seng chhit-gòeh káh peh-gòeh ũ hioh-khùn bó<sup>3</sup>.?
- e) Lí kúi-gòeh bóeh tng-khí Bì-kok?
- f) Chan Bók-sú-niu ít-gòeh chap-kúi bóeh khi? (P)

## 9. hàn-jī/Tiông-kók-jī

- a) Hàn-jī ē chin phái\*-oh bē<sup>3</sup>?
- b) Hàn-jī góá ē-hiáu sia kúi-jī-á nīa-nīa. (OR: chít-póa\*-jī-á nīa-nīa:)
- c) Lí ē-hiáu iông Tiông-kók-jī sia lí ē mīa bē<sup>3</sup>?

## 10. hiah-nih/hiah

- a) Í bē<sup>3</sup> hiah-nih kúi, lí mǎi ká í bé. (P)
- b) Hiah ē kám-á hiah sē-liap, kám ũ ti\*?
- c) Lō<sup>7</sup>.-nih hiah chē<sup>3</sup> lāng sī tēh chhông-sia\*h?
- d) Hít tái 7. -thó<sup>1</sup>. -bái nā<sup>3</sup> ài sá\*-bān kho<sup>7</sup>, góá bó<sup>7</sup> hiah chē<sup>3</sup> chí\*.
- e) Siu-im-ki mǎi thia\* hiah tōa-sia\*, chin chhá.

## 11. iā...iā/mā...mā/ā...ā

- a) Góan hák-hāu ē hák-seng iā ũ chá-po<sup>7</sup>.-ê, iā ũ chá-bó<sup>7</sup>.-ê<sup>3</sup>.
- b) Ông-lái iā ũ ti\*-ê, iā ũ sng-ê; m-sī lóng ti\*-ê<sup>1</sup>.
- c) Góan chia iā ũ tē, iā ũ khi-chúi; lí ài līm sīm-mih?  
(P)

Góá bóeh līm tē.

d) Chít tái mã ữ siu-im-ki, mã ữ lók-im-ki. (P)

e) Í iã bô ải chiah, iã bô ải lim. (P)

12. ít-tēng      bô ít-tēng

a) Lí ếng-àm ữ ít-tēng bôeh khi khòa\* tiān-iá\* bô\*?

b) Lí nã bôeh chhia\* í chiah-png, góa khòa\*, í ít-tēng ẽ lái.

c) Chít lé-pài góa bô ít-tēng bôeh khi Tái-pak.

d) Hít chhut tiān-iá\* nã lái chia chò, góa ít-tēng bôeh khi khòa\*.

e) Lí nã ữ kã í kà, í chím-á ít-tēng ẽ-híau ả. (P)

13. jīn-chin/piã\*-sì/piã\*-sè/pháh-piã\*      These 4 terms are interchangeable.

a) Lí bẽ-híau, tái-khai sĩ lí bô jīn-chin.

b) Kĩa\* chít tiám-cheng ẽ kàu bẽ?

Nã kĩa\* chít tiám-cheng ải chin piã\*-sì kĩa\* chiah ẽ kàu.

c) Í chò tái-chì chin piã\*-sè, số\*-í lạng chin ải kio í chò. (P)

d) Mãi kóng bẽ-híau, nã kháh pháh-piã\* ít-tēng ẽ-híau.

e) Í m-sĩ bẽ-híau, sĩ bô jīn-chin nĩa-nĩa.

14. kã

a) Góa kã lí kóng ẽ tái-chì, lí ữ chò bô\*? (P)

b) Góa m-sĩ bô ải kã lí bé, sĩ in-ũi lí bẽ ẽ mih-kĩa\* chin kùi. (P)

c) Í kio góa kã lí kóng í bfn-ả-chài bôeh híoh-khùn.

d) Bê<sup>3</sup> chhù<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> hăng<sup>3</sup> tãi-chi<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kóng, ả-sī<sup>3</sup>  
bōeh<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> kóng?

e) Lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> ải<sup>2</sup> bê<sup>1</sup> sím-mih<sup>2</sup>, kã<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> kóng, góa<sup>1</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> bé. (P)

15. Kã-gĩ

16. kã-têng/kẽ-têng

a) Lín<sup>1</sup> kã-têng<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lãng?

Góan<sup>1</sup> kã-têng<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lãng; ũ<sup>3</sup> pa-pah, ma-mah káp<sup>2</sup>  
nng<sup>3</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> gĩn-ả.

b) Hít<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> kã-têng<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chi\* (= ũ<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chẽ<sup>3</sup> chi\*).

c) Hít<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> kã-têng<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> gĩn-ả<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> gâu<sup>7</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh.

d) Ũ<sup>3</sup> thài-thài<sup>2</sup> ả-sī<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> sian-si\*<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lãng, ỉn<sup>7</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> ỉn<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>3</sup>  
ũ<sup>3</sup> kã-têng<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lãng. (P)

17. khêh-khì

a) Chhia\*<sup>1</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>1</sup>, m-bián<sup>3</sup> khêh-khì<sup>2</sup>. (P)

b) Hák-seng<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bê-hiáu<sup>3</sup>, Lâu-su<sup>3</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> khêh-khì<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>3</sup>  
í<sup>7</sup> kóng. (P)

c) Lái<sup>7</sup> kón<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>1</sup> là, m-bián<sup>3</sup> khêh-khì<sup>2</sup>. (P)

Góa<sup>1</sup> m-sī<sup>3</sup> khêh-khì<sup>2</sup>, ỉn-ũi<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> pá<sup>3</sup> ả.

d) Góa<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> khêh-khì<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> kóng; góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, tui<sup>2</sup> í<sup>7</sup> bê<sup>3</sup>  
phái\*-sè. (P)

e) Lín<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> gĩn-ả<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> khêh-khì<sup>2</sup>; góa<sup>1</sup> kio<sup>2</sup> í<sup>7</sup> tòa<sup>2</sup> chia  
chiah-png<sup>3</sup>, í<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> ải. (P)

18. khĩ-chúi<sup>2</sup> Usually distinguished from colas and fruit  
drinks; but some do not so limit it.

a) Chhia\*<sup>1</sup> lín<sup>7</sup> khĩ-chúi<sup>2</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> bô\*?

- b) Tái-oân ê khi-chúi bê phải\*-lim.  
 c) Í lîm khi-chúi nĩa-nĩa, lóng bô chiah-png.  
 d) Ín chín ai lîm khi-chúi, nng ê lêng lîm chít kòan  
 tóa-kòan-ê. (P)  
 e) Khi-chúi bê-kúi, chít kòan chap-góa kho nĩa-nĩa.

19. kó'-góeh/góeh-jít

- a) Lí chít tái ó'-thó'-bái khi kúi kó'-góeh á? (P)  
 b) Chít kó'-góeh ũ kúi é lé-pai-jít, lí chai-ia\* bô?  
 c) Góan pa-pah khi góa-kok, kòh chít kó'-góeh chiah é  
 tng-lái.  
 d) Góan kúi-ná kó'-góeh m-bat khi kóa\* tián-ia\* á.

20. kòan

- a) Chít kòan khi-chúi ai kúi kho?  
 Tóa-kòan-ê ai chap-péh kho, sê-kòan-ê chap-jí kho.  
 b) Ká-pi bô á, lí khi bé chít kòan tng-lái, hó bô?  
 c) Lán lái-khi lîm chít kòan khi-chúi, hó bô?  
 d) Chít kòan ká-pi ná góa ká-tí-chít-ê lim, chá-pút-tó  
 ai lîm póa\* ní. (P)  
 e) Lêng-kheh bôeh lái, lí khi bé kúi-kòan-á khi-chúi  
 tng-lái.

21. kok "Kok" means the "country" as a territory not the "nation" (to be studied later). "Kok" does not require a measure.

- a) Chhia\*-mng, lí sí tóh chít kok é lêng?  
 b) Lí ē-hiáu kóng kúi kok é oe?



c) Lín hít kok é lāng ū kóng Eng-gí bô·?

d) Tī góan hák-hāu é hák-seng tōh chít kok é lāng lóng ū. (P)

e) Hít kok é oe góa bô oh, só·-l bē-hiáu kóng.

## 22. Kók-gí

a) Lí ē-hiáu kóng Kók-gí bē?

b) Tī Tái-oân ē-hiáu kóng Kók-gí é lāng chín-chē.

c) Híah é góa-kók-lāng tōh chít é ē-hiáu kóng Kók-gí?

## 23. kúi + Measure + á

a) Chhia\* lí lāi chia, góa ká lí kóng kúi-kú-á oe. (P)

b) Góa ū kúi-pāh-khó·-á nīa-nīa, góa bô híah chē chí\*. (P)

c) Góan soa\*-nīh lóng keng-chio kháh chē, oñg-lāi kúi-  
 木柴 chāng-á nīa-nīa. (P)

d) Í sía chít tiám-cheng chiáh sía kúi-jī-á nīa-nīa. (P)

e) Lí iáu ū iân-pit bô·? Kúi-kí-á hō· góan sía, hó bô·?

## 24. kúi + ā/nā + Measure

a) Lí ū chiáh-hun, ho\*h? Góa chít kúi-ā-pau hō· lí. (P)

b) Í kóng bōeh kúi-ā-liáp thng-á hō· lí, lí ū khi thēh  
 bô·?

c) Góan sián-si\* chín gáu līm-tê; chít-jít ai līm  
 kúi-nā-cháp poe. (P)

d) Lí khi kúi-nā kok chhit-thô; lí khòa\*, tōh chít kok  
 kháh hō chhit-thô? (P)

傳 也  
7

## 25. lāng-kheh

- a) Lāng-kheh<sup>7</sup> á, lái<sup>7</sup> chē; lí<sup>1</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> sim-mih<sup>1</sup>? (The salesman asks.)
- b) Chā<sup>7</sup>-hng lái<sup>7</sup> hiáh é lāng-kheh<sup>7</sup> kin-á-jit<sup>1</sup> bóeh tng-khì.  
(P)
- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>3</sup>-bīn<sup>3</sup> thēh<sup>3</sup> hun chhūt<sup>2</sup>-lái<sup>7</sup> chhia\*<sup>1</sup> lāng-kheh<sup>7</sup>.
- d) Lāng-kheh<sup>7</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> lái, ái<sup>2</sup> chhia\*<sup>1</sup> ín<sup>3</sup> jip-lái<sup>7</sup> khēh-thia\*<sup>2</sup> chē.

## 26. lāng-khēh-keng

- a) Chit<sup>2</sup> kōan<sup>2</sup> tê lí<sup>1</sup> thēh<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> lāng-khēh-keng<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>. hīt<sup>7</sup> é lāng-kheh<sup>7</sup>.
- b) Góan<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> sĩ<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> pāng-keng, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> iōng<sup>3</sup> sá\*<sup>7</sup> keng, iáu<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> lāng-khēh-keng<sup>7</sup>.
- c) Góan<sup>1</sup> chhù<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> chit<sup>3</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> lāng-khēh-keng, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> sim-mih<sup>2</sup> tōa-keng<sup>3</sup>.
- d) Chit<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> lāng-khēh-keng<sup>7</sup> phó<sup>1</sup>-thong<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> khùn.

## 27. ma-mah/lāu-bú/lāu-bó

- a) Góan<sup>1</sup> ma-mah<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> kōk-hāu<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> Lāu-su<sup>3</sup>.
- b) Ū<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> kōng<sup>1</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-pō<sup>7</sup>-gín-á<sup>1</sup> khāh<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> kāh<sup>2</sup> ma-mah<sup>2</sup> chō<sup>2</sup>-hóe, ū<sup>3</sup>-iá\*<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>? (P)
- c) Lín<sup>1</sup> ma-mah<sup>2</sup> bắt<sup>7</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> khòa\*<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?
- d) Góan<sup>1</sup> chhù<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sá\*-khò<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>3</sup> sĩ<sup>1</sup> góan<sup>3</sup> lāu-bú<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> sé<sup>3</sup> é.
- e) Lí<sup>1</sup> iōng<sup>3</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>-thó<sup>1</sup>-bái<sup>3</sup> ká<sup>7</sup> í<sup>7</sup> chài<sup>2</sup> hīt<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chā<sup>7</sup>-bó<sup>1</sup>-lāng<sup>3</sup> sĩ<sup>3</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> sim-mih<sup>2</sup>-lāng<sup>7</sup>? (P)  
í<sup>7</sup> sĩ<sup>3</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> lāu-bú<sup>3</sup>.

28. nò<sup>•</sup>

- a) Kín-<sup>1</sup>á-jít<sup>1</sup> lé-pài<sup>1</sup>, lín<sup>1</sup> kám<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh? (P)  
 Ài<sup>1</sup> nò<sup>•</sup>, lé-pài<sup>1</sup> mā-sī<sup>3</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>1</sup>.
- b) Hít<sup>2</sup> chhút<sup>2</sup> tiān-<sup>3</sup>íá\* lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khòa\* bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)  
 Ū<sup>1</sup> nò<sup>•</sup>, chín<sup>7</sup> hō-khòa\*.
- c) Chít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> thính-bé<sup>2</sup> kám<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ê?  
 Sī<sup>1</sup> nò<sup>•</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>a, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 Góa<sup>1</sup> chhia<sup>1</sup>\* lí<sup>1</sup> khòa<sup>2</sup>\* tiān-<sup>3</sup>íá\*; lí<sup>1</sup> chhia<sup>1</sup>\* góa<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-  
 pŋg, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 Hó<sup>1</sup> nò<sup>•</sup>.

29. òh

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> òh<sup>3</sup> sái-chhia<sup>1</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Góa<sup>1</sup> ká<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kà, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 b) Mài<sup>2</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> bē-hiáu<sup>3</sup>; nā<sup>3</sup> jīn-chín<sup>7</sup> òh<sup>1</sup> ít-tēng<sup>3</sup> ē-hiáu<sup>3</sup>. (P)  
 c) Mài<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> tōa-lō<sup>3</sup> òh<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>7</sup>a thính-bé<sup>2</sup>, ín-<sup>3</sup>ūi<sup>7</sup> lō<sup>3</sup>-nìh<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>1</sup>  
 chín-chē.  
 d) Lí<sup>1</sup> chīm-á<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>3</sup> òh<sup>7</sup> Tái-gí<sup>1</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)  
 Sī<sup>1</sup>, góa<sup>1</sup> chīm-á<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>2</sup>h tēh<sup>1</sup> òh<sup>3</sup> nīa-nīa.

30. ōng-lâi

- a) Ōng-lâi<sup>7</sup> ti\*-<sup>1</sup>ê<sup>1</sup> kám<sup>2</sup> sng-<sup>1</sup>ê<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ē-hiáu<sup>3</sup> khòa\* bē<sup>3</sup>? (P)  
 Góa<sup>1</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu<sup>3</sup>, m-kú<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> ē-hiáu<sup>3</sup>.  
 b) Lín<sup>1</sup> hia<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> sòa\*-tēng<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>7</sup> ōng-lâi<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
 c) Ōng-lâi<sup>7</sup> káp<sup>7</sup> kám-á<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> sīm-mih<sup>2</sup>?  
 d) Chia<sup>2</sup>h é<sup>7</sup> ōng-lâi<sup>7</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> tui<sup>2</sup> sòa\*-tēng<sup>3</sup> chai<sup>3</sup>-chhút-  
 lâi<sup>3</sup> é<sup>3</sup>.

e) Iấu-bōe<sup>3</sup> chiah-png<sup>3</sup> m-hó<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> oŋg-lâi<sup>7</sup>, chiah<sup>3</sup> pá<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>1</sup> chiah.

31. pa-pah/lâu-pē<sup>3</sup>

- a) Góan pa-pah tióng-tàu-sí<sup>3</sup> m-bát<sup>2</sup> tng-lâi<sup>7</sup> chiah.
- b) Í Eng-gí<sup>7</sup> hiah<sup>2</sup> gâu, sí<sup>3</sup> ín-úi<sup>3</sup> ín<sup>3</sup> lâu-pē<sup>2</sup> tén<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> kà.
- c) Chái-khí-sí<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> lâu-pē<sup>3</sup> chái<sup>2</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hák-hâu<sup>3</sup>.
- d) Góan pa-pah chhut-khì, ē-po<sup>3</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-tám<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> tng-lâi<sup>3</sup>.

32. pãh-bãn<sup>2</sup> chheng-bãn<sup>7</sup> ek

- a) Lín<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> chhù<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> pãh-bãn<sup>2</sup>? (P)  
Pãh-gōa<sup>3</sup> bãn.
- b) Tái-oân<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> chheng-bãn<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lãng? (P)  
Ū<sup>3</sup> chhã<sup>7</sup>-pút-tó<sup>7</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> chheng-bãn<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lãng.
- c) Tióng-kok<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> ek<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lãng? (P)  
Ū<sup>3</sup> chhã<sup>7</sup>-pút-tó<sup>7</sup> cháp<sup>3</sup> ek<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lãng.

17 ~~3~~  
33. pē-bó/pē-bú<sup>3</sup>

- a) Peh Bók-su<sup>3</sup>, lín<sup>1</sup> pē-bó<sup>3</sup> bát<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> Tái-oân<sup>7</sup> chhít-thô<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?
- b) Ín<sup>3</sup> pē-bó<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> hák-hâu<sup>2</sup> tén<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>2</sup>-chheh.
- c) Pē-bó<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> pháí\*, gín-á<sup>3</sup> iã<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>1</sup> oh. (P)
- d) Pē-bó<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> tĩa\*-tĩa\*<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chhù-nih<sup>3</sup>, gín-á<sup>3</sup> iã<sup>3</sup> khãh<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>7</sup>  
ài<sup>2</sup> tóa<sup>2</sup> chhù. (P)

34. phó<sup>1</sup>-thong

- a) Chít<sup>2</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> kù<sup>2</sup> tōh<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> kù<sup>2</sup> khãh<sup>2</sup> phó<sup>1</sup>-thong?
- b) Góa<sup>1</sup> phó<sup>1</sup>-thong chái-khí-sí<sup>1</sup> chhít-tám<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>3</sup>-lâi.
- c) Góa<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hia, phó<sup>1</sup>-thong lóng<sup>1</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>-thó<sup>1</sup>-bái<sup>2</sup> khi.

d) Chiah-nih phó<sup>1</sup>-thong ê tái-chí<sup>7</sup> í nã bē<sup>3</sup>-híau, ũ<sup>3</sup>-iá<sup>1</sup>\*  
chín hám-bān. (P)

e) Tí<sup>3</sup> chít pún ê Tái-oân-ōe lóng chín phó<sup>1</sup>-thong, s̄<sup>1</sup>-l<sup>1</sup>  
lán lóng ái ē<sup>3</sup>-híau.

35. <sup>杯</sup>poe/pōe-á

a) Tí<sup>3</sup> tōh-téng hít tē<sup>2</sup> pōe-á sī lí<sup>1</sup> chiah-é<sup>7</sup>, sī bō<sup>3</sup>? (P)

b) Lí<sup>1</sup> chím-á tēh lím hít<sup>2</sup> poe sī ká<sup>7</sup>-pi á<sup>1</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> tē?

c) Ká<sup>7</sup>-pi góa<sup>1</sup> phó<sup>1</sup>-thong chái<sup>1</sup>-khí<sup>1</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> lím<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> poe káh  
ē-pó<sup>7</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> lím<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> poe nĩa-nĩa.

d) Híah ê pōe-á lóng sím-mih-lâng tēh sé?

e) Lí<sup>1</sup> nã bōeh<sup>3</sup> lím<sup>7</sup> khí<sup>2</sup>-chúi, lí<sup>1</sup> khí<sup>2</sup> thēh<sup>3</sup> pōe-á lái, góa<sup>1</sup>  
chiah thín<sup>7</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> lim.

36. <sup>散</sup>sng

a) Lí<sup>1</sup> chá-hng<sup>7</sup> khí<sup>2</sup> pēh-soa\*, chím-á lí<sup>1</sup> é<sup>7</sup> kha ē<sup>3</sup> sng bē<sup>3</sup>?

b) Góa<sup>1</sup> sía-jī<sup>3</sup> nã sía nng-sá\*<sup>7</sup> tiám-cheng, chhiú lóng ē<sup>3</sup>  
sng.

c) Sng ê mih-kia\*<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> káh<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> chiah.

d) Híah ê kám-á<sup>7</sup> híah sē<sup>2</sup> liáp, góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, chín<sup>7</sup> sng.

e) Lí<sup>1</sup> tēh bē<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> oŋg-lái<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> sng bē<sup>3</sup>?

Bē, chín<sup>7</sup> ti\*; nã<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> sng<sup>3</sup> m<sup>3</sup>-bián<sup>1</sup> chí\*.

37. tái-khài

a) Chhia\* lí<sup>1</sup> ká<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>3</sup> tái-khài<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> khí.

b) Góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, hít<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lóng tái-khài<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> sá\*-sī<sup>2</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> hòe<sup>3</sup> á.

c) Tui chia<sup>2</sup> chē<sup>3</sup>-chia<sup>2</sup> khí<sup>2</sup> ín<sup>7</sup> hia, tái-khài<sup>3</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> póa\*<sup>2</sup> tiám-  
cheng.

d) Chít kù lí nã m̄ng í, í tãi-khài bẽ-hiáu kã lí ìn.

e) Chím-á chít tãi thĩh-bé tãi-khài ãi n̄ng-chhẽng-gõa

kho°.

38. tãi-seng/seng

a) Oh Tãi-gí ãi sêng oh hoat-im chiah oh chõan-im. (P)

b) Lí tãi-seng khi, gõa chiah pá chiah khi.

c) Gõa khãh tãi-seng lái thak, í chiah lái thak.

d) Lí sĩ bõeh sêng khi, á-sĩ bõeh hõ° gõa chàì? (P)

e) Lãn sêng chiah-p̄ng chiah kóng hít hãng tãi-chì, hó bõ°?

39. téng

a) Téng-jit lí kãh í khi bé lók-ìm-ki, bé-ũ bõ°?

b) Kín-á-jit lái chia chít é lãng téng lé-pài iã ù lái.

c) Che sĩ gõa téng kó°-gõeh khi Tãi-pak bé é.

d) Ìn-ũi téng-pái lí chhia\* gõa, só°-í chít-pái gõa chhia\* lí.

e) Téng tiãm-cheng gõa thak Tãi-gí, ãu tiãm-cheng bõeh oh hãn-jī. (P)

40. thèh

a) Hiah é chhi\* lí ù thèh hõ° í bõ°?

b) Gõa-bĩn hiah é mih-kĩa\* chhia\* lí thèh jip-lái chia.

c) Lâu-kha hiah é mih-kĩa\*, lí nã bõeh khít-lái, chhia\* lí kã gõa thèh-khít-lái, hó bõ°?

d) Tĩ tõi-á-téng é thĩg-á gõa lóng bõ thèh.

e) Lín ma-mah thèh sìm-mih lái hõ° lí chiah?

## 41. thân 世

- a) Phái\*-sè, góa ká-tī thân. (P)
- b) Lãng-kheh lái, ái thân khi-chúi chhia\* lãng-kheh.
- c) Tī chia ũ khi-chúi, ká-pi káh tê; lín ái lím sim-mih,  
ká-tī thân, hó bô\*?
- d) Nã sè tè ê pœ-á, chít kòan thân chhá-pút-tô gô\*  
pœ. (P)

## 42. ti\* 世

- a) Ti\* ê mih-kia\* góa phó\*-thong kháh bô ái chiah.
- b) Í chín gâu bé kám-á; í bé chiah ê kám-á chín ti\*.
- c) Ũ ti\* bô\*? Nã ũ ti\* góa chiah bœh bé.
- d) Gín-á chín ái chiah thng-á, ín-ũi thng-á lóng sĩ  
ti\*-ê.

## 43. Tiông-kok

- a) Ũ nng ê Tiông-kók-Sin-hū lái chia òh Tái-gí.
- b) Tiông-kok m-chai ũ kúi êk lêng?

## 44. tōh/táh + chít + Measure

- a) Hít nng tái thín-bé, tōh chít tái sĩ lí ê?
- b) Hít sá\* ê góa-kók-lêng, tōh chít ê ē-hiáu kóng  
Sóa\*-tē-ōe?
- c) Kín-á-jít ê tiān-iá\*, tōh chít chhut kháh hō-khòa\*?
- d) Lí kóng lí cháng-àm khi bé nng nía, sĩ tōh chít nía  
káp tōh chít nía? (P)
- e) Chhia\*-mng lín, tōh chít ũ sĩ khó\* Siān-sí\*?

45. <sup>3</sup>ū-ê

- a) Híah <sup>2</sup>é <sup>7</sup>mih-kīa\* <sup>3</sup>ū-ê <sup>7</sup>bōeh hō• lí, <sup>3</sup>ū-ê <sup>7</sup>bōeh hō• ín.
- b) <sup>3</sup>Ū-ê <sup>7</sup>hák-seng <sup>3</sup>chín <sup>7</sup>jīn-chín <sup>3</sup>thák-chheh, <sup>3</sup>ū-ê <sup>7</sup>chín <sup>2</sup>ài chhít-thô.
- c) Tiān-íá\* <sup>3</sup>m-sī <sup>3</sup>lóng <sup>1</sup>hó-khòa\* <sup>3</sup>ê, <sup>3</sup>ū-ê <sup>7</sup>bē <sup>3</sup>phái\*-khòa\*, <sup>3</sup>ū-ê <sup>7</sup>bō <sup>1</sup>hó-khòa\*.
- d) <sup>3</sup>M-sī <sup>3</sup>lóng <sup>1</sup>bōeh khi, <sup>3</sup>ū-ê <sup>7</sup>bōeh khi, <sup>3</sup>ū-ê <sup>7</sup>bō <sup>1</sup>bōeh khi.
- e) Chít <sup>2</sup>khò <sup>1</sup>góa <sup>3</sup>ū-ê <sup>7</sup>ē-híau, <sup>3</sup>ū-ê <sup>7</sup>iáu <sup>3</sup>bē-híau.

-----

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF PATTERN SENTENCES MARKED "P"

1. a) There are small teacups and also large ones.  
 b) If you're not going to drink any more, please wash the cup, OK? (Spoken to children.)  
 c) For good tea we always use very small cups. (Note: The tea tastes better if a very small teapot is used to make the tea - hence to make the tea go around for several guests very small cups are used.)
2. a) I'm busy today; how about some time later on? (But not in the distant future.)  
 d) If you are a zealous student, some day, you'll certainly be a smart guy. (Here "āu-jit" is not used because "āu-jit" indicates a much shorter time.)
3. a) He said he would come at the beginning of the month but didn't say which day (of the 1st 10 days) he would come.  
 c) Early in the month I went to Kaohsiung and didn't come home until the 15th.
4. a) How come you're so good in Taiwanese?  
 I'm hardly good.  
 c) He's only 7! How come he's so big? (OR: He's really big!) (Note: "Ná chiah gâu tōa" is not considered a question in Taiwanese but more of an exclamation.)  
 d) Write smaller characters and they'll look better; don't write so big. (Advice to children learning to write.)  
 e) We have this much fruit (OR: so much fruit); what (which kind) would you like?



5. d) When you go out with your wife, do you walk side by side with her? (Rural men are less likely to do so; the wife follows a few steps behind.)
6. b) Sorry, please speak Taiwanese, not English; is that all right? (Spoken by student to teacher or teacher to student.)
- d) Are there any foreigners here who would like to teach people English? (Note the courteous "lán chia = your place here".)
7. d) Few of the foreigners on Taiwan know how to speak Taiwanese.
8. c) Today is November what? (Which of the 1st 10 days of the month?)
- f) On which of the second 10 days of January (11th to 19th) is Mrs. Chan, the minister's wife, going?
10. a) He wants so much for it, don't buy it from him.
11. c) We have water/tea and also soft drinks; what would you like?
- I (usually) take water/tea.
- d) This has both a radio and a recorder (in the same machine or vehicle).
- e) He neither wants to eat nor to drink.
12. e) If you had taught him he would certainly be good at it now.
13. c) When he does something he works hard at it, so people like to hire him (call him to do things for them).
14. a) Did you do what I told you?
- b) It's not that I don't want to buy from you (you have good stuff); it's just that what you sell is too expensive.
- e) If you want to buy something, tell me and I'll buy it for you.
16. d) People who have a wife or a husband say that they have a family. (A married couple constitutes a family even before having children.)
17. a) Don't hesitate; go ahead and eat.
- b) If a student doesn't know (the lessons), the teacher talks to him very frankly (about it). (The teacher does not through overpoliteness hide the truth about the student's failure to study, etc.)
- c) Eat some more - don't be bashful.  
I'm not bashful - I'm full.
- d) I told him very courteously; I don't think it was embarrassing for him.

17. e) This child of yours knows etiquette; I asked him to stay for a meal but he declined. (Note: etiquette here required refusal of an invitation that was given only on account of etiquette: he happened to be around so he got invited to the meal; it was not a formal invitation such as for a wedding banquet.)
18. d) They love soda; the two of them drank a large bottle. (Note: "tōa/sè" require the measure; if a number precedes "tōa/sè" the measure must be repeated. E.g., "chít liáp sè liáp é.")
19. a) For how many months have you ridden this motorcycle?
20. d) If I drink a jar of coffee by myself it takes me about half a year (to finish it). (Note "chhā-pūt-to" before "ai".)
21. d) There are students in our school from every country.
23. a) Please come here; I'd like to have a word with you.  
 b) I only have a few hundred dollars; I don't have that much money.  
 c) In our area of the mountains it's mostly bananas (that we grow); there are very few pineapples.  
 d) He wrote for an hour and only wrote a few characters. (Chiah = only.)
24. a) You smoke, don't you? I'll give you these few packs.  
 c) My husband loves tea; he drinks several tens of cups a day.  
 d) You've been to a number of countries for recreation; which country do you think is the most fun?
25. b) Those guests who came yesterday are going home today.
27. b) Some say that boys prefer to be with their mother, is this true? (And girls prefer the father.)  
 e) That woman you rode on the motorcycle is your mother, is it? OR: What relation of yours is that woman you rode on the motorcycle?  
 That's my mother.  
 (Note: We usually do not ask: "... sī lín lāu-bú/lāu-pē/gín-á, sī bô'?" It is more polite to ask as in this sentence: "...your who?")
28. a) Today is Sunday; do you mean to say you have to study today?  
 You better believe it; we have to study on Sunday too.  
 b) Did you go see that movie?  
 I sure did; it's very good.
29. b) Don't say you don't know (the school subjects); if you study diligently you'll certainly know them.

29. d) Are you studying Taiwanese now?  
Yes, it's only now that I'm studying it.
30. a) Can you tell by looking whether a pineapple is sweet or tart?  
I can't but there are those who can.
32. a) How many millions did you buy this house for?  
Over one million.  
b) How many tens of millions of people does Taiwan have?  
Almost 20 million.  
c) How many people are there in China?  
There are about a billion.
33. c) If the parents do wrong, the kids will imitate them (lit., will also learn it).  
d) If the parents are never home, the kids won't want to stay home either. (The kids will run off to the neighbors through lack of parental companionship, fear, etc.)
34. d) If he doesn't understand something as common as this, then it's true that he's very slow.
35. a) Was it you who drank that glass that was on the table? (Note that "chiah" frequently = "lim".)
38. a) In learning Taiwanese we have to first learn the pronunciation of the sounds, then learn to change tones.  
d) Are you going first (i.e., now) or are you going to (wait and) get a ride with me?
39. e) The last period I had Taiwanese; next period I'll study characters.
41. a) I'll pour it myself; it's unsuitable for you to pour it for me. (Spoken by the guest to the host who is pouring or about to pour a drink for the guest. In fact the host will usually do the pouring, so this is merely a nice way of saying: Sorry for the trouble I'm causing you.)  
d) If you have small glasses, one bottle will fill (lit., pour) about 5 of them.
44. d) You said that last night you went and bought two, which ones (of those we see) are they?
-

## KÙ

## SENTENCES

1. Hít nng-sá\* tē au-á ũ lāng tēh iōng bó\*?
2. Chít au tē sī sīm-mih-lāng thīn-é?
3. Aū-jit nā ũ khi chiah kā lí bé-tng-lāi.
4. Gōa chít lé-pài bó bōeh khi, āu lé-pài chiah bōeh khi.
5. Gōa kīn-á-jit bó chí\*; gōa āu kó'-gōeh chhe-nih chiah ũ.
6. Chhē-lak sī pài-gō\*, chhē-chap sī pài-kúi?
7. Chīm-á bó oŋg-lāi; oŋg-lāi ai kàu peh-gōeh chiah ũ.
8. Chhit-gōeh iáu ũ kúi-nā ē hak-seng bōeh thak-chheh.
9. Lak-gōeh ũ sá\*-chap jit nīa-nīa, bó sá\*-chap-it jit.
10. Lí kīn-á-jit bé chiah-nih chē, sī bōeh chhia\* lāng-kheh, sī bó\*?
11. Lí bē chiah kúi, lāng ít-tēng bē kā lí bé.
12. Lín nng ē ũ tōa chō-hóe bó\*?
13. Lí nā kāh chá-bó'-gin-á chē chō-hóe, lí ē phai\*-sè bē?
14. In-ūi í bát tōa tī Bī-kok, só'-í Eng-gí chin gāu kóng.
15. Lí nā iōng Eng-gí sía, í ít-tēng ē-hiau khòa\*.
16. Khi gōa-kok chhit-thō ai iōng chin-chē chí\* bó\*?
17. Chít keng hak-nāu ē hak-seng lōng sī gōa-kók-lāng.
18. Lí khi gōa-kok, ũ bé chin-chē gōa-kok ē mih-kīa\* tng-lāi bó\*?
19. Lí sī gōa-kók-lāng, lí kám ē-hiau kóng Kheh?
20. Tī ó'-pang hiah ē hàn-jī sī lí sía-é, sī bó\*?
21. Tī chia thak-chheh ē hak-seng iā ũ Sín-hū, iā ũ Bók-su, iā ũ Sīu-lí. (S)

22. Chít hăng tãi-chì m̄-sī lí chai-iá\* nĩa-nĩa, ín ít-têng  
iã chai. (S)
23. Bòeh khi à-m̄, góa chím-á iáu bó ít-têng. (S)
24. Am-sī lí lóng chap-ít-tiám-gōa chiah khùn, lí ít-têng  
chín bó-êng, ho\*h?
25. Chím-á chít tãi sìn-chhia ít-têng ái chín-chē chí\*.
26. Hít ê hək-seng chín jìn-chin, só·-l̄ thək-chheh chín gâu.
27. Lâu-su kio ín sĩa-jī, ín lóng chín pĩa\*-sī sĩa.
28. Che lí tī tōh-ūi bé-ê? Lí kã góa bé, hó bó·?
29. Am-sī lí nã bòeh chhut-khì, lí ũ kã pē-bó mng bó·?
30. Góa bòeh oh Eng-gí, lí kã góa kà, hó bó·?
31. Góa bòeh khi bé chít-kóa kã-têng ái iōng ê mih-kĩa\*.
32. In kã-têng ê lāi-bīn ũ nng ê tēh chō Lâu-su.
33. Lán nã tui lāng khēh-khì, lāng iã ē tui lán khēh-khì.
34. M-bián khēh-khì, chhia\* lín chiah.
35. Lí ǎn-chóa\* bó chhia\* lí ê pēng-iú jíp-khì khēh-thia\* chē?
36. Góan chhù ê khēh-thia\* hiah ê i-á lóng sī sìn bé-ê.
37. Lán chhù bó khi-chúi ǎ, lí khi bé nng-sa\* kōan tng-lāi.
38. Chít pōe khi-chúi hō· lí lim.
39. Lí tī chia tōa, tī chia chiah, chít kō·-gōeh ái lōa-chē  
chí\*? (S)
40. Lí hiōh-khùn chít kō·-gōeh, ũ khi tōh-ūi chhít-thō bó·?
41. Chít kōan khi-chúi góan bòeh lim, lí kã góan khui, hó bó·?
42. Í chín gáu lim, kã-tī-chít-ê lim chít kōan khi-chúi.
43. In hít kok ê ōe lí ē-hiáu kóng bé?

44. Ỉ chín gâu, ỉ ẽ-hiáu kóng kúi-nã kok ẽ oe.
45. Lí kóng lí bõeh khi gõa-kok, sĩ bõeh khi tòn chít kok?
46. Lí hiáh gâu kóng Sõa\*-tẽ-oe, Sõa\*-tẽ-oe ừ chín hó-oh bõ<sup>3</sup>?
47. Khẽh-oe gõa bẽ-hiáu thia\*, chhia\* lí kóng Hõ-ló, hó bõ<sup>3</sup>?
48. Gõa bõ lim chín-chẽ, gõa lim kúi-põe-á nĩa-nĩa.
49. Phái\*-sè, Tái-gí gõa ẽ-hiáu kóng kúi-kũ-á nĩa-nĩa.
50. Ỉ kóng ỉ chín ải khòa\*, số<sup>1</sup>-ỉ gõa hõ<sup>3</sup>. Ỉ kúi-nã pún.
51. Chhòa Siãn-sĩ\*, ừ kúi-nã ẽ lằng lái bõeh káp lí kóng-oe.
52. Kín-ả-jít lán ừ bõeh chhia\* lằng-khẽh bõ<sup>3</sup>?
53. Chàng-àm ừ chít ẽ Kả-gĩ ẽ lằng-khẽh tũa tỉ góan hia.
54. Chít kỏan tẽ chhia\* lí thẽh khi lằng-khẽh-keng hõ<sup>3</sup>. lằng-khẽh lim.
55. Chít keng lằng-khẽh-keng lái-bĩn bõ piãn-sỏ<sup>3</sup>.
56. Chít tãi sẽ-tãi ỏ<sup>7</sup>-thỏ<sup>1</sup>-bái sĩ góan ma-mah tẽh khi-ẽ<sup>7</sup>.
57. Gõa chhẽng chít nĩa sa\* sĩ góan lâu-bú chỏ<sup>3</sup>-ẽ, m-sĩ bẽ-ẽ<sup>3</sup>.
58. Gõa bõeh kả lí kóng sũm-mĩh, lí chai bõ<sup>3</sup>?
- Chai nõ<sup>3</sup>, lí bõeh chhia\* gõa.
59. Lí ải chiah ỏng-lái bõ<sup>3</sup>? Lái góan sỏa\*-tẻng thẽh.
60. Lí bẽ chít liáp ỏng-lái chín hó-chiah, chín ti\*.
61. Lín pa-pah ừ chiah-hũn bõ<sup>3</sup>? Nã ừ, chít kúi-pầu-á hõ<sup>3</sup>. Ỉ chiah. *đ*
62. Lí lái tũa tỉ chia thỏk-chhẽh, lín lâu-pẽ bắ lái khòa\* lí bõ<sup>3</sup>?
63. Gĩn-á nã chỏ phái\* tãi-chỉ, pẽ-bú ẽ chín phái\*-sẻ. (S)
64. Góan pẽ-bú tũi góan lỏng chín hó.

65. Phái\*-sè, góa bô kã lí bé lí ê mih-kĩa\* tng-lái.
66. Góa ê pit góa kio lí khi thèh; lí nã bô khi thèh? (S)  
 In-úi lí bô tĩ chhù-nih, lí ê mih-kĩa\* góa phái\*-sè kã  
 lí thèh lái iōng.
67. Lí phó\*-thong khĩa ó\*-thó\*-bái lái, á-sĩ chē-chhia lái?
68. Chit kù kãh hit kù, tōh chit kù kãh phó\*-thong? (S)
69. Hit lái-bĩn phó\*-thong bô ái hō\* lãng jip-khi.
70. Chit pōe tê sĩ sīm-mih-lãng thĩn-ê; nã bô ái lim?
71. Kã-pi bô sīm-mih hó, mãi lĩm hiãh chē poe.
72. Ĩ bē hiãh ê kãm-á chín sng, số\*-ĩ bô lãng ái kã ĩ bé. (S)
73. Góa ê kha chín sng, kĩn-á-jit bōeh hiōh-khùn, bô ái kōh  
 peh. (S)
74. Góa khòa\*, ĩ tãi-khài tng-khi á.
75. Ĩ nã chē nng-tiám ê chhia, chĩm-á tãi-khài kàu-úi á.
76. In-úi lí sai-chhia, số\*-ĩ lí kãh tãi-seng kàu.
77. Lí seng thĩn, góa chĩa thĩn.
78. Chit nĩa sa\* lí tãi-seng kã góa chò, hó bô\*? (S)
79. Lí tēng-jit bô lái thak-chheh, sĩ ũ tãi-chi, sĩ bô\*?
80. Lí nã bōeh lái, chhia\* lí thèh lí ê chheh lái, hó bô\*?
81. Che góa tēh iōng, lí mãi kã góa thèh chhút-khi chhit-thô.
82. Hit poe chhia\* lí lim-lōh-khi, góa chĩa kōh kã lí thĩn.
83. Lãng-kheh ũ-ê bōeh tōa chia, ũ-ê bōeh tng-khi.
84. Ti\* ê mih-kĩa\* lí ái chĩa bô\*?
85. Kōe-chí nã ũ ti\* lōng chín hō-chĩa.
86. Tĩ gōa-kok ũ chín-chē Tiōng-kok-lãng, ho\*h?

87. Lí kóng tōh chít jī lí bē-híau?
88. Lí boēh khia tōh chít tái? Sī sin-é á-sī kū-é?
89. Góa m̄-sī lóng ē-híau, ū-é ē-híau, ū-é iáu bē-híau.

-----

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED "S"

21. Among the students studying here there are priests, ministers and sisters. (Note the triple "iā".)
22. You're not the only one who knows this; they certainly know too.
23. At this time I'm still not certain whether I'm going or not.
39. How much does it cost to stay and eat here for a month? (Note: people ask very bluntly many things that elsewhere might be considered personal.)
63. When their offspring do naughty things, parents are very embarrassed.
66. I told you to go get my pen; why didn't you take it? Because you weren't home, I didn't think it right to take something on you.
68. Which of these 2 sentences is more common?
72. Those tangerines he's selling are sour so nobody wants to buy from him.
73. My legs ache; I'll rest today; I don't want to continue climbing (the mountain).
78. First do this dress for me, OK? ("Tāi-seng" here means "before" you make anything for anybody else.)

-----

TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. What month is this?  
It's December now.
2. What day (of the 1st 10 days of the month) is this?  
Today is the tenth.
3. What day (of the 2nd 10 days of the month) is this?  
It's probably the 13th or the 14th.



4. Is this your father? (Polite form)  
This is my father.
5. Are these pineapples sweet?  
They sure are; they're very sweet; they're not tart at all.
6. When do we study to? (What date?)  
We study till the 5th (inclusive), then we're off.
7. I don't know; go ask Mr. Chan; he certainly knows.
8. Seeing a movie these days is not a matter of a few dollars;  
it's not a little bit of money you need (you need a lot).
9. Please tell him about that matter; that will make it less  
awkward.
10. That kid - you don't want to teach him, do you?  
No, because he hates studying.
11. Today is October the what? (Which of the 31 days is it?)
12. You're terrific in Taiwanese.  
Hardly; I've only studied a few months.
13. All the students at your place here (polite form) are  
ministers and their wives, aren't they?  
They are not all ministers and their wives. There are  
also priests, Sisters and Brothers.
14. How many people are there in Taiwan?  
Taiwan has over 18,000,000 people.
15. May I ask you which road do we take to the school?  
You have to go straight ahead on this one.

-----

The Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences:

1. Chít kó'-góeh (sī) kúi-góeh?  
Chím-á (sī) chap-jī-góeh.
2. Kín-á-jit (sī) chhé kúi?  
Kín-á-jit (sī) chhé chap.
3. Kín-á-jit (sī) chap kúi?  
Tāi-khài (sī) chap-sa\* á-sī chap-si.

4. Chít ũi sī lín sīm-mih-lâng? (Lê-Kù No, 27 e Note.)  
 Sī góan lâu-pē.
5. Chiah é oŋg-lâi ũ ti\* bô\*?  
 Ũ nò\*, chin ti\*; lóng bē sng.
6. Lán ài thak kàu tàng-sī?  
 Ài thak kàu chhē gō\* chiah hioh.
7. Góa m̄-chai-ia\*; lí khi m̄ng Chan Sian-si\*; í ít-tēng chai-ia\*.
8. Chīm-á khòa\* tiān-ia\* m̄-sī kúi-khō\*-á é tãi-chi, ài bē-chio chi\*.
9. Hít hāng tãi-chi chhia\* lí kã í kóng; khah bē phái\*-sè.
10. Hít é gin-á lí bô ài kã í kà, sī bô\*?  
 Sī; ín-ūi í chin bô ài thak.
11. Kín-á-jit sī chap-gōeh tàng-sī?
12. Lí chin gáu kóng Tái-gí.  
 Nã-ū. Góa thak kúi-kó\*-gōeh-á nĩa-nĩa. (Here we may also say: "kúi-ā kó\*-gōeh nĩa-nĩa". There is not a great difference, since the term is being distinguished from "several years".)
13. Lán chia é hok-seng lóng sī Bók-su kah Bók-sū-niū, sī bô\*?  
 M̄-sī lóng sī Bók-su kah Bók-sū-niū. Mã ũ Sín-hū, mã ũ Siu-lí, mã ũ Siu-sū.
14. Tái-oân ũ kúi é lāng?  
 Tái-oân ũ chit-chheng pēh-pāh-gōa bān é lāng.
15. Chioh-m̄ng lí, bōeh khi hok-hāu ài kia\* tōh chit tiâu lō\*?  
 Ài tui chit tiâu ít-tit khi.

Tê Chap-jí Khò

Lesson 12

TUI-ŌE

DIALOGUE

Khí Jit-goat-thâm chhit-thô 去月月灣月

S = Sĩa Siân-si\*

L = Lōa Siân-si\*

S1: Lōa Siân-si\*, chá-hng hiōh-khùn, lí ũ khi tōh-ūi chhit-thô bô?

L1: Ū là, ũ khi Jit-goat-thâm chhit-thô, kōh tōa hia hō.  
pēng-iú chhia\*.

S2: Lí káp chia khi? Á-si lí ká-tī-chit-ê khi?

L2: Góa káp chá-bô-lâng káp gín-á lóng mā ũ khi.

S3: Jit-goat-thâm góa iáu m-bat khi; thia\* lóng kóng tī hia chin hó chhit-thô, tiōh bô?

L3: Bô m-tiōh, tī hia chin hó chhit-thô.

S4: Tui Tái-tiong chē-chhia khi, tiōh-ài chē kúi tiám-cheng?

L4: Tui chia khi Jit-goat-thâm bô hng, chin kīn; chē-chhia chhā-pūt-tō nng tiám-gōa-cheng tō ē kàu.

S5: Bōeh khi Jit-goat-thâm chit tiâu lō. kám m-si lóng sōa\*-lō? Chhia ē chin phái\*-sái bē?

L5: Bē là, chit tiâu lō. chin tōa tiâu kōh chin súi, chin hó-sái. Góa chē-chhia é-si lóng kán-ná tēh khōa\* chhia-gōa.

S6: Lí hit jit si chē kúi tiám é chia khi? Kàu-ūi ũ iáu chin chá bô?

L6: Góan chin òa\* chia khi, ín-ūi góan peh-khit-lái é-si í-keng chhit-tiám-gōa, kōh sé-bīn, chhēng-sa\*, chhēng-é, chia-png, chia khi chē-chhia.

- S7: An<sup>1</sup>-ni<sup>1</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> kâu<sup>2</sup>-ūi<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup>-sî<sup>1</sup>, lín<sup>1</sup> pêng<sup>7</sup>-iú<sup>7</sup> ín<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> chún<sup>1</sup>-pī<sup>3</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> bōe<sup>3</sup>?
- L7: Hó<sup>3</sup> a. Góan<sup>1</sup> kâu<sup>2</sup>-ūi<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup>-sî<sup>1</sup>, ín<sup>7</sup> chiū<sup>3</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> í<sup>1</sup>-keng<sup>7</sup> chún<sup>1</sup>-pī<sup>3</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> a,  
chín<sup>7</sup> phái<sup>1</sup>\*-sè<sup>1</sup>.
- S8: Ū<sup>3</sup> chú<sup>1</sup> káh<sup>2</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> chhé<sup>7</sup>\*-chhau<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
L8: Ū<sup>3</sup> ò<sup>1</sup>, chiok<sup>2</sup> chhé<sup>7</sup>\*-chhau<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>1</sup>; ín<sup>7</sup> thài<sup>2</sup>-thài<sup>1</sup> í<sup>2</sup>-tít<sup>3</sup> ká<sup>3</sup> góan<sup>1</sup>  
ngén<sup>2</sup>-chhài<sup>1</sup>, góan<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>h chiok<sup>3</sup> chē. Tiòh<sup>1</sup>-là, iáu<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>  
khóan<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> thng<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> iáu<sup>1</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-bát<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>h, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>3</sup>h. Ín<sup>7</sup>  
kóng<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> khóan<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> mih<sup>3</sup>-kīa<sup>\*</sup> kán<sup>7</sup>-nā<sup>7</sup> tí<sup>3</sup> Jit<sup>3</sup>-gòat<sup>3</sup>-thám<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>h ū.
- S9: Lín<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hia<sup>3</sup> hó<sup>3</sup>. Ín<sup>7</sup> chhía<sup>\*</sup>, kám<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> lím<sup>7</sup>-chú<sup>7</sup>?  
L9: Nā<sup>1</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> hóat<sup>2</sup>-tō<sup>1</sup>. Bō<sup>7</sup> lím. Góa<sup>1</sup> ká<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> góan<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>7</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>7</sup>  
chhít<sup>7</sup>-thô<sup>7</sup>-ê<sup>7</sup>; m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> ín<sup>7</sup> kán<sup>7</sup>-nā<sup>7</sup> kio<sup>2</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> tiòh<sup>3</sup>-ái<sup>2</sup> lím. An<sup>1</sup>-ni,  
chia<sup>3</sup>h pá<sup>1</sup> í<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>h bōeh<sup>3</sup> chhōa<sup>3</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> chhít<sup>7</sup>-thô<sup>7</sup>.
- S10: Nā<sup>3</sup> an<sup>1</sup>-ni, lí<sup>1</sup> kám<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chiū<sup>1</sup>-chùi<sup>7</sup>? Lín<sup>1</sup> tōa<sup>2</sup> hia<sup>1</sup> chhít<sup>7</sup>-thô<sup>7</sup> káu<sup>2</sup>  
kúi<sup>1</sup> tiám<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>2</sup>h tng<sup>2</sup>-lái<sup>7</sup>?
- L10: Góan<sup>1</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> hít<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-po<sup>1</sup>. sī<sup>2</sup>-tiám<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>h tng<sup>2</sup>-lái<sup>7</sup>; góa<sup>1</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup>  
khít<sup>2</sup>-khi<sup>2</sup> chhía<sup>7</sup>-lāi<sup>3</sup> chiū<sup>3</sup> khùn<sup>1</sup>-khi<sup>1</sup>. Góan<sup>1</sup> thài<sup>2</sup>-thài<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup>  
góa<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khùn<sup>2</sup>: káu<sup>2</sup> Tái<sup>7</sup>-tióng<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>3</sup> loh<sup>3</sup>-chia<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup>-sî<sup>1</sup>, í<sup>7</sup>  
chia<sup>2</sup>h ká<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> kio<sup>2</sup>-khít<sup>3</sup>-lái<sup>3</sup>. Aū<sup>3</sup>-pái<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>7</sup>-kan<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>7</sup>-  
chūn<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>2</sup>h khi<sup>2</sup> tōa<sup>2</sup> hia<sup>1</sup> chhít<sup>7</sup>-thô<sup>7</sup>.

SĪN-GĪVOCABULARY

1. báí 醜, 難 ugly/bad/difficult. (Can be used of people/  
weather/situations; oppos. of "súi", No. 40, or of  
"hó". See Lē-Kū.)

bē<sup>3</sup>-bái not bad. (Very often means that something is  
very good.)

í<sup>7</sup> sē<sup>2</sup>-hàn<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup>-sî<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> báí, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> tōa<sup>3</sup>-hàn<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> súi. As a  
little girl she looked awful but as a big girl she  
looks beautiful.

2. Biâu-lék 苗栗 Miaoli (a city/county in north central Taiwan).

3. bīn 臉, 面 face/surface. (Measure: ê)

Lí ũ khi sé-bīn bô<sup>3</sup>? Did you go wash your face?

Hít ê tōh-bīn chin súi. That tabletop is beautiful.  
桌 面

4. chá 早 early. (This is the "chá" of "Gâu-chá"; opposite of "ōa\*", No. 34.)

chin chá very early.

chá-chá rather early.

khah chá (下早) rather early/earlier; previously.

NB. "Chá-chá" is not as early as "chin chá". "Khah chá" can be any time: "rather early" according to the mind of the speaker; or "earlier" than some other event.

Chái-khí í chá-chá chiu lâi á. He came rather early this morning.

Am-sî khah chá khùn, chái-khí-sî khah chá peh-khit-lâi.  
Go to bed earlier at night and get up earlier in the morning (than you used to).

Í khah-chá tēh ká-chheh, chin-á bô á. Formerly he was a teacher; he isn't now.

5. chāu-kha 廚房 kitchen. (Measure: keng)

Í tī chāu-kha tēh chú-png. He's in the kitchen cooking.

Chāu-kha ũ kún-chúi bô<sup>3</sup>? Is there drinking water in the kitchen?

6. chhài 菜 "chhài"; food. (includes nearly everything that is eaten with rice at a meal: meat/fish/potatoes/vegetables/soups. "Chhài" does not include the rice itself/bread/dessert). (Measure: hāng)

Chít hāng chhài lí ái chiah bô<sup>3</sup>? Do you like this (particular) "chhài"?

Kín-á-jít bô bé-chhài, só-í lóng bô chhài. We don't have any food because we didn't buy any today.

7. chhé\*-chhau 盛餐 abundant and delicious dinner.

Lí ná chú kah chiah chhé\*-chhau? Why did you cook such a big meal? (What's the occasion?)/This is a wonderful meal you cooked! (A rhetorical question: "How did you cook such an abundant and delicious dinner?")

Í tēh chún-pī chhé\*-chhau bōeh chhia\* lāng-kheh. He's preparing a big meal for the guests.

8. chhōa 帶 to lead/to guide/take care of (a child). ("Take care of" is similar to "babysit", but can be done by anyone, including the parents, and for a short time or for years.)

Sím-mih-lāng chhōa lí lái chia? Who brought you here (i.e., led you here)?

Gōa chhōa lí khi. I'll take you there (i.e., guide you to the place).

9. chia/siāng/siáng 誰 who (?) (Synonymous with "sím-mih-lāng".)

Lí bōeh kah chia khi? Whom are you going with?

Siáng kā lí kóng-ê? Who told you?

10. chiok 很 very. (Stronger than "chin".)

Kín-á-jít ê chhài chiok hó-chiah. The food today was terrific.

Lí chhēng chít nia sa\* chiok súi. That dress looks stunning on you.

11. chiu 酒 alcoholic drink/liquor. (The measure of "chiu" is the container of the drink: "poe/kòan".)

Siāu-hin-chiu a brand of rice wine.

Bēh-á-chiu beer (lit., barley liquor).

Chít<sup>2</sup> poe<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>1</sup> chíu<sup>1</sup> á-sī<sup>3</sup> tê? Is this glass liquor or tea?

Lí<sup>1</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> līm<sup>7</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mīn<sup>2</sup> khoán<sup>7</sup> ê chíu? What kind of liquor  
do you want (to drink with this meal)?

12. chíu/tō<sup>1</sup> 就 (connective particle) then/as soon as/as a  
natural consequence/thereupon. (See Gram. Note.)

Chíu<sup>3</sup>-hó/tō<sup>3</sup>-hó and that will be enough./and that will  
be OK.

Góá<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup>-êng, lí<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>3</sup> chíu<sup>3</sup>-hó. I'm busy; you go and that  
will be good enough.

Nā<sup>3</sup> jīn<sup>3</sup>-chín<sup>7</sup> oh<sup>1</sup> tō<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu. If you study zealously  
you'll get it.

13. chíu-chùi/chùi 酒醉 to be or become drunk.

Lí<sup>1</sup> chá<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>6</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chùi<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Did you get drunk yesterday?

Mài<sup>2</sup> kōh<sup>2</sup> līm<sup>1</sup>, ē<sup>3</sup> chíu-chùi. Don't drink any more, you'll  
be drunk.

14. chú/chí 煮 to cook (by boiling). ("Chú/chí" is also used  
as the general term for "cook" by any means.)

Chiah<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chhài<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> chú-ê<sup>3</sup>, sī<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Was it you who  
cooked this food?

Lí<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> chú<sup>1</sup>-png<sup>3</sup> bōe? Have you started the cooking yet?

15. chún-pī 準備 prepare/get ready; preparation.

Lí<sup>1</sup> tē<sup>3</sup> chap<sup>3</sup>-jī<sup>3</sup> khò<sup>1</sup> chún-pī<sup>3</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> bōe? Have you prepared  
Ls 12 yet?

Í<sup>7</sup> chīm<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>1</sup> chún-pī<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Biáu<sup>7</sup>-lék<sup>1</sup>. He's preparing to  
go to Miaoli now.

16. ê 鞋 shoe. (Measure: (single) kha; (pair) siang.) (Not  
every type of footwear is called "ê"; leather shoes are  
considered "ê"; later we will study other kinds.)

chhēng-ê<sup>3</sup> to wear shoes.

tēh<sup>2</sup> chhēng-ê<sup>3</sup> to put on shoes.

Gó<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> ch<sup>3</sup>ít si<sup>7</sup>ang ê. I'm going to buy a pair of shoes.

L<sup>1</sup>í chh<sup>3</sup>ēng-ê, b<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>eh khi<sup>2</sup> toh? You've got your shoes on; where are you going? (Many people do not wear shoes in the house.)

17. ê<sup>7</sup>-s<sup>7</sup>í/ê<sup>7</sup> s<sup>7</sup>í-chūn 的時候 when/while. (Lit., "at the time of". "Ê-s<sup>7</sup>í/ê<sup>7</sup> s<sup>7</sup>í-chūn/chit ê<sup>7</sup> s<sup>7</sup>í-chūn/hit ê<sup>7</sup> s<sup>7</sup>í-chūn" end a dependent clause which in English has "when/while" or the equivalent.)

Th<sup>3</sup>ak-chh<sup>7</sup>eh ê<sup>7</sup>-s<sup>7</sup>í m<sup>2</sup>ai k<sup>1</sup>ong-ōe. Don't talk while you're studying.

Í<sup>7</sup> lâi<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> s<sup>7</sup>í-chūn, g<sup>1</sup>oan í<sup>1</sup>-k<sup>7</sup>eng chiah<sup>3</sup> pá<sup>3</sup> á. We had already eaten when he came.

18. ē<sup>3</sup>-tàng 能, 可以 can/be able. (Auxiliary verb expressing physical or moral possibility due to circumstances. Negative: "bē<sup>3</sup>-tàng".)

Ph<sup>1</sup>ái\*-s<sup>2</sup>è, g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a bē<sup>3</sup>-tàng khi<sup>2</sup>. I can't go, sorry.

L<sup>1</sup>í ē<sup>3</sup>-tàng k<sup>3</sup>ā g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a bé<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>? Can you buy it for me?

19. -gōa 外 out/outside/beyond/foreign.

Khi<sup>2</sup> chh<sup>2</sup>ū-gōa chh<sup>2</sup>ít-thô. Go outside the house to play.

20. hng 遠 far. (Oppos. of "kīn", No. 30.)

G<sup>1</sup>oan chh<sup>7</sup>ú ch<sup>7</sup>in hng. My house is far away.

T<sup>2</sup>ui chia khi<sup>2</sup> kh<sup>2</sup>ah hng. It's farther this way.

21. hō<sup>1</sup>-khùn 好睡 to sleep well; go to sleep immediately; comfortable to sleep in or on.

ph<sup>1</sup>ái\*-khùn be restless in sleep; hard to get to sleep; uncomfortable to sleep in or on.

H<sup>2</sup>ít ê<sup>7</sup> g<sup>1</sup>in-á ch<sup>7</sup>in hō<sup>1</sup>-khùn. The child sleeps well./The child goes to sleep immediately.

N<sup>3</sup>ā ũ<sup>3</sup> l<sup>7</sup>im-ch<sup>3</sup>íu tō<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>7</sup>in hō<sup>1</sup>-khùn. If you drink liquor you get a sound sleep.



ī chin phài\*-khùn, số\*-ī bô lêng ái káp ī khùn. He's restless in sleep, so no one wants to sleep with him.

Chít keng nng ē lêng khùn chin phài\*-khùn. This room is not suitable for 2 people to sleep in. (Too small a room.)

22. hoát-tō<sup>2</sup>·/pān<sup>3</sup>-hoat 方法, 辦法 method/means/way.  
(Measure: ê)

Chít ē hoát-tō<sup>2</sup>· chin hó. This method is very good.

Góa bô pān<sup>3</sup>-hoat ká lí chò. I have no way of doing that for you.

23. í-keng 已經 already. (Always requires the "a" of the Perfect Tense.)

Tò-sīa, góa í-keng chiah pá á. Thanks, (but) I've eaten already.

24. ián-tâu 英俊 handsome (of male persons - from the age they begin to walk).

Lí chhēng án-ni chin ián-tâu. You look handsome in that getup.

25. Jit-goat-thâm 日月潭 Sun Moon Lake. (An artificial lake in the center of Taiwan, in Nantou County.)

26. kah 到, 得 up to, until. (Often synonymous with "kàu", Ls. 9.)

Góa chiah káh chin pá. I ate till I was stuffed.

Í khòa\* tiān-sī khòa\* káh chap-ít-tiám. He watched TV until 11:00.

27. kán-na/kán-ta\*/chí-ū 只有 only/to have...only/there is only...

Kán-nā ū gō ē lêng bōeh khi. Only 5 people are going.

Góa chí-ū chít pún nīa-nīa. I have only one book.

28. kha 隻, 只 one of a pair. (Used as measure for a single chopstick/shoe, etc.)

Chít kha tī chia; iáu hit kha tī tōh-ūi? There's one here; where's the other?

29. khoán/chióng 樣子, 種 kind/sort/type.

Lí ài bé tōh chít khoán-ê? Which kind do you want to buy?

Chít khoán tãi-chì chin phái\*-chò. It's very hard to do this type of thing.

30. kīn 近 near. (Oppos. of "hng", No. 20.)

Góan chhù chin kīn. My house is very near.

31. -lāi 內 inside/inner. ("Lāi" will also be used later to mean "within" a time period.)

In tī chhia-lāi, bó ài loh-lāi. They're in the bus and don't want to come out (lit., come down).

32. liâng 涼快, 輕鬆 pleasantly cool (used only in summer); (of work) pleasant. (In Ls 13 we will study more weather vocabulary, and in Ls 14 work vocabulary.)

Lí tòa chít keng khah liâng. This room you're staying in is rather cool.

√ Ká-chheh ũ chin liâng bó? Is teaching a nice job?/ Do you find teaching pleasant?

33. ngh 夾 to pick up with chopsticks or pincers.

Chhia\* lín ngh khít-lāi chia. Help yourself./Go ahead and eat. (The host urges the guests. Lit., "Please pick up -- the food with chopsticks -- and eat.")

34. òa\* 晚, 遲 late. (Opposite of "chá", No. 4.)

òá\*-òá\* rather late.

khah òá\* later/rather late.

Gó<sup>1</sup>a chá<sup>1</sup>i-khí<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>2</sup> óa\* lâi. I came very late this morning.

Gó<sup>1</sup>a óa\*-ò<sup>2</sup>a\* chi<sup>2</sup>ah peh-khít<sup>3</sup>-lâi. I didn't get up till rather late.

35. óa\* 碗 bowl. (Measure: tè)

Lí<sup>1</sup> chi<sup>3</sup>ah kú<sup>1</sup>i óa\* p<sup>1</sup>ng? How many bowls of rice did you eat?

Hít<sup>2</sup> óa\* thng lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lim bó<sup>3</sup>? Did you drink that bowl of broth/bouillon?

36. óa\*-p<sup>1</sup>óa\* 碗盤 dishes. (Measure: tè)

Nā<sup>3</sup> chi<sup>3</sup>ah pá<sup>3</sup> ti<sup>3</sup>oh-âi<sup>2</sup> sé<sup>1</sup> óa\*-p<sup>1</sup>óa\*. When we're finished eating we have to wash the dishes.

37. p<sup>1</sup>óa\*/p<sup>7</sup>óa\*-á 盤子 plate/dish. (Measure: tè)

Chít<sup>3</sup> tē<sup>2</sup> p<sup>7</sup>óa\*-á. a plate/a dish.

Chít<sup>3</sup> p<sup>7</sup>óa\* chhài. a plate or dish of food.

38. sí<sup>7</sup>-koe 西瓜 watermelon. (Measure: liap)

39. siang 雙 a pair.

Chít<sup>2</sup> khoán<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> siang<sup>2</sup> âi<sup>3</sup> lóa-chē? How much is a pair of this kind of shoe?

Lâng<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> siang<sup>7</sup> chháu, chít<sup>3</sup> siang<sup>7</sup> kha. Humans have a pair of hands and a pair of feet.

40. súi 美麗, 漂亮 beautiful/good-looking. (Of animals/things/female persons; not used of weather/male persons except babies. Oppos. of "bái", No. 1.)

Lí<sup>1</sup> chhēng<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>1</sup> nia sa\* chín<sup>7</sup> súi. This dress you're wearing is very beautiful.

Lí<sup>7</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>7</sup> chhia<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> súi. That car of his is a beauty.

41. thng 湯 broth/bouillon; soup. (The measure for "thng" is the container holding it - bowl, etc.)  
 Chhĩa\* lí lím thng. Have some broth.  
 chhài-thng soup. (The word "thng" used alone usually = "broth" or "bouillon" (only the water); "chhài-thng" has meat or vegetables or fish, or all of these.)
42. thng-sî/thng-sî-á 湯匙 spoon. (Measure: ki)  
 Iōng thng-sî lím thng. Drink the broth with a spoon.
43. tióh 對 right/correct. (Negative: m̄-tióh.)  
 Tióh-là, ... Come to think of it, ...  
 Góá án-ni kóng tióh bô\*? Is what I said correct?  
 1) Tióh-là. It's right.  
 2) Bô m̄-tióh. Right/correct. (2 negatives = an affirmative.)  
 3) Án-ni chin tióh. That's very correct.  
 4) Án-ni m̄-tióh. That's not right.  
 Í án-ni kóng m̄-tióh. What he says is not correct.  
 Sít-lé, góá chō m̄-tióh. I made a mistake, sorry. OR:  
 I did it wrong, sorry.
44. tióh-ài/tióh/ài 必須, 須要 must/have to. ("Must" is one of the meanings of "ài" in Ls 1.)  
 Bín-á-chài góá tióh-ài khi Biâu-lék. I have to go to Miaoli tomorrow.  
 Lí tióh sía-jī bô\*? Do you have any homework?  
 (There are technical words for "homework" but parents usually merely ask younger children: "Do you have to write characters?" In primary school most homework is learning to write characters.)

45. <sup>1</sup>tōa <sup>2</sup>在 to be in/at/on. (May at times be translated "stay/remain" but does not mean "to stay overnight" - this latter is a different "tōa = dwell" (Ls 10). Used with Commands/Requests; otherwise many people do not distinguish from "tī" (Ls 5).)

<sup>1</sup>Chhia\* <sup>1</sup>lī <sup>1</sup>sia <sup>2</sup>tōa chia. Please write it here (on this sheet/in this book/etc.)

<sup>1</sup>Lī <sup>2</sup>tōa chia <sup>2</sup>chhit-thô, <sup>2</sup>mãi <sup>2</sup>chhut-khi. Play here; don't go outside.

<sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>7</sup>bīn-<sup>1</sup>á-<sup>1</sup>ám <sup>2</sup>bōeh <sup>2</sup>tōa <sup>7</sup>ī <sup>1</sup>hia <sup>1</sup>chia. I'm going to eat at his place tomorrow night.

<sup>2</sup>TŪI-ŌE <sup>7</sup>Ē <sup>7</sup>HŌAN-ĒK

TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

A trip to Sun Moon Lake (Recreation in Sun Moon Lake)

- S1: We were off yesterday, Mr. Lōa; did you go anywhere for recreation?  
 L1: I sure did, I went to Sun Moon Lake, and ("koh") a friend treated me to a meal there.  
 S2: Whom did you go with? Or did you go alone?  
 L2: I went with the wife and kids. (Lit., ...all went also.)  
 S3: I've never yet been to Sun Moon Lake; I hear people say it's a lot of fun there, is that right?  
 L3: That's right (not incorrect), it's a lot of fun there.  
 S4: If you take the bus from Taichung how many hours do you have to ride?  
 L4: It's not far from here to Sun Moon Lake, it's very close; if you take the bus you'll be there in something over 2 hours.  
 S5: Isn't the whole road to Sun Moon Lake a mountain road? Is it difficult to drive?  
 L5: Not at all; the (this) road is very wide (lit., big) and it's beautiful; it's easy driving. When I'm on the bus I spend all the time looking out (at the scenery). ("Kān-na - only": that's all I do. Note "koh" connecting "tōa" and "súi" = do not use "kah/kap".)  
 S6: What bus did you take that day (what time)? Was it still early when you got there?  
 L6: We didn't go till late because when we got up it was already after 7:00, then ("koh") we washed our faces, put on our clothes and shoes and ate, and only then did we go to get the bus.  
 S7: When you reached there were your friends all ready (with a meal) for you?

- L7: Yes. When we got there they had already prepared everything; it was embarrassing. (Note that "chīu" is not translated here; see Grammar Note. "Phái\*-sè" is also difficult to translate here; but as you will hear it very often you will understand when it should be used.)
- S8: Was it a really big meal?
- L8: It sure was, a real big meal; his wife continually put bits of food in our bowls; we stuffed ourselves. Come to think of it, besides ("iáu"), there was a kind of broth I had never before tasted, but it was delicious. They say that only Sun Moon Lake has that kind of thing. ("In thài-thài...kā góan ngeh chhài." The host/hostess frequently does this.)
- S9: Didn't you drink at the meal?
- L9: How could you not drink? I told him: "we came here for recreation", but they only told (lit., called) me I had to drink. Only if I did that ("Añ-ni...chiah") would he show us around after the meal (guide us in going recreating).
- S10: If that was so, didn't you get drunk? What time did you leave after seeing the place there? (Lit., You recreated there until what time before you came home? The meaning of this sentence is: What time did you take the bus to come home? The meaning is not: What time did you reach home?)
- L10: We took the 4 o'clock bus home that afternoon; I got on the bus and went to sleep. My wife says I really had a sound sleep. She didn't call me until we reached Taichung and were to get off the bus.

Someday when you have time (lit., Next time at a time when you have time) go there and have some fun.

(Note: "Péh-khít-khí chhia-lāi": we may also say "chhia-téng" for "on the bus". "Chhia-téng" means "inside the bus", not "on the roof". For "on the roof" say "chhu-téng".)

Lí é chhèh tī hīt tái chhia é chhū-téng. Your book is  
on the car roof.

7  
BUN-HOAT

GRAMMAR NOTE

Chīu/tō

A. "Chīu" and "tō" (No. 11 in Vocab.) are weak connectives sometimes used for balance or for euphony, not nearly so strong as the English "then". Yet they are important in being very common, much more so than "then" is in English speech. "Chīu/tō" are frequently not translated into English. NB. "Chīu" and "tō" are interchangeable.

a) 1 3 3 3 3 7  
I nā ũ chí\* chíu ē līm-chíu. If he has money he'll  
drink wine.

b) 1 3 3 3 2 2 7  
Góa nā chiah pá tō bōeh khi Biáu-lék. I'm going to  
Miaoli after the meal.

B. CONTRAST BETWEEN "chīu/tō" AND "chiah" ("then and only then"). "Chiah" states a condition. "Chīu/tō" merely state a consequence.

c) Tân Sián-si\* nā lâi, Tân Thài-thài chíu ē lâi. If  
Mr. Tân comes, Mrs. Tân will come. (As a natural  
consequence; she wants to make sure he behaves.)

d) Tân Sián-si\* nā lâi, Tân Thài-thài chiah ē lâi. Only  
if Mr. Tân comes will Mrs. Tân come.

e) 1 1 3 3 2 7 3  
I kóng chiah pá chíu bōeh lâi hāk-hāu. He says he'll  
come to school after the meal.

f) 1 1 3 2 2 7 3  
I kóng chiah pá chiah bōeh lâi hāk-hāu. He says he  
won't come to school until after the meal.

g) 1 2 3 7 3 1 2 1  
Góa pēh-tiám chíu lâi á, m-kú kàu kàu-tiám chiah  
siōng-khò. I came at 8:00 but it was 9:00 before we  
had class.

h) 1 chí\* hō. 1, 1 chiah kā lí bé; chí\* nā bō hō. 1, 1  
3 3 3 1  
chíu m kā lí bé. If you give him the money he'll  
buy it for you; if you don't give him the money, he  
won't.

Note: In Sentence h we can tell from the general sense of the sentence that "chiah" and "chīu" would be used here, though they need not be translated into English. You will hear the connectives so often that after a short time you will be able to sense when to insert them.

<sup>3</sup>  
LĒ-KÙ

PATTERN SENTENCES

1. báí <sup>7</sup> NB. "Báí" can be used to modify "chíah" and "khòa\*" (not ordinarily other verbs), and in such expressions it means the same as "phái\*".

- a) Hít<sup>2</sup> tiâu<sup>7</sup> lō· chín<sup>7</sup> báí.
- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> bé, chít<sup>2</sup> nía<sup>2</sup> khǎh<sup>2</sup> súi, hít<sup>2</sup> nía<sup>2</sup> khǎh<sup>2</sup> báí.
- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> kìn-á-jít<sup>7</sup> chú<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chhài<sup>7</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> báí-chíah.
- d) Ū-é<sup>3</sup> gín-á<sup>7</sup> sē<sup>2</sup>-hàn<sup>7</sup> é-sí<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> báí, m̄-kú<sup>3</sup> tōa<sup>3</sup>-hàn<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> súi.
- e) Lí<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, góa<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> siáng<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> báí-khòa\* bē<sup>3</sup>?  
Bē<sup>3</sup>-báí là.

2. Biâu<sup>7</sup>-lék<sup>1</sup>

3. bīn (Measure: ê)

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> chǎi-khí<sup>1</sup> peh-khít<sup>3</sup>-lâi<sup>3</sup>, ũ<sup>3</sup> khí<sup>2</sup> sé<sup>1</sup>-bīn<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
b) Í<sup>7</sup> kǎ-tī<sup>7</sup> iáu<sup>1</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu<sup>1</sup> sé<sup>1</sup>-bīn<sup>3</sup>, lóng<sup>1</sup> tiōh-ái<sup>3</sup> lǎng<sup>7</sup> kǎ<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> sé.  
c) Lǎng<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> bīn<sup>3</sup> báí<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ít-tēng<sup>3</sup> sí<sup>3</sup> phái\*-lǎng.  
d) Chít<sup>2</sup> tē<sup>2</sup> tōh-á<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> tōh-bīn<sup>3</sup> chiók<sup>2</sup> súi, góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, ít-tēng<sup>3</sup> chiók<sup>2</sup> kùi.

4. chá

- a) Í<sup>7</sup> chǎng-àm<sup>7</sup> chá<sup>1</sup>-chá<sup>1</sup> tō<sup>3</sup> khí<sup>2</sup> khùn<sup>3</sup> á. (P)  
b) Nã<sup>3</sup> khǎh<sup>2</sup> chá<sup>1</sup> khùn<sup>1</sup>, khǎh<sup>2</sup> chá<sup>1</sup> peh-khít<sup>3</sup>-lâi<sup>3</sup> khǎh<sup>2</sup> hó. (P)  
c) Iáu<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> chá, m̄-bián<sup>3</sup> hiǎh<sup>2</sup> chá<sup>1</sup> khí.  
d) Bín-á<sup>7</sup>-chài<sup>1</sup> sí<sup>3</sup> lé-pài<sup>1</sup>, m̄-bián<sup>3</sup> hiǎh<sup>2</sup> chá<sup>1</sup> kǎ<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> kio.  
e) Í<sup>7</sup> chǎi-khí<sup>1</sup>-sí<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> chá<sup>1</sup> chhut-khí, âm-sí<sup>2</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ôa\*  
tng<sup>3</sup>-lâi.



5. chhau-kha ㄔㄞ ㄍㄞ

- a) Chhau-kha hiāh ē óa\*-pôa\* sīm-mih-lâng tēh sé?
- b) Īn hīt kēng chhau-kha chin tōa-keng kōh chin súi.
- c) Chú-png-ê ū tī chhau-kha tēh chú-png bōe?
- d) Chhau-kha hiāh ē chhài ē-tàu bōeh chú bō? ㄔㄞ ㄍㄞ
- e) Lâng tēh chú-png, lí mãi khi chhau-kha kā lāng chhá.

6. chhài "chhài"/food. (practically all the food at a meal except the rice. But note the 4 exceptions below after Sentence d.)

- a) Chhù-nih iáu ū chin-chē chhài; kin-á-jit m-biān bé.
- b) Nā bōeh chhia\* lāng-kheh, tiōh-ài bé chin-chē chhài.
- c) Mãi kán-nā chiah chhài, png iā tiōh chiah.
- d) Tōh-téng iáu ū chhài bō? Nā bō chhài gōa kōh chú.

EXCEPTIONS :

- 1) Gōa bōeh khi bé-chhài. I am going to buy the food. (This is what the houseperson says when going to buy all the kinds of food the family is going to eat, including rice, and also including non-food items.)
- 2) Ī sī chiah-chhài-ê. He is a Buddhist. (Here "chhài" excludes meat and a few other foods. ("Chiah-chhài-ê" means "vegetarian" which in Taiwan usually means "Buddhist".)
- 3) Sī-chhài-chit-thng ài gō-pāh kho. This meal of 4 dishes plus soup is \$500. (Here "chhài" obviously excludes the soup. Similar sentences are commonly used in restaurants. "Sa\*-chhài-chit-thng" is frequently used to describe a home meal.)
- 4) Lí khāh ài chiah gōa-kōk-chhài á-sī khāh ài chiah Tái-oān-chhài? (Type of food.)

7. chhê<sup>7</sup>\*-chhau

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> chú<sup>1</sup> kǎh<sup>2</sup> chiǎh<sup>2</sup> chhê<sup>7</sup>\*-chhau, sī<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chhǐa<sup>1</sup>\* chǐa?  
 b) Eng<sup>7</sup>-àm<sup>1</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>. lǎng<sup>7</sup> chhǐa<sup>1</sup>\* chiǎh<sup>3</sup> chhê<sup>7</sup>\*-chhau;  
 lǐn<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 c) Aǐ<sup>2</sup> lǐm<sup>7</sup>-chíu<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lǎng<sup>1</sup> kóng: "ū<sup>3</sup>-iǎ<sup>1</sup>\* chú<sup>1</sup> kǎh<sup>2</sup> chíu<sup>7</sup> chhê<sup>7</sup>\*-  
 chhau, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> nǎ<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chíu<sup>7</sup>, iǎ<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chhê<sup>7</sup>\*-chhau".  
 d) Chǎ<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>. 7 in<sup>7</sup> chhǐa<sup>1</sup>\*; 7 in<sup>1</sup> chún<sup>3</sup>-pǐ<sup>3</sup> kǎh<sup>2</sup> chiók<sup>2</sup> chhê<sup>7</sup>\*-  
 chhau. (P)

## 8. chhōa ㄉ

- a) 7 m̄<sup>3</sup>-chǎi<sup>7</sup> ūi, lí<sup>1</sup> chhōa<sup>3</sup> 7 khi. (P)  
 b) Chhōa<sup>3</sup> chhút<sup>2</sup>-khi<sup>2</sup> gōa<sup>3</sup>-bīn<sup>7</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thō; mǎi<sup>2</sup> chhōa<sup>3</sup> jíp<sup>3</sup>-lái<sup>7</sup>  
 chia. (P)  
 c) Góa<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chhēh<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup>-sǐ<sup>1</sup>, lǎng<sup>1</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> pa-pah<sup>3</sup> chhōa<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup>  
 tng<sup>3</sup>-lái. ㄉ  
 d) Lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> kǎ<sup>3</sup> lǎng<sup>7</sup> chhōa<sup>3</sup> gín<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>? Góa<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> gín<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>3</sup>. lí<sup>1</sup>  
 chhōa. (P)  
 e) 7 kǎ<sup>7</sup>-tī<sup>7</sup> chǎi<sup>7</sup>-iǎ<sup>1</sup>\* ūi, m̄<sup>3</sup>-biǎn<sup>1</sup> lǎng<sup>7</sup> chhōa.

## 9. chǐa/siǎng/siáng

- a) 7 sī<sup>3</sup> chǐa? Lí<sup>1</sup> bat<sup>3</sup> 7 bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 b) Chít<sup>2</sup> kú<sup>2</sup> ōe<sup>2</sup> siáng<sup>7</sup> chǎi<sup>7</sup>-iǎ<sup>1</sup>\* 7 sù<sup>2</sup>?  
 c) Tī<sup>3</sup> tōh<sup>2</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-tég<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> tē<sup>2</sup> pōe<sup>3</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> siáng<sup>7</sup> chǎh<sup>7</sup>-ê?  
 d) Chít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chhēh<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> siáng<sup>7</sup> ê?  
 e) Chǐa? (OR: Siáng, etc.) Who's there? (Called out by  
 one hearing a knock on the door.)

Góa. Me. (Friends or people who are somewhat familiar expect to be identified by this single sound.)

10. chiok <sup>1</sup> <sub>1</sub>

- a) Hít<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> gín<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh<sup>2</sup> chiók<sup>2</sup> gâu-ê<sup>7</sup>.
- b) Góa<sup>1</sup> chái<sup>1</sup>-khí<sup>2</sup> chiók<sup>2</sup> chá<sup>3</sup> chiū<sup>3</sup> peh<sup>3</sup>-khít<sup>3</sup>-lâi<sup>3</sup> á<sup>3</sup>.
- c) Í<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>3</sup> mih<sup>3</sup>-kīa\*<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> chiók<sup>2</sup> kùi<sup>1</sup>, mǎi<sup>2</sup> kǎ<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> bé.
- d) Hít<sup>2</sup> chhút<sup>2</sup> tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá\*<sup>3</sup> chiók<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khòa\*<sup>3</sup>; lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khòa\*<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?<sup>3</sup>
- e) Chiók<sup>2</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> lǎng<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>; lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?<sup>3</sup>

11. chúu      beh-á<sup>1</sup>-chúu      Siāu<sup>3</sup>-hín<sup>7</sup>-chúu

- a) Chít<sup>2</sup> khoán<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chúu<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kǎ<sup>7</sup>-tī<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> hóat<sup>7</sup>-tō<sup>3</sup>. lím<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> kòan<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?<sup>3</sup>
- b) Í<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> gáu<sup>7</sup> lím<sup>7</sup>-chúu<sup>3</sup>, kǎ<sup>7</sup>-tī<sup>3</sup>-chít<sup>3</sup>-ê<sup>3</sup> lím<sup>7</sup> nng<sup>3</sup>-sǎ\*<sup>7</sup> kòan<sup>3</sup> iā<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> chùi. (P)
- c) Góa<sup>3</sup>-kók<sup>2</sup>-chúu<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> kùi<sup>1</sup>, m<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-lím.
- d) Phái\*-sè<sup>1</sup>, chúu<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> hóat<sup>7</sup>-tō<sup>3</sup>, góa<sup>1</sup> lím<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup>-chúi<sup>3</sup> tō<sup>3</sup>-hó.
- e) Lí<sup>1</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> lím<sup>7</sup> Siāu<sup>3</sup>-hín<sup>7</sup>-chúu<sup>1</sup> á<sup>1</sup>-sǎ<sup>3</sup> beh<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-chúu<sup>3</sup>? (P)

12. chīu/tō <sup>1</sup> <sub>1</sub> Often "chīu/tō" are untranslatable, but in sentences such as the following ordinary speech requires their use.

- a) Góa<sup>1</sup> chiāh<sup>3</sup> pá<sup>3</sup> chiū<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>.
- b) Góa<sup>1</sup> nǎ<sup>3</sup> lím<sup>7</sup> kǎ<sup>7</sup>-pi, âm<sup>2</sup>-sī<sup>3</sup> chiū<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> ái<sup>2</sup>-khùn.
- c) Nng<sup>3</sup>-páh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>3</sup>. tō<sup>3</sup>-hó; lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)
- d) Í<sup>7</sup> nǎ<sup>3</sup> lâi<sup>1</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> tō<sup>3</sup> m<sup>3</sup>-bián<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>; nǎ<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> lâi<sup>1</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> tō<sup>3</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>.
- e) Góa<sup>1</sup> nǎ<sup>3</sup> kǎ<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kǎ<sup>3</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> chiū<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu.
- f) Lí<sup>1</sup> nǎ<sup>3</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> phái\*<sup>1</sup> tǎi<sup>3</sup>-chì<sup>1</sup>, góa<sup>1</sup> chiū<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> kǎ<sup>3</sup> pa-pah kóng.

13. chiu-chui/chui

- a) 7 1 2 1 1 2 7 1 1 1  
l 1 t 2 1 1 2 1 1 1 1  
l 1 t 2 1 1 2 1 1 1 1  
l 1 t 2 1 1 2 1 1 1 1
- b) 3 1 2 3 1  
M-h 1 2 3 1  
M-h 1 2 3 1
- c) 7 1 2 3 1 2 3 1 2  
Ch 1 2 3 1 2 3 1 2  
Ch 1 2 3 1 2 3 1 2
- d) 7 7 7 7 3 3 3  
l 1 7 7 7 7 3 3 3  
l 1 7 7 7 7 3 3 3
- e) 1 3 1 7 3 3 3  
G 1 3 1 7 3 3 3  
G 1 3 1 7 3 3 3

14. chú/chí

- a) 3 1 2 3 1 2 1 1 1  
C 1 2 3 1 2 3 1 1 1  
C 1 2 3 1 2 3 1 1 1
- b) 1 1 3 1 3 3  
G 1 1 3 1 3 3  
G 1 1 3 1 3 3
- c) 1 2 1 1 3 1 2 7  
G 1 2 1 1 3 1 2 7  
G 1 2 1 1 3 1 2 7
- d) 7 1 2 7 3 3 1 3  
K 1 2 7 3 3 1 3  
K 1 2 7 3 3 1 3


15. chun-pi

- a) 1 1 3 3  
L 1 1 3 3  
L 1 1 3 3
- b) 1 3 2 3 2 2 1  
L 1 3 2 3 2 2 1  
L 1 3 2 3 2 2 1
- c) 1 1 2 3 1 2 1 1 1  
G 1 1 2 3 1 2 1 1 1  
G 1 1 2 3 1 2 1 1 1
- d) 7 7 1 3 3 3  
L 1 7 7 1 3 3 3  
L 1 7 7 1 3 3 3
- e) 1 3 1 1 3 7 3 7 3  
L 1 3 1 1 3 7 3 7 3  
L 1 3 1 1 3 7 3 7 3

16. ê

- a) 2 7 1 3 3  
H 1 2 7 1 3 3  
H 1 2 7 1 3 3
- b) 1 7 2 3 2 2 2  
L 1 7 2 3 2 2 2  
L 1 7 2 3 2 2 2
- c) 2 7 1 3  
C 1 2 7 1 3  
C 1 2 7 1 3

d) Chít<sup>2</sup> khoán<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> siang<sup>7</sup> chhā<sup>7</sup>-pút<sup>2</sup>-tò<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> sí<sup>2</sup>-gō<sup>3</sup>-pā<sup>2</sup>

kho<sup>•</sup> 

e) Lí<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> kha; iáu<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> kha tí<sup>3</sup> toh? (P)

17. ê-sí<sup>7</sup>/ê sí<sup>7</sup>-chūn<sup>7</sup> Lit., "at the time of." "Ê sí<sup>7</sup>/ê sí<sup>7</sup>-chūn<sup>7</sup>; chít/hít ê sí<sup>7</sup>-chūn<sup>7</sup>" end a dependent clause which in English has "when/while" or the equivalent.

a) Lí<sup>1</sup> lâi<sup>7</sup> ê-sí<sup>7</sup>, í<sup>7</sup> lâi<sup>3</sup> bōe? (P)

b) Chít<sup>2</sup> hāng<sup>3</sup> tāi<sup>3</sup>-chì<sup>1</sup> lán<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> pá<sup>7</sup> ê-sí<sup>7</sup>, gōa<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kóng. (P)

c) Gín<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> chē<sup>3</sup>-chhia<sup>7</sup> ê-sí<sup>7</sup>, lóng<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> khōa<sup>2</sup>\* gōa<sup>3</sup>-bīn.

d) Gōa<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> līm<sup>7</sup>-chíu<sup>7</sup> ê-sí<sup>7</sup>, chhia<sup>1</sup>\* lí<sup>1</sup> mãi<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> gōa<sup>1</sup> chhá.

e) Chít<sup>2</sup> ê sí<sup>7</sup>-chūn<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> ông<sup>7</sup>-lâi<sup>7</sup>, kán<sup>7</sup>-nã<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> kãm<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> nĩa<sup>3</sup>-nĩa. (P)

f) Chāng<sup>7</sup>-àm<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> ê sí<sup>7</sup>-chūn<sup>7</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> tí<sup>3</sup> tōh<sup>2</sup>-ūi? (P)

18. ē-tàng<sup>3</sup>/bē-tàng<sup>3</sup> Refers to ability/inability but not to an inherent ability/inability. This latter we will study later.

a) Lí<sup>1</sup> eng<sup>7</sup>-àm<sup>3</sup> ē-tàng<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khōa<sup>2</sup>\* tiān<sup>3</sup>-iá<sup>3</sup>\* bē<sup>3</sup>? Can you go to a movie this evening? (Here "ē-tàng" has the ordinary meaning of the English "can". Is there anything physically or morally preventing you from going?)

b) Bīn<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-chài<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> ē-tàng<sup>3</sup> lâi<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>?

Gōa<sup>1</sup> bīn<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-chài<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> tāi<sup>3</sup>-chì<sup>3</sup>, bē<sup>3</sup>-tàng<sup>2</sup> lâi.

c) Pài<sup>2</sup>-lak<sup>1</sup> gōa<sup>1</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>-tàng<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Tāi<sup>7</sup>-pak.

d) Lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>-tàng<sup>2</sup> lâi, chhia<sup>1</sup>\* lí<sup>1</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> Tân Siān<sup>3</sup>-sí<sup>3</sup>\* kóng.

e) Lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>-tàng<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup>, lín<sup>1</sup> thài<sup>2</sup>-thài<sup>3</sup> ē-tàng<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>?

f) Tē<sup>3</sup>\* Siu<sup>7</sup>-sū, lí<sup>1</sup> ē-tàng<sup>3</sup> kã<sup>1</sup> gōan<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>2</sup> Eng<sup>7</sup>-gí<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>? (P)

g) Lí<sup>1</sup> chhēng<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>2</sup> nĩa<sup>1</sup> sa<sup>•</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> súi, lí<sup>1</sup> ē-tàng<sup>3</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> gōa<sup>1</sup> bé<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>? (P)

19. -gōa

- a) Tĩ<sup>3</sup> góan<sup>1</sup> chhù<sup>7</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chhū<sup>2</sup>-gōa<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup>-chē<sup>3</sup> chāng<sup>7</sup> chhīu-á.  
 b) Chē<sup>3</sup>-chhia<sup>7</sup> ē-sī<sup>7</sup>, nā<sup>3</sup> khōa\*<sup>2</sup> chhia<sup>7</sup>-gōa<sup>3</sup> khāh<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> ái-khùn.

20. hng

- a) Tũ<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> chhù<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hng<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>7</sup>?  
 b) Nā<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hng, iōng<sup>3</sup>-kia\*<sup>7</sup>-ē<sup>3</sup> tō<sup>3</sup>-hó, mǎi<sup>2</sup> khĩa<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>-thó<sup>1</sup>-  
 báí.  
 c) Lán<sup>1</sup> tũ<sup>2</sup> kũ<sup>3</sup>-lō<sup>3</sup> khāh<sup>2</sup> kīn, mǎi<sup>2</sup> tũ<sup>2</sup> sīn-lō<sup>3</sup>; sīn-lō<sup>3</sup>  
 khāh<sup>2</sup> hng.  
 d) Lí<sup>1</sup> tōa<sup>2</sup> tĩ<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hāk<sup>3</sup>-hāu<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hng<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>? (P)

21. hó-khùn<sup>1</sup> [h] phái\*-khùn<sup>1</sup>

- a) Ī<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hó-khùn<sup>1</sup>, chē<sup>3</sup> tĩ<sup>3</sup> ĩ-á-téng<sup>1</sup> iā<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> khùn. (P)  
 b) Ū<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> līm-chíu<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hó-khùn<sup>1</sup>, ũ<sup>3</sup>-iá\*<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 c) Chāng-àm<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> liāng, chin<sup>7</sup> hó-khùn<sup>1</sup>.  
 d) Ī<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hó-khùn<sup>1</sup>, khùn<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> gō<sup>3</sup> hūn-cheng<sup>7</sup> chíu<sup>3</sup> khùn-khi<sup>3</sup> á.  
 (P)  
 e) Ī<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup>-iá\*<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hó-khùn<sup>1</sup>; kǎ<sup>3</sup> ĩ<sup>7</sup> kiō<sup>2</sup> hiāh<sup>2</sup> tōa-sia\*<sup>3</sup> iā<sup>3</sup> kiō<sup>2</sup>  
 bē<sup>3</sup> khít-lái<sup>3</sup>. (P)  
 f) Ī<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> phái\*-khùn<sup>1</sup>, bō<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> ĩ<sup>7</sup> khùn<sup>2</sup> chō<sup>2</sup>-hóe.  
 g) Hít<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> gín-á<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> phái\*-khùn<sup>1</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> ĩ<sup>7</sup> ká-tĩ<sup>3</sup> khùn<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>  
 keng. (P)

22. hoat-tō<sup>2</sup> / pān<sup>3</sup>-hoat

- a) Thāk<sup>3</sup> Tái-gí<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup> khāh<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>7</sup> é<sup>3</sup> pān<sup>3</sup>-hoat<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>3</sup>?  
 b) Eng-gí<sup>7</sup> gōa<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> hoat-tō<sup>2</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> mng<sup>3</sup> Bók-su.

- c) Phái\*-sè, kìn-á-jít góa ữ tãi-chì, số-ỉ bô hoat-tô.  
kảnh lí khi.
- d) Lí tãi-seng kảnh ỉ kóng; nã bô pãn-hoat, góa chiah kảnh  
ỉ kóng.
- e) Chít khoán ê tãi-chì ỉ chín ữ pãn-hoat, lí khi chhia\*  
ỉ chò. (P)

## 23. ỉ-keng

- a) ỉ ỉ-keng lái á.
- b) Tô-sĩa, góa ỉ-keng chiah pá á.
- c) Hít chhut tiãn-ía\* góa ỉ-keng chhĩa ỉ khi khĩa\*  
tng-lái á.
- d) Ỏ-tho-bái góa chà-hng ỉ-keng bé á.
- e) Lí lái ê-si, góa ỉ-keng lái jĩ-chap-góa hun a.

## 24. iản-tâu 𠵼𠵼

- a) Chá-pó-gĩn-á nã iản-tâu, chá-bó-gĩn-á lóng chín ài.
- b) Lí chiah iản-tâu, ầu-pái ít-teng ữ chín-chẽ chá-bó-  
pêng-iú.
- c) Sẻ-hàn chín iản-tâu, tĩa-hàn bô ít-teng iản-tâu.
- d) Lín chít ê gĩn-á ầu-pái ít-teng chiok iản-tâu.

## 25. Jit-goat-thâm


## 26. kah 𠵼

- a) Lán kìn-á-jít thak kảnh chia, bìn-á-chài chiah kỏ  
thak.
- b) Góa hỏ ỉ chhia\*, chiah kảnh chín pá.

- c) Gó<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>2</sup>oeh ch<sup>3</sup>ē k<sup>2</sup>āh S<sup>7</sup>in-tek l<sup>3</sup>oh-chhia; l<sup>1</sup>í b<sup>2</sup>oeh ch<sup>3</sup>ē k<sup>2</sup>āh t<sup>2</sup>oh-ūi? (P)
- d) Chi<sup>2</sup>ah-n<sup>3</sup>ih ch<sup>3</sup>ē jī, g<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a s<sup>1</sup>ia k<sup>2</sup>āh ch<sup>3</sup>hiú chi<sup>2</sup>ok sng.
- e) Ĩ kh<sup>2</sup>un k<sup>2</sup>āh ch<sup>1</sup>im-á chi<sup>2</sup>ah peh-kh<sup>3</sup>it-l<sup>3</sup>ai.

27. k<sup>7</sup>an-na/k<sup>7</sup>an-ta\*/ch<sup>1</sup>ī-ū

- a) S<sup>2</sup>it-l<sup>7</sup>é, T<sup>7</sup>ai-gí g<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a k<sup>7</sup>an-n<sup>7</sup>ā ē<sup>3</sup>-hi<sup>1</sup>au k<sup>3</sup>ong k<sup>1</sup>ui-k<sup>2</sup>ū-á n<sup>3</sup>ia-n<sup>3</sup>ia.
- b) L<sup>1</sup>í k<sup>7</sup>an-n<sup>7</sup>ā k<sup>2</sup>io g<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a ĩt-t<sup>3</sup>it chia<sup>1</sup>h, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ū l<sup>1</sup>í k<sup>7</sup>ā-t<sup>1</sup>ī l<sup>1</sup>ong b<sup>7</sup>o ngh.
- c) Ch<sup>2</sup>it h<sup>3</sup>ang t<sup>3</sup>ai-ch<sup>1</sup>ī ch<sup>1</sup>ī-ū l<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>7</sup>ai-i<sup>3</sup>á\* n<sup>3</sup>ia-n<sup>3</sup>ia, ch<sup>1</sup>hia\* l<sup>1</sup>í m<sup>2</sup>ai k<sup>3</sup>ā l<sup>7</sup>ang k<sup>3</sup>ong.
- d) L<sup>1</sup>í l<sup>1</sup>ong k<sup>7</sup>an-n<sup>7</sup>ā k<sup>1</sup>ong-ōe, l<sup>1</sup>ong b<sup>7</sup>o t<sup>2</sup>eh ch<sup>7</sup>ò.
- e) G<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>7</sup>o hi<sup>2</sup>ah ch<sup>3</sup>ē ch<sup>1</sup>ī\*; g<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a k<sup>7</sup>an-n<sup>7</sup>ā ũ n<sup>3</sup>ng-p<sup>2</sup>ah kho<sup>3</sup> n<sup>3</sup>ia-n<sup>3</sup>ia.

28. kha 

- a) N<sup>3</sup>ng kh<sup>7</sup>ā ê ch<sup>3</sup>īu-s<sup>3</sup>ī ch<sup>3</sup>it si<sup>7</sup>ang ê.
- b) G<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a ē ē ĩau ch<sup>3</sup>it kha t<sup>3</sup>ī t<sup>2</sup>oh-ūi, l<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>7</sup>ai-i<sup>3</sup>á\* b<sup>3</sup>o?\*
- c) L<sup>1</sup>í ē ē ch<sup>3</sup>it kh<sup>7</sup>ā t<sup>3</sup>ī chia, ch<sup>3</sup>it kh<sup>7</sup>ā t<sup>3</sup>ī t<sup>2</sup>oh-<sup>1</sup>ā-kha.
- d) L<sup>1</sup>í ĩ<sup>3</sup>ong ch<sup>3</sup>it kh<sup>7</sup>ā t<sup>3</sup>ī b<sup>2</sup>oeh <sup>2</sup>an-ch<sup>1</sup>óa\* ch<sup>3</sup>iah-p<sup>3</sup>ng?

29. k<sup>7</sup>hoan/ch<sup>3</sup>ióng

- a) G<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>an chia ũ ch<sup>7</sup>in-ch<sup>3</sup>ē k<sup>7</sup>hoan, l<sup>1</sup>í <sup>2</sup>ai b<sup>1</sup>é t<sup>2</sup>oh ch<sup>3</sup>it k<sup>7</sup>hoan?
- b) L<sup>1</sup>in n<sup>3</sup>ng é l<sup>7</sup>ang ch<sup>3</sup>it ê k<sup>3</sup>ong ch<sup>3</sup>it k<sup>7</sup>hoan; l<sup>1</sup>í k<sup>3</sup>ong <sup>1</sup>an-ni, <sup>7</sup>ĩ k<sup>3</sup>ong <sup>1</sup>an-ni. (P)
- c) Ch<sup>2</sup>it ch<sup>3</sup>ióng hun g<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>2</sup>at chia<sup>1</sup>h, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ū m<sup>3</sup>-b<sup>2</sup>at b<sup>1</sup>é.



- d) Chhĩa\*-m̄ng, lĩn chia ũ tēh bē chít khóan mih-kĩa\* bō\*?
- e) Ĩ hít khóan lāng chín ải hō\* lāng chhĩa\*; lĩ nã kóng bōeh chhĩa\*, ĩ ít-tēng khi.

## 30. kīn

- a) Nã bōeh khi ĩn chhù, tũ chít tiâu lō\* khi khǎk kīn.
- b) Tũ hít tiâu khi bō khǎk kīn; ĩn-ũ hít tiâu chín phǎi\*-kĩa\*.
- c) Ĩ kóng-ê khǎk kīn góa é ĩ-sù. (P)
- d) Góan chhù kīn tĩ lĩn hít keng hǎk-hāu; nã ũ-êng, lái chhít-thô.
- e) ĩn hia chín kīn; iōng-kĩa\*-é chhǎ-pút-tó gō\*-hun nĩa-nĩa.

## 31. -lāi

- a) Tĩ chhũ-lāi iǎu ũ lāng bō\*?
- b) Ĩ tĩ pǎng-keng-lāi tēh kǎh lāng kóng-ōe.
- c) Tĩ chhĩa-lāi hít sǎ\* é lāng lóng sĩ góa é pēng-iú.
- d) Ĩ iǎu tĩ pǎng-keng-lāi, iǎu-bōe chhut-lāi.
- e) Tĩ kǎu-sék-lāi m̄-hó chiah-hun.

## 32. liáng

- a) Tóa sǎa\*-téng khǎk liáng.
- b) Kín-ǎ-jit khǎk bō tǎi-chí, só\*-ĩ khǎk liáng. (P)
- c) Tĩ chia chǒ Lǎu-su ũ chín liáng bō\*? (P)
- d) Chít-jit ải chǒ kǎu tiám-cheng á-sĩ cháp tiám-cheng, ản-ni bō liáng.  
上 9 hr. 10 hr.
- e) Nã ũ chhĩu-á é só\*-chǎi lóng khǎk liáng.  
樹

33. nghe 𠵹

- a) Chhĩa\* lĩn ngēh khít-lái chĩa, m̄-bián khēh-khì.
- b) M̄-bián, m̄-bián. Góa kã-tĩ nghe tō-hó. (P)
- c) He góa bō ăi chĩa, m̄i kã góa nghe. (Spoken by kids.)
- d) M̄i iōng chhĩu thēh, ăi iōng tĩ nghe. (Spoken to kids.)

34. òa\* 𠵹 òa\*-òa\*

- a) Góa chái-khí khùn kãh chín òa\* chĩa khít-lái. (P)
- b) ĩ ăm-sĩ lóng kãh òa\* khùn.
- c) Kàu-tiám chĩa siōng-khò, lãn òa\*-òa\* chĩa khì tō-hó, m̄-bián hiáh chá khì. (P)
- d) Góa chãng-àm khòa\*-chheh khòa\* kãh chín òa\* chĩa khĩ khùn.
- e) Lĩn ăn-chóa\* chĩa òa\* chĩa tēh chĩa tiōng-tàu? (P)

35. óa\* 𠵹

- a) Lí chái-khí chĩa kúi óa\* p̄ng?
- b) Hít tē óa\* sĩ s̄m-m̄h-lâng chĩa-é? Ăn-chóa\* bō thē khĩ sé?
- c) Eng-àm sĩa\*-lâng ăi sé-óa\*?
- d) Lí chĩa p̄oa\* óa\*, ăn-ni kãm ũ pá?

36. óa\*-p̄oa\*

- a) Óa\*-p̄oa\* ũ chín-chē khoán; iã ũ tōa-tè-é, iã ũ sē-tè-é.
- b) Chĩa é óa\*-p̄oa\* chín súi, m̄-kú chiók kúi.
- c) Nã chĩa pá, óa\*-p̄oa\* tiōh-ăi sé-khít-lái.

d) Bìn-á-chài ữ chín-chê lằng-kheh bœh lăi; óa\*-pôa\*  
tiôh-ăi kôn bé bô'?

## 37. pôa\*/pôa\*-á

- a) Chít khoán ế pôa\*-á chín hỏ-iông; ế kùi bễ?  
b) Pôa\* khăh tóa-tê hỏ. lí sế, góa sế óa\*.  
c) Hít pôa\* chhài chín hỏ-chiăh, góa chiăh chiok chē.

## 38. sĩ-koe

- a) Lăn lăi chiăh sĩ-koe, hó bô'?  
b) Hít liáp sĩ-koe, lí khòa\*, ăi păn-gô. kho. bô'?  
c) Sĩ-koe góa bô' ăi bé chít liáp, góa bé pôa\* liáp  
tô-hó.  
d) Chít liáp sĩ-koe lóng bô' ti\*, chiok phai\*-chiăh.

## 39. siang

- a) Lằng ữ chít siang chhú, chít siang kha.  
b) Hít nng siang ê, lí khăh ăi chhêng tởh chít siang?  
c) Tĩ chia bô' sá\* siang tĩ; ữ nng siang kôn chít kha  
nĩa-nĩa.  
d) Chít siang tĩ chín phai\*-ngêh, góa bễ-hiău ngêh.

## 40. súi

- a) Lí chhêng chiăh súi, sĩ bœh khĩ tởh-ũi, sĩ bô'?  
b) Í sía ế jĩ chín súi, chín hó-khòa\*.  
c) Hít ế chá-bỏ-gín-á ău-pái tóa-hàn ít-têng chín súi.  
d) Súi ế mih-kĩa\* lằng lóng khăh ăi bé, sĩ bô'?  
e) Lí chít ế pĩ-á chiăh súi, sĩ chĩa bé hỏ. lí ế?

41. thng

- a) Lín<sup>1</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> thng<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (P)
- b) Gó<sup>1</sup>a bô<sup>2</sup>eh lím<sup>7</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> óa\* thng<sup>3</sup> tō<sup>7</sup>-hó, bô<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-png.
- c) Chiah<sup>3</sup>-png ê<sup>7</sup> sí<sup>1</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> tiòh<sup>3</sup>-ài<sup>2</sup> lím<sup>7</sup> thng<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
*7-7 7-7 7-7*
- d) Chít<sup>2</sup> khoán<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chhài<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>1</sup> chú<sup>1</sup>-thng<sup>3</sup> khàn<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-chiah. (P)
- e) Nng<sup>3</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lãng<sup>3</sup> nĩa<sup>1</sup>-nĩa, m<sup>3</sup>-bián<sup>1</sup> chú<sup>1</sup> hiáh<sup>2</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> thng.

42. thng-sí<sup>7</sup>/thng-sí<sup>7</sup>-á

- a) Thng<sup>7</sup>-sí<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh iông<sup>3</sup> tōa<sup>3</sup>-ki-ê<sup>1</sup> á<sup>1</sup>-sí<sup>3</sup> sē<sup>2</sup>-ki-ê<sup>1</sup>?
- b) Iông<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-png; iông<sup>3</sup> thng<sup>7</sup>-sí<sup>7</sup>-á lím<sup>7</sup> thng.
- c) Sē<sup>2</sup>-hã<sup>2</sup> gín<sup>1</sup>-á bē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu<sup>1</sup> iông<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-png, tiòh<sup>3</sup>-ài<sup>2</sup>  
iông<sup>3</sup> thng<sup>7</sup>-sí<sup>7</sup>-á.

43. tiòh<sup>3</sup>/m̄<sup>3</sup>-tiòh<sup>3</sup> "M̄-tiòh" immediately following a verb indicates that the action was performed incorrectly/ something was said or done wrong.

- a) Í<sup>7</sup> án<sup>1</sup>-ni kóng<sup>3</sup> tiòh<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?  
1) Tiòh<sup>3</sup>-là, í<sup>7</sup> án<sup>1</sup>-ni kóng<sup>3</sup> tiòh.  
2) M̄<sup>3</sup>-tiòh, í<sup>7</sup> án<sup>1</sup>-ni kóng<sup>3</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-tiòh.
- b) Tiòh<sup>3</sup> á<sup>1</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-tiòh lí<sup>1</sup> kã<sup>7</sup>-tī<sup>1</sup> kãm<sup>3</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-chài<sup>7</sup>-iá\*?
- c) Gó<sup>1</sup>a nã<sup>3</sup> kóng<sup>3</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-tiòh, chhia\* lí<sup>1</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> gó<sup>1</sup>a kóng.
- d) Phái\*-sè, tãi<sup>3</sup>-khài<sup>3</sup> sí<sup>3</sup> gó<sup>1</sup>a thia\* m̄<sup>3</sup>-tiòh, m̄<sup>3</sup>-sí<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kóng  
m̄<sup>3</sup>-tiòh.
- e) Í<sup>7</sup> án<sup>1</sup>-ni kóng<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>3</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-tiòh.

44. tiòh<sup>3</sup>-ài<sup>2</sup>/tiòh<sup>3</sup>/ài<sup>2</sup>

- a) Pãi<sup>2</sup>-lãk<sup>3</sup>-ē-po<sup>1</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> tiòh<sup>3</sup>-ài<sup>2</sup> thak<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>2</sup>eh chhut<sup>3</sup>-khì, tiòh<sup>3</sup>-ài<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> pē<sup>3</sup>-bú kóng<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

c) Phái\*-sè, góa bín-á--chài ũ tãi-chì, ài khi Tái-pak,  
số·-l bē-tàng kā lí chò.

d) Tē-cháp khò ài sía; cháp-ít khò tìoh bô·? (P)

e) Lí bé chít siáng ê, ài si-páh kho· bô·?

45. tòa

a) Mài sía tòa hia; sía tòa chia tō-hó.

b) Lí bōeh kóng sía\*h? Tòa chia kóng tō-hó. (P)

c) Am-sí góa khǎh bô ài chhut-khì, góa khǎh ài tòa  
chhù-nih khǎh\* tiān-sī.

d) Lí tòa chia thak-chheh, góa bōeh khi hia sía-jī.

e) Tióng-tàu chhia\* lí tòa góan chia chiah-png, hó bô·?

-----  
TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF PATTERN SENTENCES MARKED "P"

4. a) He went to bed early last night. (Note: "a" is exclamatory at the change from the usual routine.)  
b) Early to bed, early to rise is the better way.
7. d) They treated me to a meal yesterday; they put on quite a spread. (Lit., "...they prepared until it was quite a meal". "Chún-pī" is used more in Taiwanese than "prepare" is used in English.)
8. a) He doesn't know the place; you take him there.  
b) Take him outside to play; don't bring him in here. (Mother to elder child, preferably a girl.)  
d) Do you want to babysit for someone? I'll give you my kid to take care of./I'll let you take care of my kid.
11. b) He can drink a lot of liquor; he can drink 2 or 3 bottles by himself and not get drunk. (The latter clause is an illustration of "gâu lim".)  
e) Do you want to drink Siau-hin or beer? (There are, of course, many other kinds of liquor, but at this writing these 2 are the most commonly used at a banquet.)

12. c) \$200 is enough; do you want it? (Business people will commonly give the price and say: "tō-hó" or "nīa-nīa.")
13. d) He can drink a lot; even if he drinks quite a bit he doesn't get drunk. (Khah chē = rather much. Iā = even.)
14. a) Who cooked this? How come it's so delicious? (The second is a rhetorical question.)
15. b) You're dressed so beautiful, where are you going?  
(See note on 7 d above.)
- c) I'm preparing the money now for buying a motorcycle.  
("Preparing" here means "saving".)
16. e) Here's one of your shoes; where's the other one?
17. a) When you came, had he already come?
- b) I'll tell you about this after the meal. (Chiah-pá ē<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>7</sup> = at the time when we have eaten our fill.)
- e) There are no pineapples at this time, only tangerines.
- f) Where were you at this time last night? (I came and you were not home.)
18. f) Can you teach us English, Brother Tē\*? (Do you have the time?)
- g) This garment you're wearing is so beautiful; can you buy one for me?
20. d) Living here is it very far for you to go to school?
21. a) He gets to sleep very easily; even sitting on a chair he's sleeping.
- d) He goes to sleep very quickly; he isn't in bed 5 minutes when he falls asleep. (Note: "khùn bô gō·hun-cheng": here "khùn" means "lying at rest" - not yet asleep.)
- e) It's true that he sleeps soundly; even if you call him with such a loud voice you still can't get him up.
- g) That kid is restless in sleep; let him sleep alone. (Note the phrase "ka-tī khùn chit keng = sleep in a room alone".)
22. e) He really has a way of doing this kind of thing; go ask him to do it. (OR: He really has ways...)
26. c) I'm riding to Hsinchu; where are you riding to?
29. b) You two are not saying the same thing; you say one thing and he says another. (Lit., You two people: one says 1 kind (each says something different); you speak thus, he speaks thus.)

30. c) What he says is close (OR: closer) to what I mean.
32. b) There's not much to do today (on the job), so it's an easy day.  
c) Is being a teacher here a pretty nice job?
33. b) Don't bother (to put food in my bowl). I can do it myself.
34. a) I slept until very late this morning (and only then got up).  
c) We don't have class till 9:00; it's good enough if we go closer to that time; we don't have to go so early. ("Oà\*...oà\*" does not mean "late for class" but "late" in respect to dawn.)  
e) Why are you eating the noon meal this late? (The second "chiah" means "only"; "Why is it only now - this late - that you are eating the noon meal?")
41. a) Do you want broth? (Asked by the waiter.)  
d) If you make broth out of this kind of "chhài" it's very tasty.
44. d) We have to write Ls 10; do we have to write Ls 11?
45. b) What do you want to talk about? You can tell me here (no need to go anywhere else).

KÙSENTENCES

1. Chhít n̄a sa\* n̄a lí chhēng ít-tēng bē-bái khòá\*.
2. Lāng é bīn báí, bó ít-tēng sí phái\*-lāng.
3. N̄a ài-khùn, khi sé-bīn chiū bē ài-khùn.
4. Tòh-bīn n̄a súi, chiū khān ũ lāng ài bé.
5. Góá phó\*-thong lóng khān chá cháp-hun lái hāk-hāu. (S)
6. N̄a khān chá, lō\*-n̄ih khān bó lāng.
7. Chhít-tiám chiah khāi-sí chō tiān-iá\*, lí chīm-á khi iáu chá-chá.
8. Í chin khēn-khì, góá khòá\*, lí tiōh-ài k̄a í ngēh-chhài.
9. Eng-àm chú é chhài, m̄-chai àn-chóá\*, lóng bó sīm-mih-lāng ài chiah. (S)

10. 7 1n-<sup>3</sup>ūi b<sup>7</sup>ố s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih chh<sup>1</sup>ai, s<sup>1</sup>ố-<sup>1</sup>i g<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>7</sup>ố s<sup>1</sup>im-m<sup>2</sup>ih <sup>2</sup>ai ch<sup>1</sup>iah. (S)
11. Eng-<sup>7</sup>àm b<sup>2</sup>oeh chh<sup>1</sup>ia\* l<sup>7</sup>ang-k<sup>7</sup>eh, s<sup>1</sup>ố-<sup>1</sup>i ch<sup>1</sup>ủ k<sup>2</sup>anh ch<sup>7</sup>in chh<sup>7</sup>\*-chhau.
12. N<sup>1</sup>a hi<sup>2</sup>ah chh<sup>7</sup>\*-chhau, s<sup>3</sup>i b<sup>2</sup>oeh chh<sup>1</sup>ia\* l<sup>3</sup>ang, s<sup>1</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?
13. T<sup>3</sup>ioh-<sup>2</sup>ai l<sup>7</sup>ang chh<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>a l<sup>1</sup>i kh<sup>1</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>ố\*? (S)
14. 7 b<sup>2</sup>oeh t<sup>3</sup>g-kh<sup>1</sup>i, l<sup>1</sup>i chh<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>a 7 kh<sup>1</sup>i ch<sup>3</sup>ē-chh<sup>1</sup>ia. (S)
15. T<sup>1</sup>eng ti<sup>1</sup>am-cheng k<sup>2</sup>ap l<sup>1</sup>i t<sup>2</sup>eh k<sup>1</sup>ong-<sup>1</sup>oe h<sup>2</sup>it <sup>7</sup>é l<sup>7</sup>ang s<sup>3</sup>i ch<sup>1</sup>ia?
16. Ch<sup>2</sup>it n<sup>1</sup>ia sa\* s<sup>3</sup>i si<sup>3</sup>ang ê? A<sup>2</sup>nh-ch<sup>1</sup>o<sup>3</sup>a\* b<sup>7</sup>ố th<sup>2</sup>eh-t<sup>3</sup>g-kh<sup>1</sup>i?
17. Ch<sup>1</sup>iah <sup>7</sup>é j<sup>1</sup>i s<sup>3</sup>i si<sup>3</sup>ang s<sup>1</sup>ia-<sup>3</sup>ê? S<sup>1</sup>ia k<sup>2</sup>anh ch<sup>1</sup>iah b<sup>1</sup>ai.
18. S<sup>2</sup>i-h<sup>2</sup>oe n<sup>3</sup>ia-n<sup>3</sup>ia, a<sup>1</sup>n-ni ch<sup>1</sup>io<sup>2</sup>k g<sup>7</sup>au t<sup>7</sup>oa-<sup>7</sup>é. (S)
19. H<sup>2</sup>it chh<sup>2</sup>ut ti<sup>3</sup>an-<sup>1</sup>ia\* ch<sup>7</sup>a-hng ch<sup>1</sup>io<sup>2</sup>k ch<sup>3</sup>ē l<sup>7</sup>ang kh<sup>1</sup>i kh<sup>2</sup>o<sup>3</sup>a\*.
20. L<sup>1</sup>i l<sup>7</sup>im-ch<sup>1</sup>iu b<sup>2</sup>at l<sup>7</sup>im k<sup>2</sup>anh ch<sup>1</sup>iu-ch<sup>1</sup>ui b<sup>3</sup>ố\*?
21. L<sup>1</sup>i ũ l<sup>7</sup>im-ch<sup>1</sup>iu, ho\*h? Kh<sup>2</sup>o<sup>3</sup>a\* l<sup>1</sup>i <sup>7</sup>é b<sup>1</sup>in ch<sup>1</sup>iu ch<sup>1</sup>ai.
22. L<sup>7</sup>im ch<sup>1</sup>it-n<sup>3</sup>ng poe t<sup>3</sup>o-h<sup>3</sup>o, m<sup>2</sup>ai l<sup>7</sup>im hi<sup>2</sup>ah ch<sup>3</sup>ē.
23. G<sup>1</sup>óa n<sup>3</sup>a ch<sup>7</sup>ai-<sup>1</sup>ia\* 7 <sup>3</sup>é ch<sup>1</sup>ui, g<sup>1</sup>óa ch<sup>1</sup>iu b<sup>7</sup>ố b<sup>2</sup>oeh k<sup>2</sup>oh k<sup>2</sup>anh 7 lim. (S)
24. N<sup>3</sup>a ũ s<sup>3</sup>i-kan g<sup>1</sup>óa t<sup>3</sup>o <sup>3</sup>é l<sup>1</sup>ai.
25. Ph<sup>1</sup>ai\*-<sup>3</sup>sé, g<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>7</sup>ố h<sup>2</sup>oat-t<sup>3</sup>o k<sup>2</sup>oh lim; n<sup>3</sup>a k<sup>2</sup>oh lim <sup>3</sup>é ch<sup>1</sup>iu-ch<sup>1</sup>ui.
26. Ch<sup>1</sup>iah <sup>7</sup>é chh<sup>1</sup>ai l<sup>1</sup>ong s<sup>3</sup>i l<sup>1</sup>i ch<sup>1</sup>ú-<sup>3</sup>é, s<sup>1</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>ố\*? Ch<sup>7</sup>in g<sup>7</sup>au ch<sup>1</sup>ú.
27. G<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>3</sup>ē-hi<sup>1</sup>au ch<sup>1</sup>ú, t<sup>3</sup>ai-kh<sup>1</sup>ai kh<sup>2</sup>anh b<sup>7</sup>ố h<sup>1</sup>ó-ch<sup>1</sup>iah. (Humble words spoken by a non-professional cook.)  
M<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>1</sup>i là. Ch<sup>7</sup>in h<sup>1</sup>ó-ch<sup>1</sup>iah.
28. G<sup>1</sup>óa b<sup>7</sup>in-<sup>1</sup>a-ch<sup>1</sup>ai b<sup>2</sup>oeh kh<sup>1</sup>i T<sup>7</sup>ai-pak, ch<sup>1</sup>im-<sup>1</sup>a t<sup>2</sup>eh ch<sup>1</sup>un-p<sup>3</sup>i ch<sup>1</sup>it-k<sup>3</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a s<sup>7</sup>a\*-kh<sup>1</sup>o.
29. B<sup>2</sup>oeh chh<sup>1</sup>ia\* l<sup>7</sup>ang-k<sup>7</sup>eh <sup>7</sup>é m<sup>1</sup>ih-k<sup>3</sup>ia\* l<sup>1</sup>ong ch<sup>1</sup>un-p<sup>3</sup>i h<sup>3</sup>ó b<sup>3</sup>oe?



30. Chít n̄ng siang ê, lí khòa\*, tón chít siang khah hó-  
khòa\*?
31. Lín tòa chia chē, góa khi bé hō. lín chia.
32. Thak-chheh ê-sī ăi jīn-chin thak-chheh, mǎi kǎn-nǎ  
chhit-thô.
33. Khòa\* tiān-iá\* ê-sī, chá-bó<sub>子</sub>-gín-á lóng chin ăi chia<sub>甘</sub>  
mih-kīa\*.
34. Lí khah gáu bé, lí ē-tàng kǎ góa bé bē?
35. Thak-chheh ê sī-chūn, góa bē-tàng chhit-khi chhit-thô.
36. Lí tòa thang-á-mng-gōa tén khòa\*-chheh, sī bō? (S)
37. Ū chin hng bō? Iōng-kīa\*-ê ăi kúi hūn-cheng?
38. Chá-hng kīa\*-lō. kīa\* chiók hng, só<sub>子</sub>-l kha chin sng.
39. Ī chē-chhia iǎ tén khùn, ū-iǎ\* chin hó-khùn.
40. Tī soa\*-nīh chin liang, chin hó-khùn.
41. Phái\*-sè, ĩn-ūi góa ū tǎi-chi, só<sub>子</sub>-l bō hōat-tō. khi.
42. Lí nǎ bōeh kǎ ĩ kóng, lí bōeh iōng sīm-mih hōat-tō.  
kǎ ĩ kóng?
43. Lí nǎ chīm-á khi ĩn chhù, góa khòa\*, ĩn ĩ-kéng chia<sub>甘</sub>  
pá ă.
44. Ī chá-hng ĩ-kéng ū lái ă.
45. ĩn ĩ-kéng khi chhā-pút-tó pōa\* tiám-cheng a.
46. Koeh Siān-sī\* ĩn hiǎh ê gín-á lóng chin iǎn-tāu. (S)
47. ŀng Siān-sī\* chin iǎn-tāu, ĩn thǎi-thài iǎ chin súi.
48. Lí tēng-jit khi Jit-goat-thām ū bé mih-kīa\* tng-lái bō?

49. Jit<sup>3</sup>-goat<sup>3</sup>-thâm<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô<sup>3</sup>, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> tĩ<sup>3</sup> hia<sup>2</sup> tēh<sup>7</sup> bē<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>  
mih<sup>3</sup>-kĩa\*<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> kùi.
50. Chít<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> tãi<sup>3</sup>-chì<sup>7</sup> í<sup>7</sup> chò<sup>2</sup> kãh<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> pòa\*<sup>3</sup> tō<sup>3</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chò<sup>3</sup> á. (S)
51. Lí<sup>1</sup> châng<sup>7</sup>-àm<sup>3</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh<sup>3</sup> thak<sup>3</sup> kãh<sup>2</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> tiám?
52. Hiáh<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> thng<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> kãn<sup>7</sup>-nã<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> liáp<sup>3</sup> nĩa<sup>3</sup>-nĩa<sup>3</sup>, tō<sup>3</sup>  
bō<sup>7</sup> á. (S)
53. Eng<sup>7</sup>-àm<sup>7</sup> kãn<sup>7</sup>-nã<sup>7</sup> góan<sup>3</sup> nng<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> tĩ<sup>3</sup> chhù<sup>3</sup>-nih<sup>3</sup> nĩa<sup>3</sup>-nĩa<sup>3</sup>.
54. Chít<sup>2</sup> khoán<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> koe<sup>1</sup>-chí<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> iáu<sup>3</sup> m̄<sup>3</sup>-bát<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>1</sup>.
55. Chít<sup>2</sup> khoán<sup>1</sup> tãi<sup>3</sup>-chì<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> ít<sup>2</sup>-tēng<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu<sup>1</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> chò.
56. Tũ<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> kãh<sup>2</sup> kĩn<sup>3</sup>, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> kãh<sup>2</sup> phá<sup>1</sup>\*-kĩa\*. (S)
57. Tĩ<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> chhĩa<sup>7</sup>-lãi<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> pàu<sup>7</sup> hun<sup>1</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> thēh<sup>3</sup>-chhūt<sup>3</sup>-lãi<sup>3</sup>.
58. Tōa<sup>2</sup> chhũ<sup>2</sup>-lãi<sup>2</sup> chhít<sup>2</sup>-thô<sup>3</sup>, mãi<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> lō<sup>2</sup>-nih<sup>1</sup>.
59. Góan<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> lé<sup>1</sup>-pài<sup>7</sup> kãn<sup>7</sup>-nã<sup>7</sup> pãi<sup>2</sup>-lak<sup>2</sup> kãh<sup>2</sup> liâng<sup>3</sup> nĩa<sup>3</sup>-nĩa<sup>3</sup>. (S)
60. Chia<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> liâng<sup>3</sup>, nã<sup>3</sup> tōa<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>1</sup> khùn<sup>2</sup>, ít<sup>2</sup>-tēng<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-khùn<sup>1</sup>.
61. Aĩ<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> sım<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup>? Kã<sup>7</sup>-tĩ<sup>3</sup> ngheh.
62. Lé<sup>1</sup>-pãi<sup>2</sup>-jít<sup>7</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>2</sup> khùn<sup>2</sup> kãh<sup>2</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> òa\*<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> peh<sup>3</sup>-khít<sup>3</sup>-lãi<sup>3</sup>.
63. Lí<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> òa\*<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup>-chhài<sup>3</sup>, tãi<sup>3</sup>-khài<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> lóng<sup>7</sup>  
tēh<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>7</sup> á.
64. Góan<sup>1</sup> kã<sup>7</sup>-tēng<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>-nĩ<sup>7</sup> chhã<sup>7</sup>-pút<sup>2</sup>-tō<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> pãi<sup>1</sup> óa\*. (S)
65. Í<sup>7</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> óa\*<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> png<sup>3</sup>, lóng<sup>1</sup> sĩ<sup>3</sup> chhài.
66. Lí<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> phá<sup>1</sup>\*-khùn<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>? Nã<sup>3</sup> phá<sup>1</sup>\*-khùn<sup>2</sup>, kã<sup>7</sup>-tĩ<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> khùn<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup>  
keng.
67. Chít<sup>2</sup> pòa\*<sup>7</sup> chhài<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> tōa<sup>3</sup> pòa\*, góa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, ăi<sup>2</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> kùi.  
(S)
68. Sĩ<sup>7</sup>-koe<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> liâng<sup>2</sup> kōh<sup>2</sup> ti\*<sup>3</sup> kãh<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>. (S)

69. Lãng tềh thak-chheh, mãi tóa chia kóng-ōe.
70. Che m̄-sī chít siang; che sī nnḡ kha. (S)
71. Ĩ hít siang chhiú lóng bô sé, chhiu tềh chiah-pnḡ. 竹 吃 釘
72. Chít nía sa\* chin súi; lóa-chê chí\* bé-ê?
73. Lím-chiú é-sī lí ải lím-thng bô? (S)
74. Iōng thng-sí-á lím-thng é-sī, mãi hiáh tóa sia\*.
75. Lí nã bōeh bé, bé chít nía khảnh súi kónh khảnh siok.
76. Chít jī góa sía ản-ni tìoh bô?
77. Sī lí thía\* m̄-tìoh, m̄-sī góa kóng m̄-tìoh.
78. Chít hăng tãi-chì lí tìoh-ải kã ĩ kóng khảnh hó.
79. Lí chē tóa chia tềh khòa\* sia\*h?
- Tềh khòa\* ỉn lím-chiú. 吃 常
80. Phái\*-sè, ỏ-thỏ-bái góa ải iōng, bē-tàng hō lí khĩa.
81. Góa é sa\*-khò lí chím-ả ẻ-tàng kã góa chò bē?
82. Chít pún sī lí ê, bô m̄-tìoh, ho\*h?
83. Lí m̄-sī pải-sa\* bōeh khì, sī ầu kớ-gōeh chhe-nih chia²h bōeh khì, tìoh bô? (S)

-----

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED "S"

5. I usually come to school 10 minutes early. (I.e., 10 minutes before class. Note "phố-thong lóng = usually all the time". Such use of "lóng" is very common.)
9. I don't know what's the matter with the food tonight; hardly anybody wants to eat. ("Lóng bô lạng" would mean "no one".)
10. I don't feel much like eating because there's not much to eat. (This does not necessarily refer to volume of food but to lack of the type the speaker likes.)

13. Do you need someone to take (guide) you there?
14. He's going home; take him to the bus.
18. He's only four - he's certainly big for his age.
23. If I had known he would get drunk, I wouldn't have continued to drink with him.
36. You're sitting outside the window reading, are you? (A greeting from inside the house.)
46. Those kids of Mr. Koeh are all very handsome. (They are all boys. If both boys and girls we should say: "In lóng chin sú".)
50. He took care of this matter until it was half-done then dropped it.
52. I only had one piece of that candy and it disappeared. (I took one, left and came back and it was all gone.)
56. If we go through here it's closer but harder walking.
59. During the week (lit., one week) only Saturday is somewhat easy. (It's "liâng" because there is less work that day - because, e.g., there's half a day off. But "liâng" is not used of full days off.)
64. About once a year my family has to buy bowls. / About every year my family has to buy all new bowls. (-Because of breakage. The meaning is not that they are all bought at the same time, but that during the year the family has to buy so many.)
67. This dish of food is so big; I think it has to be very expensive. (Note: "tōa" requires repetition of "pōa\*").)
68. If a watermelon is cool and sweet it tastes better.
70. These are not a pair; they don't match (lit., it's 2 singles).
73. Do you like broth with your wine? (Some people do.)
83. You're not going on Wednesday; you're not going till the beginning of next month, is that right?

TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. Only if I have the money will I go buy it. 視若有錢即卜買
2. Oh, later on this boy of yours will certainly be strikingly handsome.
3. When we got there, they had everything all prepared.
4. Please sit here.

5. If Mr. <sup>^</sup>Âng comes, Mrs. <sup>^</sup>Âng will come. (She goes with him everywhere.)
6. I came at 8:30 but I didn't have class until 9:00.
7. Let's go on August the 7th; if we take the bus we'll be there in something over an hour.
8. Today it's very cool. (Said only in summer.)
9. He'll get sleepy if he drinks.
10. It's not certain that he will go.
11. What are you doing there?

I'm watching him teach Taiwanese. 他在教台語。

The Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences:

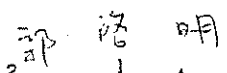
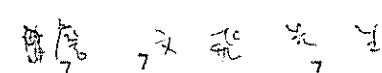
1. G<sup>1</sup>o<sup>3</sup> n<sup>3</sup> <sup>3</sup>ũ ch<sup>1</sup>i\* ch<sup>2</sup>i<sup>h</sup> b<sup>2</sup>o<sup>h</sup> k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup> b<sup>2</sup>e.
2. ò\*, l<sup>1</sup>in ch<sup>2</sup>it é g<sup>1</sup>in-á <sup>3</sup>āu-pái í<sup>2</sup>t-tē<sup>3</sup>g ch<sup>2</sup>io<sup>2</sup>k i<sup>7</sup>ān-tāu.
3. G<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>an k<sup>2</sup>au-ūi é<sup>7</sup> s<sup>1</sup>i, <sup>7</sup>in ch<sup>3</sup>iū l<sup>1</sup>ong í<sup>1</sup>-kē<sup>7</sup>g ch<sup>1</sup>un-p<sup>3</sup>ī hó á<sup>3</sup>.
4. Ch<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ia\* l<sup>1</sup>í/l<sup>1</sup>in t<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a ch<sup>2</sup>ia ch<sup>2</sup>ē.
5. <sup>^</sup>Âng Si<sup>3</sup>an-si\* n<sup>3</sup>ā l<sup>3</sup>ai, <sup>^</sup>Âng Th<sup>2</sup>ai-th<sup>2</sup>ai ch<sup>3</sup>iū é<sup>3</sup> l<sup>3</sup>ai.
6. G<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a p<sup>2</sup>eh-ti<sup>1</sup>ám-p<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\* t<sup>3</sup>ō l<sup>7</sup>ai á, <sup>3</sup>m-k<sup>1</sup>ú k<sup>2</sup>au k<sup>1</sup>au-ti<sup>2</sup>ám ch<sup>2</sup>i<sup>h</sup> si<sup>3</sup>ong-kh<sup>2</sup>ò.
7. L<sup>1</sup>an p<sup>2</sup>eh-g<sup>3</sup>o<sup>h</sup>eh ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>e ch<sup>7</sup>hit l<sup>7</sup>ai-k<sup>h</sup>i; n<sup>3</sup>ā ch<sup>3</sup>ē-ch<sup>3</sup>hia k<sup>h</sup>i, ti<sup>1</sup>ám-g<sup>3</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a-ch<sup>2</sup>eng t<sup>3</sup>ō é<sup>3</sup> k<sup>2</sup>au.
8. K<sup>7</sup>in-á-j<sup>1</sup>it ch<sup>7</sup>in li<sup>1</sup>ang.
9. Í n<sup>3</sup>ā l<sup>7</sup>im-ch<sup>3</sup>iú t<sup>3</sup>ō é<sup>3</sup> ài-k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>un.
10. Í b<sup>7</sup>ó í<sup>2</sup>t-tē<sup>3</sup>g b<sup>2</sup>o<sup>h</sup>eh k<sup>h</sup>i.
11. Lí t<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a (OR: t<sup>3</sup>ī) h<sup>2</sup>ia t<sup>2</sup>eh ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ong-si<sup>2</sup>a\*h? G<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a t<sup>2</sup>eh k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\* í k<sup>2</sup>ā T<sup>7</sup>ai-g<sup>1</sup>í.

Tē Chap-sá\* Khò

Lesson 13

TUI-OE

DIALOGUE



  
 K = K<sup>2</sup>oeh Khé-bêng Sián-si\*      C = Chiám Būn-hui Sián-si\*

K1: Būn-hui, lí têng-jít ũ tēh kóng bōeh khî A-lí-san chhít-thô, chím-á ũ bōeh khî bô?

C1: Bōeh á; lí iá bōeh khî, sī bô? In-ūi nā kan-ná chít é lāng khî, sít-chāi bô i-sù; lí nā bōeh khî, an-ni siōng-hó. Lí tâng-sī bōeh khî?

K2: Ū lāng kóng tī hia jōah-thi\* khān ē loh-hō, nā loh-hō. Chiū bē-tāng chhít-khî chhít-thô. Kōa\*-thi\* sui-jiān khān kōa\*, m-kú bē loh-hō, bōeh chhít-khî chhít-thô khān lí-piān. Só-ī kōa\*-thi\* khî hia khān hó.

C2: Chít-kú-jít thi\*-khî lóng bē-bái, iá bē siū\* kōa\*, iá bē siū\* jōah; gōa khòa\*, lán pài-gō. lái-khî, lé-pài tng-lái, an-ni hó bô?

K3: An-ni chin hó; só-ī lán chít lé-pài é tãi-chì kàu pài-sì tiōh tãi-seng chō hō. hó, pài-gō. lái-khî, an-ni chít-kú-jít lán chiū ē-tāng chhít-thô kán chin hōa\*-hí.

C3: Thiá\* lāng kóng chím-á tui Tái-tiong ē-tāng chē bāh-suh khî A-lí-san. Khān-chá ái seng chē khî Ká-gī, chiān tui hia chē hōe-chhia khî sōa\*-teng.

K4: Sī là, chím-á Ká-gī kàu A-lí-san hít tiâu lō. chō liáu chin súi kōh chin tōa tiâu.

C4: Hít tiâu lō̄· chō̄ iâu-bōe hó é-sī, gōa bāt chē pēng-iú ē  
 chhia khī chit pái, m̄-kú hít é-sī bē-tāng kàu Ā-lí-san.

K5: Chīm-á Tái-tiong kàu Ā-lí-san ū Tiong-hīn-hō̄ ē; lóng ū  
 tui-hō̄. 中 興 5

C5: An-ni hó, in-ūi siōng iâu-kín-ê sī ai ū ūi thāng chē,  
 in-ūi gōa nā iōng-khīa-ê gōa bō hōat-tō̄. Hít jít sī  
 lán nng ē khī tō̄-hó, á-sī bōeh chhōa gin-á khī? Gōa  
 khòa\*, lán chhōa gin-á lái-khī, hó bō\*?

K6: Hó a; nā an-ni sī nng ē tōa-lāng, sī ē gin-á; só̄-ī  
 tōh-ài bé nng tiu\* chōan-phìo káp sī tiu\* pōa\*-phìo.

C6: Lán eng-àm lái-khī chhia-thâu bé-phìo; bé hó é-sī, lán  
 lái-khī bé chit nia sa\*, bōeh khī chhit-thō̄ é-sī thāng  
 chhēng. 穿

K7: Hó, m̄-kú gōa tōh tái-seng sé seng-khu, sé hó, lán chiāh  
 lái-khī. Chhia\* lí chē tōa chia khōa\* tiān-sī.

C7: Lín hiāh ē gin-á lóng khī tōh-ūi?

K8: Lóng tī gōa-bīn tēh kĩa\*-lái-kĩa\*-khī.

-----  
SĪN-GÍ

VOCABULARY

1. Ā-lí-san 阿里山 Alisan/Mt. Ali (a mountain near Chiayi -  
 a resort area). Note: "San" means "mountain". We have  
 used "soa\*" for "mountain". "San" and "soa\*" are both  
 readings of one and the same Han character (山) ㄕㄢ  
 "San" is called the "character reading" ("jī-im") ㄕㄢ  
 and "soa\*" is called the "colloquial pronunciation"  
 ("péh-ōe-im"). 白話音
2. bāh-suh 巴士, 公共汽車 bus. (Measure: in respect to the  
 vehicle itself: "tái"; in respect to time of arrival/  
 departure: "pang". See Voc. Note 1.)  
 Kóng-lō̄-kiok/Tái-oán-khēh-ūn Highway Bureau Bus  
 Company.

中興<sup>3</sup>  
Tiông-hin-hō/Tiông-hin-é Chunghsin Bus (of the Highway Bureau).

彰化<sup>2</sup>客運<sup>2</sup>  
Chiong-hòa khèh-ūn Changhua Bus Company (private).

tùi-hō reserved seat.

Tiông-hin ũ tùi-hō. The Tiông-hin has reserved seats.

3. bān 慢, 晚, 遲 slow;late. (Oppos. of "kín", No. 21.)

ī tēh chō tāi-chì chin bān. He does things very slowly.

Chhia bān-hun. The train/bus is late.

4. chhī-lāi-chhia 公共汽車 city bus. (Lit., intracity bus. The characters read "kong-kiōng-khì-chhia = public-common-motor vehicle", a term that is less common in speech.)

5. chhia-thâu/chhia-chām 車站 (train/bus) station. (Measure: é)

Tī chhia-thâu ũ chin-chē lāng. There are many people at the station.

Lī chhōa ī khi chhia-thâu chē-chhia. Take him to the station to get the bus/train.

6. chhì 笑 to laugh/smile/giggle/snicker/ridicule/jeer.

chhìo-chhìo all smiles.

kōng-chhìo to tell a joke.

Lī tēh chhìo sīm-mih? What are you laughing at?

7. chōan-phìo 全票 full-fare ticket. (Measure: tiu\*) (See No. 30.)

pōa\*-phìo half-fare ticket.

Chōan-phìo ài lōa-chē chī\*? How much is a full-fare ticket?

Lī hiān tōa-hàn ài bé chōan-phìo. You're so big you have to buy a full-fare ticket.



8. chōe-kīn 這幾天，最近 recently; the next few days/soon.

Chōe-kīn tīa\*-tīa\* loh-hō\*. It's been raining a lot lately.

Lí chōe-kīn ũ bōeh khi tōh-ūi bō\*? Are you going anywhere soon (OR: in the next few days)?

9. chúí 水 water. (The Measure is the container, in which the water is held.) (This is the "chúí" of "kún-chúí", Ls 3.)

Bō chúí thàng sé. We don't have any water to wash with.

Lí ài lím léng-kún-chúí bō\*? Do you want a drink of cold water? (See No. 27.)

10. hō\* 雨 rain.

loh-hō\* to rain.

loh-hō\*-thi\* rainy weather. ("Thi\*" = heaven/sky". This is the "thi\*" of "thi\*-khi", No. 43.)

Hō\* loh chin tōa, mǎi chhut-khi. The rain is very heavy, don't go out.

11. hō\* 得 until; so that/to cause/to effect.

Verb + hō\* + Modifier (This construction is usually used to give advice or a command. The tone on "hō\*" never changes. See Gram. Note 6.)

Gōa-bīn khāh kōa\*, lí tōh-ài chhēng hō\* sio. It's cold out, you have to dress warm (until you are warm/up to the point that you are warm).

Ài chō hō\* hó. You must do it until it's finished./ You must finish it. (For this use of "hó" see Gram. Note 1.)

NE. This "hō\*" construction is not used in the Past Tense except in a question. Example:

Lí ũ chiah hō\* pá bō\*? Did you eat till full?

Ū, gōa chiah pá ā. Yes, I'm full.

12. hó<sup>7</sup>a\*-hí 高興, 歡喜 happy/glad/delight; be happy about/  
be happy to.

Lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> lâi, gó<sup>1</sup>a ē<sup>3</sup> chin hó<sup>7</sup>a\*-hí. I'll be delighted if  
you come.

Lí<sup>1</sup> ǎn-ni kóng, í<sup>7</sup> chin bô<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>7</sup>a\*-hí. He's very unhappy  
about what you said.

Lí<sup>1</sup> tē<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>7</sup>a\*-hí sīm-mih? What are you so happy about?

Í<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> hó<sup>7</sup>a\*-hí khi. He'll be happy to go.

13. hó<sup>1</sup>e-chhia 火車 train. (Measure in respect to time of  
arrival or departure: "pang"; see Voc. Note 1 B.)

Lí<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>2</sup>eh chē<sup>3</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>e-chhia á-sī<sup>3</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> bāh-suh? Are you  
going to take the train or the bus?

Tú<sup>2</sup>i chia khi<sup>2</sup> Tái-pak, hó<sup>1</sup>e-chhia chít-jít<sup>3</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> kú<sup>1</sup>i pang? <sup>̄/̄</sup>  
How many trains a day are there from here to  
Taipei?

14. (iǎu-bōe) 還沒, 尚未

Verb + iǎu-bōe + Modifier (Indicates that the  
action of the verb has begun but is not finished/  
not yet accomplished. See Gram. Note 5.)

Sa\* sé<sup>1</sup> iǎu-bōe<sup>3</sup> hó./Sa\* sé<sup>1</sup> iǎu-bōe<sup>3</sup> liáu.} I haven't  
finished washing the clothes yet.

Í<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>h iǎu-bōe<sup>3</sup> pá; í<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>2</sup>eh kō<sup>2</sup>h chia<sup>1</sup>h. He hasn't  
finished eating yet; he wants to eat some more.

15. iǎu-kín 要緊, 重要 important/serious.

Kín-á-jít<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>7</sup> ū<sup>3</sup> iǎu-kín<sup>2</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? Does it make any  
difference if we don't go today?

Kín-á-jít<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> iǎu-kín<sup>2</sup>. It's all right if  
we don't go today.

16. jóah 熱 to be hot. (Used of weather and persons; and  
places insofar as they affect persons. For explanation  
of weather vocabulary see Voc. Note 2.)

Lāi-bīn<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> jóah, gōa-bīn<sup>3</sup> khā<sup>2</sup>h liāng. It's very hot  
indoors; it's cooler outside.

Tâi-oân ê joah-thi\* lóng chín joah. Summers in  
Taiwan are really hot.

17. joah-thi\* 夏天, 熱天 summer/in the summer.

Bôeh kâ gín-á bē joah-thi\*-sa\*. I'm going to buy  
summer clothes for the kids.

Joah-thi\* góa khah ai līm léng ê tê (OR: léng-tê).  
In summer I prefer cold tea/water. (But see  
Lē-Kū No. 34 c and note at P.)

18. kē-thēng-chhia 計程車 taxi. (Measure: tâi)

Chín joah, lán chē kē-thēng-chhia lái-khì. It's  
very hot; let's go by taxi.

Ī tēh sái kē-thēng-chhia. He drives a taxi.

19. khah ē 較會 (較不會) to be likely/to be more likely  
to. (Neg.: khah bē.)

Láng-kheh ū lái á bô, Liáu Thài-thài khah ē chái-ia\*.  
Mrs. Liáu is more likely to know whether a guest  
has come.

20. khia 站, 立 to stand.

Chhia\* khia-khít-lái. Please stand up.

Lí khia tòa hia tēh khóa\* sia\*h? You're standing  
there looking at what?

21. kín 快 fast. (Oppos. of "bān". No. 3.)

Ī khia 0'-thó'-bái chín kín. He rides a motorcycle  
very fast.

Khah kín chiah, mǎi kóng-ōe. Eat up quickly;  
don't talk. (Spoken to kids.)

22. Kó-sók-kóng-lō. 高速公路 Freeway. (Lit., high-speed-  
public-road). (Measure: tiâu.)

Lán tui Kó-sók-kóng-lō khì, khah kín. Let's go by  
the Freeway; it's faster.

23. kôa\* 冷, 寒 cold/wintry. (Used only of weather/  
persons.)

Lí ē kôa\* bē? Are you cold? (Note "ē" with  
undesirable quality.)

Kin-ā-jit khah kôa\*, lí chhēng kúi n̄a sa\*? It's  
colder today; how many clothes are you wearing?  
(Note: People talk about how many layers of  
clothing they wear above the waist.)

24. kôa\*-thi\* 冬天 winter.

Kôa\*-thi\* soa\*-téng khah kôa\*. In winter the  
mountains (lit., mountain top) are pretty cold.

Kôa\*-thi\* thāng-ā-m̄ng koai\*-khít-lâi khah sio. In  
winter if you close the windows it's warmer.

25. kú 久 long (in time).

Lōa kú? How long?

Hō· lí chò ài lōa kú? If I give you this to do  
(OR: make), how long will it take?

Tâi-pak gōa chin kú m̄-bat khī ā. I haven't gone to  
Taipei in a long time.

26. lâi...khī 來...去

(Verb + ) lâi ( + Verb ) + khī back and forth/  
around and about. (See Gram. Note 7.)

Tī lō·-nih ũ chin-chē lāng tēh lâi-lâi-khī-khī.  
There are a lot of people passing by on the  
street.

Ī tēh kīa\*-lâi-kīa\*-khī bōeh chhōng-sia\*h? What's  
he walking all around here for?

27. léng 冷 cold. (Used of things/weather.)

léng-kún-chúi water (for drinking). (Boiled and  
now cold or at room temperature.)

Lí ē chhiú ān-chóa\* hiáh léng? Why is your hand  
so cold?

sí-koe nã ũ léng kháh hó-chiah. Watermelons taste  
better cold.

28. liáu 了, 完, 得 finished.

Thng-á chiah liáu á. The candy is all eaten up.

Chit hāng tã-chì í chò liáu chin hó. He did this  
very well. (For the construction "chò liáu chin  
hó" see Gram. Note 4.)

Kóng liáu bōe? Has he finished speaking?

Kóng iáu-bōe liáu. He hasn't finished speaking  
yet. (For this construction see Gram. Note 5.)

29. pang 班 run/trip (of bus/train/ship/airplane).

āu pang the next train/bus/etc. (on the schedule).

ám-pang-chhia the last train/bus/etc. (on the  
schedule).

chā-pang-chhia the first (earliest) train/bus/etc.  
(on the schedule).

Chit-jit ũ kúí pang? How many trains/buses a day  
are there?

Góa bōeh chē káu-tiám-pòá\* hīt pang. I'll take the  
9:30.

Lín hia ē ám-pang-chhia sī kúí tiám-ê? What time  
is the last bus from your place?

30. phìo 票 ticket. (Measure: tiu\*)

chhia-phìo ticket for train/bus/etc.

bé-phìo to buy a ticket.

Lí ũ bé-phìo bōe? Did you buy a ticket yet?

Lí khí ká góa bé nng tiu\* chhia-phìo, hó bô\*? Go  
buy me 2 bus/train tickets, OK?

Lí ká góa bé nng tiu\* chōan-phìo, chit tiu\* pòá\*-phìo.  
Buy me 2 full-fare tickets and one half-fare.

31. phó<sup>1</sup>-thóng<sup>7</sup>-chhia 普通車 local train/local bus (as distinguished from express; see No. 44.)

Chē<sup>3</sup> phó<sup>1</sup>-thóng<sup>7</sup>-chhia chin<sup>7</sup> bān. If you take the local train/bus it's pretty slow.

Chit<sup>2</sup> pang sī<sup>3</sup> phó<sup>1</sup>-thóng<sup>7</sup>-chhia, ho<sup>\*h</sup>? This is the local bus/train, isn't it?

32. sé<sup>1</sup>-seng<sup>7</sup>-khū<sup>7</sup>-keng<sup>3</sup>/sé<sup>1</sup>-ék<sup>3</sup>-keng<sup>7</sup>/ék<sup>3</sup>-keng<sup>7</sup>-á 洗澡間, 浴室 bathroom. (Sé = to wash; ék = to bathe.) (Measure: keng)

Piān<sup>3</sup>-só<sup>3</sup> tī<sup>3</sup> ék<sup>3</sup>-keng<sup>7</sup>-á-lāi. The toilet is in the bathroom.

33. <sup>身</sup>seng<sup>7</sup>-khu 身體 body (human/animal). (Measure: ê)

Joah<sup>3</sup>-thi<sup>\*</sup> tiōh<sup>3</sup>-ái<sup>2</sup> tak<sup>3</sup>-jit<sup>3</sup> sé<sup>1</sup> seng<sup>7</sup>-khu. In summer you have to take a bath every day.

34. <sup>燒</sup>sio 熱 hot/warm. (Used of things/body/parts of body.)

sé<sup>1</sup> sio<sup>7</sup>-chúi/iōng<sup>3</sup> sio<sup>7</sup>-chúi sé to wash with warm/hot water.

Chúi<sup>燒</sup> sio-a, lí<sup>燒</sup> kīn<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> sé. The water is hot; hurry up and take your bath.

35. <sup>燒</sup>sio<sup>7</sup>-joah 溫暖 (of weather) warm. (Not used during the summer season.)

Kīn<sup>7</sup>-á-jit<sup>1</sup> khāh<sup>2</sup> sio<sup>7</sup>-joah, m<sup>3</sup>-biān<sup>1</sup> chhēng<sup>3</sup> hiāh<sup>2</sup> chē. It's rather warm today; you don't have to wear that much.

36. siōng/chòe 最, 上 most (sign of superlative).

Chit<sup>2</sup> hāng<sup>3</sup> chhài<sup>3</sup> siōng<sup>1</sup> hó<sup>1</sup>-chiah. This particular item of food tastes best./This dish tastes best.

I<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> mih<sup>3</sup>-kīa<sup>\*</sup> chōe<sup>2</sup> kui. He (i.e., what he sells) is the most expensive.

37. <sup>3</sup>sit-chāi 實在 really/truly; real/true/honest.

<sup>3</sup>Sit-chāi <sup>3</sup>sī <sup>3</sup>ān-ni. It is really so./That's actually the way it is.

<sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>3</sup>sit-chāi <sup>3</sup>m-chāi-ia\*. I truly don't know.

38. <sup>1</sup>siu\* 過於, 太 excessively/too.

<sup>7</sup>Siu\* chē, <sup>3</sup>m-biān <sup>1</sup>hiāh <sup>2</sup>chē. That's too much; there's no need for that much.

<sup>7</sup>Siu\* <sup>3</sup>tōa nía, <sup>1</sup>phái\*-khòa\*. It's too big; it looks awful.

39. <sup>7</sup>sui-jiân 雖然 although.

<sup>7</sup>Sui-jiân <sup>7</sup>chín kùi, <sup>3</sup>m-kú <sup>1</sup>chín hó. It's very good, although it's expensive. (Note "m-kú" used naturally after "sui-jiân".)

<sup>7</sup>I <sup>7</sup>sui-jiân <sup>3</sup>bē-hiáu, <sup>3</sup>m-kú <sup>1</sup>chín <sup>3</sup>jīn-chin. Though he doesn't know how, yet he tries hard.

40. <sup>1</sup>tak 各, 每 each/every.

<sup>1</sup>Che <sup>3</sup>tak <sup>1</sup>só\*-chāi <sup>1</sup>lóng <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>2</sup>tēh bē. This is sold everywhere.

<sup>7</sup>I <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>3</sup>tak-jit <sup>7</sup>lâi chia <sup>3</sup>thāk-chheh <sup>3</sup>bô\*? Does he come here to study every day?

41. <sup>2</sup>tēh-boeh 快要, 將要 be about to/be going to/be on the point of. (Usually followed by "a" except when "ê-sī" follows; tone of "a" according to the 1-3-7 Rule.)

<sup>1</sup>Chīm-á <sup>2</sup>tēh-boeh <sup>3</sup>cháp-tiám <sup>3</sup>á. It's nearly 10:00 now.

<sup>7</sup>Hō\* <sup>2</sup>tēh-boeh <sup>7</sup>lâi <sup>7</sup>á. It's about to rain.

42. <sup>7</sup>thang/tháng-á/<sup>7</sup>tháng-hó/<sup>7</sup>tháng-lâi 可以, 可 for the purpose of/to/in order that/in order to. (Introduces a purpose clause or phrase which modifies a preceding noun. See Gram. Note 2.)

<sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>7</sup>bô chí\* <sup>7</sup>tháng bé. I don't have the money to buy it.

Gó<sup>1</sup>a bô<sup>7</sup> ôe th<sup>7</sup>ang-á<sup>1</sup> kóng. I have nothing to say.

L<sup>1</sup>ân bô<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup>-chú<sup>7</sup>i th<sup>7</sup>ang-hô<sup>1</sup> chh<sup>1</sup>ia\* l<sup>7</sup>âng-k<sup>7</sup>eh. We don't  
have any soda for the visitors.

43. th<sup>7</sup>i\*-kh<sup>7</sup>i 天氣 weather.

K<sup>7</sup>in-á<sup>1</sup>-j<sup>7</sup>it th<sup>7</sup>i\*-kh<sup>7</sup>i ch<sup>7</sup>in hó. It's a fine day.

K<sup>7</sup>in-á<sup>1</sup>-j<sup>7</sup>it hó-th<sup>7</sup>i\*. It's good weather today. (This frequently means: "It's a sunny day". It is definitely not raining.)

44. t<sup>3</sup>it-t<sup>3</sup>at-chh<sup>3</sup>ia 直達車 express bus. (Makes fewer stops than the local bus but is slower than the special buses such as Tiong-Hin. Like the local bus the "t<sup>3</sup>it-t<sup>3</sup>at-chh<sup>3</sup>ia" has no reserved seats.)

Ū<sup>3</sup> t<sup>3</sup>it-t<sup>3</sup>at-chh<sup>3</sup>ia th<sup>7</sup>ang ch<sup>3</sup>ē bô<sup>3</sup>? Are there any  
"express buses" (i.e., faster than the local)?

45. tiu\* 張 (Measure for paper (= sheet) and for tickets, cards, etc.; later we will study the word for "paper".)

L<sup>1</sup>i chh<sup>7</sup>ia-ph<sup>7</sup>io bô<sup>2</sup>eh b<sup>1</sup>é k<sup>1</sup>ui tiu\*? How many bus  
tickets do you want?

Ch<sup>3</sup>it-chh<sup>7</sup>eng kho<sup>1</sup>-é Ū<sup>3</sup> k<sup>1</sup>ui tiu\*? How many thousand  
dollar bills are there here (OR: do you have)?

TŪI-ŌE É HOAN-ĒK

TRANSLATION OF DIALOGUE

Taking a bus

K1: B<sup>7</sup>un-hui, the other day you were saying you were going to Alisan to have some fun; are you going now?

C1: Yes. (Note the "a" for emphasis.) Are you going too? (Because) if somebody goes alone it's not so interesting (lit., it's meaningless). If you're going, that's great (lit., best). When do you want to go?

K2: Some say that it's more likely to rain there in hot weather, and if it rains you can't go out (to recreate). In winter although it's cold it won't rain; that's better for going out (lit., you're going out to have fun it's more convenient). So it's better to go there in the cold weather.



- C2: These few days the weather hasn't been bad at all; it's not too cold or too hot; how about (lit., I think) going Friday and coming back Sunday, is that all right?
- K3: That will be very good. So first this week's business we have to have finished by Thursday (night); we go on Friday and so these few days (Friday to Sunday) we can recreate to our heart's content (lit., recreate up to the point of being very happy).
- C3: I hear it said that now you can take a bus from Taichung to Alisan. Previously you had to go to Chiayi and get the train there to go to the mountain top.
- K4: Yes. Now the Chiayi - Alisan road is beautiful and it's very wide (lit., big).
- C4: Before that road was finished I was on it once in my friend's car, but at that time you couldn't get to Alisan on it.
- K5: Now there are Tiong-hin buses from Taichung to Alisan; they're all reserved seat buses.
- C5: That's good because what's most important is having a seat; if I stand I'll never make it (lit., "I have no way" of enduring it). Will the two of us going that day be good enough or do you want to take the kids? I think we should take the kids, is that all right?
- K6: OK; if they go then it's 2 adults and 4 kids, so we have to buy 2 full-fare tickets and 4 half-fare.
- C6: Let's go to the station tonight to buy the tickets; after buying them let's go buy a shirt to wear on the trip.
- K7: OK, but I have to take a bath first and then (after the bath) let's go. Please sit here and watch T.V.
- C7: Where did those kids of yours go?
- K8: They're both outside playing around.

-----  
SĪN-GÍ Ē CHŪ-KÁI

VOCABULARY NOTES

1. VEHICLES

A. BUSES

"Bāh-suh" (No. 2 in Vocab.). "Chhia" is the word used most frequently for "bus", but "chhia" can also mean many other types of vehicles and is the ordinary word for "automobile". We may say "chhia" whenever the listener understands which type of vehicle is meant. "Bāh-suh" always means "bus" and can be used of every kind of bus.

Buses are frequently identified by the company that owns them.

- 1) The biggest bus company is government-owned and is called:

<sup>7</sup>Kōng-<sup>3</sup>lō̄-<sup>1</sup>kiok = Public-road-Bureau = Highway Bureau.

The official name of this bus company is:

<sup>7</sup>Tâi-<sup>7</sup>oân <sup>2</sup>Khêh-<sup>2</sup>ūn = Taiwan Motor Transport. (<sup>2</sup>Khêh-<sup>2</sup>ūn = passenger transport.)

Some types of Highway Bureau buses are:

- a) <sup>2</sup>Kōk-<sup>7</sup>kōng-hō ("Kōk-kōng-hō" is similar to the Greyhound, has a built-in toilet.)
- b) <sup>7</sup>Tióng-hin-hō/<sup>7</sup>Tióng-hin-<sup>1</sup>ê. (Mainly Mercedes buses.)
- c) <sup>7</sup>Kim-má-<sup>1</sup>hō (lit., golden-horse-number).
- d) <sup>3</sup>Tit-tat-<sup>3</sup>chhia.
- e) <sup>1</sup>Phó̄-<sup>7</sup>thōng-<sup>7</sup>chhia.

Types a, b and c are all reserved seat buses.

- 2) The usual name for private companies that run regular routes is:

<sup>2</sup>Khêh-<sup>2</sup>ūn (lit., passenger transport), preceded by the name of the city where its headquarters is; e.g.:

<sup>7</sup>Sin-<sup>2</sup>ték <sup>2</sup>Khêh-<sup>2</sup>ūn = Hsinchu Bus Company.

- 3) <sup>3</sup>Chhī-lāi-<sup>3</sup>chhia. City bus.

NB. MEASURE of a bus: As vehicle: "<sup>1</sup>tâi".

In respect to time of arrival/departure: "pang".

## B. TRAINS

<sup>1</sup>"Hóe-<sup>1</sup>chhia" (No. 13 in Vocab.) train.

The Measure: 1) The most common measure of a train is "pang" - this refers to the train in respect to time of arrival/departure. This is true of buses also.

- a) <sup>3</sup>Gō̄-<sup>7</sup>tiám <sup>3</sup>sá\*-<sup>3</sup>cháp-<sup>3</sup>lak hun <sup>3</sup>ũ <sup>3</sup>chit pang. There's a train at 5:36.

- b) Tui chia khi Kó-hiông tak-jit ũ chin-chê pãng chia.  
There are a lot of buses from here to Kaohsiung every day.

2) For a whole train or of a particular car on the train, for measure most people say "tâi". The measure of a particular car on a reserved seat train is "hō = number".

- a) Lí ê sī gō<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> chia. Your car is No. 5.  
b) Lí ê í-á-ūi sī kúí hō<sup>7</sup> é? What's the number of your seat? (í-á-ūi = seat place.)  
精位位

NB. Here are the names of different kinds of train (as of this writing). (The first 4 are reserved seat trains.)

- 1) Chū-kióng-hō ("Self-strengthening-train" - the fastest).  
2) Kí-kong.                                 3) Hók-hin.  
4) Tui-hō-khòai.                             5) Phó<sup>1</sup>-thóng-chhia.

## 2. WEATHER

### A. HOT

A difficulty in Taiwanese is that there are 2 words translated "hot" ("joah" and "sio") but they are not used interchangeably.

1. "Joah" (No. 16) refers to the weather and to persons, not to things.
- a) Kín-á-jit chin joah. It's hot today.  
b) Góa chin joah. I'm hot.  
c) Chít keng chin joah. This room is hot (because it's summer, not because of a heater).  
d) ò<sup>3</sup>, lâi-té chin joah; chhia\* lí khui thâng-á-mng.  
Oh, it's really hot in here; please open a window.

燒

2. "Sio" (No. 34) does not refer directly to the weather nor to a person, but to things and to the condition of the room/car/part of body, etc.

a) Chít keng chín sio. This room is warm/hot.  
(Note that this is spoken in winter; it is not warm from the weather but from a heater or from being shut up.)

b) Chít tấi chhia chín sio. This car is warm/hot.  
(Note: if spoken in winter the car is warm because it is closed up or because of a heater. In summer a car is "sio" because, for example, it is under a hot sun -- thus the weather is indirectly referred to.)

c) Ô<sup>7</sup>-thô<sup>1</sup>-bái<sup>7</sup> khá<sup>7</sup> liáu<sup>7</sup> chín sio. The motorcycle is hot after being ridden.

d) I<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chhiú<sup>7</sup> chín sio. His hand is hot.

e) Gó<sup>1</sup>a chē<sup>2</sup> hít<sup>7</sup> tấi<sup>2</sup> kē<sup>7</sup>-thēng<sup>7</sup>-chhia ê<sup>7</sup> í<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>7</sup> chín sio. The seat of the taxi I rode in was hot. (Note: "chhia ê<sup>7</sup> í<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>7</sup>"; contrast with Sentence f.)

✓ f) Gó<sup>1</sup>a ê<sup>7</sup> kí<sup>7</sup>-chhia (OR: thính<sup>2</sup>-bé) ê<sup>7</sup> í<sup>1</sup>-chē<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>7</sup> chín sio. My motorcycle seat (OR: bicycle seat) is hot. (Note that a motorcycle or bicycle seat is called "í<sup>1</sup>-chē<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>7</sup>".)  
椅<sup>7</sup>坐<sup>7</sup>仔

B. COLD

There are 2 words for "cold": "kôa\*" and "léng".

1. "Kôa\*" (No. 23) is used only of the weather and the person, not of things. "Kôa\*" is used only in winter.

a) Kín<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-jít<sup>7</sup> chín kôa\*. It's cold today.

b) Gó<sup>1</sup>a chín kôa\*. I'm cold.

2. "Léng" (No. 27) is used of things (water/food/etc.); is not used of persons except in reference to parts of the body (also to the body in death). "Léng" is also used of the weather to mean "very chilly" or to express only one's personal feeling that it is indeed "cold". "Kôa\*" means it is cold to everyone.

- a) Kín-<sup>7</sup>á-jít<sup>1</sup> kháh<sup>2</sup> léng; <sup>2</sup>ái chhēng<sup>3</sup> hō· sio. It's colder today; you have to dress warm.
- b) Chiáh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chhài<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> léng; góa<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> <sup>2</sup>ái chiáh<sup>3</sup> léng-ê<sup>3</sup>. This food is cold; I don't like it cold.
- c) <sup>7</sup>Í siáng<sup>7</sup> kha<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> léng. His feet are cold. (Lit., Both his feet are cold.)

✓ C. "COOL" IN SUMMER: "WARM" IN WINTER

"Liàng" (Ls 12) when referring to the weather means "cool" and is used only in summer. "Sio-jóah" (No. 35) means "warm" and is used only in winter.

- a) Tēng<sup>1</sup> lé-pài<sup>1</sup> hiáh<sup>2</sup>-nih<sup>3</sup> jóah, chít<sup>2</sup> lé-pài<sup>1</sup> kháh<sup>2</sup> liàng. It was so hot last week; it's cooler this week.
- b) Chá<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>2</sup> hiáh<sup>2</sup> kôa\*; kín-á-jít<sup>7</sup> chiáh<sup>2</sup>-nih<sup>3</sup> sio-jóah. It was so cold yesterday; today it's so warm.

BUN-HOAT

GRAMMAR

1. "Hó" and "Liáu" MEANING "Finished"

- A. "Hó" (Ls 1) we have translated in many ways: "good; OK; well; easy, etc.". We may also translate it "finished; all right; all set" (in the sense of "finished properly"). Examples of "hó" as "finished":

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> sa\* góa<sup>1</sup> ká<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> sé<sup>1</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> á. 矣 I have finished washing your clothes for you.
- b) Góan<sup>1</sup> sián-si\*<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> sa\* lí<sup>1</sup> ká<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> bōe? Have you finished making my husband's clothes yet?
- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> ó·-thó<sup>1</sup>-bái; bé<sup>1</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> bōe? You said you would buy a motorcycle; did you buy it all right (is it all set/did you complete the buying)?
- ✓ d) Lín<sup>1</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chhēh<sup>7</sup> táng-sí<sup>7</sup> chiáh<sup>2</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>3</sup> hó? When will you finish writing that book of yours?

## B. DISTINCTION BETWEEN "hó" AND "liáu"

"Liáu" (Voc. No. 28) means "finished thoroughly/completely/entirely". "Hó" means "completed" but does not usually convey so strong an impression of thoroughness. At times there is a difference in the quantity referred to, but often "hó" and "liáu" may refer to the same quantity, as, for example, the amount of clothes to be washed. "Hó" can mean "finished" to the point that one is satisfied.

Examples of "hó" and "liáu"

a) Hít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh lí<sup>1</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> liáu<sup>3</sup> bōe? Have you finished the book (i.e., read it from cover to cover)?

b) Hít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh lí<sup>1</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> bōe? Have you finished the book?

Khòa\*<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> a. I've finished it (i.e., read as much as I want to read).

c) Hiáh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chheh lí<sup>1</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> liáu<sup>3</sup> bōe? Have you read those books (i.e., all of them from cover to cover)?

d) Hiáh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chheh lí<sup>1</sup> khòa\*<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> bōe? Have you finished those books?

Khòa\*<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> a. I've finished them (i.e., I've read as much as I want to read).

e) Hít<sup>2</sup> nía<sup>1</sup> sa\*<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> sé<sup>1</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> bōe? Have you finished washing that garment?

NB. We may not use "liáu" in Sentence e: "liáu" is not used to refer to the washing of 1 or 2 garments. But see Sentence a above, where "liáu" may refer to the reading of a single book.

f) Hiáh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> sa\*<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> sé<sup>1</sup> liáu<sup>3</sup> bōe (OR: sé<sup>1</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> bōe)? Have you finished washing those clothes?

Note: in some cases there can be a subtle difference between "hó" and "liáu", but often we are free to disregard the difference. For example see the following 2 sentences:

g) Jī<sup>1</sup> sĩa hó<sup>3</sup> bōe? OR: Jī<sup>1</sup> sĩa liáu<sup>1</sup> bōe<sup>3</sup>? Did you finish writing your characters?

Sĩa hó<sup>3</sup> ả. OR: Sĩa liáu<sup>1</sup> ả. Finished.

h) Hít<sup>2</sup> hăng<sup>3</sup> tãi-chì<sup>3</sup> chỏ<sup>2</sup> iấu-bōe<sup>3</sup> hó. OR: Hít<sup>2</sup> hăng<sup>3</sup> tãi-chì<sup>3</sup> chỏ<sup>2</sup> iấu-bōe<sup>3</sup> liáu. I haven't finished that business yet.

NB. But in many cases people definitely prefer one form to the other; it is best to listen carefully to which word is used in what circumstances.

## 2. Thang/thang-ả/thang-hó/thang-lai

These 4 expressions (No. 42 in Voc.) are often used as introductory particles to a purpose clause/phrase, thus may be translated by "in order to/in order that" or simply by "to". This clause/phrase modifies a preceding noun. The 4 expressions are interchangeable.

- a) Góá<sup>1</sup> ữ<sup>3</sup> chheh<sup>7</sup> thàng<sup>7</sup> khòa\*. I have a book to read.
- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> ữ<sup>3</sup> chí\*<sup>7</sup> thàng-ả<sup>1</sup> iōng. You have money to spend.
- c) Ỉ<sup>7</sup> ữ<sup>3</sup> sa\*<sup>7</sup> thàng-hỏ<sup>1</sup> chhēng. She has clothes to wear.
- d) Góá<sup>1</sup> ữ<sup>3</sup> chhia<sup>7</sup> thàng-lai<sup>7</sup> sái. I have a car to drive.
- e) Chín<sup>7</sup> sít-lé<sup>2</sup>, góá<sup>1</sup> bỗ<sup>7</sup> mih-kĩa\*<sup>3</sup> thàng hỏ<sup>7</sup> lí. I have nothing to give you, I'm sorry.
- f) Ỉ<sup>7</sup> bỗ<sup>7</sup> ỏe<sup>7</sup> thàng kóng. He is unable to say anything./ He has no adequate answer./He has no way of answering.
- g) Ỉn<sup>7</sup> bỗ<sup>7</sup> thàng chiah. They have nothing to eat. ("Food" is understood.)
- h) Lâng<sup>3</sup> ữ<sup>3</sup> kha<sup>7</sup> thàng kĩa\*. Humans have feet for walking.

## 3. REPETITION OF THE VERB

If the object of a verb follows the verb and we wish to use one of the following 3 elements after the object, it is best to repeat the verb between the object and the element.

1) a TIME element:

- a) Gó<sup>1</sup>a t<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a T<sup>7</sup>ái-l<sup>2</sup>âm t<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a ch<sup>3</sup>ít k<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>-g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>eh. I lived in Tainan for 1 month. ("Tái-lâm" here is considered the object of the verb "t<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a".)

Note: Sentence a as stated is better Taiwanese than "Gó<sup>1</sup>a t<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a T<sup>7</sup>ái-l<sup>2</sup>âm ch<sup>3</sup>ít k<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>-g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>eh".

2) a NUMERAL:

- a) I<sup>7</sup> t<sup>1</sup>éng k<sup>1</sup>ó<sup>1</sup>-g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>eh k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>i T<sup>7</sup>ái-p<sup>2</sup>ak k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>i s<sup>7</sup>a\* p<sup>1</sup>ái. He went to Taipei 3 times last month. (This is preferable to: "k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>i T<sup>7</sup>ái-p<sup>2</sup>ak s<sup>7</sup>a\* p<sup>1</sup>ái".)
- b) Gó<sup>1</sup>a k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\* h<sup>2</sup>ít p<sup>1</sup>ún ch<sup>2</sup>eh k<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\* n<sup>3</sup>ng p<sup>1</sup>ái. I read that book twice.

3) the words "liáu/hó" when they mean "FINISHED":

- a) L<sup>1</sup>ín th<sup>2</sup>ai-th<sup>2</sup>ai ch<sup>2</sup>o sa\* ch<sup>2</sup>o liáu ch<sup>7</sup>ín h<sup>1</sup>ó-k<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a\*. Your wife makes clothes that are really beautiful. (Lit., "Your wife makes clothes when finished making are really beautiful". See Gram. Note 4.) (Do not say: "L<sup>1</sup>ín th<sup>2</sup>ai-th<sup>2</sup>ai cho sa\* liáu" or "cho liáu sa\*".)

4. 

VERB	liáu	MODIFIER
------	------	----------

This construction indicates the speaker's judgment on how something was done. "Liáu" here shows that the action is completed. (Later we will study how to describe the judgment on how an action is being done right now.)

- a) Chi<sup>2</sup>ah é<sup>7</sup> j<sup>1</sup>i í<sup>7</sup> s<sup>1</sup>ia liáu ch<sup>7</sup>ín h<sup>1</sup>ó-k<sup>1</sup>h<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a\*. He wrote these characters well.
- b) H<sup>2</sup>ít n<sup>1</sup>ia sa\* ch<sup>2</sup>o liáu ch<sup>7</sup>ín s<sup>1</sup>úi. That dress is beautiful.

5. 

VERB	i <sup>1</sup> áu-b <sup>1</sup> ōe	MODIFIER
------	-------------------------------------	----------

This construction indicates that the action of the verb has been started but not yet completed.

- a) Gó<sup>1</sup>a chi<sup>3</sup>ah i<sup>1</sup>áu-b<sup>3</sup>ōe p<sup>1</sup>a. I haven't finished eating yet.



- b) Sa\* nã<sup>3</sup> sé<sup>1</sup> iáu<sup>1</sup>-bōe<sup>3</sup> liáu/hó, bín-á<sup>7</sup>-chài<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>2</sup> sé.  
If you haven't finished washing the clothes yet,  
wash them tomorrow.
- c) Khi<sup>2</sup>-chúi<sup>2</sup> lim<sup>7</sup> iáu<sup>1</sup>-bōe<sup>3</sup> liáu. (Not "hó".) I haven't  
finished the soda yet.
- d) Hít<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>3</sup> thak<sup>1</sup> iáu<sup>1</sup>-bōe<sup>3</sup> liáu, góan<sup>1</sup> tō<sup>3</sup> hā<sup>3</sup>-khò. (Not "hó".)  
Our class ended before we finished that lesson.

6.	VERB	hō <sup>•</sup>	MODIFIER
----	------	-----------------	----------

This construction (No. 11 in Voc.) is used generally to give advice or a command, in which case it is not used of the past (though the advice/command may have been given in the past). In a question the construction may be used of a past action. NB. The tone on "hō<sup>•</sup>" DOES NOT CHANGE.

- a) Aí<sup>2</sup> sía<sup>1</sup> hō<sup>•</sup> súi. You must write beautiful  
characters./You must write nice.
- b) Kín-á<sup>7</sup>-jít<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> kôa\*<sup>2</sup>; ái<sup>2</sup> chhēng<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>•</sup> sio. Today it's  
very cold; you must dress warm.
- c) Chá<sup>7</sup>-hng<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> ká<sup>7</sup> í<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> chhēng<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>•</sup> sio. Yesterday  
I told him to dress warm.
- d) Chhía\*<sup>1</sup> lín<sup>1</sup> mái<sup>2</sup> khéh<sup>2</sup>-khì<sup>1</sup>, chiah<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>•</sup> pá. Please don't  
hesitate, eat till you're full.
- e) Káu<sup>2</sup> āu<sup>3</sup>-lé<sup>1</sup>-pài<sup>7</sup> é<sup>2</sup> pài<sup>1</sup>-it<sup>7</sup> it<sup>2</sup>-tēng<sup>3</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> chhō<sup>2</sup> hō<sup>•</sup> hó. It  
must be finished by next Monday.
- f) Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chhō<sup>2</sup> hō<sup>•</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> bōe? Have you finished it yet?  
Ū<sup>2</sup> là; chhō<sup>2</sup> hó<sup>3</sup> á. Yes, it's finished.

NB. Do NOT use "chhō<sup>2</sup> hō<sup>•</sup> hó" in answering this question.

7.	VERB	lái	VERB	khì
----	------	-----	------	-----

In this construction (No. 26 in Vocab.), "lái...khì" has the notion of "back and forth/around and about", etc.

- a) Í<sup>7</sup> téh<sup>2</sup> kía\*-lái<sup>7</sup>-kía\*-khì<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chhōng<sup>2</sup>-sia\*h? What's  
he walking all around here for?
- b) Gín-á<sup>1</sup> tía\*-tía\*<sup>3</sup> ká<sup>3</sup> góa<sup>1</sup> chhā<sup>1</sup>-lái<sup>7</sup>-chhā<sup>1</sup>-khì. The kids  
are always pestering me.

*me k' v'le i*

- c) (Góá) Chiáh-lâi-chiáh-khì iā-sī Tâi-oân-chhài Khâh hó-chiáh. I've tried every kind of food and (I say) Taiwanese food is the best.
- d) Tī hia ū chin-chē sa\*, m̄-kú khòa\*-lâi-khòa\*-khì bô chit nia góa ài ê. There are lots of clothes there but after looking them all over there isn't one I want.

LĒ-KŪ

PATTERN SENTENCES

1. Ā-lī-san

2. bāh-suh

- a) Bōeh khì hia ū bāh-suh thāng chē bô?
- b) Lī bōeh chē kú tiám é bāh-suh khì Ā-lī-san?
- c) Bōeh khì Biâu-lék é bāh-suh chit-jit ū kú pang?
- d) Góa khì Oân-lîm é-sí chē hōe-chhia khì, m̄-kú tng-lâi é-sí chē bāh-suh.

(In Sentence d to use "chhia" for "bus" would not be clear. We could use another common word, depending on which type of bus we rode. See the following 2 sentences.)

- e) Góa chē kóng-lō\*-kiok-é tng-lâi. I came home on the Highway Bureau bus.
- f) Góa chē Chióng-hōa-Khêh-ūn tng-lâi.

3. bān bān-hun *h' b' z*

- a) Ī kía\*-lō\* chin bān.
- b) Chā-hng siu\* óa\* lâi, in-ūi chhia bān-hun.
- c) Góa é pio-á ū-sí-á siu\* bān, ū-sí-á siu\* kín.

d) Chē<sup>3</sup> phó<sup>1</sup>·-thông-chhia<sup>7</sup> siu\* bān; góa<sup>1</sup> bōeh chē<sup>3</sup> tit-  
tāt<sup>3</sup>-chhia.

e) Khan<sup>2</sup> bān<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>2</sup> iāu-kín<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>? (Later.)

#### 4. chhī-lāi-chhia

a) Chít<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> só<sup>1</sup>·-chāi<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chhī-lāi-chhia<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> kia\*<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

b) Chē<sup>3</sup> kē<sup>2</sup>-thēng-chhia<sup>7</sup> hiāh<sup>2</sup> kùi; chē<sup>3</sup> chhī-lāi-chhia<sup>3</sup>  
tō<sup>3</sup>-hó.

c) Tái-tiong<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chhī-lāi-chhia<sup>3</sup>-phìo<sup>7</sup> chōan-phìo<sup>7</sup> pēh<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>2</sup>,  
pōa\*-phìo<sup>2</sup> sĩ<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>2</sup>.

d) Góa<sup>1</sup> tak-jit<sup>3</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> chhī-lāi-chhia<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hāk-hāu<sup>3</sup>.

#### 5. chhia-thâu/chhia-chām

a) Chhia\*<sup>1</sup> mng, chhia-thâu<sup>7</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> tui<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi<sup>2</sup> khi? (P)

b) Tui<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> chē<sup>2</sup> kē<sup>7</sup>-thēng-chhia<sup>7</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> chhia-thâu<sup>2</sup> ai<sup>2</sup>  
lōa-chē<sup>3</sup> chí\*?

c) Nā<sup>3</sup> lé-pài-jit<sup>2</sup> chhia-thâu<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> chin-chē.

d) Lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hōe-chhia-thâu<sup>7</sup> á-sī<sup>3</sup> bāh-suh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chhia-thâu?

#### 6. chhiò<sup>7</sup> chhiò-chhiò<sup>2</sup> kóng-chhiò<sup>1</sup>

a) Í<sup>7</sup> án-ni<sup>1</sup> kóng, kóng<sup>1</sup> liáu<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hō-chhiò.

b) Í<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> gáu<sup>1</sup> kóng-chhiò; í<sup>7</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> kóng, lāng<sup>7</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> ê<sup>3</sup> chhiò.

c) Lāng<sup>7</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> mng<sup>1</sup> í, í<sup>7</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> chhiò-chhiò<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> ìn<sup>3</sup> lāng. (P)

d) Góa<sup>1</sup> sĩ<sup>3</sup> kán<sup>2</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> kóng-chhiò<sup>1</sup> nīa-nīa, bō<sup>7</sup> phái\*<sup>1</sup> í-sù.  
(P)

e) Í<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> gáu<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>1</sup> Tái-gí, í<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> òh<sup>1</sup> nīa-nīa; lín<sup>1</sup>  
m-hó<sup>3</sup> ká<sup>1</sup> í<sup>7</sup> chhiò.

7. ch<sup>7</sup>oan-ph<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>o      p<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\*-ph<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>o

- a) T<sup>3</sup>i T<sup>7</sup>ái-ti<sup>2</sup>ong kh<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\* ti<sup>3</sup>ān-iá\* ch<sup>7</sup>oan-ph<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>o á<sup>2</sup>i l<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>a-ch<sup>2</sup>ē?
- b) L<sup>1</sup>í hi<sup>2</sup>āh t<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>a-h<sup>2</sup>àn, g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a kh<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\*, ti<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>h-á<sup>2</sup>i b<sup>1</sup>é ch<sup>7</sup>oan-ph<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>o.
- c) K<sup>7</sup>a-g<sup>3</sup>ī, n<sup>3</sup>ng t<sup>7</sup>iu\* ch<sup>7</sup>oan-ph<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>o, ch<sup>3</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>iu\* p<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\*-ph<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>o. (P)
- d) G<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a kh<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\*, b<sup>7</sup>ó b<sup>1</sup>é ch<sup>7</sup>oan-ph<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>o b<sup>3</sup>ē-t<sup>2</sup>āng j<sup>1</sup>íp-kh<sup>2</sup>ì.

8. ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>e-k<sup>2</sup>īn

- a) Ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>e-k<sup>2</sup>īn A-l<sup>1</sup>í-san t<sup>3</sup>īa\*-t<sup>3</sup>īa\* l<sup>3</sup>òh-h<sup>2</sup>ō.
- b) Ch<sup>2</sup>ít ti<sup>7</sup>āu l<sup>2</sup>ō. ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>e-k<sup>2</sup>īn ch<sup>2</sup>īāh ũ ch<sup>3</sup>h<sup>3</sup>ī-l<sup>3</sup>āi-ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ia t<sup>2</sup>ēh k<sup>3</sup>īa\* n<sup>3</sup>īa-n<sup>3</sup>īa. (P)
- c) L<sup>1</sup>īm Si<sup>3</sup>ān-s<sup>3</sup>ī\*, Ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>1</sup>ī Si<sup>3</sup>ān-s<sup>3</sup>ī\* ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>e-k<sup>2</sup>īn ē kh<sup>2</sup>ì l<sup>1</sup>í h<sup>1</sup>ia b<sup>3</sup>ē? A) 3
- d) Ĩ ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>e-k<sup>2</sup>īn t<sup>3</sup>īa\*-t<sup>3</sup>īa\* b<sup>7</sup>ó l<sup>7</sup>āi h<sup>3</sup>āk-h<sup>2</sup>āu, m<sup>3</sup>-ch<sup>7</sup>āi s<sup>3</sup>ī àn-ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\*. (P)
- e) Ch<sup>2</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>āi ỏ-th<sup>1</sup>o-b<sup>1</sup>ái g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a b<sup>1</sup>é b<sup>7</sup>ó l<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>a k<sup>2</sup>ú; g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>e-k<sup>2</sup>īn ch<sup>2</sup>īāh b<sup>3</sup>é n<sup>3</sup>īa-n<sup>3</sup>īa.
- f) G<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>e-k<sup>2</sup>īn b<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>eh b<sup>1</sup>é ch<sup>3</sup>ít t<sup>7</sup>āi ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ia.

9. ch<sup>2</sup>ú<sup>2</sup>i 2/1

- a) L<sup>1</sup>ín ē ch<sup>2</sup>ú<sup>2</sup>i h<sup>2</sup>ō. g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>a s<sup>1</sup>é-ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ú<sup>2</sup>, h<sup>2</sup>ó b<sup>3</sup>ó?
- b) N<sup>3</sup>ā á<sup>2</sup>i-kh<sup>2</sup>ùn, kh<sup>2</sup>ì i<sup>3</sup>ōng l<sup>1</sup>éng-ch<sup>2</sup>ú<sup>2</sup>i s<sup>1</sup>é-b<sup>3</sup>īn ch<sup>3</sup>īu b<sup>3</sup>ē á<sup>2</sup>i-kh<sup>2</sup>ùn.
- c) M<sup>3</sup>-ch<sup>7</sup>āi àn-ch<sup>2</sup>o<sup>2</sup>a\*, g<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>an ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ū ch<sup>1</sup>īm-á b<sup>7</sup>ó ch<sup>2</sup>ú<sup>2</sup>i; l<sup>1</sup>ín ch<sup>2</sup>h<sup>2</sup>ū ũ ch<sup>2</sup>ú<sup>2</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>ó? 3
- d) J<sup>3</sup>o<sup>3</sup>ah-th<sup>1</sup>ī\* l<sup>1</sup>í i<sup>3</sup>ōng s<sup>1</sup>io-ch<sup>2</sup>ú<sup>2</sup>i s<sup>1</sup>é s<sup>7</sup>éng-kh<sup>1</sup>u á-s<sup>3</sup>ī s<sup>1</sup>é l<sup>1</sup>éng-ch<sup>2</sup>ú<sup>2</sup>i?
- e) Ch<sup>7</sup>ín j<sup>1</sup>o<sup>1</sup>ah, l<sup>1</sup>í á<sup>2</sup>i l<sup>7</sup>īm l<sup>1</sup>éng-k<sup>1</sup>ún-ch<sup>2</sup>ú<sup>2</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>ó? 3

10. hō̄<sup>7</sup> lōh-hō̄<sup>3</sup> lōh-hō̄<sup>3</sup>-thi\*

- a) Hō̄<sup>3</sup> lōh<sup>7</sup> chín tōa. (P)  
 b) Chím-á<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> lōh<sup>3</sup> tōa hō̄<sup>3</sup>.  
 c) Hō̄<sup>2</sup> tēh-bōeh<sup>2</sup> lái<sup>7</sup> á, lín<sup>1</sup> tiōh<sup>3</sup> khǎh<sup>2</sup> kǐn<sup>1</sup> tóg-khì.  
 d) Lōh-hō̄<sup>3</sup>-thi\* lō̄<sup>1</sup>-nìh<sup>1</sup> láng<sup>2</sup> khǎh<sup>2</sup> chíó. (P)  
 e) Jóah-thi\* nā<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lōh-hō̄<sup>3</sup> chíu<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> khǎh<sup>2</sup> liâng.

11. Verb + hō̄ + Modifier

- a) Hiǎh<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> jī<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>1</sup> sía hō̄<sup>2</sup> liáu<sup>2</sup> chiǎh<sup>2</sup> chhut-khì. (P)  
 b) Kín-á<sup>7</sup>-jít<sup>1</sup> khǎh<sup>2</sup> kōa\*, ái<sup>2</sup> chhēng<sup>3</sup> hō̄<sup>2</sup> sío.  
 c) Góa<sup>1</sup> kǎ<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> chàì, m̄<sup>3</sup>-kú<sup>1</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> tiōh-ái<sup>2</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> hō̄<sup>2</sup> hó. (P)  
 d) Hiǎh<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> chhài<sup>1</sup> chhǎa\* lín<sup>1</sup> chiǎh<sup>3</sup> hō̄<sup>2</sup> liáu, m̄<sup>3</sup>-biǎn<sup>1</sup> khēh<sup>2</sup>-khì.  
 e) Mái<sup>2</sup> sái<sup>1</sup> hiǎh<sup>2</sup> kín, sái<sup>1</sup> hō̄<sup>2</sup> hó. (P)  
 f) Lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chiǎh<sup>3</sup> hō̄<sup>2</sup> pá<sup>3</sup> bô?  
 Ũ<sup>3</sup> là; chiǎh<sup>3</sup> pá<sup>3</sup> á.

12. hóa\*-hí

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>-hiáu, khǎ<sup>2</sup> m̄ng<sup>7</sup> í, í<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hóa\*-hí<sup>1</sup> kǎ<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kóng.  
 b) Lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> án-ni<sup>1</sup> kóng, í<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> hóa\*-hí.  
 c) Hít<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> gín-á<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hóa\*-hí, ín-úi<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> sìn-sa\*.  
 d) Í<sup>7</sup> thía\* lí<sup>1</sup> kóng lí<sup>1</sup> bōeh<sup>3</sup> chhōa<sup>7</sup> í<sup>7</sup> khǎ<sup>2</sup> khōa\* tiān-íá\*, í<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hóa\*-hí.  
 e) Lí<sup>1</sup> án-chóa\*? Ũ<sup>3</sup> sím-mih<sup>2</sup> tǎi-chì<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> hóa\*-hí, sí<sup>3</sup> bô?  
 (P)

1) Bô là; bô là.

2) Bô là; bó<sup>7</sup> sím-mih<sup>2</sup> tǎi-chì<sup>3</sup>.

13. h<sup>1</sup>oe-chhia

- a) L<sup>1</sup>e-p<sup>2</sup>ai-j<sup>1</sup>it, 7<sup>1</sup>n-<sup>3</sup>ui l<sup>1</sup>ang ch<sup>1</sup>e, n<sup>3</sup>a b<sup>2</sup>oeh ch<sup>3</sup>e h<sup>1</sup>oe-chhia, chhia-ph<sup>7</sup>io <sup>2</sup>ai s<sup>7</sup>eng b<sup>1</sup>e; n<sup>3</sup>a b<sup>1</sup>o, b<sup>1</sup>e-b<sup>1</sup>o.
- b) Ch<sup>3</sup>e h<sup>1</sup>oe-chhia kh<sup>2</sup>ah b<sup>1</sup>an, ch<sup>3</sup>e b<sup>2</sup>ah-suh kh<sup>2</sup>ah k<sup>1</sup>in; l<sup>1</sup>an ch<sup>3</sup>e b<sup>2</sup>ah-suh l<sup>7</sup>ai-kh<sup>1</sup>i.
- c) Ch<sup>7</sup>it p<sup>7</sup>ang h<sup>1</sup>oe-chhia k<sup>1</sup>ui ti<sup>1</sup>am b<sup>2</sup>oeh khui?
- d) G<sup>1</sup>oa ch<sup>1</sup>e h<sup>2</sup>it p<sup>7</sup>ang h<sup>1</sup>oe-chhia b<sup>1</sup>an-hun, s<sup>3</sup>o-<sup>1</sup>i kh<sup>2</sup>ah b<sup>3</sup>an
- e) <sup>kau</sup> A-g<sup>7</sup>i <sup>ph<sup>7</sup>ai</sup> u k<sup>1</sup>ong i b<sup>2</sup>oeh ch<sup>3</sup>e t<sup>2</sup>oh ch<sup>3</sup>it p<sup>7</sup>ang h<sup>1</sup>oe-chhia l<sup>1</sup>ai b<sup>3</sup>o?

14. i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>1</sup>oe Verb + i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>1</sup>oe + Modifier

- a) Hi<sup>2</sup>ah e j<sup>7</sup>i l<sup>1</sup>i k<sup>1</sup>am s<sup>1</sup>ia i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe li<sup>3</sup>au (OR: h<sup>3</sup>o)? (P)
- b) Ti<sup>3</sup>an-s<sup>1</sup>i ch<sup>2</sup>o i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe li<sup>3</sup>au, i t<sup>7</sup>o kh<sup>1</sup>un-kh<sup>1</sup>i a.
- c) T<sup>3</sup>e-it p<sup>1</sup>un l<sup>1</sup>i th<sup>3</sup>ak i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe li<sup>3</sup>au; n<sup>3</sup>a th<sup>3</sup>ak li<sup>3</sup>au ch<sup>2</sup>iah th<sup>3</sup>ak t<sup>3</sup>e-j<sup>3</sup>i p<sup>1</sup>un. (P)

NB. "Thak i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe li<sup>3</sup>au" - here we do not say "thak iau-boe ho".

- d) L<sup>1</sup>i n<sup>3</sup>a kh<sup>1</sup>un i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe p<sup>1</sup>a, k<sup>2</sup>oh kh<sup>1</sup>un b<sup>7</sup>o i<sup>2</sup>au-k<sup>1</sup>in. If you haven't had enough sleep, it's all right to go back to sleep.

NB. "P<sup>1</sup>a" is used not only with "ch<sup>1</sup>iah" but with "kh<sup>1</sup>un" and other verbs, as for example:

Ti<sup>3</sup>an-s<sup>1</sup>i l<sup>1</sup>i kh<sup>2</sup>oa\* i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe p<sup>1</sup>a, s<sup>1</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>o? Haven't you seen enough TV?

L<sup>1</sup>i l<sup>7</sup>im i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe p<sup>1</sup>a, s<sup>1</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>o? Haven't you had enough to drink?

- e) L<sup>1</sup>an k<sup>7</sup>ia\* hi<sup>2</sup>ah k<sup>3</sup>u a, i<sup>1</sup>au k<sup>7</sup>ia\* i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe kau, s<sup>1</sup>i b<sup>3</sup>o?(P)

## 15. iâu-kín

- a) Gó<sup>1</sup>á ũ<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> iâu-kín<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> oē bōeh<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> kóng; lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup>-êng<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
- b) Sĩa<sup>1</sup> khã<sup>2</sup> bãn<sup>7</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> iâu-kín<sup>2</sup>; sĩa<sup>1</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> súi<sup>2</sup> khã<sup>2</sup> iâu-kín<sup>2</sup>.
- c) Chiã<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> tãi<sup>3</sup>-chì<sup>7</sup> tōh<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> hãng<sup>3</sup> siōng<sup>3</sup> iâu-kín<sup>2</sup>?
- d) Phã<sup>1</sup>\*-sè<sup>1</sup>, lín<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> thãk<sup>3</sup>-chheh, góan<sup>1</sup> tōa<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>1</sup> kóng-ōe<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> iâu-kín<sup>2</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
- e) Tũ<sup>2</sup> khã<sup>2</sup> iâu-kín<sup>2</sup>-ê<sup>3</sup> sêng<sup>7</sup> chò; bō<sup>7</sup> iâu-kín<sup>2</sup>-ê<sup>3</sup> bĩn<sup>7</sup>-á<sup>1</sup>-chài<sup>2</sup> chiã<sup>2</sup> chò.

## 16. jóah

- a) Jóah<sup>3</sup>-thi\* chít<sup>2</sup> keng<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> jóah, só<sup>1</sup>-í<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> lãng<sup>2</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> tōa<sup>2</sup>.
- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> chhēng<sup>3</sup> chiã<sup>2</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> sa\*, kãm<sup>1</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> jóah?
- c) Tōa<sup>2</sup> tó<sup>7</sup>-chhĩ<sup>2</sup> khã<sup>2</sup> jóah; tōa<sup>2</sup> chng<sup>7</sup>-kha<sup>2</sup> khã<sup>2</sup> liãng<sup>2</sup>.
- d) Lãi<sup>1</sup>, lãi<sup>7</sup> chhĩu<sup>1</sup>-ã<sup>1</sup>-kha<sup>2</sup> chē<sup>3</sup>, khã<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> jóah.
- e) Kín<sup>7</sup>-ã<sup>1</sup>-jít<sup>1</sup> chiã<sup>2</sup>-nĩh<sup>3</sup> jóah, góá<sup>1</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> sé<sup>1</sup> sio<sup>7</sup>-chúi<sup>3</sup>. (P)

## 17. jóah-thi\*

- a) Jóah<sup>3</sup>-thi\* góá<sup>1</sup> phó<sup>1</sup>-thong<sup>3</sup> tãk<sup>1</sup>-jít<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> khùn<sup>2</sup>-tióng<sup>7</sup>-tàu.
- b) Sĩ<sup>7</sup>-koe<sup>3</sup> jóah<sup>3</sup>-thi\* chiã<sup>2</sup> ũ<sup>2</sup>, kóá<sup>7</sup>\*-thi\* bô<sup>3</sup>. (P)
- c) Tãi<sup>7</sup>-oãn<sup>3</sup> jóah<sup>3</sup>-thi\* sĩ<sup>3</sup> chhit<sup>3</sup>-gōeh<sup>2</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> peh<sup>3</sup>-gōeh<sup>3</sup> siōng<sup>3</sup> jóah.
- d) Jóah<sup>3</sup>-thi\* ē<sup>7</sup>-pó<sup>7</sup>-sĩ<sup>3</sup> thãk<sup>3</sup>-chheh<sup>2</sup> khã<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> ái<sup>2</sup>-khùn.
- e) Jóah<sup>3</sup>-thi\* lãng<sup>7</sup> khã<sup>2</sup> bō<sup>7</sup> ái<sup>2</sup> chiã<sup>3</sup> sio<sup>7</sup> é<sup>3</sup> mĩh<sup>7</sup>-kĩa\*. (P)

## 18. kê-thêng-chhia

- a) Chhia<sup>1</sup>\* lí<sup>1</sup> kã<sup>3</sup> góá<sup>1</sup> kio<sup>2</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> tãi<sup>7</sup> kê<sup>2</sup>-thêng<sup>7</sup>-chhia, nó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

- b) 7-<sup>1</sup>Hiông <sup>1</sup>sái <sup>2</sup>kê-thêng-<sup>7</sup>chhia <sup>1</sup>sái <sup>1</sup>kúi-<sup>3</sup>ā <sup>1</sup>nî <sup>7</sup>ā. (P)
- c) <sup>2</sup>Túi chia <sup>3</sup>chē <sup>2</sup>kê-thêng-<sup>7</sup>chhia <sup>2</sup>khî <sup>7</sup>chhia-thâu <sup>2</sup>āi <sup>3</sup>lōa-  
chē <sup>3</sup>chî\*?
- d) <sup>3</sup>Chē <sup>2</sup>kê-thêng-<sup>7</sup>chhia <sup>2</sup>khâ <sup>2</sup>kúi; <sup>1</sup>lân <sup>3</sup>chē <sup>3</sup>chhî-lāi-<sup>3</sup>chhia  
<sup>3</sup>tō-hó.
- e) <sup>1</sup>Góa <sup>7</sup>é <sup>7</sup>kha <sup>7</sup>kía\* <sup>2</sup>kâh <sup>7</sup>chín <sup>7</sup>sng, <sup>1</sup>lân <sup>2</sup>kio <sup>2</sup>kê-thêng-<sup>7</sup>chhia  
<sup>7</sup>lāi <sup>7</sup>chē, <sup>3</sup>hó <sup>3</sup>bô\*? (P)

19. <sup>2</sup>khâh <sup>2</sup>ē; <sup>2</sup>khâh <sup>2</sup>bē

- a) <sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>3</sup>kā <sup>7</sup>í <sup>7</sup>kóng, <sup>7</sup>í <sup>2</sup>khâh <sup>3</sup>ē <sup>3</sup>thia\*. (P)
- b) <sup>2</sup>Chit <sup>1</sup>khóan <sup>7</sup>thi\* <sup>2</sup>-khî <sup>2</sup>khâh <sup>3</sup>ē <sup>3</sup>lōh-hō\*.
- c) <sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>3</sup>nā <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>3</sup>sía-khít-lāi, <sup>1</sup>án-ni <sup>7</sup>kóng <sup>7</sup>é-sí <sup>2</sup>khâh <sup>3</sup>bē  
<sup>3</sup>m-tiōh. (P)
- d) <sup>2</sup>Thih-bé <sup>7</sup>khía <sup>2</sup>khâh <sup>7</sup>kín <sup>2</sup>khâh <sup>3</sup>bē <sup>3</sup>kōa\*.

20. khĩa

- a) <sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>3</sup>khĩa <sup>2</sup>tōa <sup>2</sup>chia <sup>2</sup>tēh <sup>2</sup>khóa\* <sup>2</sup>sia\*h?
- b) <sup>7</sup>Īn-<sup>3</sup>ūi <sup>7</sup>chhia-lāi <sup>7</sup>bô <sup>1</sup>ūi, <sup>1</sup>só\* <sup>1</sup>-<sup>1</sup>í <sup>1</sup>góa <sup>2</sup>túi <sup>7</sup>Chiông-hòa  
<sup>3</sup>khĩa <sup>7</sup>lāi <sup>2</sup>kâu <sup>2</sup>chia. (P)
- c) <sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>3</sup>tí <sup>3</sup>chia <sup>3</sup>khĩa <sup>3</sup>lōa <sup>3</sup>kú <sup>3</sup>ā?
- d) <sup>3</sup>Nā <sup>3</sup>ū <sup>3</sup>būn-tê <sup>1</sup>chhia\* <sup>3</sup>khĩa <sup>2</sup>khít-lāi <sup>7</sup>kóng.
- e) <sup>3</sup>Khĩa <sup>3</sup>tí <sup>3</sup>mng-nih <sup>1</sup>hít <sup>7</sup>é <sup>7</sup>lâng <sup>3</sup>sí <sup>3</sup>chia? <sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>1</sup>bat <sup>3</sup>í <sup>3</sup>bô\*?

21. kín

- a) <sup>7</sup>í <sup>2</sup>tēh <sup>3</sup>kio <sup>1</sup>lí; <sup>1</sup>lí <sup>1</sup>kín <sup>1</sup>khî.
- b) <sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>7</sup>êng-<sup>3</sup>âm <sup>3</sup>chiah-png <sup>1</sup>ná <sup>3</sup>chiah <sup>2</sup>chiah <sup>2</sup>kín?
- c) <sup>1</sup>Lí <sup>3</sup>nā <sup>2</sup>bōeh <sup>1</sup>khî, <sup>1</sup>góa <sup>3</sup>iông <sup>7</sup>ó\* <sup>1</sup>-thó\* <sup>3</sup>-bái <sup>3</sup>kā <sup>1</sup>lí <sup>1</sup>chài  
<sup>2</sup>khâh <sup>2</sup>kín.



d) Lí<sup>1</sup> tiòh<sup>3</sup> kín<sup>1</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>; nã<sup>3</sup> siu\*<sup>7</sup> bãn<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>1</sup>, tũ<sup>2</sup> Lãu<sup>3</sup>-su<sup>1</sup> phã<sup>1</sup>\*-  
sè.

22. Kô<sup>7</sup>-sók<sup>2</sup>-kông<sup>7</sup>-lō<sup>1</sup>.

- a) Tã<sup>7</sup>-tiông<sup>2</sup> kã<sup>7</sup> Tã<sup>7</sup>-pak<sup>7</sup> kĩa\*<sup>7</sup> Kô<sup>7</sup>-sók<sup>2</sup>-kông<sup>7</sup>-lō<sup>1</sup> ãi<sup>2</sup> kũ<sup>1</sup>  
tiãm<sup>1</sup>-cheng? (P)
- b) Chít<sup>2</sup> tiâu<sup>7</sup> Kô<sup>7</sup>-sók<sup>2</sup>-kông<sup>7</sup>-lō<sup>1</sup> chõ<sup>2</sup> liáu<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> súi<sup>1</sup>, sã<sup>1</sup>-  
chhia<sup>2</sup> kôn<sup>2</sup> hõ<sup>1</sup>-sái. (P)
- c) Tũ<sup>2</sup> Kô<sup>7</sup>-sók<sup>2</sup>-kông<sup>7</sup>-lō<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup>-iã<sup>1</sup>\* khã<sup>2</sup> kín<sup>1</sup>, i<sup>1</sup>-á<sup>3</sup> chẽ<sup>3</sup> iã<sup>1</sup>-bõ<sup>3</sup>  
sio<sup>3</sup> tō<sup>3</sup> kàu<sup>3</sup> ã.
- d) Chiã<sup>2</sup> chẽ<sup>3</sup> tiâu<sup>7</sup> lō<sup>1</sup> sã<sup>1</sup>-lãi<sup>7</sup>-sã<sup>1</sup>-khi<sup>1</sup>, iã<sup>1</sup> sĩ<sup>3</sup> Kô<sup>7</sup>-sók<sup>2</sup>-  
kông<sup>7</sup>-lō<sup>1</sup> siông<sup>3</sup> hõ<sup>1</sup>-sái. (P)

23. kôa\*

- a) Lí<sup>1</sup> ě<sup>3</sup> kôa\*<sup>3</sup> bẽ<sup>3</sup>? (P)  
Chiók<sup>2</sup> kôa\*.
- b) Gõa<sup>3</sup>-bĩn<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> kôa\*, mãi<sup>2</sup> chhut<sup>2</sup>-khi<sup>1</sup>; tōa<sup>2</sup> lã<sup>3</sup>-bĩn<sup>7</sup> khã<sup>2</sup>  
sio.
- c) Lí<sup>1</sup> chhẽ<sup>3</sup> án<sup>1</sup>-ne<sup>1</sup> kãm<sup>3</sup> bẽ<sup>3</sup> kôa\*?
- d) Eng<sup>7</sup>-àm<sup>2</sup> khã<sup>2</sup> kôa\*; lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> bõeh<sup>2</sup> chhut<sup>2</sup>-khi<sup>1</sup>, tiòh<sup>3</sup>-ã<sup>2</sup>  
chhẽ<sup>3</sup> hõ<sup>1</sup>• sio.
- e) Lí<sup>1</sup> ě<sup>7</sup> chhú<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>1</sup> chiã<sup>2</sup> léng<sup>3</sup>? ě<sup>3</sup> kôa\*, sĩ<sup>3</sup> bõ<sup>3</sup>•?

24. kôa\*-thi\*

- a) Kĩn<sup>7</sup>-nĩ<sup>7</sup> ě<sup>7</sup> kôa\*-thi\* khã<sup>2</sup> bẽ<sup>3</sup> kôa\*, ho\*h?
- b) Lí<sup>1</sup> khã<sup>2</sup> ãi<sup>2</sup> kôa\*-thi\*, á<sup>1</sup>-sĩ<sup>3</sup> khã<sup>2</sup> ãi<sup>3</sup> joah<sup>3</sup>-thi\*?
- c) Bĩ<sup>1</sup>-kok<sup>7</sup> ě<sup>7</sup> kôa\*-thi\* ě<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> kôa\* bẽ<sup>3</sup>?

- d) Góa ê kóa\*-thi\*-sa\* chin-chē, góa bô ăi kôh bé.  
 e) Góan tóa chít keng chhù kóa\*-thi\* chin sio, m̄-kú  
 joah-thi\* siú\* joah. (P)

25. kú

- a) Phái\*-sè, lí lái lōa kú ă? (P)  
 Chím-á chiáh lái nīa-nīa.  
 b) Nā chin kú bô loh-hō°, chia chiū bô chúi thang iōng.  
 c) Tui chia khi Chióng-hòa kha ǝ°-thó°-bái ăi lōa kú?  
 d) Nā bôeh ē-hiáu kóng Tái-gí, ăi ǝh lōa kú?  
 e) Hít chhút tiān-iá\* chǝ chin kú ă, chím-á iáu tēh chǝ.  
 (P)

26. (lái...khi) Verb + lái + Verb + khi

- a) Góan nng ê sī hó pēng-iú, só°-l̄ mih-kīa\* lǝng iōng-  
 lái-iōng-khi. (P)  
 b) Góa kha\*-lái-kha\*-khi iáu sī chít nía kha súi. (P)  
 c) Chít tiáu lō° lái-lái-khi-khi ê chia chin-chē. (P)  
 d) Láng tēh kha\* tiān-sī, lí m̄i tǝa hia kha\*-lái-  
 kha\*-khi, hó bô°?   
 e) Hít pún chheh ín thēh-lái-thēh-khi, chím-á m̄-chai  
 thēh tui tǝh-ūi khi ă. (P)

27. léng

- a) Lí ē kóa\*, sī bô°? Nā bô°, chhiú ná hiáh léng? (P)  
 b) Chhia\*-mng, lí kóng ăi līm kún-chúi, sī ăi līm  
 sio-ê, ă-sī léng-ê?

c) Thí<sup>7</sup>\*-khì kôa\* ê<sup>7</sup>-sí, khâ<sup>2</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> lêng<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> iông<sup>3</sup> lêng<sup>1</sup>-chúi<sup>1</sup>  
sê<sup>1</sup> sêng<sup>7</sup>-khu.

d) Kín-á-jit<sup>1</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> jóah, góa<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> sê<sup>1</sup> lêng<sup>1</sup>-chúi<sup>3</sup> tō<sup>3</sup>-hó.

28. liáu finished. ("Liáu" is used much more in Taiwanese than "finished" is used in English.)

a) Hiáh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> thng-á<sup>7</sup> í<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>3</sup>-liáu<sup>3</sup> á<sup>3</sup> (OR: chia<sup>3</sup>-liáu<sup>1</sup>-liáu<sup>3</sup>  
á<sup>3</sup>). (Note the repetition of "liáu = eaten them all up.)

b) Hít<sup>2</sup> nia<sup>1</sup> sa\* Tân<sup>7</sup> Thài-thài<sup>2</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> liáu<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> súi.

c) Chít<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> góa<sup>2</sup> khòa\* liáu<sup>3</sup>; lí<sup>1</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> khòa\*, hō<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup>  
khòa\*.

d) Hít<sup>2</sup> óa\* png<sup>3</sup> tiōh<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>3</sup> liáu<sup>3</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> bôeh<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>3</sup> lí<sup>1</sup> khí<sup>2</sup>  
khòa\* tiān-ia\*.

e) Chít<sup>2</sup> khò<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó-thak; góa<sup>1</sup> nng-sá\* jít<sup>3</sup> chiū<sup>3</sup> thak<sup>3</sup>  
liáu<sup>3</sup>. (P)

f) Oá\*-pôa\* chia<sup>2</sup> chē, góa<sup>1</sup> ká-tī-chit-ê-lêng<sup>7</sup> sê<sup>1</sup> bē<sup>3</sup>  
liáu. (P)

g) Hiáh<sup>2</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> tãi-chì<sup>7</sup> í<sup>2</sup> káu<sup>1</sup> chim-á<sup>2</sup> chō<sup>2</sup> iáu-bōe<sup>3</sup> liáu. (P)

h) Ká-pi<sup>7</sup> iông<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> liáu<sup>3</sup>; chim-á<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> kōh<sup>2</sup> bé. (P)

29. pang

a) Lí<sup>1</sup> bôeh<sup>2</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> tōh<sup>3</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> pang? Sī<sup>3</sup> káu<sup>1</sup>-tiám<sup>2</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> pang,  
á-sī<sup>3</sup> káu<sup>1</sup>-tiám<sup>3</sup> gō<sup>3</sup>-cháp<sup>3</sup> hun<sup>2</sup> hít<sup>2</sup> pang?

b) Chít<sup>2</sup> pang<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> sīm<sup>1</sup>-mih<sup>2</sup> lêng<sup>7</sup> chē. (OR: Chít<sup>2</sup> pang<sup>7</sup>  
chia<sup>7</sup> lêng<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> chíó.)

c) Sī<sup>3</sup> ân-chóa\* chia<sup>2</sup>-nih<sup>3</sup> kú<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> póa\* pang<sup>7</sup> chia<sup>7</sup>  
lái? (P)

- d) Khi<sup>2</sup> g<sup>1</sup>oan hia<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>3</sup> chh<sup>3</sup>h<sup>3</sup>-l<sup>3</sup>ai-chhia<sup>7</sup> chhia<sup>7</sup>-pang<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup>-chē.
- e) K<sup>1</sup>au-tiám<sup>3</sup> chap<sup>3</sup>-hun<sup>2</sup> h<sup>2</sup>it pang<sup>1</sup> khui<sup>1</sup> a; l<sup>1</sup>an chē<sup>3</sup> au<sup>3</sup>-pang,  
 hó<sup>3</sup> b<sup>3</sup>ô? The 9:10 has left; let's take the next  
 one, OK?

NB. khui<sup>7</sup>-chia = to start a vehicle; to drive a vehicle.

30. phio

- a) Chia<sup>1</sup> i<sup>1</sup>au-b<sup>3</sup>oe l<sup>1</sup>ai, l<sup>1</sup>i s<sup>7</sup>eng khi<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> phio.
- b) Phio<sup>1</sup> l<sup>1</sup>i t<sup>3</sup>ioh<sup>3</sup> th<sup>3</sup>eh h<sup>3</sup>ô hó. (P)
- c) L<sup>1</sup>ang ch<sup>2</sup>iah-n<sup>3</sup>ih chē, g<sup>1</sup>oa kh<sup>1</sup>oa\*, phio<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> ph<sup>1</sup>ai\* bé.
- d) B<sup>7</sup>in-<sup>1</sup>a-ch<sup>1</sup>ai b<sup>2</sup>oeh khi<sup>2</sup> T<sup>7</sup>ai-pak<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> chhia<sup>7</sup>-phio<sup>1</sup> l<sup>1</sup>i bé<sup>1</sup> hó  
 b<sup>3</sup>oe? (P)
- e) L<sup>1</sup>i b<sup>2</sup>oeh bé<sup>1</sup> k<sup>1</sup>ui t<sup>7</sup>iu\* ch<sup>7</sup>oan-phio, k<sup>1</sup>ui t<sup>7</sup>iu\* p<sup>2</sup>oa\*-phio?

31. ph<sup>1</sup>ô-th<sup>7</sup>ong-chhia

- a) Chē<sup>3</sup> ph<sup>1</sup>ô-th<sup>7</sup>ong-chhia<sup>7</sup> kh<sup>2</sup>ah s<sup>1</sup>ioh, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>u kh<sup>2</sup>ah b<sup>1</sup>an.
- b) L<sup>1</sup>i ch<sup>1</sup>un-p<sup>3</sup>i b<sup>2</sup>oeh chē<sup>3</sup> t<sup>3</sup>it-t<sup>3</sup>at-chhia<sup>1</sup> a-s<sup>3</sup>i ph<sup>1</sup>ô-th<sup>7</sup>ong-  
 chia? (P)
- c) Ph<sup>1</sup>ô-th<sup>7</sup>ong-chhia<sup>3</sup> m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>3</sup>i t<sup>3</sup>i chia<sup>2</sup> chē, ai<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hia<sup>2</sup> chē.

32. sé-s<sup>7</sup>eng-kh<sup>7</sup>u-keng, sé-<sup>3</sup>ek-keng, <sup>3</sup>ek-k<sup>7</sup>eng-á

- a) G<sup>1</sup>oan ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>u ê<sup>7</sup> sé-s<sup>7</sup>eng-kh<sup>7</sup>u-keng<sup>7</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ô chin<sup>7</sup> t<sup>3</sup>oa-keng.
- b) Ch<sup>1</sup>im-á<sup>7</sup> ê<sup>7</sup> ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>u sé-<sup>3</sup>ek-keng<sup>2</sup> k<sup>2</sup>ap pi<sup>3</sup>an-s<sup>1</sup>ô l<sup>1</sup>ong ch<sup>2</sup>ô-h<sup>2</sup>oe.  
 (P)
- c) Ch<sup>2</sup>it k<sup>7</sup>eng ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>u l<sup>7</sup>au-kha<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> ek-k<sup>7</sup>eng-á, l<sup>7</sup>au-t<sup>3</sup>eng m<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup>  
 ek-k<sup>7</sup>eng-á, s<sup>1</sup>ô--<sup>1</sup>i n<sup>3</sup>ā b<sup>2</sup>oeh sé<sup>1</sup> s<sup>7</sup>eng-khu<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> l<sup>1</sup>i-p<sup>3</sup>ian.
- d) Ek-k<sup>7</sup>eng-á<sup>3</sup> ch<sup>1</sup>im-á<sup>7</sup> b<sup>7</sup>ô l<sup>7</sup>ang t<sup>2</sup>eh sé; l<sup>1</sup>i n<sup>3</sup>ā b<sup>2</sup>oeh sé, k<sup>1</sup>in  
 khi<sup>2</sup> sé.

## 33. sēng-khu

- a) I<sup>7</sup> lōng<sup>1</sup> iōng<sup>3</sup> lēng<sup>1</sup>-chúi<sup>1</sup> sé<sup>1</sup> sēng-khu<sup>7</sup>.
- b) Chít<sup>2</sup> khoán<sup>1</sup> mih<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> liáu<sup>2</sup> tui<sup>2</sup> sēng-khu<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>3</sup>. (OR: bô<sup>7</sup> hó).
- c) Góa<sup>1</sup> sēng-khu<sup>7</sup> sé<sup>1</sup> hó<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup>-pāng<sup>3</sup>; lí<sup>1</sup> sēng<sup>7</sup> chiah<sup>1</sup>. (P)
- d) Góa<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> sēng-khu<sup>7</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> pōa\*<sup>2</sup> kho<sup>•</sup>, lí<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>1</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?

## 34. sio

- a) Thng<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> sio<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>•</sup>?
- 1) Ū, chin<sup>7</sup> sio.
- 2) Bô, bô<sup>7</sup> sio.
- b) Kôa\*<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> sí<sup>1</sup>, nã<sup>3</sup> chiah<sup>3</sup> chít-kóa<sup>1</sup> sio-ê<sup>1</sup> khah<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> kôa\*. (P)
- c) Ū-ê<sup>3</sup> Tái-oân-lâng<sup>7</sup> joah-thi\*-sí<sup>1</sup> iã<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> lĩm<sup>7</sup> sio-tê. (P)
- d) Góa-bīn<sup>3</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> kôa\*; tiōh-ài<sup>2</sup> chhēng<sup>3</sup> hō<sup>•</sup> sio chiah<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hāk-hāu<sup>3</sup>.
- e) Chúi<sup>1</sup> sio a, sīm-mih-lâng<sup>2</sup> bōeh<sup>2</sup> sēng<sup>7</sup> sé? (P)

## 35. sio-jóah

- a) Kín-á-jít<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> sio-jóah<sup>1</sup>, khah<sup>2</sup> bē<sup>3</sup> kôa\*.
- b) Kôa\*-thi\*<sup>7</sup> thi\*-khi<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> sio-jóah<sup>1</sup>, lāng<sup>7</sup> khah<sup>2</sup> ài<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> chhit-thô<sup>2</sup>.
- c) Chiah<sup>2</sup> sio-jóah<sup>1</sup>, sa\*<sup>3</sup> m-bián<sup>1</sup> chhēng<sup>3</sup> chiah<sup>2</sup> chē.
- d) Thi\*-khi<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> khah<sup>2</sup> sio-jóah<sup>1</sup>, lán<sup>1</sup> lái-khi<sup>2</sup> pēh-soa\*, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>•</sup>? 76 ↓
- e) Chá-hng<sup>7</sup> khah<sup>2</sup> kôa\*, kín-á-jít<sup>1</sup> khah<sup>2</sup> sio-jóah<sup>1</sup>.

36. siōng/chòe

- a) Kín-á-jít lín sīm-mih-lâng (OR: lín tōh chít ê) siōng chá lāi? (P)
- b) Lín chòe òa\* káu-tiám tiōh-ài káu-ūi.
- c) Chiah chē hāng kōe-chí, lí siōng ài chiah tōh chít hāng?
- d) Lí kín-á-jít chhēng chít nía sa\* siōng súi.
- e) Tī tōh-téng hiáh ê chúu, tōh chít kòan siōng hó-lim?

37. sít-chāi

- a) Góa kā lí kóng ê oe lóng sī sít-chāi-ê. (P)
- b) Góa sít-chāi m̄-chāi-iá\*, m̄-sī bō ài kā lí kóng.
- c) Í sía ê jī m̄-sī súi nīa-nīa, iā sít-chāi chin ũ í-sù.
- d) Sít-chāi kā lí kóng, góa chīm-á bō pōa\* kho\*. (P)

Note: If you emphasize "sít-chāi", do not change tone on "chāi".

38. siu\*

- a) Chít nía sa\* góa chhēng siu\* tōa nía; hó lí chhēng. (P)
- b) Chīm-á khi ē siu\* chá bē?
- c) Chít-jít thak chít khò, án-ni siu\* kín.
- d) Chít tái chia lí bé án-ne siu\* kùi.

39. súi-jiân

- a) Í súi-jiân bē-hiáu, m̄-kú chin jīn-chin. (P)
- b) Góa súi-jiân chin ài ũ chít keng kā-tī ê chhù, m̄-kú bō chí\*. (P)

c) Lí ná m̄-bat khi góa hia chē?

Góa sui-jián chín ai khi káp lí chē, m̄-kú bō  
sī-kan.

d) Chē phó-thóng-chhia sui-jián khah siok, m̄-kú chín  
bān.

e) Sui-jián chit nia sa\* chín súi, m̄-kú siu\* sē-nía.

40. tak *lak*

a) Í bé é kám-á tak liap lóng chín hō-chiah.

b) Tak é thàng-á-mng lóng ũ koi\* hō hó bō? (P)

c) Chiah é chneh tak pún í lóng khò\* liáu á.

d) Chím-á tak keng kàu-sek lóng ũ lóng tēh thak-chneh.

e) Chit é sī-kan, tak pàng chia lóng chín-chē lóng  
chē.

41. tēh-boeh "Tēh-boeh" is generally followed by "a"  
except when followed by "ê-sī".

a) Tēh-bōeh chap-jī-tiám á, lí iáu-bōe chú-png, sī bō?\*

b) Í chín gâu lim, hiáh é chiu í lim tēh-bōeh liáu á. (P)

c) Lóng-kheh chiah chín kú á; góa khò\*, chhā-pút-tō  
chiah tēh-bōeh pá á. (P)

d) Í tēh-bōeh khi é-sī, ũ kóng sim-mín bō? (P)

e) Tēh-bōeh loh-hō á; lán kín tng-lái-khi.

42. thang/thàng-á/thàng-hó/thàng-lái

a) Lí khi bé kú-kòan-á chiu, ē-tàu thàng chhia\*  
lóng-kheh. (P)

b) Lí iáu ũ chí\* thàng-á bé chhài bō?\*

c) Sa\* lí<sup>1</sup> tiòh<sup>3</sup> thèh<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> hāk-hāu, nā<sup>3</sup> kōa\* ē-sī<sup>7</sup> thāng-hó<sup>1</sup>  
 chhēng.

d) Chiah<sup>2</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> si-koe lí<sup>1</sup> thèh<sup>3</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> chhia-téng<sup>7</sup> thāng-hó<sup>1</sup>

chiah. Take these watermelons to eat on the bus.  
 (Note: "chhia-téng" does not mean the roof but the "inside of a vehicle" (bus/train) or the "bed of a truck": "chhia-téng" is not used of cars. For "inside a car" or any kind of "chhia" say "chhia-lāi/chhia-té". The roof of a vehicle is "chhū-téng".

Góa chhit<sup>1</sup> tái<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> chhū-téng<sup>2</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> sio. The roof  
 on this car of mine is very hot.

43. thi\*-khi<sup>7</sup> 天氣

a) Góa chin<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>2</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> chhit<sup>1</sup> khoán<sup>1</sup> thi\*-khi<sup>7</sup>.

b) Chōe-kīn<sup>2</sup> thi\*-khi<sup>7</sup> nā<sup>1</sup> chiah<sup>2</sup> jóah?

c) Bīn-á-chài<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> thi\*-khi<sup>7</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> hó, lán<sup>1</sup> chhiu<sup>3</sup> mǎi<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>7</sup>. (P)

d) Bī-kok<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> thi\*-khi<sup>7</sup> káp<sup>2</sup> chia<sup>7</sup> chhā-pūt-to, sī<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

e) Thi\*-khi<sup>7</sup> chiah<sup>2</sup> jóah, góa chin<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>2</sup> ai<sup>2</sup> chhit<sup>2</sup>-khi<sup>2</sup>  
 gōa-kháu.

44. tit-tat-chhia<sup>3</sup>

a) Chhit<sup>2</sup> pāng<sup>7</sup> tit-tat-chhia<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> bóeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> tōh-ūi<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup>?

b) Bōeh<sup>2</sup> khi<sup>2</sup> Jit-goat-thām<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> tit-tat-chhia<sup>3</sup> thāng<sup>7</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> bó<sup>3</sup>?

c) Tī<sup>3</sup> tit-tat-chhia<sup>3</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> chhia-téng<sup>7</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lāng<sup>7</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> bē-phò<sup>3</sup>  
 bó<sup>3</sup>? (P)

d) Chīm-á<sup>1</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> lâi<sup>2</sup> hit<sup>2</sup> tái<sup>3</sup> sī<sup>3</sup> tit-tat-chhia<sup>3</sup> á-sī<sup>3</sup> phó<sup>1</sup>-  
 thōng-chhia?

e) Khi<sup>2</sup> Sīn-tek<sup>7</sup> ē<sup>7</sup> tit-tat-chhia<sup>3</sup> káh<sup>2</sup> Tiōng-hin-ē<sup>1</sup>  
 chhia-pāng<sup>7</sup> chin-chē. (P)



## 45. tiu\*

- a) Lí kóng bōeh bé chhia-phò, bōeh bé kúí tiu\*?
- b) Chít nng tiu\* chhia-phò ù chō-hóe bō? (P)
- c) Lí bōeh bé kúí tiu\* chōan-phò, kúí tiu\* pōa\*-phò?
- d) Tōh-á-téng hīt tiu\* chhia-phò sí sim-mih-lâng ê?

-----

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF PATTERN SENTENCES MARKED "P"

5. a) May I ask you which way do we go to get to the station?
6. c) If anyone asks him anything (OR: greets him), he always smiles but doesn't answer.  
d) I'm only joking with you; I didn't mean anything by what I said.
7. c) 2 full-fare and 1 half-fare tickets to Chiayi.
8. b) It's only lately that there has been a city bus on this road.  
d) He has continually missed school lately; I wonder what's the matter.
10. a) It rained very heavy./It was a heavy rain.  
d) In rainy weather there are fewer people out on the street.
11. a) You have to finish writing the characters before you go out.  
c) I'll give you a ride but you have to sit properly (on the motorcycle). (Don't move around, hold on tight, etc.)  
e) Don't drive so fast; drive properly. (Keep the rules.)
12. e) What's the matter with you? Is there something you're unhappy about?  
1) No, no; nothing at all.  
2) No, nothing much.
14. a) You mean to say you haven't finished those characters yet?  
c) You haven't finished studying the 1st book yet; only after you're all finished with it should you study the 2nd book.

14. e) We've walked for such a long time and haven't gotten there yet? (Lit., We've walked so long, are still walking and haven't gotten there yet, is that right?)
16. e) It's so hot today, I don't want to take a hot bath.
17. b) We have watermelons only in the summer, not in the winter.  
e) In hot weather people don't like to eat hot stuff.
18. b) <sup>7</sup>Á-Hiông has driven a taxi for several years.  
e) I've walked till my legs ache; let's call a taxi, OK? (Lit. My legs have walked up to the point where they ache a lot; let's call a taxi to ride in, OK?)
19. a) If you tell him he's more likely to listen.  
c) If you write it out, you won't make so many errors when you're giving it off (in speech).
20. b) There was no room on the bus/train so I stood from Changhua to here.
22. a) How many hours is it from Taichung to Taipei by the Freeway? ("Kia#" here does not mean "walk".)  
b) They made this Freeway beautiful, and it's easy driving besides.  
d) I've driven on all these roads; the Freeway is still the best.
23. a) Are you cold?  
I'm freezing.
24. e) This house we're living in is warm in winter but too hot in summer.
25. a) I'm sorry (for keeping you waiting), how long have you been here?  
It's only now that I came./I just got here. (Note: the polite person will give this answer even if he has waited quite a while.)  
e) That movie has been on (in the theater) for a long time and it's still on now.
26. a) The 2 of us are good friends so we're always using each other's things.  
b) After looking at so many clothes I'd still say this one is the best-looking.  
c) There's an awful lot of traffic on this road.  
e) Everybody has been taking that book (to read) so now I don't know where it is (I don't know where they've taken it).

27. a) You're cold, are you? If not, why is your hand so cold? (Note "kôa\*" describing the person and "léng" the hand.)
28. e) This lesson is easy; I finished it in 2 or 3 days. (Note use of "chīu" here.)  
 f) There are so many dishes here; I can't wash them all by myself.  
 g) Up to now he still hasn't finished taking care of those matters.  
 h) We're nearly out of coffee; we have to get more now.
29. c) Why hasn't any bus come in all this time?
30. b) Don't lose the ticket. Lit., The ticket you must hold firmly. (Later we will study the ordinary word for "lose".)  
 d) The ticket for Taipei tomorrow - did you buy it all right? (Is it all set?)
31. b) Are you going to take the express or the local? (Note the use of "chún-pī", not translated into English. This sentence is spoken by a friend, etc., not by the ticket seller, who would not say "chún-pī".)
32. b) In houses now the bathroom and toilet are (both) together. (But if one desires to go to the toilet he should not ask for the bathroom.)
33. c) I won't eat until I take a bath. You go ahead and eat.
34. b) When it's cold (like this), if you take something hot you won't feel so cold. (Host urging visitor to take a hot drink, etc.)  
 c) Even in summer some Taiwanese like to drink hot water/tea. (This is especially true of the old. Young people today are likely to be used to refrigerated liquids.)  
 e) The water is hot (now); who wants to be the first to take a bath?
36. a) Which of you was the first one here today?
37. a) Everything I told you is true.  
 d) To tell you the truth, I don't have any money at all now.
38. a) This dress is too big for me; I'll give it to you. (Lit., This dress (if) I wear it, it's too big; I give to you to wear.)

39. a) Although he's not so smart, yet he tries. OR: Although he doesn't know much about it, he is industrious. (Note that "m-kú" frequently follows "sui-jiân".)
- b) Though I would love to have a home of my own, I don't have the money (to buy one).
40. b) Are all the windows closed properly (OR: tight)?
41. b) He can really drink; he has just about finished that wine (and isn't drunk).
- c) The guests have been eating for quite a while; I think they're about finished. (Note that "chha-put-to" precedes the verb "chiah".)
- d) Did he say anything as he was about to go?
42. a) Go buy several bottles of wine to treat the guests this noon.
43. c) If the weather is not good tomorrow, let's not go. ("Lán mài khi" is the opposite of "Lán lái-khi".)
44. c) Do they sell tickets on the express bus (or do you have to buy at the station, roadside stand or wherever else tickets might be sold)?
- e) Lit., "Express" and Tiong-hin buses to Hsinchu scheduled departures very many. = There are many "express" and Tiong-hin buses to Hsinchu.
45. b) Are these 2 (bus/train) tickets together (i.e., are the seats side by side)?

KÙ

SENTENCES

1. Chít<sup>2</sup> lé-pài-jít<sup>1</sup> (OR: Chít<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> lé-pài<sup>1</sup>) lí<sup>1</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>7</sup> tãi-chì<sup>3</sup>,  
lán<sup>1</sup> lái-khi<sup>7</sup> Jít-góat-thâm<sup>3</sup> chhít-thô<sup>2</sup>, hó<sup>3</sup> bô<sup>3</sup>?
2. Tī<sup>3</sup> Tái-tiong<sup>7</sup> joah-thi\*<sup>3</sup> khân<sup>2</sup> é<sup>3</sup> loh-hô\*, kóa\*-thi\*<sup>7</sup> khân<sup>2</sup> bē.
3. Ā-lí-san<sup>7</sup> sī<sup>1</sup> chít<sup>3</sup> é<sup>7</sup> chin<sup>7</sup> hó<sup>1</sup> chhít-thô<sup>2</sup> é<sup>7</sup> só\*-chāi<sup>1</sup>, gōa<sup>1</sup> bắt<sup>2</sup>  
tī<sup>3</sup> hia<sup>2</sup> tòa<sup>3</sup> chít-jít<sup>1</sup>.
4. Chīm-á<sup>1</sup> gōa-kháu<sup>3</sup> tēh<sup>2</sup> loh-hô\*, lán<sup>1</sup> chē<sup>3</sup> bāh-suh<sup>2</sup> tóg-lái-khi<sup>3</sup>.
5. Góan<sup>1</sup> chia<sup>2</sup> bāh-suh<sup>3</sup> chít-jít<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chap-gōa<sup>3</sup> pang.
6. Chít<sup>2</sup> hāng<sup>3</sup> tãi-chì<sup>3</sup> nā<sup>3</sup> in<sup>7</sup> thāi-thài<sup>2</sup> ká<sup>3</sup> í<sup>7</sup> kóng, í<sup>7</sup> khân<sup>2</sup> é<sup>3</sup>  
thia\*.

7. Chá-hng góan khi pēh-soa\*, í pēh siōng bān.
8. Góa chái-khí siu\* bān lái; lái ê-sí lāng lóng tēh thak-chheh á.
9. Lí nā bōeh khi chhia-thâu, chē chhi-lāi-chhia khi khah siok.
10. Tak chái-khí, góa hit nng é gin-á, chit ê chē chhi-lāi-chhia, chit ê chē hōe-chhia khi thak-chheh.
11. Góa bōeh iōng-kia\*-ê khi chhia-thâu, bó ai chē-chhia.
12. Mái tòa chia chē, tí chia chē tia\*-tia\* bó ūi thang chē.  
Lí khi chhia-thâu chē khah hó. (S)
13. Í nā lim-chiu tō chin gâu kóng-chhiò, nā bó lim lóng tiām-tiām. (S)
14. Láu Bók-su é bīn siōng-siōng chhiò-chhiò, só-í lāng kóng í sí chin hó é lāng.
15. Chōe-kīn lí am-sí lóng tēh chhōng-sia\*h, nā hiáh bó-êng?
16. Chōe-kīn thi\*-khi chin joah, góa khah bó ai chiah-png, khah ai chiah kōe-chí.
17. Lí chōe-kīn ū bōeh khi tōh-ūi chhit-thō bó?
18. Khōa\* tiān-ia\* chōan-phio chit tiu\* ai chit-pah kho\*,  
án-ni ē kúi bē?
19. Tí Tái-oân hāk-seng khōa\* tiān-ia\* ai bé hāk-seng-phio,  
m-biān bé chōan-phio.
20. Tí soa\*-nīh bōeh iōng chúi khah bó lí-piān. (S)
21. Joah-thi\* iōng léng-chúí sé sēng-khu khah liang, m-biān sé sio-chúí.

22. Sín-tek hō· chín tōa, m̄-kú Tái-tiong lóng bō loh-hō·.
23. Loh-hō·-thi\* lāng khah bō ăi chhut-khi chhit-thô.
24. Ē-po· hā-khò ê-si nā loh-hō·, góa bōeh chē kē-thêng-chhia tng-khi.
25. Hák-seng khi hák-hāu thak-chheh, sa\* tiōh chhêng hō· hó, chia̍h hō-khò\*.
26. Chhia\* m̄-bián khēh-khi, chia̍h hō· pá.
27. Lí tēh hó\*—hi sia\*h? An-chóa\* ít-tít chhiò? (S)
28. Mãi an-ni kóng; nā an-ni kóng í ē bō hó\*—hí.
29. Góa nā khi Tái-pak lóng chē hōe-chhia, bō ăi chē bāh-suh.
30. Hōe-chhia chàì ê lāng chín chē, tēh kĩa\* iā chín kín. (S)
31. Tui Tái-tiong kàu Tái-pak chē hōe-chhia chōan-phio ăi lōa-chē?
32. In nng ê tī hia m̄-chai tēh kóng sia\*h, kóng kàu ta\* kóng iáu-bōe liáu.
33. Í chín gáu chia̍h, chia̍h chit tiám-cheng a, chia̍h iáu-bōe pá.
34. Lí sé-sa\* sé hiāh kú, sé iáu-bōe liáu/hó, sī bō\*?
35. Kín-ă-jit góa bōeh khi Kó-hiông, in-úi ũ iáu-kín ê tãi-chi.
36. Í nā lâi, ít-tēng ũ iáu-kín ê tãi-chi; nā bô, bō lâi.
37. Iáu-kín ê tãi-chi sêng chò, bō iáu-kín-ê khah bān chia̍h chò.
38. Gōa-kháu chín joah, m̄-hó chhut-khi.
39. Lâu-téng chín joah, lâu-kha khah liang.

40. Joah-thi\* góa chái-khí-sí chín chá khít-lâi, âm-sí chín  
ôa\* khùn.
41. Sui-jiân sĩ joah-thi\*, m̄-kú góa m̄-bát khùn-tiông-tàu.
42. Lí nã ũ iâu-kín ê tái-chí, chē kē-thēng-chhia khi khảnh  
kín.
43. Chhia\* lí chē-loh-khì, m̄i khĩa-khít-lâi.
44. Khĩa tĩ góa-kháu tēh kóng-ōe hiáh ê lāng lí bat in bô\*?
45. Í sái kē-thēng-chhia sái chín kín, só·-í bô lāng ải chē.
46. Kôa\*-thi\* ê chhài chín kín lēng, nã lēng, chín phải\*-  
chiah.
47. Kôa\*-thi\* góa-kháu chín kôa\*, lăi-té khảnh sio.
48. Kín-á-jit chiah kôa\*, lí ản-chóa\* kán-nã chhēng chít nĩa  
sa\*?
49. Tái-oân ê kôa\*-thi\* ũ-sí-ả chín kôa\*, ũ-sí-ả khảnh sio-  
joah.
50. Lí lōa kú tng-khí Bĩ-kok chít pái?
51. Chít nĩa khò· hō· lí chò, lí lōa kú chò ẽ hó?
52. Góa chín kú m̄-bát káh lí lim-chú ả, lí chim-ả ũ khảnh  
gáu lim bô\*? (S) o林 今 伊
53. Thak-lâi-thak-khí iã-sí Tái-gí siông phải\*-thak. (S)
54. Í tĩ hia tēh sía-lâi-sía-khí, m̄-chái tēh sía sím-mĩh?
55. Joah-thi\* lāng lóng ải chiah lēng ê mĩh-kĩa, kôa\*-thi\*  
ải chiah sio-ê.
56. Lí ũ lēng-kún-chú ả bô\*? Chít pòe hō· góa lim, hó bô\*?
57. Í sía-jĩ sía liáu chín súi, in pa-pah chín hwa\*-hí.

58. Sa\* s<sup>1</sup>é liáú <sup>3</sup>á, g<sup>1</sup>óá b<sup>2</sup>óeh kh<sup>2</sup>í hi<sup>2</sup>ón-kh<sup>2</sup>ùn.
59. Hít p<sup>1</sup>ún ch<sup>1</sup>eh lí kh<sup>2</sup>óa\* liáú b<sup>3</sup>óe? N<sup>3</sup>á kh<sup>2</sup>óa\* liáú g<sup>1</sup>óá b<sup>2</sup>óeh kh<sup>2</sup>óa\*.
60. Kh<sup>2</sup>í s<sup>7</sup>ín-tek é Ti<sup>7</sup>óng-h<sup>7</sup>ín-h<sup>7</sup>ō chít jít ũ k<sup>3</sup>úi pang?
61. G<sup>1</sup>óá t<sup>3</sup>ák p<sup>2</sup>ái-l<sup>1</sup>ak l<sup>1</sup>óng ch<sup>3</sup>ē p<sup>2</sup>eh-tiám hít pang t<sup>1</sup>ng-kh<sup>2</sup>í T<sup>7</sup>ái-pak.
62. Lí m<sup>3</sup>-bián bé ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ía-ph<sup>1</sup>ò, g<sup>1</sup>óá k<sup>3</sup>á lí bé t<sup>3</sup>ō-h<sup>1</sup>ó.
63. Í sui-j<sup>7</sup>ián g<sup>3</sup>ō h<sup>1</sup>òe, m<sup>3</sup>-k<sup>1</sup>ú hi<sup>2</sup>áh g<sup>7</sup>áu-t<sup>1</sup>ōa, g<sup>1</sup>óá kh<sup>2</sup>óa\*, í-t<sup>3</sup>t<sup>3</sup>ēng ài bé p<sup>2</sup>óa\*-ph<sup>1</sup>ò.
64. Lí b<sup>2</sup>óeh ch<sup>3</sup>ē tít-tát-ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ía á-s<sup>3</sup>í ph<sup>1</sup>ó\*-th<sup>7</sup>óng-ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ía?
65. Ph<sup>1</sup>ó\*-th<sup>7</sup>óng-ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ía é ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ía-ph<sup>1</sup>ò kh<sup>2</sup>áh s<sup>1</sup>òk, Ti<sup>7</sup>óng-h<sup>7</sup>ín-é kh<sup>2</sup>áh k<sup>1</sup>úi.
66. G<sup>1</sup>óan é ek-k<sup>7</sup>eng-á t<sup>3</sup>í l<sup>7</sup>áu-t<sup>3</sup>éng, l<sup>7</sup>áu-k<sup>7</sup>ha k<sup>7</sup>án-n<sup>7</sup>á ũ pián-s<sup>3</sup>ó n<sup>3</sup>ía-n<sup>3</sup>ía.
67. Lí s<sup>7</sup>éng-k<sup>7</sup>hu s<sup>1</sup>é hó b<sup>3</sup>óe?
68. K<sup>7</sup>óa\*-th<sup>7</sup>í\* g<sup>1</sup>óá l<sup>1</sup>óng s<sup>1</sup>é s<sup>7</sup>íó-ch<sup>1</sup>úi, j<sup>3</sup>óah-th<sup>7</sup>í\* l<sup>1</sup>óng s<sup>1</sup>é l<sup>1</sup>éng-ch<sup>1</sup>úi.
69. Ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ái n<sup>3</sup>á ũ s<sup>1</sup>íó kh<sup>2</sup>áh h<sup>1</sup>ó-ch<sup>1</sup>íah, n<sup>3</sup>á l<sup>1</sup>éng ch<sup>7</sup>ín ph<sup>1</sup>ái\*-ch<sup>1</sup>íah.
70. K<sup>7</sup>óa\*-th<sup>7</sup>í\* ch<sup>1</sup>ái-kh<sup>1</sup>í-s<sup>1</sup>í k<sup>2</sup>áp âm-s<sup>1</sup>í ch<sup>7</sup>ín l<sup>1</sup>éng, ti<sup>7</sup>óng-t<sup>2</sup>áu-s<sup>1</sup>í kh<sup>2</sup>áh s<sup>7</sup>íó-j<sup>1</sup>óah. 燒 劫
71. K<sup>7</sup>ín-á-jít kh<sup>2</sup>áh s<sup>7</sup>íó-j<sup>1</sup>óah, kh<sup>2</sup>áh b<sup>3</sup>é hi<sup>2</sup>áh k<sup>7</sup>óa\* á. 拍
72. Lí bé hi<sup>2</sup>áh ch<sup>3</sup>ē n<sup>1</sup>ía sa\*; t<sup>3</sup>ái-kh<sup>1</sup>ái chít n<sup>3</sup>ía s<sup>3</sup>íng s<sup>1</sup>úi.
73. Lí n<sup>3</sup>á k<sup>1</sup>óng b<sup>2</sup>óeh ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ía\* í l<sup>7</sup>ím-ch<sup>1</sup>ú, í s<sup>3</sup>íng h<sup>7</sup>óa\*-h<sup>1</sup>í.
74. G<sup>1</sup>óá ch<sup>1</sup>ím-á sít-ch<sup>3</sup>ái l<sup>1</sup>óng b<sup>7</sup>ó ch<sup>1</sup>í\*, m<sup>3</sup>-s<sup>3</sup>í b<sup>7</sup>ó ài ch<sup>7</sup>h<sup>7</sup>ía\* lí. 3
75. Hít ũi Bok-su é T<sup>7</sup>ái-g<sup>7</sup>í k<sup>1</sup>óng liáú sít-ch<sup>3</sup>ái ch<sup>7</sup>ín hó. (S)



76. In<sup>7</sup> chĩm-á<sup>2</sup> tẽh thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh, kóng-ōe<sup>3</sup> m̄-hó<sup>1</sup> s̄iu\*<sup>7</sup> tōa-sia\*<sup>3</sup>.
77. Gōa<sup>3</sup>-kháu hiáh<sup>2</sup> chhá, gōa<sup>1</sup> khòa\*, lāi-té<sup>3</sup> kháh<sup>2</sup> tiām.
78. Ī<sup>7</sup> sui-jián<sup>7</sup> s̄i<sup>3</sup> chá-bó<sup>1</sup>-gĩn-á, m̄-kú<sup>3</sup> s̄ia-jĩ<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> tōa-jĩ. (S)
79. Gōa<sup>1</sup> sui-jián<sup>7</sup> bẽ<sup>3</sup>-hiáu<sup>1</sup> kóng<sup>7</sup> Tái-gí, m̄-kú<sup>3</sup> gōa<sup>1</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chín<sup>7</sup>-chẽ<sup>3</sup>  
Tái-oán-pêng-iú.
80. Ī<sup>7</sup> sui-jián<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> lĩm-chiú, tãn-sĩ<sup>3</sup> lóng<sup>3</sup> m̄-bat<sup>2</sup> chiú-chui.
81. Lĩ<sup>1</sup> tak<sup>3</sup> chái-khĩ<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> kúi<sup>1</sup> tiám<sup>3</sup> peh-khĩt-lái?
82. In<sup>7</sup> lāu-pẽ<sup>3</sup> tak-jit<sup>3</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> ióng<sup>3</sup> ó<sup>7</sup>-thó<sup>1</sup>-bái<sup>2</sup> chái<sup>7</sup> ĩ<sup>7</sup> khĩ<sup>2</sup> hək<sup>3</sup>-  
hāu thak<sup>3</sup>-chheh.
83. Hĩt<sup>2</sup> ẽ<sup>7</sup> chá-bó<sup>1</sup>-gĩn-á<sup>7</sup> ẽ<sup>7</sup> sa\*<sup>3</sup> tak<sup>1</sup> nĩa<sup>1</sup> lóng<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> s̄i.
84. Chĩt<sup>2</sup> pún<sup>1</sup> chheh thak<sup>3</sup> tẽh-bõeh<sup>2</sup> liáu<sup>3</sup>, iáu<sup>1</sup> kóh<sup>3</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> chĩt<sup>3</sup> pún<sup>3</sup>  
bó<sup>3</sup>?
85. S̄i<sup>7</sup>-kan tẽh-bõeh<sup>2</sup> kàu<sup>3</sup>, lãn<sup>1</sup> chín-pĩ<sup>3</sup> lāi<sup>7</sup> chiáh-png.
86. Ī<sup>7</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> thĩh-bé<sup>2</sup> thang-hó<sup>7</sup> khĩa, só<sup>1</sup>-ĩ<sup>1</sup> ĩ<sup>7</sup> lóng<sup>1</sup> ióng<sup>3</sup>-kia\*-ẽ<sup>7</sup>  
khĩ<sup>2</sup> hək<sup>3</sup>-hāu.
87. Láng-kheh tẽh-bõeh<sup>2</sup> lāi<sup>7</sup>, ĩ<sup>1</sup> khĩ<sup>2</sup> bé<sup>1</sup> chĩt<sup>3</sup> páu<sup>7</sup> hun thang-  
lái<sup>7</sup> chhĩa\* lán<sup>7</sup>-kheh.
88. Thĩ\*-khĩ<sup>3</sup> nã<sup>3</sup> joah, khĩ<sup>2</sup>-chúi<sup>3</sup> kháh<sup>2</sup> ũ<sup>3</sup> lán<sup>7</sup> ăi<sup>2</sup> bé.
89. Chõe-kĩn thĩ\*-khĩ<sup>7</sup> chín<sup>7</sup> hó, lóng<sup>1</sup> bó<sup>7</sup> loh-hõ.
90. Gōa<sup>1</sup> khĩ<sup>7</sup> ẽ<sup>7</sup>-s̄i<sup>3</sup> chẽ<sup>3</sup> hõe-chhia, tng-lái<sup>3</sup> ẽ<sup>7</sup>-s̄i<sup>3</sup> chẽ<sup>3</sup> Tióng-hin-ẽ<sup>1</sup>.

-----

TRANSLATION/EXPLANATION OF ABOVE SENTENCES MARKED "S"

12. Don't get on (the bus) here; it always happens that there's no seat (place to sit) for people who get on here. It's better to go to the bus station.
20. In the mountains water is not very handy.

27. What are you happy about? Why the big smile? (Lit., How come you are smiling unceasingly?)
30. Trains carry a lot of people and also go very fast.
52. I haven't had a drink with you in a long time; can you drink more now? (He formerly had little capacity.)
53. I studied many languages and Taiwanese is the toughest.
75. That minister's Taiwanese is really very good. (Lit., "That minister's Taiwanese finished speaking is very good. "Kóng-liáu" is commonly used here but need not be translated. "Kóng liáu chin hó" is the same as "chin gâu kóng". It does not necessarily mean he gave a speech but only that he said something in Taiwanese.)
78. Even though she's a girl she writes big characters.

---

TRANSLATE THE FOLLOWING SENTENCES INTO TAIWANESE:

1. Can you wash that many clothes today? OR: Can you finish washing so many clothes today?
2. Your hand is so cold; are you cold? (OR: ...you're cold, are you? OR: you're cold, right?)
3. Humans have feet for walking.
4. He drinks several bottles of wine every day.
5. You bought (lit., completed buying) this garment - it's too expensive.
6. I hadn't reached there yet (on the motorcycle) when the rain came.
7. This page (of characters) the teacher told you to write beautifully; did you write them well (lit., you finished writing them - are they beautiful?)
8. That fellow walking all around over there - what's he looking at?
9. Oh, this motorcycle of mine is very hot after the ride.
10. Last week was cooler; this week is so hot.
11. In your (polite form) area here it's not likely to rain much in winter, is it?  
No.
12. Let's take the first bus tomorrow, OK?

The Taiwanese equivalent of the above sentences:

1. Hiáh chē<sup>3</sup> (nía<sup>1</sup>) sa\* lí kín-á-jít sé<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> liáu bē<sup>3</sup>? OR: Hiáh chē<sup>3</sup> sa\* lí kín-á-jít kám sé<sup>1</sup> ē<sup>3</sup> liáu?
2. Lí ē<sup>7</sup> chhú hiáh-nih<sup>3</sup> léng; lí ē<sup>3</sup> kôa\*, sī bô<sup>3</sup>. (OR: ho\*h)?
3. Lâng ũ<sup>3</sup> kha thàng kîa\*.
4. Í ták-jít<sup>3</sup> lîm-chú lîm kúi-ā<sup>3</sup> kòan. (OR: Í ták-jít lîm kúi-ā<sup>3</sup> kòan chú.)
5. Chít nía<sup>1</sup> sa\* lí bé liáu siu\* kúi. (Not: "be ho".)
6. Góa khia iáu-bôe<sup>3</sup> kàu, hō<sup>1</sup> tō<sup>3</sup> lâi á<sup>7</sup>.
7. Chít phi\* Lâu-su kio lí ài<sup>2</sup> sia hō<sup>1</sup> súi; lí sia liáu ũ<sup>3</sup> súi bô<sup>3</sup>? (Not "sia ho".)
8. Hít ē<sup>7</sup> lâng tī<sup>3</sup> hia kîa\*-lâi-kîa\*-khì<sup>7</sup> tēh khôa\* sia\*h?
9. Ò<sup>1</sup>, góa chít tái<sup>7</sup> ó<sup>1</sup>-thó<sup>1</sup>-bái khia liáu chin sio.
10. Téng lé-pài<sup>2</sup> khah liâng; chít lé-pài<sup>2</sup> chiáh-nih<sup>3</sup> jóah.
11. Lán chia kôa\*-thi\* khah bē<sup>3</sup> loh-hō<sup>1</sup>, sī bô<sup>3</sup>?  
Sī.
12. Bín-á-chài<sup>1</sup> lán chē<sup>3</sup> chá-pàng-chhia<sup>7</sup> lái-khì, hó bô<sup>3</sup>?

## SURNAMES

### The 20 most common surnames:

1. Tân	陳	11. Khó·	許
2. Lâm	林	12. Tē*/Tī*	鄭
3. Ngô	黃	13. Sĩa	謝
4. Tiu*	張	14. Koeh	郭
5. Lí	李	15. Ânġ	洪
6. Ông	王	16. Khu	邱
7. Gô·	吳	√ 17. Chan	曾
8. Lâu	劉	18. Liâu	廖
9. Chhòa	蔡	19. Lōa	賴
10. Iû*	楊	20. Chhî	徐

### Other surnames:

Ong/Ang	翁	Kang	江	Si	施
√ Ang	汪	Kim	金	Siau	蕭
Au	歐	√ LĪ	呂	Sím	沈
√ Cheng	鍾	Lô	羅	Sun	孫
Chiam	詹	Lô·	盧	Táng	董
Chióh	石	Má	馬	Teng	丁
Chô	曹	Ô·	胡	Tĭo	趙
Chu	朱	Péh	白	Tō·	杜
Gân	顏	Phoa*	潘	Toh	卓
Gūi	魏	√ Pò·	傅	Un	溫
Kán	簡	√ î	余	Iû	游

INDEX

OF VOCABULARY WORDS

Symbols

cf	see
Dial	Translation of Dial.
Fut	Future Tense
GN	Grammar Note
Ku	"Sentences" section
L	Lesson Number
LK	"Lê-kù"
Meas	Measure
Mod	Modifier

Neg	Negative
NB	Nota bene
Nt	Note
Nt D	Note on Dial.
P	Explanation of "Lê-kù"
S	Explanation of "Ku"
V	Verb; Vocabulary
V + No.	Vocabulary word Number
VN	Vocabulary Note

A

a	L4 p.68 V1
a (Hó-a)	L9 p.235 V1
á (or)	L7 p.160 V2
ã	L7 p.160 V1
ã (also)	L4 p.69 V9
ã...ã	L11 p.319 V11
A-lí-san	L13 p.393 V1
A + Name	L4 p.72 Nt D; L10 p.297 LK 20e
á-sī	L7 p.160 V2
ai	L1 p.20 V1; (must) L12 p.366 V44
ai-khūn	L9 p.235 V2
ám-pang-chhia	L13 p.399 V29
ám-sí	L9 p.235 V3
án-chóá*	L8 p.196 V1
án-ne/án-ni	L9 p.236 V4
au (cup)	L11 p.316 V1
âu-	L11 p.317 V2
ây-á,	L11 p.316 V1
âu-jit	L11 p.317 V2
âu-kó'-qoeh	L11 p.317 V2
âu-lé-pai	L11 p.317 V2
âu-pái	L11 p.317 V2
âu-pang	L13 p.399 V29

B

bah-suh	L13 p.393 V2
bái	L12 p.358 V1
bān (slow)	L13 p.394 V3
bān (10,000)	L8 p.196 V2
bān-hun	L13 p.394 V3
bān-lián-pit	L4 p.68 V2
bat	L9 p.236 V5
bé	L5 p.97 V1
bē (Fut.)	L8 p.198 V10
bē (sell)	L5 p.98 V4
bē (Neg.)	L6 p.127 V7
bē-bái	L12 p.358 V1
bé-bô	L5 p.98 V2
bē-hiáu	L7 p.161 V11
bé mih-kia*-ê	L10 p.290 GN 3b
bē-phái*	L6 p.127 V7
bē sím-mih pháí*	L6 p.127 V7

bē-tàng	L12 p.362 V18
bé-ū	L5 p.98 V3
béh-á-chíu	L12 p.360 V11
Bí-kok,	L7 p.160 V3
Biáu-lék	L12 p.359 V2
bín	L12 p.359 V3
bín-á-ám	L9 p.236 V6
bín-á-chài	L8 p.196 V3
bín-á-chái-khí	L9 p.236 V7
bín-á-ē-po'	L9 p.237 V12
bín-á-ē-tàu	L9 p.238 V14
bín-á-tiong-tàu	L9 p.243 V41
bô	L2 p.34 V1
bô-a	L8 p.220 LK 28f
bô ai	L2 p.35 V3
bô-êng	L10 p.280 V9
bô hó + Verb	L6 p.130 V9
bô í-su	L8 p.197 V4
bô-íá*	L6 p.131 V31
bô it-tēng	L11 p.319 V12
bô pòá* + Meas.	L6 p.126 V1
bô sím-mih ai	L2 p.36 V20
bô?	L2 p.34 V2
bôe?	L3 p.48 V1
bòeh	L4 p.68 V3
Bok-su	L2 p.35 V4
Bok-su-niú	L2 p.35 V5
būn-tê	L8 p.197 V5

C

chá	L12 p.359 V4
cha-bó'	L10 p.278 V1
cha-bó'-lâng	L10 p.291 LK 1.1
chá-chá	L12 p.359 V4
cha-hng	L6 p.126 V2
chá-pang-chhia	L13 p.399 V29
cha-po'	L10 p.279 V2
cha-po'-lâng	L10 p.291 LK 2.1
chài	L8 p.197 V6
chài	L10 p.279 V3
chài-íá*	L8 p.197 V6
chái-khí	L9 p.236 V7
chái-khí-sí	L9 p.236 V8
chài-kián	L1 p.20 V2
châng	L7 p.160 V4

Index  
C-E

chang-àm L9 p.236 V9  
 chang-chái-khí L9 p.236 V7  
 chang-ē-pō L9 p.237 V12  
 chang-ē-tàu L9 p.238 V14  
 chang-mê L9 p.236 V9  
 chang-tiong-tàu L9 p.243 V41  
 chấp-ek L11 p.323 V32  
 chấp-góeh L11 p.318 V8  
 chấp-it-góeh L11 p.318 V8  
 chấp-jī-góeh L11 p.318 V8  
 chau-kha L12 p.359 V5  
 che L1 p.21 V3  
 chē (many) L3 p.49 V2  
 chē (sit) L2 p.35 V6  
 chē-chíó L10 p.279 V6  
 chhá L10 p.279 V4  
 chha-put-to L10 p.279 V5  
 chhài L12 p.359 V6  
 chhài-thng L12 p.366 V41  
 chhe L11 p.317 V3  
 chhe\*-chhau L12 p.360 V7  
 chheh L2 p.35 V7  
 chheng L8 p.197 V7  
 chhēng L5 p.98 V5  
 chheng-bān L11 p.323 V32  
 chhī-lāi-chhia L13 p.394 V4  
 chhia L9 p.237 V10; L13 p.403 VN 1A  
 chhia ê í-á L13 p.406 VN 2A2e  
 chhia-chām L13 p.394 V5  
 chhia-lāi L13 p.426 LK 42d  
 chhia-phío L13 p.399 V30  
 chhia-té L13 p.426 LK 42d  
 chhia-téng L13 p.426 LK 42d  
 chhia-thâu L13 p.394 V5  
 chhía\* L2 p.35 V8; Góá chhía\* lí;  
 hō lí chhía\*; Lāi hō góá  
 chhía\* L9 p.249 LK 1c  
 chhía\*-mng L7 p.160 V5  
 chhiam-á L7 p.161 V6  
 chhio L13 p.394 V6  
 chhio-chhio L13 p.394 V6  
 chhit-góeh L11 p.318 V8  
 chhit-thó L6 p.126 V3  
 chhiú L7 p.161 V7  
 chhiū-á L7 p.161 V8  
 chhiú-pío-á L9 p.243 V38  
 chhōa L12 p.360 V8  
 chhòng L4 p.68 V4  
 chhù L5 p.98 V6  
 chhù-téng (of vehicle) L13 p.426  
 LK 42d  
 chhut (Meas.) L6 p.126 V4  
 chhut (out) L6 p.126 V5  
 chhut-khí L6 p.126 V5  
 chhut-lāi L6 p.126 V5  
 chí L12 p.361 V14  
 chí-ū L12 p.363 V27  
 chí\* L1 p.21 V4  
 chia L5 p.98 V7  
 chia L12 p.360 V9  
 chia\*-góeh L11 p.318 V8  
 chiah (only) L9 p.237 V11  
 chiah (Meas.) L7 p.162 V16  
 chiah (such) L11 p.317 V4  
 chiáh L2 p.35 V9

chiah-àm L9 p.238 V16  
 chiáh-àm-png L9 p.238 V16  
 chiáh-chái-khí L9 p.236 V7  
 chiáh-chhai-ê L12 p.371 LK 6.2  
 chiah ê L8 p.197 V8  
 chiáh-ē-tàu L9 p.243 V41  
 chiáh-hun L6 p.128 V11  
 Chiah koh lái L9 p.237 V11  
 Chiah koh lái chē L2 p.36 V14  
 Chiah koh lái chhit-thó L9 p.237 V11  
 chiáh-liáu-liáu L13 p.421 LK 28a  
 chiah-nhí L11 p.317 V4  
 chiáh-pá L3 p.49 V3  
 chiáh-png L2 p.35 V9  
 chiáh-png-keng L7 p.161 V9  
 chiáh-tàu L9 p.243 V41  
 chiáh-tiong-tàu L9 p.243 V41  
 chím-á L6 p.127 V6  
 chin L3 p.49 V4  
 chíó L10 p.279 V6  
 chioh-mng L7 p.160 V5  
 chiok L12 p.360 V10  
 chióng L12 p.364 V29  
 Chiong-hóa L5 p.98 V8  
 Chiong-hóa Kheh-ūn L13 p.394 V2  
 chit L7 p.161 V10  
 chit jī L8 p.220 LK 29  
 chit-jit L9 p.239 V21  
 chit-kóa L5 p.100 V16  
 chit lé-pài (whole week) L10 p.313  
 Ku 195  
 chit-pòá\*-jī-á L11 p.319 V9  
 chíu L12 p.360 V11  
 chīu L12 p.361 V12  
 chíu-chui L12 p.361 V13  
 chīu-hó L12 p.361 V12  
 chng-kha L10 p.280 V7  
 chò L4 p.68 V5  
 chò-hóe L11 p.317 V5  
 chò tiān-iá\* L6 p.131 V29  
 chóá\*-iū\* L8 p.196 V1  
 chóan L8 p.198 V9  
 chóan-im L8 p.198 V9  
 chóan-phío L13 p.394 V7  
 chóan-sia\* L8 p.198 V9  
 chòe L13 p.400 V36  
 chòe-kīn L13 p.395 V8  
 chú L12 p.361 V14  
 Chú-jit L9 p.242 V32  
 Chú-kióng-hó L13 p.405 VN 1B2NB  
 chú L13 p.395 V9  
 chú L12 p.361 V13  
 chún-pī L12 p.361 V15

E

ê (Poss.) L4 p.69 V6  
 ê (Meas.) L5 p.98 V9  
 ê (i kóng-ê) L10 p.280 V8  
 ê (shoes) L12 p.361 V16  
 ē (to be) L6 p.127 V7  
 ē (Fut.) L8 p.198 V10  
 ē-hiáu L7 p.161 V11  
 ē phái\* L6 p.127 V7

ē-po\* L9 p.237 V12  
 ē-po\*-sī L9 p.237 V13  
 ē sī L12 p.362 V17  
 ē sī-chūn L12 p.362 V17  
 ē-tàng L12 p.362 V18  
 ē-tàu L9 p.238 V14  
 ē-tàu-sī L9 p.238 V15  
 ek L11 p.323 V32  
 êk-keng-á L13 p.400 V32  
 êng L10 p.280 V9  
 êng/iông L4 p.69 V12  
 êng + Verb + ê L8 p.200 V22  
 êng-âm L9 p.238 V16  
 êng-êng L10 p.280 V9  
 Eng-gí L11 p.318 V6

G

gâu L10 p.280 V10  
 Gâu-chá L1 p.21 V5  
 gâu lim L12 p.383 LK 11bp  
 gâu tōa L10 p.288 VN  
 gín-á L7 p.161 V12  
 gō-gōeh L11 p.318 V8  
 góa L1 p.21 V6  
 gōa (more than) L7 p.161 V13;  
 L8 p.203 V41  
 -gōa (outside) L12 p.362 V19  
 gōa-bīn L7 p.162 V14  
 Góa bō chiah L6 p.128 V11  
 góa chít ê lāng L7 p.181 LK 27f  
 gōa-kháu L7 p.162 V14  
 góa (lī etc) khóa\* L6 p.127 V8  
 góa khóa\* + Neg. L6 p.127 V8  
 gōa-kok L11 p.318 V7  
 góan L2 p.35 V10  
 gōan-chú-pit L4 p.69 V7  
 -gōeh L11 p.318 V8  
 gōeh-jit L11 p.321 V19

H

hā-khò L8 p.198 V11  
 hák-hāu L8 p.198 V12  
 hák-seng L1 p.21 V7  
 ham-bān L10 p.281 V11  
 hàn L10 p.281 V12  
 hàn-á-chài L8 p.196 V3  
 hàn-jī L11 p.319 V9  
 hāng L9 p.238 V17  
 he L1 p.21 V8  
 Hē\*/Hē\* L9 p.239 V19  
 hia L5 p.99 V10  
 hiah L11 p.319 V10  
 hiah ê L8 p.198 V13  
 hiah-nīh L11 p.319 V10  
 hiām L10 p.282 V20  
 hioh-khùn L9 p.238 V18  
 hit L7 p.162 V15  
 hīg L12 p.362 V20  
 hó L1 p.21 V9  
 hó bō? L5 p.99 V11

hó-chò L6 p.128 V9  
 hó-khóa\* L6 p.128 V9  
 hó-khùn L12 p.362 V21  
 hó-kóng L6 p.128 V9  
 Hō-ló-lāng L11 p.327 VN B3  
 Hō-ló-ŕe L11 p.327 VN B3  
 hó-thi\* L13 p.402 V43  
 hó + Verb L6 p.128 V9  
 hō\* (give) L4 p.69 V8  
 hō\* (rain) L13 p.395 V10  
 (hō\*) V + hō\* + Mod. L13 p.395 V11  
 hō\*-chò L5 p.99 V12  
 hoa\*-hí L13 p.396 V12  
 hoat-im L8 p.199 V14  
 hoat-tō\* L12 p.363 V22  
 hōe L6 p.128 V10  
 hòe L10 p.281 V13  
 hōe-chhā L6 p.133 VN 1  
 hōe-chhia L13 p.396 V13  
 ho\*h L9 p.239 V19  
 Hók-hin L13 p.405 VN 1B2NB  
 hók-síp L8 p.199 V15  
 hun (tobacco) L6 p.128 V11  
 hun (minute) L8 p.199 V16  
 hun-cheng L8 p.199 V17  
 hún-pit L8 p.199 V18

I

i L1 p.21 V10  
 í-á L7 p.162 V16; (chhia) L13  
 p.406 VN 2A2e  
 í-á-ūi L13 p.405 VN 1B2b  
 í-chē-á L13 p.406 VN 2A2f  
 í-keng L12 p.363 V23  
 í-sū L8 p.199 V19  
 í-toh L7 p.162 V17  
 iā L4 p.69 V9  
 iā...iā L11 p.319 V11  
 iáh L8 p.200 V20  
 iān-pit L4 p.69 V10  
 ian-tāu L12 p.363 V24  
 iáu L9 p.239 V20  
 iáu-bōe L4 p.69 V11  
 (iáu-bōe) V + iáu-bōe + Mod.  
 L13 p.396 V14  
 iáu-kín L13 p.396 V15  
 in L2 p.35 V11  
 in L8 p.200 V21  
 in-ūi L7 p.162 V18  
 iōng/eng L4 p.69 V12  
 iōng + Verb + ê L8 p.200 V22  
 it-gōeh L11 p.318 V8  
 it-tēng L11 p.319 V12  
 it-tít L10 p.281 V14

J

jí L6 p.129 V12  
 jī L4 p.70 V13  
 jī-gōeh L11 p.318 V8  
 jī-im L13 p.393 V1

Index  
J-K

jīn-chin L11 p.320 V13  
jīp L6 p.129 V13  
jīp-khī L6 p.129 V13  
jīp-lāi L6 p.129 V13  
jīt L9 p.239 V21  
jīt-go̍at-thām L12 p.363 V25  
jīt-sī<sup>3</sup> L9 p.239 V22  
jōah L13 p.396 V16  
jōah-thi\* L13 p.397 V17  
jōah-thi\*-sa\* L13 p.397 V17

K

kà L10 p.281 V15  
kā L11 p.320 V14  
kā-chheh L10 p.281 V15  
kā-chheh-ê L10 p.290 GN 3a  
ka-chōe L9 p.241 V27  
ka-gī L11 p.320 V15  
ka-pi L3 p.49 V5  
ka-tēng L11 p.320 V16  
ka-tī L10 p.281 V16  
ka-tī-chit-ê L10 p.281 V16  
kah/kap L5 p.99 V13  
kah (up to) L12 p.363 V26  
kái L8 p.202 V36  
kak L6 p.129 V14  
kám L10 p.282 V17  
kam-á L7 p.162 V19  
kám án-ni L10 p.282 V17  
kan-na L12 p.363 V27  
kan-ta\* L12 p.363 V27  
kap/kah L5 p.99 V13  
kau L9 p.239 V23  
kau-go̍eh L11 p.318 V8  
kau-sek L8 p.200 V23  
kau-sit L8 p.200 V23  
kau-ūi L9 p.239 V23  
ke-tēng L11 p.320 V16  
kè-thēng-chhia L13 p.397 V18  
keng L7 p.163 V20  
keng-chio L6 p.129 V15  
kha (Noun) L7 p.163 V21  
kha (Noun suffix) L7 p.163 V21  
kha (Meas.) L12 p.364 V28  
khah L10 p.282 V18  
khah ài L10 p.282 V18  
khah bē L13 p.397 V19  
khah bó ài L10 p.296 LK 18e  
khah chá L12 p.359 V4  
khah ē L13 p.397 V19  
khah óa\* L12 p.364 V34  
khai-sí L8 p.200 V24  
Kheh L11 p.328 VN B3  
kheh-khī L11 p.320 V17  
Kheh-lāng L11 p.327 VN B3  
Kheh-ōe L11 p.327 VN B3  
kheh-thia\* L7 p.163 V22  
Kheh-ūn L13 p.404 VN 1A2  
khī L4 p.70 V14  
khī-chúi L11 p.320 V18  
khī khùn L9 p.240 V26  
khī-lāi L9 p.240 V25

khīa L6 p.129 V16  
khīa L13 p.397 V20  
khit-khī L9 p.240 V24  
khit-lāi L9 p.240 V25  
khò L8 p.200 V25  
kho<sup>o</sup> L1 p.21 V11  
khò<sup>o</sup> L5 p.99 V14  
khóa\* L2 p.35 V12  
khóa\*-chheh L2 p.35 V12  
khóa\* tiān-sī L6 p.131 V30  
khóan L12 p.364 V29  
khòng L8 p.201 V26  
khòng-bēng-chhia L6 p.131 V28  
khong-khī L10 p.282 V19  
khui L5 p.99 V15; (TV) L6 Ku 74s;  
(chhia) L13 p.422 LK 29e  
khùn L9 p.240 V26  
khùn L10 p.283 V27  
khùn iáu bōe pá L13 p.416 LK 14d  
khùn-khī L9 p.241 V27  
khùn-tiong-tàu L9 p.241 V28  
ki L7 p.163 V23  
ki-chhia L7 p.164 V28  
Kí-kong L13 p.405 VN 1B2NB  
kia\* L8 p.201 V27  
Kim-má-hō L13 p.404 VN 1A1c  
kín L13 p.397 V21  
kīn L12 p.364 V30  
kin-á-jit L6 p.129 V17  
kin-chio L6 p.129 V15  
kió L10 p.282 V20  
kió-chò L5 p.99 V12  
Ko-hióng L6 p.130 V18  
Ko-sok-kong-lō<sup>o</sup> L13 p.397 V22  
kó<sup>o</sup>-góeh L11 p.321 V19  
kóa (cf chit-kóa) L5 p.100 V16  
kóa\* L13 p.398 V23  
kóa\*-thi\* L13 p.398 V24  
koai\* L5 p.100 V17  
kòan L11 p.321 V20  
kóe-chí L2 p.35 V13  
koh L8 p.201 V28  
koh bé L8 p.220 LK 28f  
Koh lái chē L2 p.36 V14  
kok L11 p.321 V21  
kok-bin-sío-hák (kok-hāu/kok-sío/sío-  
hák) L10 p.282 V21  
kok-gí L11 p.321 V22  
kok-hāu L10 p.282 V21  
Kok-kong-hō L13 p.404 VN 1A1a  
kóng L3 p.49 V6  
kóng-chhió L13 p.394 V6  
kong-kiōng-khī-chhia L13 p.394 V4  
kóng liáu chin hó L13 p.436 Ku 75S  
Kong-lō<sup>o</sup>-kiók L13 p.393 V2  
kóng + Noun/Pronoun + ê tãi-chí  
L9 p.243 V39  
kóng-ōe L3 p.49 V6  
kú L13 p.398 V25  
kū L8 p.201 V29  
kū L10 p.283 V22  
kúi L3 p.49 V8; L8 p.201 V30  
kúi + ā/nā + Meas. L11 p.321 V24  
kúi-go̍eh L11 p.318 V8



kúi + Meas. L5 p.100 V18  
kúi + Meas. + á L11 p.321 V23  
kún-chúi L3 p.49 V7

L

là L9 p.241 V29  
lái L4 p.70 V15  
-lāi L12 p.364 V31  
lāi-bīn L7 p.163 V24  
Lāi chē L4 p.70 V16  
lāi-khī L5 p.100 V19  
(lāi...khī) V + lái + V + khī  
L13 p.398 V26  
lái-tah L6 p.128 V10  
lāi-té L7 p.163 V24  
lák-góeh L11 p.318 V8  
lâm L10 p.279 V2  
lán L2 p.36 V15  
lán chia/lán hia L8 p.206 GN 5  
Lán lái-khī L5 p.100 V19  
Lán lái + V L8 p.201 V31  
Lán lái khī. L13 p.430 LK 43CP  
lāng L3 p.50 V9  
lāng-kheh L11 p.322 V25  
lāng-kheh-keng L11 p.322 V26  
lâu L9 p.241 V30  
lâu-kha L9 p.241 V30  
lâu-téng L9 p.241 V30  
(lâu) tē it lâu L9 p.257 LK 30  
lâu-bó/lâu-bú L11 p.322 V27  
lâu-pē L11 p.323 V31  
Lâu-su L1 p.21 V12  
lè L4 p.70 V17  
lé-pài (Sun.) L9 p.242 V32  
lé-pài (week) L9 p.242 V31  
lé-pài-jít L9 p.242 V32  
léng L13 p.398 V27  
léng-kún-chúi L13 p.398 V27  
léng-té L13 p.397 V17  
lí (female) L10 p.278 V1  
lí (you) L1 p.21 V13  
lí hó bō? L5 p.100 V20  
lī-piān L10 p.283 V23  
liāng L12 p.364 V32  
liáp L7 p.163 V25  
liáu L13 p.399 V28  
lim L3 p.50 V10  
lín L2 p.36 V16  
lō-má-jī L11 p.327 VN A  
lō L10 p.283 V24  
lōa-chē L1 p.22 V14  
lōa kú L13 p.398 V25  
lōh L9 p.242 V33  
lōh-chhia L9 p.242 V33  
lōh-hō L13 p.395 V10  
lōh-hō\*-thi\* L13 p.395 V10  
lōh-khī L9 p.242 V33  
lōh-lái L9 p.242 V33  
lōk L10 p.283 V25  
lōk-im L10 p.283 V25  
lōk-im-ki L10 p.283 V26  
lōk-im-tōa L10 p.283 V27  
lóng L7 p.164 V26

M

m̄ L4 p.70 V18  
m̄-bat L9 p.236 V5  
m̄-bián L8 p.202 V32  
m̄-chai L8 p.197 V6  
m̄-chai-íá\* L8 p.197 V6  
m̄-hó L6 p.130 V19  
m̄-kú L6 p.130 V20  
m̄-sī L2 p.36 V17  
m̄-tiōh L12 p.366 V43  
mā L4 p.69 V9  
mā...mā L11 p.319 V11  
ma-mah L11 p.322 V27  
mài L10 p.284 V28  
mía L5 p.100 V21  
mih L5 p.101 V22  
mih-kīa\* L5 p.101 V22  
mng L5 p.101 V23  
mng L8 p.202 V33

N

ná L10 p.284 V29  
nā L5 p.101 V24  
nā-sī L5 p.101 V24  
ná-ū L11 p.317 V4  
ngēh L12 p.364 V33  
ní L10 p.284 V30  
nía L5 p.101 V25  
nía-nīa L7 p.164 V27  
-nīh L5 p.101 V26  
nó L11 p.322 V28  
Numerals Ls 1, 8, 11.

O

óa\* L12 p.365 V35  
òá\* L12 p.364 V34  
óa\*-óa\* L12 p.364 V34  
óa\*-póa\* L12 p.365 V36  
Oān-līm L7 p.164 V29  
ōe L3 p.50 V11  
oh L11 p.322 V29  
ōng-lái L11 p.323 V30

O'

ò L10 p.284 V31  
o'-pang L8 p.202 V34  
o'-tho'-bái L7 p.164 V28

P

pa-pah L11 p.323 V31  
pah L8 p.202 V35  
pah-bān L11 p.323 V32  
pái L8 p.202 V36  
pái-it (-jī, etc) L9 p.242 V32  
pái-kúi L9 p.242 V34

Index  
P-T

pān-hoat L12 p.363 V22  
 pang L13 p.399 V29  
 pāng-keng L7 p.164 V30  
 pau L6 p.130 V21  
 pē-bó/pē-bú L11 p.323 V33  
 Pê\*-tē-lâng L11 p.327 VN B1  
 Pê\*-tē-ōe L11 p.327 VN B1  
 peh L9 p.242 V35  
 peh-góeh L11 p.318 V8  
 péh-ōe-im L13 p.393 V1  
 peh soa\* L9 p.242 V35  
 pēng-iú L5 p.101 V27  
 phah-piá\* L11 p.320 V13  
 pháí\* L6 p.130 V22  
 pháí\*-khùn L12 p.362 V21  
 pháí\*-sè L7 p.164 V31  
 phi\* L8 p.200 V20  
 phio L13 p.399 V30  
 phó\*-thong L11 p.323 V34  
 phó\*-thong-chhia L13 p.400 V31  
 piá\*-sè L11 p.320 V13  
 piá\*-sí L11 p.320 V13  
 pián L8 p.202 V36  
 piān-só\* L7 p.165 V32  
 píó-á L9 p.243 V38  
 pit L4 p.70 V19  
 pñg L2 p.36 V18  
 póa\* L6 p.130 V23  
 póa\* L12 p.365 V37  
 póa\*-á L12 p.365 V37  
 póa\*-phio L13 p.394 V7  
 poe L11 p.323 V35  
 poe-á L11 p.323 V35  
 pún L5 p.101 V28  
 put-sí L6 p.130 V24

S

sa\* (clothes) L5 p.101 V29  
 sa\*-á-khò\* L5 p.102 V30  
 sa\*-góeh L11 p.318 V8  
 sa\*-khò\* L5 p.102 V30  
 sái L10 p.284 V32  
 san L13 p.393 V1  
 sé L5 p.102 V31  
 sè L10 p.284 V33  
 sé-ék-keng L13 p.400 V32  
 sé-seng-khu-keng L13 p.400 V32  
 sé\* L3 p.50 V12  
 sé\*-mía L5 p.102 V32  
 seng L11 p.324 V38  
 seng-khu L13 p.400 V33  
 seng-kí-jít L9 p.242 V32  
 sí L1 p.22 V15  
 sí bó\*? L2 p.36 V19  
 sí-cheng L9 p.243 V36  
 sí-chhài-chít-thng L12 p.371 LK 6d3  
 sí-góeh L11 p.318 V8  
 sí-kan L9 p.243 V37  
 sí-koe L12 p.365 V38  
 sí-pío L9 p.243 V38  
 sí-pío-á L9 p.243 V38

sí\* L3 p.50 V12  
 sía L4 p.70 V20  
 sía-jí L4 p.70 V20  
 sia\* L8 p.202 V37  
 sia\*h L4 p.71 V21  
 sía\*-hòe L4 p.71 V21  
 sía\*-lâng L4 p.71 V22  
 sian-sí\* L3 p.50 V13  
 siang L12 p.365 V39  
 siáng L12 p.360 V9  
 siáng L12 p.360 V9  
 Siāu-hin-chíu L12 p.360 V11  
 sím-mih L2 p.36 V20  
 sím-mih-lâng L4 p.71 V22  
 sím-mih-sí L9 p.243 V40  
 sin L10 p.285 V34  
 Sín-hū L2 p.36 V21  
 sin-se\* L3 p.50 V13  
 Sin-tek L5 p.102 V33  
 sio L13 p.400 V34  
 sio-jóah L13 p.400 V35  
 sío pēng-iú L7 p.167 VN  
 síók L8 p.202 V38  
 siōng L13 p.400 V36  
 siōng-khò L8 p.203 V39  
 siōng-siōng L6 p.130 V24  
 sit-chhài L13 p.401 V37  
 sit-lé L3 p.50 V14  
 siu-im-ki L10 p.285 V35  
 Siu-lí L3 p.50 V15  
 Siu-sū L3 p.50 V16  
 siu\* L13 p.401 V38  
 sng L11 p.324 V36  
 só\*-chhài L10 p.285 V36  
 só\*-í L7 p.165 V33  
 soa\* L6 p.130 V25  
 Soa\*-tē-lâng L11 p.327 VN B2  
 Soa\*-tē-ōe L11 p.327 VN B2  
 su-ku-tah L7 p.165 V34  
 súi L12 p.365 V40  
 sui-jián L13 p.401 V39

T

ta\* L6 p.127 V6  
 tah L5 p.102 V36  
 tah-ūi L5 p.102 V36  
 tah + chít + Meas. L11 p.325 V44  
 tái L6 p.131 V26  
 tái-chí L9 p.243 V39  
 Tái-gí L6 p.131 V27  
 tái-khài L11 p.324 V37  
 Tái-lám L10 p.285 V37  
 Tái-oân L6 p.131 V27  
 Tái-oân-kheh-ūn L13 p.393 V2  
 Tái-oân-lâng L6 p.131 V27  
 Tái-oân-ōe L6 p.131 V27  
 Tái-pak L4 p.71 V23  
 tái-seng L11 p.324 V38  
 Tái-tiong L4 p.71 V24  
 tak L13 p.401 V40  
 tân-sí L6 p.130 V20

- tang-sí L9 p.243 V40  
 tè L7 p.165 V35  
 tê L3 p.51 V17  
 tē L8 p.203 V40  
 tē + No. + lâu L9 p.241 V30  
 tê-bí L3 p.51 V18  
 tê-bí-tê L3 p.51 V18  
 teh L4 p.71 V25  
 teh-boeh L13 p.401 V41  
 teh chhēng sa\* L5 p.98 V5  
 téng (previous) L11 p.324 V39  
 -téng (top) L7 p.165 V36  
 téng-jit L11 p.324 V39  
 téng kó'-gòeh L11 p.324 V39  
 téng lé-pài L11 p.324 V39  
 téng-pái L11 p.324 V39  
 téng tiám-cheng L11 p.324 V39  
 thài-thài L4 p.71 V26  
 thak L3 p.51 V19  
 thak-chheh L3 p.51 V19  
 thak-chheh-toh-á L7 p.166 V40  
 thang L13 p.401 V42  
 thang-á L13 p.401 V42  
 thang-á-mńg L5 p.102 V34  
 thang-hó L13 p.401 V42  
 thang-lái L13 p.401 V42  
 thèh L11 p.324 V40  
 thi\*-khí L13 p.402 V43  
 thia\* L10 p.285 V38  
 thih-bé L6 p.131 V28  
 thín L11 p.325 V41  
 thng L12 p.366 V41  
 thng-á L7 p.165 V37  
 thng-sí L12 p.366 V42  
 thng-sí-á L12 p.366 V42  
 tí (chopsticks) L7 p.165 V38  
 tí (be in/at) L5 p.102 V35  
 tí-sí L9 p.243 V40  
 ti\* L11 p.325 V42  
 tiā\*-tiā\* L6 p.130 V24  
 tiám L8 p.203 V41  
 tiām L10 p.285 V39  
 tiám-cheng L8 p.203 V42  
 tiām-tiām L10 p.285 V39  
 tiān-iá\* L6 p.131 V29  
 tiān-sí L6 p.131 V30  
 tiâu L10 p.286 V40  
 tiòh (correct) L12 p.366 V43  
 tiòh (must) L12 p.366 V44  
 tiòh-ai L12 p.366 V44  
 Tiòh-lá. L12 p.366 V43  
 Tiòng-hin-hō/Tiòng-hin-ê L13 p.394 V2  
 Tiòng-kok L11 p.325 V43  
 Tiòng-kok-jī L11 p.319 V9  
 tiòng-tàu L9 p.243 V41  
 tiòng-tàu-sí L9 p.244 V42  
 tít-tít L10 p.281 V14  
 tít-tát-chhia L13 p.402 V44  
 tiu\* L13 p.402 V45  
 tng-khí L9 p.244 V43  
 tng-lái<sup>3</sup> L9 p.244 V44  
 tng-lái-khí L9 p.244 V45  
 to L12 p.361 V12  
 to L7 p.166 V39  
 to-á L7 p.166 V39  
 tō-hó L12 p.361 V12  
 To-sīa L1 p.22 V16  
 to'-chhi L10 p.286 V41  
 toa (dwell) L10 p.286 V42  
 toa (be in/at) L12 p.367 V45  
 tōa L10 p.286 V43  
 tōa-lāng L10 p.286 V44  
 tōa lô' L10 p.283 V24  
 tōa-mía L5 p.100 V21  
 tōe L8 p.203 V43  
 toh L5 p.102 V36  
 toh-á L7 p.166 V40  
 toh chit ê kah toh chit ê?  
 L11 p.325 V44  
 toh + chit + Meas. L11 p.325 V44  
 toh-á-téng; toh-téng L7 p.184 LK 40e  
 toh-ūi L5 p.102 V36  
 tui L8 p.204 V44  
 tui-hō L13 p.394 V2  
 Tui-hō-khòai L13 p.405 VN 1(2)
- U
- ū L1 p.22 V17  
 ū-ê L11 p.325 V45  
 ū-êng L10 p.280 V9  
 ū-iá\* L6 p.131 V31  
 ū-sí L10 p.287 V45  
 ū-sí-á L10 p.287 V45  
 ūi (Meas.) L8 p.204 V45  
 ūi (place) L9 p.239 V23







楊允言  
90'02>3